A COMPREHENSIVE

HISTORY OF TEXAS

1685 to 1897

EDITED BY
DUDLEY G. WOOTEN

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED

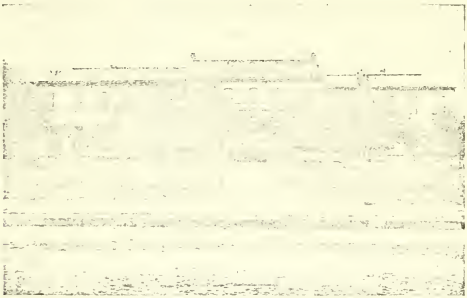
IN TWO VOLUMES
VOLUME II.

PUBLISHED BY
WILLIAM G. SCARFF
DALLAS
1898

dollars per annum for each of their children, while learning the "first rudiments," till they commenced to write, and eighteen dollars for the rest of their attendance. Each student educated in "the establishment" was required, on leaving, to pay ten dollars "gratitude money" for rewarding the teacher at the end of the teacher's contract.

In April, 1830, another decree was made providing that until the Lancastrian schools can be established in the State the executive shall cause six primary schools to be established on the basis designated in the previous decree, with some modifications, which were specified, reducing the pay of the teacher to five hundred dollars per annum and gratitude money to six dollars per pupil.

These efforts of the government, however, were not satisfactory,—at least, to the *Texanos*,—largely, perhaps, on account of the preference allowed Spanish over English in the tuition; and at a convention in 1832 at San Felipe de Austin, from



DALLAS HIGH SCHOOL.

which the Castilian population held aloof, as if it were a disloyal assemblage of "*Texanos Americanos*," as the Mexicans termed them, a committee was appointed to petition the State government for a donation of land for the purpose of creating a fund for the future establishment of primary schools. Little or no attention seems to have been paid to such petition, if presented, but other provision was made, of a limited character, to produce school funds. This was under a general decree of April, 1833, whereby also *Juntas* were established, charged to take special care that the funds destined for the schools be used expressly for that object, and that they be not separated therefrom for any cause whatever. These *Juntas* were further required to provide schools and teachers, and to see that the teachers "do not render useless by their example the lessons it is their duty to give on morality and good breeding."

So far nothing of note was accomplished by the government towards establishing free schools, much less a definite system of public education; and, as officially

reported by a commission of the government in 1834, while Texas was still a Mexican province, there were only three private schools then in operation in the province,—one on the Brazos, one on the Red River, and the other in San Antonio, where the teacher got twenty-five dollars per month for his services. (Report of Almonte.)

In 1844 a committee of the city council of San Antonio concluded that the charter of the city made it obligatory upon the council to encourage the opening of a public school, and recommended that the old court be so repaired as to serve for both court and school purposes; and certain lots were to be appropriated for this object as soon as they would realize a fair price, but for some reason the land was not ordered to be sold till August, 1849, and in accordance with the recommendation of the council, a building was constructed for the double purpose of a court and school-house, but does not appear to have been used for a school.

There were no free schools, established as such, by direct provision of the State government till, in 1854, long after the annexation of Texas to the United States.

The period during which the Spaniards occupied Texas territory,—until the Mexican Revolution in 1821,—known as the "mission period," was remarkable on account of the efforts of the missionaries to establish their settlements for the conversion and education of the Indians. The chapels of the missions were generally built of stone, and strengthened like fortresses, to serve for the purposes of defence from the hostile natives, as well as for habitations, churches, and schools. The most important of these missions at the time, and one of great historic interest, is the "Alamo,"[1] still standing in a prominent degree of preservation in the heart of the city, and known in history as the Thermopylæ of Texas, where Travis, Crockett, Bowie, Bonham, and other heroic spirits fell in defence of the American settlers; and "La Concepcion," near the city, the walls of which, according to church traditions, were cemented with mortar made up with milk furnished as a sacred contribution by Indian converts, and partly from the breasts of Indian women.

Action of the Republic of Texas.—Following the expressions of the Constitution of Coahuila and Texas and the action of the government on the subject of education came the declaration of independence of the republic of Texas, adopted in 1836, at Washington, Texas, wherein, among other causes of complaint, it was declared that the Mexican government had "failed to establish any public system of education, although possessed of almost boundless resources (the public domain); and although it is an axiom in political science that unless a people are educated it is idle to expect the continuance of civil liberty or the capacity of self-government."

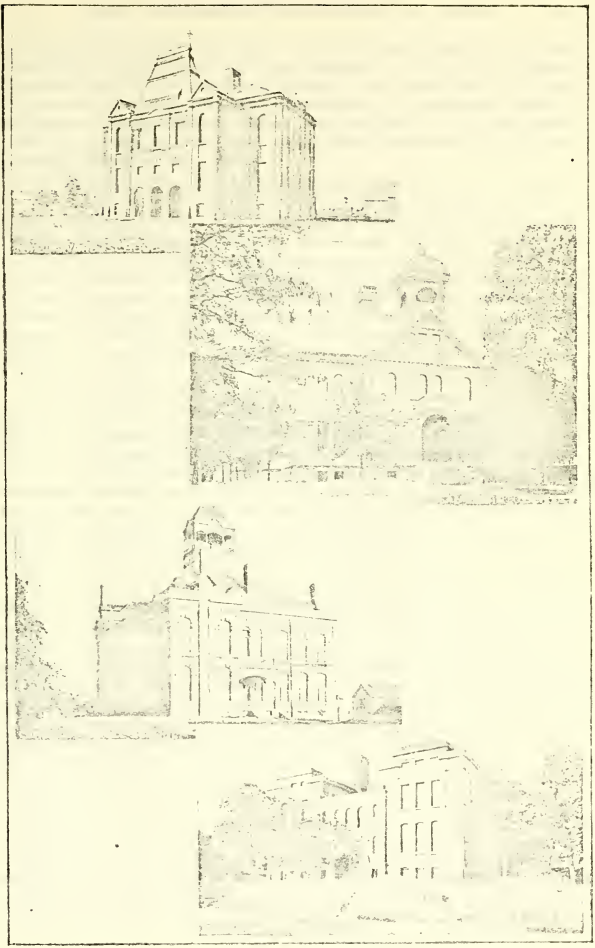
Nothing was said about "teaching the church catechism," or anything to connect education with the church as a matter of government, as had been incorporated in the Constitution of Coahuila and Texas; but it is notable that at the very formation of the organic law of the young republic attention was fixed upon the general domain, instead of direct taxation, as a means of providing for public education. How grandly the "axiom in political science," as it was expressed in the new declaration of the sovereignty of the people, worked in the promotion of education will be seen as the history progresses. The new Constitution made it the duty of the Congress of the republic, as soon as circumstances permitted, to provide by

[1] The *Alamo* was never an important mission, except for the siege of the same in 1836.—EDITOR.

law a general system of education. Schools were soon developed by the impetus of increased population, academies and other educational institutions sought charters from the government, and, as the public records show, as early as June 5, 1837, the President of the republic, Sam Houston, approved "An Act to Incorporate the Trustees of Independence Academy and the University of San Augustine," which were separate institutions, but were embraced in the same act of the first Congress of the republic of Texas. The institutions were located at San Augustine, in San Augustine County. The same day, June 5, President Houston approved "An Act Incorporating the Trustees of Washington College," to be located at or near the town of Washington, on the Brazos River. These acts of incorporation provided in effect, as do nearly all the charters granted by the republic, as well as by the State of Texas, for educational institutions, that they shall be accessible to all students without regard to religious or political opinions. Such institutions were generally maintained by subscriptions to their respective funds, or by tuition, or both, or in some way by private enterprise. The amount of property which they were to hold was generally expressed in the respective acts of incorporation, and the property was generally, but not always, exempted from taxation. Very often, too, upon application to the legislature, special acts were passed prohibiting the sale of intoxicating liquors near the premises. Special qualification was made as to the Bible in two instances,—one in an act incorporating the "Texas Christian College," to be located where the largest subscription may induce, and providing that "the Bible may be fully taught, but no partisan, sectional, sectarian, or denominational peculiarity shall be taught or encouraged in the college," and the other in an act incorporating "McKenzie Male and Female College," in Red River County, which provided that "the Bible may be publicly read and used as a text-book."

The idea of projecting a University to be supported by the government took some shape in an act introduced in the Congress of the republic, entitled "An Act to Establish the University of Texas," which, on April 13, 1838, was referred to a special committee (page 7, "House Journal"), but, as far so the records show, was not further considered during that session of Congress.

In his message of December 20, 1838, to the third Congress of the republic, convened at Houston, President Lamar thus expressed his views as to the importance of liberal landed provision for the promotion of public education, while the general domain was ample for the purpose: "The present is a propitious moment to lay the foundation of a great moral and intellectual edifice, which will in after ages be hailed as the chief ornament and blessing of Texas. A suitable appropriation of lands to the purpose of general education can be made at this time without inconvenience to the government or the people; but defer it till the public domain shall have passed from our hands, and the uneducated youths of Texas will constitute the living monuments of our neglect and remissness. A liberal endowment which will be adequate to the general diffusion of a good rudimental education in every district of the republic and to the establishment of a University where the highest branches of science may be taught can now be effected without the expenditure of a single dollar. Postpone it a few years, and millions will be necessary to accomplish the great design."



GROUP OF DALLAS SCHOOLS.

Up to this time, however, Congress had been too much engaged with the work of political rehabilitation to admit of proper attention to any but the more pressing demands of the government incident to the war for independence from Mexico and for protecting the people from Indian depredations. The permanent location of the capital of the republic even had not been determined, nor was the question settled till some time afterwards, when Lamar himself, acting with the special commissioners, selected the site at Austin.

Following and in line with Lamar's suggestions, Mr. Cullen, from the committee on education, to which was referred that part of the President's message relating to education, reported and strongly recommended the adoption of a bill entitled "An Act to Appropriate Certain Lands for the Purpose of Establishing a General System of Education," and proposing a grant of three leagues (thirteen thousand two hundred and eighty-four acres) of the public domain to each county for establishing a primary school or academy in the county; and authorizing the President of the republic to have surveyed from any of its vacant domain twenty leagues of land, which are to be set apart and appropriated for the establishment and endowment of two colleges or universities, one in the eastern and the other in the western part of Texas.

The act passed with fifty leagues substituted for twenty leagues, and was approved January 26, 1839. The same day President Lamar approved an act establishing and incorporating the "College of De Kalb" at De Kalb, in Red River County, the act naming a board of "superintendents," exempting the property of the college from taxation, and authorizing the board, in addition to selecting teachers and providing for the educational and financial management of the school, to "suppress and abate nuisances within half a mile in any direction from the premises," and to levy and exact a fine of from twenty-five to one hundred dollars from all retailers of spirituous liquors sold within the prescribed limits. The Congress also granted four leagues of land in fee simple for buildings and apparatus, and "for promotion of arts, literature, and science." An act of 1840, "Establishing Rutersville College in Fayette County," named a board of trustees, with usual powers, provided that pupils of all denominations shall have like advantages, exempted the college property from taxation, provided against selling liquor near the college, and granted four leagues of land for "college buildings and apparatus, and to promote arts, literature, and science,"—all with the proviso that the college property shall not at any time exceed twenty-five thousand dollars in value. The act was subsequently amended to extend the property limitation to one hundred thousand dollars, and requiring the trustees to apply to the District Court to abate the liquor nuisance in the college neighborhood.

An early effort of the government for promoting public free schools in the counties was an act of February 5, 1840, "In relation to common schools and academies and to provide for securing the lands formerly appropriated for purposes of education." It made the chief justice and two associate justices (then existing officers) of each county *ex officio* a board of school commissioners, with full power in their respective counties to receive, lease, and sell all property appropriated for the schools, and required them to have located and surveyed the three leagues of land appropriated under the act of January 26, 1839, and granted an additional

league (four thousand four hundred and twenty-eight acres) for the purpose of necessary scientific endowment, one-half of it for an academic school and the remainder to be distributed among the various common-school districts in the county. It provided that school districts be organized in the county when the population or interests of education required.

Numerous private as well as denominational institutions of learning were chartered by direct acts of the republic and subsequent State legislation, till a law was

PRAIRIE VIEW STATE NORMAL SCHOOL.

enacted by the State prescribing a general mode for such incorporations, under which the charter articles, when framed accordingly, have only to be accepted and filed in the State department at Austin.

THE STATE AND PUBLIC EDUCATION.

The Congress of the United States having passed resolutions providing for the annexation of Texas to the American Union, resolutions of annexation were adopted by the convention of the people of the republic of Texas, held July 4, 1845, at Austin, and, among other things, it was mutually provided that the Texas republic should retain as a State of the Union all its vacant and unappropriated public domain. The Constitution which was adopted made an exception restricting State appropriations by declaring (Article 7, Section 8) that appropriations for money should not be made for a longer term than two years, "except for purposes of education." Article 10 required the State to make "suitable provisions for the support and maintenance of public schools," and further provided as follows:—

"SEC. 2.—The legislature shall, as early as practicable, establish free schools throughout the State, and shall furnish means for their support by taxation on property. And it shall be the duty of the legislature to set apart not less than one-tenth of the annual revenue of the State derivable from taxation as a perpetual fund, which fund shall be appropriated to the support of free public schools, and no law shall ever be made diverting said fund to any other use; and until such time as the legislature shall provide for the establishment of such schools in the several districts

of the State, the fund thus created shall remain as a charge against the State passed to the credit of the free common-school fund."

The precedent of municipal taxation for the support of free schools was set by an act of the legislature, in 1846, authorizing the corporation of Galveston to levy a tax for such purpose, limited to one-half per cent. on the value of the real estate of the corporation.

An act of 1849 exempted from taxation all buildings with furniture and library used solely for purposes of education, together with the lands owned by educational institutions, on which they are situated, not exceeding ten acres.

An act of January 31, 1854, appropriated two million dollars of the five-per-cent. bonds of the United States remaining in the State treasury as a school fund for the support and maintenance of public schools, to be called the "special school fund;" the interest therefrom to be distributed for the benefit of the school fund.

An act of January 30, 1854, "to encourage the construction of railroads in Texas," and the act of February 11, 1854, relative to the Galveston and Brazos Navigation Company, appropriated "alternate sections" of lands in large quantities to the railroads and navigation companies and to the free-school fund, the corporations being required to survey the school sections for the State, as well as their own lands. These grants aggregated many millions of acres, including about thirty-two million acres to the railroads.

An act of 1856 provided that "no statute of limitations shall run in favor of any one who has heretofore settled or may hereafter settle upon or occupy any of the lands that have heretofore been granted, or may hereafter be granted, by the State for purposes of education." Other acts of 1856 provided for "investment of the special school fund in the bonds of railroad companies incorporated by the State," and for the "disposition and sale of the fifty leagues of University lands."

What was known as the "University Act of 1858" granted the University of Texas one hundred thousand dollars in United States bonds, then in the State treasury; transferred to it the fifty leagues of land originally set apart by the republic of Texas for the "endowment of two colleges or universities," and further set apart to it "one section of land out of every ten sections which have heretofore been or may be hereafter surveyed and reserved for the use of the State, under the act of January 30, 1854, to encourage the construction of railroads in Texas," and the act of February 11, 1854, granting lands to the Galveston and Brazos Navigation Company. The Constitution of 1876 annulled the proposition as to the alternate sections, converting the lands to the free-school fund, and substituting to the University but one million acres of far less valuable lands, in lieu of some three million two hundred thousand acres to which the University was entitled under the act of 1858.

The War and Reconstruction.—The constitutional convention of 1861, held during the secession of the Southern States, adopted the Constitution of 1845, with various amendments, simply adapted to the new order of things, but without any change of Article 10, on "education," or the two years' provision as to appropriations for educational purposes. This provision was maintained till the exception was dropped from the Constitution of 1876.

After the war resulting from secession, commonly known as the "war of the rebellion," came the Constitution as amended and adopted by the convention of 1866, and some ordinances of the convention affecting previous action of the legislature as to the disposition of school funds, and an ordinance which further affected the funds, those of the University especially, on account of some of the proceeds of sales of the school and University lands having been received in "Confederate money" during the war, the ordinance declaring the "war debt null and void." The other (Ordinance 12) was for "securing the common school and University fund," merging the funds in one title, as were the accounts of them subsequently kept by the State comptroller, so that afterwards, when it was proposed to establish the University, it was difficult to designate to what amount of the funds the University was entitled.

The legislature had all along proceeded by statute, under the existing organic law, to establish free schools, and had incorporated the idea of providing for one or more State universities as part of the State system of education or free-school system of the State. The Constitution of 1866 amended the provisions of Article 10 on "education" by declaring that the legislature shall, as early as practicable, establish a system of free public schools throughout the State; and as a basis for the endowment and support of said system all the funds, lands, and other property heretofore set apart, or that may hereafter be set apart and appropriated for the support and maintenance of public schools, shall constitute the public-school fund; and said fund and the income derived therefrom shall be a perpetual fund for the education of all the white scholastic inhabitants of this State, and no law shall ever be made appropriating said fund to any other use or purpose. It further provided that all the alternate sections of land reserved by the State out of previous or future grants to railroad companies or other corporations for internal improvements, or for the development of the wealth or resources of the State, shall be set apart as the perpetual school fund of the State; that the legislature shall hereafter appropriate one-half of the proceeds of sales of public lands to the perpetual school fund, and shall provide for the levying of a tax for educational purposes, and that the sum arising from said tax which may be collected from Africans or persons of African descent shall be exclusively appropriated for the maintenance of a system of public schools for Africans and their children; that the University funds shall be invested in like manner provided for the public-school funds, and the legislature shall have no power to appropriate the University fund for any other purpose than that of the maintenance of universities, and shall at an early day make such provisions by law as will organize and put into operation the University.

Next came the period of "reconstruction," for restoring to the Union the "rebel states," as they were called, during which a State Constitution was adopted in convention held under the Reconstruction Acts of Congress, and it was finally ratified by the people in July, 1869. This Constitution reaffirmed the section of that of 1866, fixing the basis of the public-school endowment, except the clause confining its use to the education of white children, which had to be changed under the reconstruction provisions against "race discriminations," and was so changed as to provide that "the perpetual school fund shall be applied, as needed, exclusively for the education of all the scholastic inhabitants of the State, and no law shall ever

be made appropriating such fund for any other use or purpose." It was also provided that

"All sums of money that may come to this State from the sale of any portion of the public domain of the State shall also constitute a part of the public-school fund. And the legislature shall appropriate all the proceeds resulting from sales of public lands of this State to such public-school fund, and shall set apart for the benefit of public schools one-fourth of the annual revenue derivable from general taxation; and shall also cause to be levied and collected an annual poll-tax of one dollar on all male persons in this State between the ages of twenty-one and sixty years, for the benefit of public schools." "And said fund and the income therefrom and the taxes herein provided for school purposes shall be a perpetual fund to be applied" as above stated.

The Constitution secures these provisions by annulling the "Ordinance of Secession" of 1861 and all legislation based thereon; and declares, in effect, that the legislatures which sat in the State from March, 1861, to August, 1866, were unconstitutional and their enactments not binding, except as to such regulations as were not violative of the Constitution and laws of the United States or in aid of the rebellion against the United States. The legislature which assembled in Austin on August 6, 1866, is declared to have been provisional only, and its acts were to be respected only so far as they were not violative of the Constitution and laws of the United States, or were not intended to reward those who participated in the late rebellion, or to discriminate between citizens on account of race or color, or to operate prejudicially to any class of citizens. It is further declared that "All debts created by the so-called State of Texas from and after the 28th day of January, 1861, and prior to the 5th day of August, 1865, were and are null and void, and the legislature is prohibited from making any provision for the acknowledgment or payment of such debts."

Under these provisions the University, though not then organized so as to be in any way a matter of concern in the war, suffered great loss by some seventy-four thousand eight hundred and four dollars and forty-eight cents having been received in "Confederate notes" in payment for University lands and turned over to the Confederate States' depository. As to other interests involved in the same way, no estimates appear to have been presented of the loss to the free-school fund and other special trusts resulting from the State being prohibited from paying any debt involving Confederate money, further than appears in a message of Governor Davis, April 29, 1870, stating:—

"The University fund and lands may, I suppose, properly be considered as part of the common-school fund, though not directly included therein by the Constitution.

"It will be noticed that in the comptroller's report of assets the accounts bear from year to year the items 'Special school fund, $79,409.50,' 'University land sale, $10,300.41,' and 'Six-per-cent. manuscript State bonds, for school fund, $320,367.15.' These items represent State warrants or State bonds issued during the war, and representing obligations which are now void and should no longer be borne on the comptroller's reports. But the comptroller considers it his duty to continue them until the legislature directs otherwise."

An act of 1871 amended the general school law by providing that the board of education shall apportion the territory of the State anew into convenient educational districts. The State superintendent was authorized to appoint the district supervisors, the supervisors were to appoint the school directors and could act as examiners of teachers. Thus, the school officers were very numerous and involved an expense that was well calculated to exhaust the school fund, if not to bankrupt the State, if the system were maintained. At all events, it was too extravagant for maintenance by the counties.

Existing Organic Law.—The convention of 1875 adopted the Constitution which was ratified the following year, and is known as the Constitution of 1876. It expresses, among the subjects for which the legislature may "levy taxes and impose burdens upon the people," the "support of public schools, in which shall be included colleges and universities supported by the State and the Agricultural and Mechanical College."

"ARTICLE 7, SEC. 2.—All funds, lands, and other property heretofore set apart and appropriated for the support of public schools; all the alternate sections of land reserved by the State of grants heretofore made or that may hereafter be made to railroads, or other corporations, of any nature whatsoever; one-half of the public domain of the State, and all sums of money that may come to the State from the sale of any portion of the same shall constitute a perpetual public-school fund."

Section 3 provides for setting apart annually one-fourth of the State revenue from occupation taxes, one dollar poll-tax, and such an *ad valorem* State tax, not exceeding twenty cents on the one hundred dollars' valuation, as will suffice, with the available school fund from other sources, for support of the public free schools of the State for six months in the year; and authorized local taxation by the vote of school districts, not to exceed twenty cents on the one hundred dollars' valuation, the limit on the district-school tax not applying to incorporated cities and towns constituting separate and independent school districts

Section 5 provides that the principal of bonds and other funds and principal of sales of the school lands and the taxes herein authorized shall be the available school fund, to which the legislature may add, not exceeding one per cent. annually of the total value of the permanent school fund.

Section 7 provides that "Separate schools shall be provided for the white and colored children, and impartial provision shall be made for both."

Other sections regulate the sale of school lands and disposition of school funds to the counties, and the sale of asylum lands and use of the funds.

"SEC. 10.—The legislature shall, as soon as practicable, establish, organize, and provide for the maintenance, support, and direction of a university of the first class, to be located by a vote of the people of this State, and styled 'The University of Texas,' for the promotion of literature and the arts and sciences, including an agricultural and mechanical department."

Section 11 confirms all grants of lands and other property heretofore made to the University, provided that the one-tenth of the alternate sections of the lands granted to railroads, which were appropriated for the University of Texas by act

of February 11, 1858, entitled "An Act to Establish the University of Texas," shall not be included in or constitute a part of the permanent University fund.

Section 12 provides for selling the University lands and collections of debts due on account of the University, and against granting relief to purchasers of the University lands.

Section 13 constitutes the Agricultural and Mechanical College a branch of the University of Texas for "instruction in agriculture, the mechanic arts, and the natural sciences connected therewith."

"SEC. 14.—The legislature shall also, when deemed practicable, establish and provide for the maintenance of a college or branch university for the instruction of the colored youths of the State, to be located by a vote of the people; provided, that no tax shall be levied and no money appropriated out of the general revenue, either for this purpose or for the establishment and erection of the buildings of the University of Texas.

"SEC. 15.—In addition to the lands heretofore granted to the University of Texas, there is hereby set apart and appropriated, for the endowment, maintenance, and support of said University and its branches, one million acres of the unappropriated public domain of the State, to be designated and surveyed as may be provided by law; and said lands shall be sold under the same regulations and the proceeds invested in the same manner as is provided for the sale and investment of the permanent University fund; and the legislature shall not have power to grant any relief to the purchasers of said lands."

Section 10 of Article 11 provides that the legislature may constitute any city or town a separate and independent school district, and prescribes the requirements for authorizing city authorities to levy and collect a tax for the support and maintenance of public institutions of learning.

The provision in Article 7, Section 5, that the legislature may add one per cent. annually of the permanent to the available school fund, is known as the "Jester amendment," adopted in 1891 and put into effect by the twenty-second legislature. It added two hundred and twenty-six thousand four hundred and eighty dollars to the available school fund in 1892.

THE PRESENT SCHOOL SYSTEM.

After the annexation of Texas to the United States, the public-school system of the State was subjected to various important changes. Naturally, at the organization of the government, the management of educational interests was largely left to the cities and counties and boards of school trustees, the counties being generally divided, when the population justified, into school districts with respective school commissioners. Eventually subdivisions of school districts were allowed, under what was termed the "community system," where a sufficient number of the people petitioned for it to the school authorities. Cities and towns were allowed to incorporate as "independent school districts" under separate school boards and city school superintendents, and established "graded" and "high" schools, in addition to the grammar and primary schools. The disposition of free-school funds of the counties, derived from State grants and special appropriations and taxation, was charged to the county officers, subject to legislative regulation.

At first the State treasurer, and subsequently the State comptroller, was *ex officio* State superintendent of instruction, with a certain general supervision of the school fund and some direction as to its distribution and use in the several counties, reports of county-school finances and school work being required to be made to him, and he to report to the governor as to the condition of such matters and the general interests of education in the State. This was before the population of Texas had grown so as to require a more thorough system of regulation.

In 1868 the "reconstruction convention" set apart all the proceeds of the sales of public lands, and required that one-fourth of the State revenues and the poll-tax of one dollar on each male citizen between twenty-one and sixty years of age be appropriated for school purposes. The scholastic population entitled to tuition in the free schools was to embrace all educable children between six and eighteen years of age, and the legislature was required to provide for the maintenance of the schools for four months during the year.

The State comptroller was *ex officio* State superintendent of education till the office of "Superintendent of Public Instruction" was established by the Constitution of 1866, which prescribed four years for the term of service and fixed the salary at two thousand dollars per annum, besides creating a board of education to consist of the governor, comptroller, and the superintendent, and was charged with the "management and control of the perpetual school fund and the common schools, under such regulations as the legislature may prescribe." The first State superintendent of the public schools under these provisions was Pryor Lea, appointed by Governor Throckmorton, November 10, 1866. The existing government and officers, however, were displaced the following year under the "reconstruction acts" of Congress, and E. M. Wheelock, who was appointed superintendent by Provisional Governor Pease, in August, 1867, served the balance of the four years' term. In May, 1871, J. C. de Gress succeeded Wheelock, by appointment of Governor Davis, but was ousted from office before his term expired by the installation of O. N. Hollingsworth, who was elected superintendent December 2, 1873, on the same ticket with Governor Coke.

Under an act of 1871, the salary of the superintendent of public instruction was fixed at three thousand dollars, and the board of education was constituted of the superintendent, the governor, and the attorney-general. An act of 1873, besides keeping the salary at three thousand dollars, gave the superintendent a clerk at one thousand eight hundred dollars, and the same act provided for county-school boards, the president to be *ex officio* county superintendent, the directors to be allowed four dollars a day, when employed in school work, for not over twenty days, and the county superintendent the same pay for not over thirty days in the year. The school *ad valorem* tax was fixed at twenty-five cents on the one hundred dollars' valuation of property, and other disposition was made of funds from sales of school lands for support of the schools according to the provisions of the Constitution. An act of 1876 in effect abolished the office of State school superintendent by making no provision for it, but provided for a board of education composed of the governor, comptroller, and secretary of state, and allowed a clerk at a salary of fifteen hundred dollars per annum. The department of education was reorganized in 1884, when the office of superintendent of public instruction was revived and a new board of education was

created, consisting of the governor, comptroller, and secretary of state, with the State school superintendent *ex officio* secretary of the board, the term of office of the superintendent being two years, and the salary two thousand five hundred dollars a year, as they have since remained fixed.

The secretary of the board of education, B. M. Baker, was appointed State superintendent, May 5, 1884, by Governor Ireland. He was succeeded by O. H. Cooper, who was elected in November, 1886, and re-elected in November, 1888, but, having resigned before his second term expired, Governor Ross appointed to the place H. C. Pritchett, who was elected to the office in November, 1890, but also resigned before his term expired, and was succeeded by Governor Hogg appointing J. M. Carlisle, who was afterwards elected and is the present incumbent of the office. Superintendent Baker, while secretary of the board of education, induced the legislature to make the office of State superintendent elective instead of appointive, and very materially systematized the workings and effectiveness of the department of education.

Important economic changes from the expensive school system of the "period of reconstruction" were found to be necessary following that period. Among those adopted was one recommended by Governor Roberts, classifying the teachers into several grades, so that great saving was effected in the salaries, instead of paying the teachers all alike. The prices of sale of the public lands were reduced, and various measures were taken for the more rapid disposition of them to produce greater funds for the support of the free schools and establishment of the University. What is known as the "fifty cents' act," reducing the price of the public lands to that figure, was suggested by Governor Roberts. The legislature also passed an act setting apart one-half of the public domain of the disputed territory of Greer County for the free schools, and reserving the other half for the public debt[1]; and some years ago Governor Hogg, while attorney-general, instituted suits for the recovery of several million acres of land, claimed to have been improperly granted to railroad companies, including over a million acres for railroad "sidings and switches." The suits were prosecuted with some success by Attorney-General Culberson, as were others to recover school lands originated by the latter officer, and the lands reverting to the State may accrue partly to the benefit of the school fund.

According to statements of the land commissioner, some three hundred and fifty-two thousand acres of the "sidings and switches" lands have so far been recovered. The larger suits are based on the constitutional requirement that one-half of all the public domain of the State shall be reserved to the free-school fund, but it is a question whether lands recovered in these suits will revert simply to the public domain, or any part to the benefit of the free-school fund, unless the legislature should so direct, and it might possibly do by dividing them between the free schools and the University, as was proposed to be done in an act prepared for the twenty-second legislature, but not introduced, as it was deemed inexpedient to attempt any provision for disposing of the lands in advance of their recovery.

The General School Law.—The result of legislation governing the school system has been the enactment of an elaborate general law, with various modifications and closer adaptations at each biennial session of the legislature. The scope

[1] Lost by decision of United States Supreme Court in 1896.—EDITOR.

of the law passed by the twenty-third legislature—that of 1893—is indicated in its comprehensive caption, as follows :—

"An act to provide for a more efficient system of public free schools for the State of Texas ; defining the school funds ; providing for the investment of the permanent fund and the apportionment of the available fund ; defining the duties of certain State officers in reference to the public free schools ; creating the offices of State and county superintendents ; providing for their election and salary, and prescribing their qualifications and duties ; prescribing the duties of other officers in reference to public schools and public-school funds ; making county judges *ex officio* county superintendents in all counties not having county superintendents, and providing for their compensation ; providing for the election of school trustees and prescribing their qualifications and duties ; providing for the creation of school districts in all the counties of this State ; providing for the levy and collection of special taxes for the further maintenance of the public free schools and the erection of school-houses ; providing for boards of examiners and the issuance of teachers' certificates; providing compensation and prescribing the duties of teachers employed thereunder, and preventing the altering or changing of teachers' certificates ; regulating the transfer of the school funds ; fixing the scholastic age ; providing for taking the scholastic census ; authorizing trustees to administer oaths ; and providing penalties for refusing to answer questions in regard to the age of children, and other penalties for violations of the provisions of this act ; repealing all laws and parts of laws in conflict with the provisions of this act ; and declaring an emergency." (General Laws, 1893, Chapter 122.)

The last report of Superintendent Carlisle shows that there are eleven thousand seven hundred and twenty-eight public-school teachers and one hundred and sixty-three cities and towns having graded public schools in Texas.

STATE EDUCATIONAL ENDOWMENT.

According to the last report of the State comptroller of March 31, 1893, the total amount of county, State, and railroad bonds held by the permanent school fund was $7,675,922, there being also on hand $609,073 cash to the credit of the fund. These items, with some $14,000,000 of interest-bearing land notes and about twenty-three million acres remaining unsold of the school lands, constitute the State's public-school endowment at this time. Some twenty million acres of the unsold lands are leased at four cents an acre per annum, and the rentals are applied to the annual available school fund. The University lands are leased at three cents an acre, and the rentals are added to the available University fund. The price for leasing of both the school and University lands for some years prior to 1887 was as high as six cents an acre per annum, having been reduced since to meet the decreased demand for grazing lands, on account of the reduced value of cattle. Besides the regular State endowment, each county has a separate special grant from the State of four leagues,—seventeen thousand seven hundred and twelve acres. As these lands are sold, the interest on the funds is applied annually to the support of the schools. The lands thus granted to the counties aggregate some five million eight hundred and fifty-six thousand four hundred acres, exclusive of a general reservation from the public domain, from which counties remaining unorganized are to have their four-league grants.

In addition to the interest on bonds and land notes and rental from leases, the State levies an annual *ad valorem* school-tax of one and one-fourth mills, and appropriates it, together with one-fourth of the occupation taxes and an annual poll-tax of one dollar per voter, to the available school fund. The entire amount of available school fund apportioned for 1892 and 1893 for a scholastic population of 453,720 white and 151,685 colored children, from eight to fifteen (since changed to from eight to seventeen) years of age, in the State, was $3,462,890, derived from the school-tax at twelve and a half cents on the one-hundred-dollar property valuation, and from interest on bonds, interest on land notes, leases of school lands, local school taxation, and the annual transfer of one per cent. from the permanent school fund.

The entire educational endowments of the State may be summed as follows :—

FREE-SCHOOL FUND.		
Bonds	$7,675,922	
Cash	609,073	
		$8,284,995
Land, 23,000,000 acres. Value		57,500,000
Total State school fund		$65,784,995
COUNTY-SCHOOL FUND.		
Land, 5,856,400 acres. Value		14,641,000
Total State and county school funds		$80,425,995
UNIVERSITY FUND.		
Bonds	$575,840	
Land, 2,020,040 acres. Value	5,050,100	
		5,625,940
Grand total educational endowment		$86,051,935

Under the Constitution, funds of the University are limited to investments in bonds of the State and the United States ; but the school funds are not confined to these securities, and are mainly invested in county bonds in amounts proportioned to the property values and constitutional indebtedness of the counties applying for the loans, and in this way the funds operate for local benefits within the State. County bonds thus held by the State in trust for the permanent school fund amount to $3,980,000, payment of which is guaranteed by the State. There are also $2,162,600 in State bonds held by the school fund, besides over $1,500,000 in railroad bonds belonging to the fund.

THE UNIVERSITY OF TEXAS.

The provision for endowing a State university, as well as for establishing the public free schools in Texas, and the legislation for organizing "one or more universities," or, as the idea came to be modified, "The University of Texas," may be attributed for some measure of influence to the suggestions of President Lamar, who, in his message to the Congress of the republic of Texas in 1838–39, urged liberal appropriations of land, while the domain was vacant and ample, for the purposes of education. His message doubtless had great weight in Congress, judging

from the report of the committee on education, and the liberality of the republic is no doubt what stimulated the State to still greater munificence in the endowment of the free schools and the University,—the former with perhaps the grandest school patrimony in the world, and the latter with somewhat princely provision for its support.

As for the free schools, almost any provision for them within the power of the people would have been a matter of no great marvel, so far as the popular disposition was concerned, as the people would have given almost any amount of the public domain necessary for their support, and took every occasion they could, all through the days of the republic as well as of the State, to augment the free-school fund. For the University, however, to secure land donations from the State, appropriations of an equal amount for the free schools were generally necessary, so jealous were the people, and the law-makers for them, of the University having

MAIN BUILDING, UNIVERSITY OF TEXAS, AUSTIN, TEXAS.

any favors not accorded to the free schools. While, as Lamar expressed it, "the benefits of education were so universal that all parties could unite in its promotion," still the free schools, as something nearer to the necessities of the settlers of the country, naturally engendered indifference to the early establishment of the University; and, but for the urgent action of Governor Roberts and the University regents appointed by him under the act of 1881, and others subsequently appointed, the University would hardly have been put into operation as early as it was, in 1883, nor even then, under such favorable auspices as happened, but for an important ruling of State Comptroller Swain, which made available a large amount of funds of the University which had hitherto been restricted to the principal instead of the interest of the permanent fund. Under the Constitution only the interest of this fund, and no part of the principal in any event, could be used for operating the University; so that, although the institution was finally started as urged by its friends, its resources would have been rather meagre for immediate purposes but for some eighty-six

thousand dollars which the Swain ruling converted to the direct use of the institution. The previous action, too, of Comptroller Darden, in calling attention to the subject, and thereby inciting the legislature to eventually consider and determine the facts as to the legality of one hundred and thirty-four thousand dollars in bonds which the State had issued to the University, must also be taken into account as material to the interests of the institution. So, also, should be regarded the action of Comptroller Brown in turning the precedent and checking the use of University funds for the Prairie View School.

Naturally there were efforts of many other friends of the University, and, as there had been all along, expressions of most of the executives of the republic and of the State in favor of higher education tending to the same purpose of an early organization of the University; but the action of the incumbent governor and comptroller, as high State officials with discretion and inclination to act in the matter, and the co-operation with the governor by the State Teachers' Association, and the legislation which resulted from such influences, were material agencies towards consummating the main object desired, of putting the institution at once into effect, and trusting to the people and the legislature for countenance and support. But the objects of the friends of the institution had not been even so far realized, without great opposition, and with no special encouragement from the general public, owing to the still existing indifference to the advantages of the University,—"a rich man's school," as it was termed,—as compared with the more universal advantages of the free schools, which in their combination of academies and primaries constituted what was most, if not all, that was then desired in the way of education by the great mass of the people.

ASHBEL SMITH.

Governor Roberts's idea, in which he was strongly supported by influential members of the legislature and by able writers of the press, was to start the University and let it develop itself with such aid as the State could afford or saw proper to extend, without waiting for some indefinite period for vast resources to be accumulated to inaugurate it on some grand plan, which might never be practicable. He favored legalizing the one hundred and thirty-four thousand dollars in State bonds before referred to belonging to the University, but which had been declared invalid, and urged that two million acres be added to the one million acres of land previously donated by the State for the University's endowment, and, further, personally appeared before the State teachers' convention at Mexia in 1880, to prevail upon it to consider the matter of devising a plan to put the institution at once into practical operation. His plan was subsequently formulated at a second meeting of the association, which at the governor's instance met at Aus-

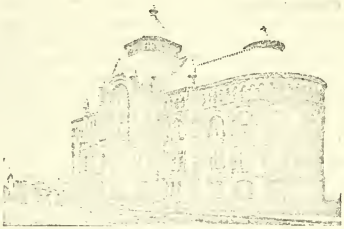
tin, and through a committee of the association a bill was prepared and submitted to the legislature for organizing the University. This is the bill which, with some changes credited mainly to Representative Hutcheson, of Harris, and Senator Terrell, of Travis, is said to be the one finally enacted, under which the University is now being operated. As finally drafted, the bill was probably based, for some of its provisions at least, upon the draft presented by the teachers' committee, one feature of which, however, differed from the enacted bill, by providing for a president of the University, and another opposed the erection of "dormitories, professors' houses, and mess halls." The University regents, a few years ago, resolved to petition the legislature for authority to appoint such an officer, but no further action seems to have been taken in the matter.[1] As to the question of co-education of the sexes, Governor Roberts states that the suggestion was made by him to the teachers' convention at the same time he advised the establishment of normal schools. The "bonds of doubtful validity," which he wanted to be legalized, were issued in lieu of United States bonds, donated by the State to the University in 1858, and held to be invalid during the Republican administration of the State on suspicion that they had been used for raising funds in aid of the "war of the rebellion." Comptroller Bledsoe had classed them as "worthless," but Comptroller Darden referred them to the legislature, and they were validated in 1883 by legislative decision that they had been used for frontier protection from the Indians and Mexicans, and therefore were not liable to the inhibition on account of the Civil War.

As has been noticed, in 1839 the Congress of the republic of Texas provided for locating the capital of the republic, to be named the "City of Austin," and for selecting a university site on the same grounds; and further set apart fifty leagues (two hundred and twenty-one thousand four hundred acres) of land for the "establishment and endowment of two colleges or universities." The first Constitution of the State, that of 1845, made no mention or provision in the matter, nor was there any material effort made by the legislature to establish a university, until, in 1855, a bill to provide for the "erection and support of a State university" was introduced and warmly discussed in the sixth legislature. The issue was whether there should be one or more universities, or, differently expressed, any university at all, and what action was proper for such an enterprise. Appropriations ranging from three hundred thousand to one million dollars were proposed. One member, Mr. Russell, distrusted the propriety of the movement for lack of transportation, and argued that they should first provide for internal improvements. Mr. Flanagan contended that "the time had come when the State could afford to support two universities such as the honor of this great State demanded." Mr. Bryan urged the economics of a university, "to unite the people and save the great expense of educating our children among those who were enemies to our institutions." Senator Maverick went so far as to argue that if we got a university it would soon have to be "abated as a nuisance;" that "the whole thing was wrong;" that we did not want "either one or two universities;" that "the schools must first be established for the general wants of the people before we advance to academies and universities;" that "if a university was put on foot when not demanded or properly con-

[1] A president was provided for in 1895, and George T. Winston was elected to that office in 1896.—EDITOR.

stituted, it would be sure to set itself up as a secret, malignant enemy of the people;" that "it was curious that we must begin with a university,—so nice, so fine, and so religious!" Mr. Armstrong opposed colleges or universities as "hot-beds of immorality, profligacy, and licentiousness," and "having a tendency to create aristocracy and class legislation among the people," and preferred a "practical and efficient system of common schools, in which the exercises shall alternate between labor and study, so that the body of the student may be developed in proportion to the advancement of the mind."

The legislature was sharply divided between the single university and the dual plan, and at first the majority was evidently agreed that it was the proper time to act, if a university was needed, while there were ample funds remaining in the treasury from the five million dollars in United States bonds paid to the State in 1852 for the Santa Fé purchase. A substitute bill, however, was offered appropriating one million dollars of these bonds as an additional fund for the common schools, instead of for the University, and finally the whole matter was referred to the com-



MEDICAL COLLEGE AT GALVESTON.

mittee on education and went over without final action during that session. The subject was revived in the seventh legislature, in 1857, when the debate was again interesting as an exhibition of the temper of the legislature and the sentiment of the people at that time. Mr. Kittrell, chairman of the House Committee on Education, spoke at length in support of a report of the committee recommending "the establishment of a State university as soon as practicable," and stated that he had just learned that the Senate committee had recommended a liberal appropriation in land and money for this object, and that there was still in the State treasury five hundred thousand dollars unexpended balance of the United States bonds not needed for any other purpose.

Mr. Jennings, who favored the report, took occasion to argue that the medical department should be located at Galveston or Houston, and that the literary department should not be at Austin, adding: "I have three sons, and I say it in the presence of God and my country, that I would let them be uneducated stock-raisers and mule-drivers before, in the effort to become well educated, they should learn

the accomplishments of Congress Avenue." He wanted the literary department fixed on some "virgin league of land."

Mr. Norton protested against taking the land and money of the people,—four hundred thousand dollars and four hundred and forty-two thousand eight hundred acres of land,—as the Senate proposed, to establish one mammoth university for the benefit of a privileged class, that the children of the rich may be educated and those of the poor neglected. He would favor appropriating the entire fund contemplated for the University to the common schools of the State. The speaker of the house, Mr. Locke, did not believe the people were ready for a university, and opposed its establishment. Several members spoke in favor of having but one, and deprecated the proposition of two universities as "rival institutions that would foster sectional feeling and discord among the people." It was even argued that the institution was antidemocratic,—not for the greatest good to the greatest number; that it would be a magnificent failure and an intolerable burden upon the people; that its establishment would be legislating for a special class, and that class the favorites of fortune, who were the only ones that could and would take advantage of such an institution, and who were able to take care of themselves; that it would not be right, in case there should ever be a division of the State, for one section alone to possess this mammoth enterprise, reared and maintained by the common blood and treasure of the whole State; that the question should be more thoroughly canvassed before the people and their voices be heard, as they are the ones to furnish the money to build the University; and that the common-school system should be placed upon a firm basis before "vesting the people's money and domain in any enterprise of doubtful expediency."

The bill relating to the establishment of a State University came up again in the legislature in 1858, when the pending question in the house being its final passage, and the ayes and noes being demanded, several members asked to be excused from voting. The constitutional objection, too, was raised that the bill embraced the substance of a proposition which had been rejected. It finally prevailed, however, by a vote of forty-eight yeas to thirteen nays, and, as enacted into law, appropriated the fifty leagues of land set apart for the "establishment and endowment of two colleges or universities" to the "establishment and maintenance of the University of Texas," and also set apart and appropriated to the same purpose "one section of land out of every ten sections which have heretofore been or may hereafter be surveyed and reserved for the use of the State under the provisions of the act of January 30, 1854, entitled 'An Act to Encourage the Construction of Railroads in Texas by Donations of Land,' and under the provisions of any general or special law heretofore passed granting lands to railroad companies, and under the provisions of the act of February 11, 1854, granting lands to the Galveston and Brazos Navigation Company." These provisions were never observed on account of the intervention of the Civil War; but, on the contrary, the main grant of the "tenth sections" was annulled by the Constitution of 1876, which reappropriated all the grants before made except the tenth sections, for which it made only partial restitution by substituting one million acres to the University. An act of April 20, 1883, made further, but still far from complete, restoration by a donation of another million acres to "the University and its branches, including the branch for colored

youths," giving at the same time and in the same act one million acres to the free schools. Not only was the University thus deprived of a large portion of its endowment, but in several instances large amounts of its funds had been imperiously diverted by the legislature, and only in one instance was such spoliation prevented by executive action in the University's behalf. This was in 1861, when Governor Lubbock vetoed a bill appropriating University funds for the mileage and *per diem* of the members of the ninth legislature. An act of the same session of 1883 legalized $134,472.26 in bonds issued to the University by the State, but previously held to be invalid, and a certificate of the comptroller of the State's indebtedness to the University for $10,300.41, and further provided that the sum of $256,272.59 of that half of the proceeds of the sale of bonds not belonging to the common-school fund shall be transferred to the University fund in payment of said certificate and bonds, and the accrued interest on said bonds to the first day of August, 1883, of which $45,104.22 belong to the available University fund, after which said certificate and bonds shall be fully discharged.

The University suffered great loss to its endowment not only on account of the large quantity of lands which it owned in excess of the million acres substituted by the Constitution of 1876, but on account, also, of the greatly inferior quality of the substituted lands. Alluding to these facts, Judge Terrell, in a speech in the State Senate in April, 1882, on the bill then pending to set aside two million acres of land for the University, said: "Had that law (act of 1858) not been disturbed by the Constitution of 1876, the University would now own three million two hundred thousand (3,200,000) acres of land, instead of having to apply to the legislature for a donation, which in effect would be but so much restitution of its original endowment. At the very time when the effort was made to despoil it of its endowment by a clause in the Constitution of 1876 (the effect of which those who made that instrument could not foresee) there was then due to the University one million seven hundred thousand (1,700,000) acres of land; but by the Constitution of 1876 all the alternate sections reserved by the State out of grants to the railroads, including every tenth section given to the University, were appropriated for public free schools, and one million acres only were given for the endowment of the University." The bill to appropriate the two million acres to the University did not pass, but was substituted in the eighteenth legislature by the act of April 20, 1883, which, as before stated, appropriated instead only one million acres to the University and one million to the free schools.

The opposition in the legislature, even at this period and later, was almost as remarkable as it was in the sixth and seventh legislatures, but more, perhaps, on account of favoritism for the Agricultural and Mechanical College than from hostility to the University. At one session, for instance, one member (since a strong friend of the University), while a vote was being taken for an appropriation for the college from the University fund, could not refrain from exclaiming, "Remember the farmers' college!" meaning the "A. and M. College," as it is generally briefly designated. Another member, who was more a partisan of the college than a friend to the University, argued that the legislature could "starve the University out of existence or demolish it by tearing down its walls and levelling it to the ground;" and in the twentieth legislature, in 1888, when the simple question involved in

discussion was the repayment of University funds used by the State for other than the purposes of the University, a proposition which was so plain to the Senate as to induce that body to pass its bill appropriating over two hundred thousand dollars to repay the money with interest, a member of the House contended that "the State did not owe the University a cent," it being, he argued, "a case of justified diversion of funds intended for one purpose, but changed to another by subsequent enactment," —an argument which seemed to have its effect, at least in the House, which voted a "loan" to the University, giving the appropriation that designation, and conveniently disposing of the claims in lump to avoid admitting that they constituted any debt of the State, and yet requiring that the loan shall be "in full settlement and satisfaction of all the claims of the University." As thus expressed, it was subsequently enacted into law in the general appropriation bill of the special session. The loan had been suggested by Representative Prendergast, and was accepted by Senator Simkins, who was at the time one of the University regents, as being the only concession likely to be obtained.

JOHN SEALY.

Senator Pfeuffer, while president of the board of directors of the Agricultural and Mechanical College, was the author of a scheme for the establishment of "district colleges" as "feeders for a university," and in 1884 he introduced a bill accordingly, to provide for their support from the University fund, which, had it passed, would have scattered and depleted the fund, and, in the opinion of the advocates of the University, instead of "feeding" would have "bled the University to death." The bill was defeated at a subsequent session of the legislature, and after its defeat the author of it made a remarkable speech as a matter of personal privilege in the Senate, March 31, 1885, in which he undertook to disparage the University as compared with the College, but in a vein of satire that would apply to any institution of mere fanciful methods or imperfect means of instruction, and was, in fact, if applicable to either, as pertinent to the College as to the University. The University, however, had been in operation long enough for the people to realize something of its advantages, and that it was not "district colleges as feeders," but the direct benefits of the University itself, that were needed for the superior education of their children at home. In the grand march of an empire State in political importance they felt that Texas should keep step to the music of educational progress in other States, and hold her sons and daughters at home, by bringing the University of Texas fairly into competition by its innate excellence with the great universities of the country. It was time, as Governor Roberts had expressed it, that "Texas, like other States, should rear its own men in every stature of manhood, of intelligence, and of culture, according to their capacities and upon its own soil, and thereby engender and preserve an intense

homogeneousness in the character of its population, which must result in the concentrated power and elevated prosperity of the whole body politic in association."

For years prior to this, a number of prominent men in and out of the legislature, among them Ashbel Smith, John Cardwell, S. H. Darden, A. W. Terrell, and General Wigfall, some of them already mentioned, as well as Governors Coke, Hubbard, Lubbock, Throckmorton, Roberts, and some of the earlier State executives, and others in authority or of special influence, had more or less favored the establishment of the University,—some of them, indeed, while it was a mere concept in the public mind, or, at best, an uncertain quantity in political estimation. Governor Ireland seemed to favor the establishment of several State colleges and then a University.

The organization of the Agricultural and Mechanical College, in 1875, long before the University got into operation, in 1883, and as a branch of the University,

JOHN SEALY HOSPITAL AT GALVESTON.

but under a separate board of control, created considerable and repeated friction in legislation, on account of difference between the directors of the College and regents of the University, due to the efforts of the latter to prevent what they regarded as unreasonable appropriations for the College from the available resources of the University. This feeling was not even measurably mollified till 1891, when the controlling bodies of the hitherto and still separately managed institutions joined in a mutual appeal to the twenty-second legislature for desired appropriations for the College and the University. As its organization stands, the College is still managed independently of any special supervision of the University regents. Its catalogues of students are published separately from those of the University, but as "the technical branch of the University."

The title and purposes of the University of Texas were expressed in the Constitution of 1876, which declared that "the legislature shall, as soon as practicable, provide for the maintenance, support, and direction of a University of the first class, to be located by a vote of the people of this State, and styled 'The University of

Texas,' for the promotion of literature and the arts and sciences, including an agricultural and mechanical department."

Despite all obstacles retarding its organization, the University finally got into operation, not under the acts of 1858 and 1866, but under the provisions of the Constitution of 1876, abridging as that did the landed donations to the University, and the act of March 30, 1881, and subsequent legislation, up to the date of its practical inauguration by temporary use of rooms in the State capitol, in September, 1883, till the University's building was sufficiently completed for occupancy, January 1, 1884.

In 1866, Governor Pease appointed, as the law then required and designated them, "Ten Administrators of the University of Texas." The appointees were Charles S. West, George B. Erath, Henry F. Gillette, William G. Webb, Robert Beehern, P. W. Kittrell, Gustave Schleicher, William S. Glass, J. W. Ferris, and F. S. Stockdale. The number was subsequently reduced to eight, and in 1872 Governor Davis appointed, as the board, James H. Raymond, S. Mussina, C. R. Johns, M. A. Taylor, Hamilton Stuart, S. G. Newton, E. G. Benners, and J. R. Morris. In 1873 Governor Davis appointed a new board, consisting of Edward Degener, James H. Starr, A. H. Bryant, George W. Smyth, James W. Talbot, John W. Harris, Hamilton Stuart, and John C. Raymond.

THOMAS D. WOOTEN, M. D.

The "Board of Eight University Regents," as the law subsequently designated them, was the one authorized by the University Act of 1881, and was appointed by Governor Roberts and confirmed by the Senate, as follows: Thomas J. Devine, James W. Throckmorton, Richard B. Hubbard, Ashbel Smith, James H. Starr, A. N. Edwards, James H. Bell, and Smith Ragsdale. Dr. Ashbel Smith was chosen president and Regent Edwards secretary at the first meeting of the board, held November 14, 1881, in Austin. Dr. Smith held his position to the time of his death, January 21, 1886, when he was succeeded by Dr. Thomas D. Wooten, who has been unanimously re-elected each year since that date. Mr. Edwards remained secretary of the board for a short while, and was succeeded by Mr. A. P. Wooldridge, who, during his long service which followed, was about equally active with the regents in getting the University organized by devoting attention to the details of the work so necessary for success. He resigned the secretaryship in June, 1894, to take effect the following September, and J. J. Lane, of Austin, was elected to succeed him. Among the gentlemen who were successively appointed to fill vacancies as they occurred in the regency up to the present time were: T. M. Harwood, Thomas D. Wooten, M. L. Crawford, A. T. McKinney, E. J. Simkins, George F. Moore, B. E. Hadra, George T. Todd, Seth Shepard, L. C. Alexander, George W. Brackenridge, A. J. Rose, T. C. Thompson, W. L. Prather, F. W. Ball, Robert E. Cowart, and Amory R. Starr.

Dr. Wooten, as president of the board since 1886, and as the only member resident at the University, has been particularly zealous and instrumental in its success and advancement. It is not too much to say that to his labors, fidelity, and loyal devotion the University owes more than to any other individual regent who has served on the board; and, indeed, more than to any other one man in Texas.

Regents Smith, Harwood, Simkins, Clark, Todd, and Shepard and Secretary Wooldridge were particularly useful, on account of their early and continued membership in the board, in pressing the claims of the University before the legislature. The new members, Brackenridge, Thompson, Prather, Ball, Cowart, and Starr, were also commendably earnest in their work; and Mr. Brackenridge has been noted for his individual liberality in gifts to the University. Other appointees either did not accept or served but a short time. Mr. Ragsdale was a regent only about a year, on account of his election as proctor of the University. Messrs. Simkins, McKinney, and Todd were at different times members of the legislature, and in that capacity did good service in the University's behalf.

A. P. WOOLDRIDGE.

The location of the University, required by the act of 1881 to be made by a vote of the people, was a matter of great competition and heated controversy all over the State, resulting in fixing the main establishment, including the Academic and Law Departments, at Austin, and the medical branch at Galveston, where the Medical College has lately been organized. Austin was also chosen, as the law required, by a vote of the people for the branch (not yet organized) for the education of the colored youth of the State, and the Agricultural and Mechanical College at Bryan had already been designated in the Constitution as a branch of the University. Thus were the relations of the University and its several branches established.

The corner-stone of the University was laid with imposing formalities, November 17, 1882, at Austin, in the presence of several thousand spectators, many of them from distant parts of the State. Honorable Ashbel Smith, president of the regents, delivered an address, which was followed by appropriate remarks by Governor Roberts and Attorney-General McLeary.

The Academic and Law Departments having been already organized by the regents, the University was formally opened in the main University building, September 15, 1883, in presence of a large audience of citizens of Austin and other places in the State. As on the previous occasion, Dr. Smith was the principal speaker, and was followed in addresses by Dr. Mallet, chairman of the University faculty; Governor Ireland, and others. An interesting feature of the occasion was the presentation, in appropriate terms by Mr. Dudley G. Wooten, of a bust of ex-Governor Roberts, tendered to the University by the artist, Elizabet Ney.

The members of the faculty, who were all present, were Professors J. W. Mallet (chairman), Leslie Waggener, William Le Roy Broun, M. W. Humphreys, R. L. Dabney, and H. Tallichet, of the Academic Department, and O. M. Roberts and R. S. Gould, of the Law Department, both of whom had been chief justices of the Supreme Court of Texas. Among the prominent gentlemen who were not applicants, but were solicited to accept chairs in the faculty, were Judge Cooley, of Michigan; Professor Le Conte, of California, and Professor W. T. Harris, since United States commissioner of education, each at a salary of four thousand dollars.

The system of instruction adopted in the University is a combination of what is known, with reference to regular or special courses, as the elective and class methods. The four class distinctions—freshman, sophomore, junior, and senior—represent four years' study in the Academic Department. There are three courses, leading to separate degrees in arts, letters, and science; and four special courses, directed mainly to engineering, to chemistry, to geology, and to physics, and tending to the same degree as the general course in science. There are also post-graduate courses. The degrees awarded are those usually given by American universities, with the exception that no honorary degrees are conferred. The system of distinct schools gives students the advantage of measurably directing their studies into channels pertaining to their intended avocations or professional pursuits. A number of fellowships have been established by the regents, entitling students to whom they are awarded to a salary each of three hundred dollars while assisting to teach as "fellows" in the University.

The University, as required by the law under which it was organized, is open to male and female students alike and is conducted on the simple co-educational plan wherein the students of both sexes attend together in the class and lecture rooms without any special separate provision being made for either, further than the selection of a lady member of the faculty as adviser and guardian of the young ladies,—a position which is very satisfactorily filled by Mrs. H. M. Kirby, of Austin.

A popular step taken by the regents, at the suggestion of the faculty, is the provision for correlating the University with the public schools by admitting graduates of the schools without special examination at the University when the applicants are from approved schools. This action had a tendency to better feeling between the friends of the free schools and the University.

The annual catalogues of the University show the following attendance of students from the beginning:—

Sessions.	Academic.	Law Department.	Medical Department.	Total.
1883-84	166	52	. .	218
1884-85	152	55	. .	207
1885-86	138	60	. .	198
1886-87	170	73	. .	243
1887-88	176	73	. .	249
1888-89	187	90	. .	277
1889-90	230	78	. .	308
1890-91	204	76	. .	280
1891-92	273	92	23	388
1892-93	251	77	25	353
1893-94	249	106	127	482

The attendance of young lady students varied from about forty to sixty each session until the establishment of the School of Pedagogy, in 1891, served to increase the number to about one hundred on account of the large attendance of lady teachers as students.

The catalogues of the Agricultural and Mechanical College being published separately from those of the University, the attendance at the College is not included in the above list. If added, it would swell the registry of matriculates in the University and all its branches for the session of 1893–94 to an aggregate of seven hundred and ninety-four students.

The following gentlemen have filled chairs as professors, or associate or assistant professors, during various periods, in the University :—

First faculty, elected in 1883: J. W. Mallet, Leslie Waggener, William Le Roy Broun, M. W. Humphreys, R. L. Dabney, and H. Tallichet in the Academic Department, and Oran M. Roberts and Robert S. Gould in the Law Department.

LESLIE WAGGENER.

Elected in 1884: In the Academic Department, George Bruce Halsted, James F. Harrison, and Edgar Everhart. In 1885, Alexander Macfarlane and Alvin V. Lane. In 1888, J. R. S. Sterrett, George P. Garrison, Thomas U. Taylor, Robert T. Hill, and W. W. Fontaine. In 1889, Frederick W. Simonds and Thomas Fitzhugh. In 1890, Morgan Callaway, Jr., and Walter Lefevre. In 1891, Sylvester Primer and (in the School of Pedagogy, organized in 1891) Joseph Baldwin. (The organization of a school of pedagogy in the University was first suggested in 1887, in an address by Professor Jacob Bickler, of Austin, president of the Texas Teachers' Association, which convened in Dallas.)

In 1892 the following were elected: In the Law Department, Benjamin H. Bassett; in the Academic Department, Harold N. Fowler, Charles L. Edwards, and (*ad interim*) Edwin W. Fay; and in 1893 the following: In the Academic Department, William J. Battle; in the Law Department, Thomas S. Miller and R. L. Batts, and, as law-lecturers, John W. Stayton, R. R. Gaines, J. L. Henry, and Thomas J. Brown, justices of the Supreme Court of Texas, who performed the service gratuitously.

Professor Bassett was about to assume the duties of his chair, but died soon after his election, in consequence of fatal injuries resulting from a fall on the steps of his hotel in Austin. In 1894 several important changes were made in the faculty on account of some of the professors resigning and others being retired by special action of the regents, and as a result the following gentlemen were elected to fill vacancies: Sidney E. Mezes, David F. Houston, H. W. Harper, Austin L. McRae, and W. W. Norman.

Appointees as "instructors," not including those promoted to professorships, were J. J. Atkinson, E. E. Bramlette, I. H. Bryant, and J. H. Ray, appointed in 1883; Charles F. Gompertz and Mrs. Helen M. Kirby, in 1884; Carlo Veneziani and John P. Nelson, in 1886; Sam J. Jones, in 1887; J. Magnenat and A. C. Jessen, in 1888; Miss Jessie Andrews, in 1889; Gillespie Lewis, in 1891; L. R. Hamberlin, in 1892; J. A. Bailey and R. A. Thompson, in 1893; and Arthur Lefevre and E. P. Shock, in 1894.

Several members of the faculty of the Medical Department at Galveston were elected in 1891 and others in 1892. The first proctor of the University was Professor Smith Ragsdale, elected in 1883, and succeeded in 1885 by Captain James B. Clark. A summer normal school was held in the University during the vacation of 1887, when several members of the University faculty assisted in the lectures.

In 1889 the legislature passed two special acts legalizing donations for professorships and scholarships in the University of Texas or its branches, so as to accomplish and protect the objects of donors. The acts appear together, and, singularly enough, are almost identical as they are published in the laws of 1889,—one of them having been introduced by Representative Brown and the other by Senator McDonald.

An act of 1891 provides for granting licenses to graduates of the Law Department of the University to practise in the courts of the State, upon presentation of their diplomas from the University and certificates of good character from the commissioners' courts of the counties of the residence of the applicants.

The twenty-first legislature was the first to make special appropriations from the general revenue, independent of the University fund, for the "direct support" of the University, and subsequent legislatures have followed the precedent. Able arguments were prepared in the matter by Judge Gould and Senator Maxey.

The Medical College.—The inauguration of the Medical College at Galveston, as a branch of the University, is the result of liberality on the part of citizens at Galveston, and of the city authorities in co-operation with the action of the State, whereby the Medical Department has not only been put into operation sooner than it otherwise would have been, but the University has secured an elegant property, known as the "John Sealy Hospital." The hospital was originally a gift from Mr. Sealy, who named "the City Council of Galveston and the regents of the University of Texas, jointly, for and on behalf of the Medical Department of the University of Texas, to manage and conduct the hospital for the benefit of sick and destitute persons." With the consent of the executors of the trust, it was donated to the State, on condition that the legislature would agree to appropriate fifty thousand dollars towards erecting at once at Galveston the Medical College building of the University, which the vote of the people had decided should be located there "as soon as practicable." The conditions proposed were accepted on the part of the State, and, at the next meeting of the legislature, in 1889, Galveston offered to donate twenty-five thousand dollars upon the further condition that the State would appropriate a like amount for the purposes of the institution, which proposition was also accepted, and all that the terms required was consummated. Representative Gresham, of Galveston, was particularly instrumental in gaining the co-operation of the legislature necessary to secure the benefits of the Sealy bequest. The hospital

occupies the same block with the college building, both of which are elegant structures, finely equipped and admirably located on the Gulf shore. A nurses' training school is a feature of the institution.

DR. J. F. Y. PAINE.

The first annual session of the College began October 1, 1891, and closed March 22, 1892, with a carefully selected faculty provided, of which Dr. J. F. Y. Paine, of Galveston, is the dean. Others serving as professors were Drs. H. A. West, Edward Randall, William Keiller, A. G. Clopton, S. M. Morris, Allen J. Smith, James E. Thompson, and James Kennedy, and, as lecturers, Drs. R. W. Knox, H. P. Cooke, R. C. Hodges, George P. Hall, David Cerna, Cary H. Wilkinson, and George H. Lee; lecturers on medical jurisprudence, T. J. Ballinger, succeeded by Robert G. Street; demonstrator in anatomy, Dr. Thomas Flavin; provost, James P. Johnson.

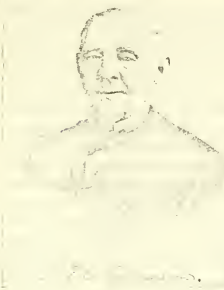
In addition to the donation of the hospital from the John Sealy estate, the University has been favored with other handsome benefactions, including "Brackenridge Hall," the gift of George W. Brackenridge, a banker of San Antonio and one of the University regents, and withal a gentleman of fine literary culture and princely estate. The hall was fully equipped at his own expense for mess-quarters and economic living for the University boys; and it has been intimated that Miss Brackenridge, of San Antonio, contemplates making similar provision for the girl students.

Independent of Colonel Brackenridge's liberality as above, and in some other instances to the University, his advice as a successful business man has been of good service, and shows the wisdom of selecting such men for the regency of the institution. He was of different politics from Governor Ireland, who appointed him, and wrote the governor that it was "the only office in his gift or in the gift of the people that he would accept." In a recent letter, in answer to inquiry as to his continued interest in the University, he stated that for the present he was too much engaged in protecting large interests to consider any proposition requiring a considerable expenditure of funds, and added:

"It was my intention, and is yet, to offer facilities of some kind to deserving students desirous and capable of acquiring higher education. The existing and pressing need of our social and political system is to have a more educated body

of law-makers and administrators. The present tendencies are to chaos, and it is better and more humane to prevent it with brains than with brute force."

A large and valuable collection of rare coins, medals, and other articles of *virtu* was recently presented to the University by Mr. S. M. Swenson, a prominent banker of New York and formerly a citizen of Austin. The gifts were accompanied with an interesting historical letter by the donor, which the regents published as a University bulletin. Donations of books to the University library, which embraces some twelve thousand volumes, amount probably to two thousand or three thousand dollars in value, including some rare and very costly works presented by Mr. W. B. Isham, of New York, and a nice collection also from Dr. E. W. Herndon, of Missouri. Colonel Brackenridge, at the meeting of the regents in September, 1894, presented to the University a large and valuable gift in its way of collections of sea-shells and other interesting articles.



S. M. SWENSON.

During the administration of Governor Ross, in 1888, the State having received nearly one million dollars "indemnity money" from the Federal government for "frontier protection," a strong effort was made, at the extra session of the twentieth legislature, to get a good share of the fund which went to the general revenue towards offsetting the "old claims" of the University existing before the war, and amounting, with the long-accumulated interest, to over four hundred thousand dollars, as submitted in a report called for by the governor; in presenting which the regents, as President Wooten of the board expressed it, "trusted that the money borrowed from the University fund in the time of the emergency of the State would be returned at the time of the emergency of the University." Governor Ross, in submitting this report of the regents, added: "It is not too much to say that justice to a great institution demands that some action be taken with a view to repay the funds of which it has been deprived by State agency for revenue purposes."

The claims in question were those which with other items embraced seventy-four thousand eight hundred and four dollars, received by the State in "Confederate notes" from sales of University lands, and included nearly one hundred and forty thousand dollars in interest, calculated on the above item alone, and were dismissed by the legislature granting the University, as previously stated, the loan of one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars, which, though expressed as a loan, was in effect a donation to that amount. This action, which largely discounted the principal of the claims and almost wholly discarded the interest, was a compromise of various measures proposed in the University's behalf. One of them was a bill by Senator Armistead to repay divers amounts of University funds used by the

State, and aggregating, with interest, some two hundred and seventeen thousand six hundred and eighty dollars; another was by Representative Hudgins, of similar character and for about the same amount; another was by Mr. Gresham to pay certain items of the claims and applying part of the money to the Medical College at Galveston; and another was by Mr. McGaughey to loan the University one hundred thousand dollars for an indefinite time and without interest out of the indemnity fund.

A bill giving the regents control of the University lands was defeated in the House after having passed the Senate. Senator Carter was the author of an important bill, which, however, did not pass, to increase the available resources of the University. Bills by Representatives Curry, Erskine, and Baker, to divide the public domain in fair proportions between the free schools and the University, also failed of consideration in either house. The local representatives at Austin, Messrs. Johnson, Smith, Moore, Hamby, McFall, and Wheless, generally advocated all measures proposed in the interest of the University.

Governor Ireland, in his message to the legislature in 1887, alluded in friendly terms to the University and recommended that University funds to the amount of twenty-two thousand four hundred and ninety-five dollars and seventy-five cents, used for the Prairie View School, should be returned. "The University," he said, "is in its infancy, but on a permanent basis. The faculty is an excellent one, and we look forward to the near approach of the time when our people will educate their children at home and the children of the State will crowd the walls of the University of Texas." As to the generally better feeling which ultimately prevailed towards the University, it was notable that Governor Hogg, in his second canvass, and the several candidates for governor, in 1894, deemed it worth their while to publicly express themselves in its behalf. There is notably, too, much less opposition to the University, from teachers in the church schools, than prevailed for some years after the institution was opened.

In 1893, Elisabet Ney, an artist of Europe, who had settled in Texas, and was the first lady matriculate in one of the leading art schools of Europe and had provided an art studio at Austin, memorialized the legislature in behalf of establishing an "academy of arts" in connection with the University, stating: "The grounds for location of an academy of arts have been offered, and can be secured as a donation to the State. The site offered is in convenient distance of the University of Texas, and such an academy could be established and equipped as a branch of the State University at comparatively small expense,—say, ten thousand dollars. If the legislature should receive this proposition favorably, I will undertake to secure the necessary grounds and superintend the building and equipment of the academy, and when completed furnish instruction in sculpture free of charge." Her idea was to begin the enterprise with a building constructed with reference to such additions and improvements as would be required in response to the growing needs of pupils in the different departments of art,—sculpture, drawing, painting, and music.

The legislature took no definite action on the memorial, but the Art Association at Austin brought the matter of establishing a school of liberal arts at Austin to the attention of the University faculty, which unanimously adopted resolutions presented by the chairman, that "in their opinion such an academy of arts for instruc-

tion in music, painting, and drawing, as was proposed, would be of great service to the entire State in cultivating not only an appreciation of the beautiful, but an ability to apply the principles of art to works of use and ornament; and that it would supplement the present work of the University by supplying instruction in important branches of manual and mental training, for which at present no provision has been made." The resolutions further expressed the hope that the efforts being made to enlist the co-operation of liberal friends in securing a permanent endowment for the academy may be crowned with complete success; and it may be added that if the opportunity presented is not realized, it may be many years before such a desirable and important institution is established in Texas.

Various attempts were made in the legislature to reconcile the difficulties which so long existed between the University and the Agricultural and Mechanical College, such as a bill giving the University regents entire control of the University and all its branches, including the College, and full management of all the lands, and a very comprehensive measure proposed by Representative McGaughey, since State land commissioner, entitled "An Act to pay the old indebtedness of the State to the University, and to give the regents control of the University lands; to better establish the relations between the University and its branches, by placing them all under a new board of management, and giving them each additional and separate land endowments out of the Pacific Railway reservation as a compromise; and making provisions for acceptance of donations from Galveston and the executor of the Sealy estate for the early establishment of the Medical Department of the University at Galveston." One object of this bill was to increase the land endowment of the Agricultural and Mechanical College to an extent that would be satisfactory to the friends of the College, as an independent endowment of its own, to be accepted in lieu of any future appropriations to the College from the funds of the University. This went as far as any action of the legislature could well go, to make the interests of the College and the University separate and clearly distinct, so as to prevent discord between them. The College having been made a branch of the University by the Constitution, such relation could only be changed, so as to make them entirely independent of each other, by a vote of the people on a constitutional amendment. The bill, however, was not even reported back to the House.

The impolicy of State control of University affairs, or mistaken management in at least one important instance, seems to have been demonstrated by the imperious action of the State land board some years ago. For a long period what was known as "free grazing" was tolerated or seemingly at first could not well be prevented by the State, and as a consequence great herds of cattle, horses, and sheep were "free grazed" over the University lands, in common with those of the free schools and the general domain of the State, till finally the owners of the herds were forced by the "land-enclosure act" to enclose their ranges and lease the lands required for grazing their stock. At a time when the lands were most in demand for leasing (the school lands preferably to those of the University on account of superior quality and location) the State land board refused to allow the regents to lease six hundred thousand acres of the University lands at five cents an acre, because the board had established six cents as the minimum for all State lands, and would not relax the rule, although the University land was too small a matter compared with the immense

domain of the free schools to affect competition. Thus, the University lost thirty thousand dollars, annual rental of the land.[1]

The University had before this suffered by the State neglecting to collect over fifty thousand dollars due for arrears of interest on land notes, although the State used large amounts of the proceeds of the lands without attempting to return the money. The heaviest deal against the University, however, was the conversion by the Constitution of 1876 of a vast quantity of the first donated and most valuable lands of the University to the free-school fund. As an estimate of the spoliation, ex-Land Commissioner Walsh, in a recent statement furnished by him, summed up what the University should have had if the intentions of the early law-makers had been observed, as follows :—

Fifty leagues at $1.50 per acre	$332,100
Ten years' interest at ten per cent.	332,100
One million seven hundred and fifty thousand acres at $5 per acre . .	8,750,000
Interest on deferred payments (say, twenty-five per cent. aggregate) .	2,187,500
Total	$11,601,700

"It is doubtful," he said, "if the University will realize ten per cent. of this amount from land donations. Twelve million dollars will probably not more than cover a close estimate."

Commissioner Walsh further stated that he called the attention of General Darnell and other prominent members of the convention of 1875 to the fact that the million acres proposed to be substituted to the University for the railroad alternate lands would not be an equivalent by a rate of five to one, either in quantity or quality, for the original grant, but the convention seemed determined to make the substitution in the interest of the free public schools. General Darnell, in fact, suggested to him that "a million acres of land were enough for any kid-glove institution."

Governors Hubbard, Coke, and Throckmorton all alluded to the University lands, as originally granted, being very valuable on account of their having been selected chiefly in the most prosperous part of the State.

Among the measures proposed in the twenty-third legislature, in 1893, was a proposition to divide the public domain between the free schools and the University, but allowing the latter a liberal proportion, one-third or one-fourth of the lands. The bill was important not merely as a naked proposition, but in the light of contrast with the provision made for other State universities, showing the advantages of a State university tax, particularly as in Michigan, whose university is the leading one of the great West, and, indeed, the first real model of a complete State university in the United States. That great institution is endowed by an educational State tax known as the "university tax," by which the income of the university grows proportionally with the increasing wealth of the State; so its support is neither a matter of constant controversy nor recurring question of legislation further than the legislature desires of its own motion to act in its behalf. Thus, as educa-

[1] The twenty-fourth legislature (1895) passed an act giving the regents control of the University lands.—EDITOR.

tional demands increase with the growth of the State, the University is developed mainly from its separate resources to keep up with the general development of the country and educational progress in other States. In this way the tax is not felt to be burdensome, as the increased income from it simply corresponds with the growth of the State in wealth to justify, as well as in population to require, improved educational means of every character. Not only Michigan, but other States, some of them purposely to profit by her example, have adopted the plan of a State university tax as a sure and the readiest method likely to be acceptable for providing a university fund that would be at once available without waiting for accumulations from interest on bonds or the slow process of land sales, and because, too, it removes such institutions from uncertain dependence upon special legislation for their maintenance.

The university tax in Wisconsin is one-eighth of a mill on the dollar, in Nebraska it is three-eighths, in California one-tenth, and in Colorado three-fourths of a mill, which permanent incomes are generally supplemented by liberal appropriations by the legislature for buildings and other expenditures for the universities. Taking Nebraska University as an illustration of the rapid increase by the tax provision, its income, derived mainly from the tax, increased biennially as follows: For the years 1883 and 1884 (during which the Texas University went into operation) the income for the two years was $107,164.52; for 1885 and 1886, $120,873.80; and for 1887 and 1888, $170,585.65.

For 1889 and 1890, when the above figures were given, the income for the two years was estimated at from $225,000 to $250,000, or for one year largely in excess of the present annual income of the University of Texas. And so, with all the great landed provision made for the Texas University, it falls far short in availability of the tax plan for producing the early revenue which would probably have put the University into operation before the war, or at least long before there was any practical attempt for its organization. A university tax, even at the rate of that of California, of one-tenth of a mill on the present assessed realty values of Texas, would produce over $60,000, which, supplemented with the University's existing resources, would make an annual income of over $100,000 for the University.

Of the various land grants as confirmed to the University, aggregating near two million five hundred thousand acres, there remained unsold two million and twenty thousand acres on December 31, 1891, as shown by the last report of the land commissioner, published in 1892. The permanent University fund, arising mainly from proceeds of sales of University lands, amounted, according to Comptroller McCall's report of August 31, 1893, to $575,840, invested in State bonds, and a variable small amount in cash from such sales awaiting investment.

As the University is now operating, with its scope for usefulness widened, it has grown in public estimation until it has come to be regarded with something of the favor which higher education should everywhere evoke, and which naturally does attach to public institutions as they are kindly fostered and develop and mature with the growth of the country. Though not yet what it must become, the University of Texas is in some respects an exemplar in meeting important educational demands and promoting the general welfare of the State, and as such merits private benefactions as well as public support. What it still needs is to give it a more prac-

tical tendency by providing greater facilities for instruction in arts, mechanics, and technical work generally; in a word, a thoroughly equipped technological department at Austin, or an arts and science school of the highest order, like those of some of the Northern universities.

AGRICULTURAL AND MECHANICAL COLLEGE.

This institution, which is located at Bryan, in Brazos County, owes its foundation to the act of Congress of July 2, 1862, as amended in 1865, and to a resolution of the legislature of Texas, adopted November 1, 1866, accepting the provisions of the Federal grant, and the further legislation of the State in providing for the institution, and the action of the county of Brazos in donating some eighteen thousand dollars in value of grounds and buildings as a bonus for securing the location of the College at Bryan. The Constitution of 1876 made the College a branch of the University of Texas, and it was formally opened for the reception of students on October 4, 1876. It has a permanent endowment of two hundred and nine thousand

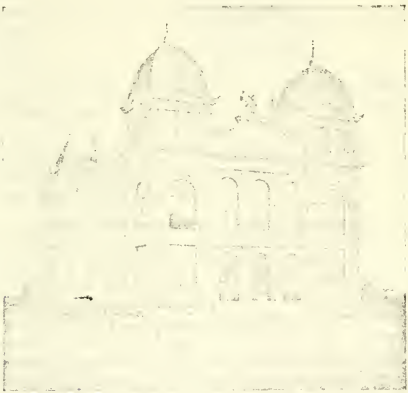
AGRICULTURAL AND MECHANICAL COLLEGE, Bryan, Texas.
Main Building. Ross Hall.

dollars from proceeds of the Federal land grant, which produces in interest an annual income of fourteen thousand two hundred and eighty dollars. It is further maintained by tuition fees paid for students by the State, and by State appropriations, including generally amounts allowed by the legislature from the University fund. The first board of directors met in Austin on July 16, 1875, and proceeded to organize the College, electing Hon. Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi (who, however, did not accept), president of the institution. The present directors are: A. J. Rose (president of the board), W. R. Cavitt, John D. Fields, John Adriance, and John E. Hollingsworth. Ex-Governor L. S. Ross is president of the College.

An act of the legislature made the College the beneficiary of the annual appropriation of fifteen thousand dollars granted to each State by act of Congress in 1887 to equip and support agricultural experiment stations in the several States; and an act of the twenty-second legislature apportioned one-fourth of the money to the Prairie View Normal School as "an agricultural and mechanical branch of the College."

The courses of instruction, as expressed in the College catalogue, "cover all that is comprised in the curricula of the best institutions of our times, except the ancient languages. The time usually devoted to these is here given to the application of the principles in the fields, shops, and laboratories. Mere text-book study is regarded as comparatively of little value unless supplemented by intelligent practice in applied science. This practice occupies from six to eight hours per week. Experimental work furnishes the chief means of training students in accordance with this view, and hence a most important subsidiary object of this institution is the discovery and dissemination of all sorts of information with regard to industrial pursuits."

"The recent action of Congress in setting aside fifteen thousand dollars per annum for the establishment and maintenance of agricultural experimental stations



ASSEMBLY HALL, AGRICULTURAL AND MECHANICAL COLLEGE.

in the several States will in a short time place at the disposal of the college the means for efficient experimental work, and offer to students the great advantages of observation and participation in researches which promise important results for the benefit of the whole country. The 'agricultural experiment station' has been established at the College as one of its departments, and students in the agricultural course will hereafter assist in the work of the station."

As to manual labor the catalogue states: "It is taken for granted that every farmer-boy can learn at home such things as involve mere manual drudgery. It must, therefore, be understood that the student will not waste valuable time in labor which is not instructive. The education here given to young men is not intended

to make mere laborers of them, in the ordinary sense of the word. A student who graduates here may begin life as a field-hand; but it is expected that by virtue of his superior training he will be able speedily to find promotion and easily fill the highest position of honor to which his ability may lead him."

"Military instruction is embraced by law in the objects of the College, and will be given such attention as is necessary for an honest compliance with the act of Congress."

The annual catalogues of the College show the following attendance of students from the beginning:—

Session 1876–77	106	Session 1885–86	170
Session 1877–78	261	Session 1886–87	174
Session 1878–79	236	Session 1887–88	211
Session 1879–80	144	Session 1888–89	205
Session 1880–81	127	Session 1889–90	272
Session 1881–82	258	Session 1890–91	316
Session 1882–83	223	Session 1891–92	331
Session 1883–84	108	Session 1892–93	293
Session 1884–85	142	Session 1893–94	312

The latest estimated value of the property of the College, independent of the endowment fund, as given in the report of the State Agricultural Bureau, is as follows:—

Grounds and buildings	$304,100
Equipment, including stock, machinery, apparatus, library, etc.	77,000
Total value of property	$381,100

During the administration of Governor Roberts, in 1879, there was some complaint of the studies of the College in agriculture and the mechanic arts being too much subordinated to other branches of instruction. Differences also arose between President Gathright and other officers of the College taking sides in the matter, on account of some statements publicly made by one of the adjunct teachers as to the qualifications of one of the professors. The tendency of the College interests on these accounts was such as to induce the governor, after consultation with the members of the College board of directors, of which the governor was *ex-officio* president, to notify the faculty that if these matters could not be adjusted among themselves a reorganization of the College would be necessary. The differences proving irreconcilable, the resignation of the president and others of the faculty involved in the controversy, and embracing all but two of the faculty, was requested. All complied with the request but one, who stated that the board might discharge him, but he would not tender his resignation. The vacancies, however, including the chair of the recalcitrant professor, were soon filled,—Colonel John G. James, president of the Texas Military Institute at Austin, succeeding President Gathright, and the College being opened at the ensuing fall term with the new faculty in charge, and the curriculum of studies reverted to the originally intended channels; so that the College was no longer, as the governor had expressed it, "a mere literary academy with a military attachment," but was a combination of what the law required it to be, as a branch of the University of Texas, for instruction in agricul-

ture, the mechanic arts, and the natural sciences connected therewith;" and, as the Federal act for endowing such institutions further expressed it, "without excluding other scientific and classical studies, and including military tactics."

The prescribed policy has since been more rigidly observed, and the institution is particularly flourishing under the administration of General Ross.

OTHER EDUCATIONAL INSTITUTIONS.

Sam Houston Normal Institute.—In 1879 the Sam Houston State Normal School was established for the purpose of training competent teachers for the public schools. It was named in honor of General Sam Houston, and is located at Huntsville, the last place of residence of the distinguished hero and statesman. It is maintained by State appropriations, and is aided by donations from the Peabody Fund.

The school was opened October 10, 1879, with Bernard Mallon as principal. H. H. Smith succeeded Mallon, and was followed by Joseph Baldwin. The incumbent of the position at this time is H. C. Pritchett, late State superintendent of instruction. All students sign a pledge to teach for a term of years in the public schools, corresponding to their term of studies in the institute, which is open to students of both sexes. The school is subject to the direction of the State Board of Education, which appoints the local board of control. The institution is greatly indebted, not only for its establishment, but also for its continued success, to the liberality of the trustees of the Peabody educational fund, the general agents of the fund, Barnas Sears and J. L. M. Curry, having canvassed the State and done everything possible to build up and foster a normal school worthy of this great State. Governor Roberts co-operated heartily with them in the enterprise. There are memorial windows of Houston and Peabody in the main building.

The property of the institute is valued as follows:—

Grounds and buildings	$149,780
Apparatus and library	15,000
	$164,780

Total donations up to this time from the Peabody fund amount to	$ 58,000
And from State appropriations	256,000
	$314,000

The catalogue for the session of 1892–93 shows an enrolment of four hundred and eight students.

Prairie View Normal School.—This school is located near Hempstead, in Waller County, and as a branch of the Agricultural and Mechanical College at Bryan is governed by the directors of the College. It was organized by act of the legislature in 1876, entitled "An Act to Establish an Agricultural and Mechanical College for Colored Youths." The act allowed twenty thousand dollars for the purpose, and the site then known as "Alta Vista" was purchased, together with suitable agricultural lands. Not being sufficiently patronized to warrant its being maintained as a school of industrial training, it was converted into a State normal to meet the demand for trained colored teachers. The school was made a branch

of the College probably with an eye to revenue from the University fund. At least, such seems to have been the idea of the seventeenth legislature, which made some appropriations to it direct from that fund. The school could not constitute the colored branch of the University which the law required, so as, in that way, to have support from the University fund, for it had already been provided for locating the colored branch of the University at Austin; but it could be, and so was, made a branch of the College at Bryan, as a means for succoring it along with the College from the University fund. Comptroller Brown, however, regarding appropriations of the trust funds of the University by such indirection as unconstitutional, refused to issue the warrants to cover them, and, as it transpired, no further attempt was made in that direction, and the State returned to direct appropriations for the school from general revenue, or the regular school fund.

The first principal of the school was L. W. Minor, who was succeeded by E. H. Anderson. L. C. Anderson has been the principal since 1884. In 1880 there were thirty-six students, in 1890 there were one hundred and eighty, and in 1893 there were two hundred and fifty students. Students of both sexes are admitted to the school. There are twelve teachers, all colored persons. The property of the school is valued as follows: Grounds and buildings, $125,000; apparatus and library, $7000.

The school gets one-fourth of the congressional annual provision of $15,000 for the agricultural experiment station in Texas.

Summer Normals.—For the benefit of teachers and others aiming for that profession the State a few years ago made appropriations for summer normal schools, one of which was held at the State University during the University vacation, when several members of the University faculty assisted as teachers to the classes and as lecturers. The State, however, discontinued the appropriations, and the normals, as well as what are called "teachers' institutes," were held in the various cities and counties which provided for them. The Summer Normals are located and conductors of them appointed by the State superintendent of instruction.

The Schools at San Augustine.—The town of San Augustine is situated on a beautiful and fertile strip of red-land country running in an east and west direction through the counties of Sabine, San Augustine, and Nacogdoches, which was well settled with good farmers as early as 1840, and from that time to 1850 that town was one of the largest and best-improved towns in all Eastern and Northern Texas. It was situated thirty miles west of the Sabine River, on the old King's Highway, leading from Natchitoches in Louisiana through Nacogdoches and Bastrop to San Antonio. The wagon-road made along or near it, commonly called the "San Antonio Road," was the principal thoroughfare along which immigrants came to Texas by land, and it was the route of the first stage line through Eastern Texas. A master builder, a Mr. Sweet, erected a large two-story frame building and sold it to the county of San Augustine for a league of land that had been given to the county for the erection of an academy, though the school had the high-sounding name of "The University." A small school having been taught in it for several years, in the year 1843 a gentleman by the name of Montrose, of medium size, about thirty years old, and of apparently good manners and intelli-

gence, appeared at the hotel, and, learning that there was a large school-building in the town, let it be known that he was a teacher. The board of trustees were soon assembled and sent for him. He was a man of few words and very positive in his utterances. He said, in substance: "All I ask is to give me control of the house, and I will build up a large school that will attract scholars to your town." They complied with his request, and before the end of the second session he had verified his assertion and had a large school, with numbers of scholars from a distance. It so continued for several years. One of his great merits as a teacher was his control of the scholars in school by a regular system, and the anxiety he produced in them to attend school punctually and an ardent desire to attend to their studies. He did not seek to acquire favor in the community, except through his scholars, and was seldom seen upon the streets of the town or otherwise in communication with its citizens. He taught school as a business strictly and had no difficulty in collecting his tuition through his scholars, although there was a great scarcity of money in the country. After his school increased his plan for assistance was to engage some of his advanced scholars to teach classes under his direction. The school soon became the pride of the town and surrounding country, with a united recognition of its advantages. It may be instructive to tell how discord and contention were produced that ultimately led to bad consequences in reference to that and other schools in that place:

A Methodist preacher came there, fresh from "The States," as the United States were then called, and preached a sermon in favor of "perfect sanctification on this earth," the most numerous denomination of Christians there being Methodists. Professor Montrose, being a Presbyterian and a good reader, had occasionally read sermons, as a layman, to a few Presbyterians and others on Sunday. By their urgency he was induced to read in public a sermon opposed to the doctrine advanced by the Methodist minister, who promptly challenged him for a public debate on the subject. Professor Montrose, though not a preacher, was pressed into the debate by his religious friends, moderators were chosen to regulate the debate, and it was held before a large audience. Professor Montrose simply read extracts from books when it came to his turn to speak, and he did it with such impressiveness as to make it appear that he had achieved a victory over the challenger. At once a religious storm was raised. There being a number of prominent Methodist preachers and other leading citizens of that denomination in the town and in the surrounding country, it was readily determined to put up in that place a Methodist college. A large three-story frame building was erected, and an excellent teacher, as well as preacher, was brought from Ohio to take charge of the college. His name was Janes, a cousin of Bishop Janes. Other Methodist preachers were engaged to teach in the college and several Presbyterian ministers were engaged to assist Professor Montrose. Both schools prospered for several years, with scholars in each to the number of one hundred and fifty. San Augustine claimed to be the Athens of Texas. There are two prominent citizens still living who were educated at one of those schools,—Colonel Frank B. Sexton, who was a member of the Confederate States Congress, and Colonel J. F. Miller, of Gonzales, ex-member of the United States Congress. Doubtless there are others living of the many since prominent men who received their education at one

of those rival schools. The rivalry that made a spasmodic success for a time for both schools could not last long. Professor Janes left the college, and it declined and was sold to the trustees of the so-called university for a female institute. Professor Montrose, hampered with assistants, contrary to his own plan of getting them by engaging his advanced students, left and afterwards taught at Nacogdoches, and at Anderson in 1857. His only son, Thomas Montrose, is a prominent lawyer in Greenville, Texas. The university, as it was called, struggled along for a time under its trustees, but gradually declined, and that place has never been able to keep up a good school since its failure. Both of the buildings have been burned, and the vacant places where they stood attest the sad calamity of a religious rivalry entering the management of the schools of a community, where it assumes the character of bitter partisanship.

Schools at Gilmer.—For a continuous period of ten years previous to the summer of 1870 Professor Morgan H. Looney kept an excellent school at Gilmer, averaging largely over two hundred students annually, of all classes, male and female, young men and women, as well as the minor children of the town and neighborhood, during ten months each year. The school was attended by advanced scholars from a hundred miles in every direction. His pupils were taught from the lowest grade to a high grade in the English and ancient languages, in mathematics, and in composition and other studies. He was a man of medium size, vigorous in speech and action, had been thoroughly educated at the college at Milledgeville, Georgia, had taught school as a profession, and had two brothers that were teachers. One of them, Mr. Bud Looney, assisted him part of the time at Gilmer, though his assistants were generally scholars that he had educated, consisting of two young women who taught classes of girls and two young men who taught classes of boys. He also taught classes of both male and female students together. As a teacher of both high and low classes he had an extraordinary capacity of explanation that made even the dullest student understand him. He artfully excited a lively interest in all of his pupils to learn, and with many of them to become well educated in the higher branches of learning.

Equal to any other of his remarkable powers as a teacher was that of the systematic government of his school within the school-rooms, and of his students when not in the school-building. He took general supervision of his students everywhere, day and night, from the time of their enrolment until they left the school. Nearly every residence in the town received his students as boarders, and any misconduct there, or upon the streets, or in the public-houses, would be reported to Professor Looney, his school and its management being the leading business enterprise of the little town. As part of his government he had a set of rules regulating the conduct of his pupils both in and out of school-hours. Some of them were that there must be no arguments leading to contentions about politics or religion; that there must be no criticism upon the dress of any pupil, whether it was coarse or fine; that everywhere young men were to act as gentlemen and young women as ladies; that they must govern themselves according to his rules, otherwise leave the school; that while attending his school they must make learning their exclusive business as a regular occupation. To enforce these and many other requirements he opened his school every Monday morning with a brilliant lecture

upon one or more of the rules, which were illustrated by interesting dissertations upon government generally. So interesting were these lectures that citizens of the town who had leisure would attend them frequently, and some of them regularly. A feature and object of the lectures was that if any of the larger students had been guilty of any violation of the rules or other impropriety during the previous week, it would be discussed, without naming the guilty party, in a way to make such improper conduct look extremely objectionable, and sometimes ridiculous or odious, according to its magnitude. It had a wonderful corrective effect. If he became fully satisfied that any of his larger students would not voluntarily comply with his rules, he quietly gave him notice in person to leave the school. There were no trustees and no trials for misconduct, and it was not publicly known why the student left.

One of his rules was that there was to be no familiar communication between the girls and the boys. That rule was suspended occasionally, with permission for the boys, large and small, to call upon the girls Saturday evening (not longer than nine o'clock at night), and accompany them to church on Sunday, which was generally done in the most genteel manner. No one of the churches was particularly favored.

Composition was taught as a special study each Saturday forenoon, by Professor Looney himself, for an extra tuition fee of five dollars per session. Those students who sought to be taught composition were divided into three classes,—first, second, and third,—according to their advance in education, each class being taught separately. The manner of teaching was as follows: Professor Looney would write upon the blackboard a subject, it usually being a sentence taken from some book, either very simple or otherwise, according to the grade of the class present. He would divide and subdivide the subject as might be necessary. The members of the class, with paper and pencil, would copy the subject as presented on the blackboard. The professor would then deliver a lecture upon the subject, making pointed explanations of each part of the subject in the hearing of the class, which each member of the class would reproduce and read before him at a given time, for his verbal correction as to the matter and style and pronunciation in the reading. In his advanced classes he would select subjects at different times that admitted of a wide range of discussion upon government, ethics, literature, history, and science, that furnished his students with an immense amount of varied information and excellent style of expression and speaking that soon enabled them to write original compositions that excited the surprise and admiration of their hearers. This was conspicuous at the examinations, lasting three days at the end of each session, which were usually attended by at least six or eight hundred visitors, who were seated in the large room of the second story of the building during the examinations. It should not be omitted to state, as a part of his system of elementary education, that for each one of the five days of each week of the session there was a lesson in English grammar, in which all those studying it, or who had studied it, participated, though it might not last one-half an hour, and the school at its close each day had a general spelling lesson. Everything considered, it was a model school, under the direction and supreme control of one man, and many were the young women and men who received a good substantial education at it.

During three years—1868, 1869, and 1870—Judge O. M. Roberts, afterwards Governor Roberts, moved with his family to Gilmer, to send his children to that school and to teach a law school in connection with Professor Looney's school. He also taught book-keeping for the benefit of young men who were not able to go off to a school for that purpose. His habit was to give two or three hours to his law classes, and, having a successful law practice, to devote the balance of the day to his office and law business, much the same as if he had not been engaged in teaching. The courts of that county were attended by very able lawyers, among whom were Colonels Lafayette Camp and David B. Culberson, which made the practice there very interesting. Judge Roberts, in addition to his teaching, delivered weekly lectures in the school upon law, the State, and scientific subjects, synopses of which were made and published in the local paper. His law school turned out a number of students who made successful lawyers, among whom may

BAYLOR UNIVERSITY, WACO.

be mentioned Judge Sawnie Robertson, of the Supreme Court, Attorney-General John D. Templeton, Judge Aldredge, and Mr. Thomas Montrose. Honorable Charles A. Culberson, governor of Texas, attended the Looney School.

Unfortunately, when Professor Looney's school was at the zenith of great prosperity, the professor was induced, on account of the failing health of his wife, to move, in the fall of 1870, to Northwest Arkansas. He abandoned his great work, shedding tears on his departure, and the Looney School was closed at Gilmer.

Denominational Schools.—Among the earliest church schools chartered in Texas were Rutersville College and Baylor University, the former at Rutersville, in Fayette County, and the latter at Independence, in Washington County. Both were granted charter privileges by the republic of Texas, the college in 1840 and the University in 1845. Baylor University was long prosperous at Independence under the presidency of Dr. William Carey Crane, who was an intimate friend and the literary executor and biographer of General Sam Houston. After his death it

was consolidated with Waco University, which was chartered in 1861, and the institutions thus consolidated are known as "Baylor University at Waco," with Rev. Rufus C. Burleson as its president, who was also a contemporary and warm personal friend of General Sam Houston and one of the most noted educators in the country. This institution has always been a Baptist favorite. An attendance of nearly eight hundred students, the session of 1893-94, attests the great popularity of the institution. The Baylor Female College, also chartered in 1845 and removed from Independence to Belton in 1885, is also operated under the tacit indorsement of the Baptist Church.

RUFUS C. BURLESON.

Rutersville College was the first Methodist school chartered in Texas, and was but one of many of the early educational enterprises put on foot by that church, which did well for some years, but continued to exist only as the nucleus for other schools. Among the earlier establishments may be mentioned the McKenzie College at Clarksville, Wesleyan College at San Augustine, and the Soulé University at Chapel Hill, some or all of which were operated at considerable expense to the church for the school property. It was the failure of such scattered enterprises that led to the concentration of further efforts of the church and the adoption by its several con-

LADIES' ANNEX OF SOUTHWESTERN UNIVERSITY, Georgetown, Texas.

ferences of a resolution offered in 1869 by Rev. F. A. Mood, providing for "permanent and systematic adjustment of the educational interests of the church within this State." Accordingly, by consent of the conferences and special act of the

legislature, the chartered rights of Rutersville, McKenzie, Wesleyan, and Soulé Colleges accrued to the "Southwestern University" at Georgetown.

The establishment of Rutersville College was inspired by Rev. Martin L. Ruter during his missionary service in Texas. The first president was Rev. Chauncey Richardson, who was succeeded by Rev. William Halsey, and he by Rev. Homer S. Thrall. McKenzie College had its beginning in 1841, but was not chartered until several years later. It had but one president, Rev. J. W. P. McKenzie, who died after some forty years' continuous service. Wesleyan College was chartered in 1844. Rev. Lester James was the first president. Soulé University was chartered in 1856. Its first president was William Halsey.

Other denominations, if not so early in the field, have been proportionately active and enterprising in school work. The following is a list of the more or less prominent denominational schools in operation in Texas. [*Abbreviations.*—Bp. for Baptist Church; C. C. for Christian Church; Cath. for Catholic Church; Ep. for Episcopal Church; Meth. for Methodist Church; Pr. for Presbyterian Church; C. Pr. for Cumberland Presbyterian Church; C. S. for Colored Schools] :—

Name and Location of Schools.	Value of Property.	Amount of Endowment.	Students.	Principals.
Austin College (Pr.), Sherman	$48,000	$60,000	147	S. M. Luckett.
Add-Ran University (C. C.), Thorp Springs (now at Waco)	42,500	....	375	Addison Clark.
Fort Worth University (Meth.), Fort Worth	113,000	....	732	O. L. Fisher.
St. Mary's Academy (Cath.), Austin	110,000	....	230	Sister Mary Mildred.
Southwestern University (Meth.), Georgetown	137,000	....	490	Rev. J. H. McLean.
Ursuline Convent (Cath.), Galveston	$61,500	....	125	Mother Mary Joseph Dallnier.
St. Mary's College (Cath.), San Antonio	61,000	....	400	Brother John Wolf.
Baylor Female College (Bp.), Belton	167,500	....	221	E. H. Wells.
Ursuline Academy (Cath.), San Antonio	200,000	....	200	Superioress Madam St. Magdalen.
Carr-Burdette Christian College (C. C.), Sherman	85,000	....	..	Rev. and Mrs. O. A. Carr.
Polytechnic College (Meth.), Fort Worth	47,500	100,000	202	Rev. W. F. Lloyd.
Central College (Meth.), Sulphur Springs	20,500	....	169	F. J. Squires.
North Texas Female College (Meth.), Sherman	52,000	....	264	Mrs. Lucy Kidd Key.
Granbury College (Meth.), Granbury	16,000	....	130	E. P. Williams.
Trinity University (C. Pr.), Tehuacana	75,000	75,000	300	B. D. Cockrill.
Coronal Institute (Meth.), San Marcos	30,500	....	341	A. A. Thomas.
Ursuline Academy (Cath.), Dallas	100,000	....	75	Mother St. Paul.
Northwest Texas College (Bp.), Decatur	40,000	....	150	A. J. Emerson.
Simmons College (Bp.), Abilene	26,500	....	93	George O. Thatcher.
St. Mary's Institute (Ep.), Dallas	67,500	....	75	Miss Maria K. Torbert.
St. Edward's College (Cath.), Austin	85,000	....	185	F. J. Hurth.
Baylor University (Bp.), Waco	275,000	....	774	Rev. Rufus C. Burleson.
Glen Rose Institute (Pr.), Glen Rose	9,000	....	180	O. E. Arbuckle.
Sacred Heart Academy (Cath.), Galveston	38,000	....	82	Mother M. Pauline.
Texas Female Seminary (C. Pr.), Weatherford	31,000	....	60	Rev. J. S. Howard.
Chapel Hill Female College (Meth.), Chapel Hill	10,500	....	85	Rev. S. M. Godbey.
St. Mary's Hall for Girls (Ep.), San Antonio	36,000	3,000	90	Rev. Wallace Carnahan.
West Texas Military Academy (Ep.), San Antonio	25,800	5,100	49	Rev. A. L. Barleson.
Academy of the Incarnate Word (Cath.), Houston	25,000	....	200	Mother M. Gabriel.
Centenary College (Meth.), Lamasas	10,750	....	187	Henry A. Hayes.
Daniel Baker College (Pr.), Brownwood	47,500	....	118	Rev. B. T. McClelland.
Protestant Episcopal Seminary (Ep.), Austin	60,000	50,000	..	Opens in 1893.
San Antonio Female College (Meth.), San Antonio	50,000	....	..	Rev. J. H. Harrison.
Male and Female Academy (C. S.), Marshall	60,000	....	370	
Mary Allen Seminary for Girls (C. S.), Crockett	20,000	....	220	Rev. John B. Smith.
Paul Quinn College (C. S.), Waco	61,000	....	150	H. T. Kealing.
Guadalupe College (C. S.), Seguin	47,500	....	276	Rev. David Abner, Jr.
Hearne Academy (C. S.), Hearne	5,000	....	115	M. H. Broyles.
Tillotson Collegiate Institute (C. S.), Austin	60,500	....	156	Rev. William M. Brown.
Sam Houston College (C. S.), Austin	5,000	....	100	Rev. T. M. Dart.

Other Institutions.—Other institutions of a more or less educational character are :—

Institute for the Blind, located at Austin; Dr. Frank Rainey, superintendent.

Institute for the Deaf and Dumb, at Austin ; W. A. Kendall, superintendent.

State Orphan Asylum, at Corsicana ; W. S. Worsham, superintendent.

Institute for Blind, Deaf, and Dumb Colored Children, at Austin ; W. H. Holland, superintendent.

The Bayland Orphans' Home at Houston and Buckner's Orphan Asylum at Dallas are recognized as excellent private establishments for the care and education of orphan children. There are also orphan asylums or children's homes, under church supervision or maintained by public charity, in Fort Worth, Galveston, Houston, and San Antonio, and some other points in the State.

Conclusion.—As seen from the history presented, the wisdom of the founders of the Texas republic and the liberality of the people of Texas, in providing for public education, have conduced to the establishment of perhaps the grandest educational fund in the world,—over one hundred million dollars !

As for the University of Texas, two specially important measures have been suggested in the minds of its friends for making its resources more largely and immediately available : one by additional provision by the State of a special University tax and the other to authorize bonding the University lands—say, for three or four million dollars, or even five million dollars—and holding the lands in trust for the interest and sinking fund and eventual payment of the bonds, and in the mean time leasing the lands to produce an annual rental to meet the interest and ultimately extinguish the principal of the obligation. In this way the lands could be withheld from sale till the demand for them, increasing with the wealth of the State, rendered them fourfold more valuable or worth, say, ten million dollars, or twelve million dollars, which would put the amount, in point of income from its endowment, on a footing with most of the great universities in other States. The propriety of a separate university instead of a branch university for the colored youth of the State is a matter which is calculated to excite attention for some time, or at least till the provisions of the Constitution on the subject are changed or more practically considered. It has been argued that the proposed colored branch of the Texas University was to have been established in deference to public sentiment in behalf of the freedmen of the State. But while, as a matter of policy incident to the war, this was then naturally to be expected, it is now believed that the branch establishment is no longer as desirable, in the estimation of the colored people and in acknowledgment of their claims under the Constitution, as would be the organization of an independent university for them, whether at Austin or Bryan or some other place, for the highest possible education of their children.

CHAPTER IV.

PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY, GEOLOGY, AND RESOURCES.

BY E. T. DUMBLE.[1]

BOUNDARIES AND AREA.—Texas, the most southerly of the United States, is bounded on the east by Louisiana and Arkansas, on the north by Arkansas, Indian Territory, Oklahoma, and New Mexico, on the west by New Mexico and the republic of Mexico, and on the south by the Gulf of Mexico. Its situation, as related to the continental area, is midway between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans and about equidistant from the equator and the arctic circle. In latitude it extends from the mouth of the Rio Grande, in twenty-five degrees fifty-seven minutes, to thirty-six degrees thirty minutes,—the northern line of the Panhandle. El Paso, or Frontera, which is the most western point in the State, is in longitude one hundred and six degrees forty minutes, while the extreme eastern point, on the Sabine River, is ninety-three degrees thirty minutes west of Greenwich. The entire area, as estimated by Mr. Henry Gannet, chief geographer of the United States Geological Survey, is two hundred and sixty-five thousand seven hundred and eighty square miles. Of this total area, however, the same authority estimates that three thousand four hundred and ninety square miles are covered with the waters of coast-bays, rivers, and lakes, which, if deducted, will leave a total land area of two hundred and sixty-four thousand seven hundred and fifty-two square miles,—about one-eleventh of the entire area of the United States. By reason of its position and of its great extent, stretching as it does over thirteen degrees of longitude and more than ten of latitude, it comprises in its varied features, in addition to those which may be claimed as peculiarly Texan, many of the characteristics of the States contiguous to it, and thus forms the connecting link between the Gulf Slope, the Mississippi Valley, the Great Plains, and the Rocky Mountains, as these great divisions converge towards the south.

Physical Aspect.—Were it possible to view this great area from such a point as would bring it all within the range of vision, a plain over seven hundred miles in breadth from east to west and over nine hundred from north to south

[1] In the preparation of this article, the writer has consulted such publications as were accessible to him, including the reports of the survey of the Pacific Railway and the Mexican boundary, reports of the tenth census, the various reports of the geological survey of Texas, general works on the State, maps, and many special articles bearing directly upon the subject. But to this much has been added from knowledge gained through personal observation, and it is to that extent an original contribution to the subject. Valuable assistance was rendered by Professor E. D. Cope, of Philadelphia, and Mr. J. A. Singley, of Giddings, in the preparation of that portion of the article relating to the *fauna* of the State, and the statements made are largely taken from their publications or private communications.

would be seen; its northern and northwestern border raised to a height of one mile above the level of the sea, its surface as a whole gently sloping to the east, southeast, and south, until, at its farther extremity, it dips one hundred fathoms beneath the waters of the Gulf of Mexico. Two notable depressions would be observed in this plain,—the valley of the Nueces and the great central basin carved by the waters of the Red, Brazos, and Colorado Rivers and their predecessors. Minor depressions would also be observed along the various water-courses; but, while in these valleys many hills appear, no high mountains would be seen except west of the Pecos, where the plain is broken by single peaks and detached mountain ranges. By virtue of their origin, the hills of a small area in Central Texas and another in Greer County may lay some claim to be called mountains, although now of only moderate elevation. Outside of these three areas the physiographic unit is a plain, in which erosion by the natural agencies of air, rain, wind, and frost has, by the carving out of the valleys, sculptured the hills, thus producing the present varied aspect and topography of the State.

The topographic features of an area are largely controlled by the character of its geological substructure and the manner of their development; therefore, before defining these, it may be well to glance first at the geology of the State.

Geology.—The oldest rock materials in this Texan region of which definite knowledge has been obtained are found in Llano, Burnet, and adjacent counties. While granites occur beyond the Pecos, and have been supposed to belong to a similar age, the fact is not definitely determined. These ancient or archean materials consist of granites, gneisses, schists, and marbles, which are cut by numerous intrusions of eruptive rocks, and are highly altered by metamorphism. While our knowledge of the conditions surrounding the development and extent of this most ancient land is necessarily limited, the present surface exposures are doubtless only remnants of a much greater area, and they may have been part of a mountain chain or elevated plateau which stretched northward towards the Lake Superior region and westward towards the Pacific; yet there is found, in the present plateau formed by these rocks, the pivotal point around which all later formations have been developed, and a monumental area of the earliest dry land of the region known as Texas. These rocks were strongly folded by the convulsions to which they were subjected, and it was in the great furrows of this archean island, or, more probably, archean headland, that the lowest sedimentary rocks were deposited. Their composition proves that they were derived in part from the materials of the land, and the deposits give unmistakable evidence of having been formed along the shores of the ancient sea. They also show that the area was subject to fluctuations of level, but, in spite of these fluctuations and the struggle of the powers of the sea and air to destroy and submerge this land, it grew and extended its borders by adding an irregular fringe of one formation after another, until, at the beginning of the coal period, it was at least as large as our Central Mineral Region. The crumpled, faulted and disturbed condition of many of the rock sheets, their metamorphism, and the presence of intrusive or eruptive rock materials among them, show the continuance of those volcanic forces which so characterized the archean era. East of the Pecos these great activities, however, seem to have lost much of their power previous to the beginning of the carboniferous period, and after that time had their

strongest manifestation within this central region, and with, perhaps, a single exception did not greatly affect the surrounding deposits of later age.

The northern shore line of this land area of carboniferous times, with its numerous bays and headlands, is plainly traceable through Lampasas and San Saba Counties to-day, and in the sea, which stretched northward to the Ouachita Mountains and westward to or beyond the Rocky Mountains, were deposited the sands, clays, coals, and limestones of that period. The deposits east of the Llano Estacado show several changes of level, and consequently indicate seas of varying depth, caused by alternate elevation and subsidence, while to the west deep-sea conditions prevailed and the deposits are chiefly limestones.

Gradually the shore lines widened, the bottoms of the seas were elevated or silted up, and land-locked waters were created, which favored the formation of the vast deposits of gypsum and salt which are found in the upper permian. Finally, the paleozoic era, or that characterized by the older types of life, was closed by the emergence of the old sea-floor, and the region north and west of Llano, including the country west of the Pecos, became dry land.

This land area, the total extent of which cannot now be surmised, was then subjected to erosive agencies similar to those which are operating to-day, from the effects of which, in the eastern portion of the region, resulted the base-levelling of the permian and carboniferous beds, while in the west great valleys were carved out and mountain masses left standing high in air. During the early mesozoic era a body of brackish water existed in the region now known as the Llano Estacado and eastward for an unknown distance, and in this were laid down the beds of the triassic. Since no traces of any deposits of the jurassic age have been recognized, the conclusion is that dry land prevailed all through that period.

At the beginning of the cretaceous the mesozoic sea began its encroachment from the west and south, and, while it was unable to surmount all of the residual mountain blocks of trans-Pecos Texas, and therefore deposited its sandstones, clays, and limestones along their flanks and in the valleys, it gradually crept northward over the base-levelled area of Central Texas, submerging the greater part of it and covering it with deposits of gravel, clay, and limestone, the thickness of which decreased rapidly towards the north.

The rocks of this division are typically exposed on the Texas and Pacific Railroad between Milsap and a point four miles east of Fort Worth, and on the Colorado River between Smithwick Mills and Austin.

The Caprina limestone of this period is of considerable thickness and hardness, and has had great influence in determining the topography of the State. It is only by reason of its erosion that we possess our present knowledge of the deposits of the carboniferous and permian, which would otherwise be buried several hundred feet below the surface. The granite highlands in Llano County seem to be the only area which escaped the covering of this almost universal limestone mantle.

In mid-cretaceous times this Caprina limestone, with whatever material may have overlaid it, again became a land area in North Central Texas, and remnants of it may now be seen in the line of hills south of the Texas and Pacific Railway as far west as Big Springs, and in detached blocks and buttes, such as Double Mountain, McKenzie's Peak, etc., north of that road.

During the upper cretaceous the sea extended from New Jersey along the border of the Atlantic and Gulf of Mexico, covering a large part of Texas and the western portion of the continent. The rocks of this period in Eastern and Southern Texas consist of the sandstones of the Lower Cross-Timbers, the clays lying east of them, the white limestone of the Dallas-Austin region, the blue and yellow clays of the main Black-Waxy Prairies, and the more sandy beds succeeding. Along the Rio Grande border the same rocks are found except the lower sands, which are missing everywhere south of the Brazos River, save perhaps along the flank of the Diabolo Mountains. In addition, however, we find extensive deposits of still higher beds, consisting of sands and clays with seams of coal, and above these a great thickness of limestone and clays, all of which are the direct continuation of similar beds in the western portion of the continent. In the trans-Pecos country, the closing of this period was marked by vast flows of lava, which occur not only as thin beds among the uppermost members of the series and cut them in the form of dykes in various directions, but cover these beds in places to a depth of three hundred feet.

These eruptions were accompanied by great faulting and slipping of portions of the earth's crust, so that along the fault-lines it sometimes happens that two beds of rock, one of which was originally two thousand feet above the other, lie side by side, showing that one has fallen or risen that far below or above its proper place. This volcanic activity is manifested east of the Pecos by dykes of basalt coming up through the cretaceous, and by knobs or hills of the same material forming a direct line from Mount Inge to Pilot Knob south of Austin. The earliest of the two principal lines of this faulting in West Texas runs north and south, the other east and west. To the action of the latter we probably owe the escarpment paralleling the Southern Pacific Railroad west of San Antonio and extending eastward to and beyond Austin, known in part as the Balcones. To the effects of the other is seemingly due the fact that these beds have so narrow an exposure in the vicinity of Eagle Pass, and that the line between the tertiary and cretaceous in that area has practically a north and south direction.

The close of the cretaceous ushered in the cenozoic era, marked by more modern forms of life and a varied mammalian fauna. The waters of the present Gulf of Mexico were still connected directly with the Pacific Ocean, as is evidenced by the occurrence of certain species of shells in the lower Texan beds and those of like age on the Pacific Slope, which are not found in contemporaneous deposits of the Atlantic border proper. All of that portion of the State north of the Balcones and west of the ninety-seventh meridian, including trans-Pecos Texas, was dry land. From this land area the rivers brought down their burdens of sand, clay, and lime, and deposited them in bays or comparatively shallow waters similar to those of the present Gulf coast. Succeeding the earliest clays and limestones there was a great coal-making age, and in it were formed the deposits of brown coal and lignites in beds extending along the entire Gulf shore of that time, from Red River to the Rio Grande. Then followed a period of marine or brackish-water deposits, accompanied by or alternating with lagoons and peat-bogs, in which were formed thin beds of brown coal and the iron ores of East Texas. To this period belong also the red hills and the beds of green-sand marl of the same region.

Following this came a series of clay deposits and a belt of sands, sandy clays, and brown coals, such as are seen at Rockland, Trinity, LaGrange, and westward to the Rio Grande. Upon these were deposited another series of clays, and with them, so far as surface exposures are known, ended the eocene or lower division of the tertiary. It was during or just following this period that the Gulf of Mexico was finally separated from the Pacific Ocean, the marine faunas of the two areas being quite different after this.

As this additional land was added to the pre-existing area by gradual elevation above the sea, the degradation of the entire surface was continued and the materials were carried out and deposited in the waters off shore. This continued erosion so lowered the level of the region of the Llano Estacado that towards the end of the middle tertiary or miocene time a lake was either formed there or possibly may have been extended southward from the northern lakes, and into this a considerable section of the country was drained. In the limy sands of this lake-basin (aptly termed mortar-beds by Professor Marsh) are great quantities of bones of the land animals which lived in and were characteristic of that age. Along the Gulf shore, however, marine conditions still existed, as is proved by the boring of the Galveston deep well, in which, at a depth of over two thousand feet, shells were found identical with those of the same period in Florida and the Bahamas.

The pliocene, or upper tertiary, was a period of great erosive activity. The lake condition of the Llano Estacado continued and was extended to the area of the coastal slope south of the Balcones, but whether as a direct continuation of the Llano lake or as a separate basin has not yet been positively determined. Its rock materials consist of heavy beds of gravel and sand, clays, and conglomerates of sand with balls and fragments of clay, capped by a white, limy clay known as adobe. In the eastern portion of the State the lime is largely replaced by ferruginous material, and in many places the middle clay member is missing and the adobe caps the gravel bed, or so permeates it as to form heavy beds of conglomerate. These beds are characterized, both in the Llano Estacado region and on the Coastal Slope, by the vertebrate fossils they contain.

West of the ninety-seventh meridian and south of the Balcones this adobe covered the entire area, and, where it became dry land through the drainage or drying up of the lakes, formed a wide, white, chalk-like plain.

This whole area has also been subjected to oscillations of more or less local character, besides sharing in continental movements, the elevation of the Rocky Mountains having given it its present tilt to the southeast.

With the emergence of these deposits the tertiary era closed and the quaternary began. During this period (and probably earlier also) lake conditions existed through the trans-Pecos, in which area erosive activity was very great, the valleys between the mountain ranges, which were the sites of these lakes, being filled in places with detritus to a depth of more than twelve hundred feet. A lake existed also in the country east of the Llano Estacado, but at a considerably lower level.

On the Llano Estacado and Coastal Slope depressions and valleys were eroded, and in these were deposited the ashy sands of the Equus beds, with the fossil remains of extinct horses, etc., followed in the latter area by the coastal clays and sands.

Physical Geography.—The greater physical divisions of Texas are[1] the Gulf Slope, the Central Basin, and the Mountain Systems.

The first two of these divisions are series of plains, while the last includes the connecting link between the Rocky Mountain ranges crossing from New Mexico into Mexico, between the Pecos and the Rio Grande, as well as two areas now much degraded, but once forming portions of ranges of great age. The plains of the Gulf Slope may be divided into the Coast Prairies, the Tertiary or Lignitic belt, the Black-Waxy Prairie, and the Grand Prairie. The subdivisions of the Central Basin are the Denuded Areas, the Seymour Plateau, and the Llano Estacado. The Mountain Systems comprise the Wichita Mountains, the Granite Highlands of the Central Mineral Region, and the trans-Pecos Mountains and their intervening lake-basins or flats.

The Coast Prairies.—The Coast Prairies present in their substructure the most recent accretion to the land area of the State. This marginal fringe or plain, which is almost level and extends interiorward for a distance varying from fifty to one hundred miles, is but a portion of the last terrane deposited in the waters of the Gulf. The elevation which added it to the land surface was insufficient to raise the entire area above the sea, and a portion of it is, therefore, to be found below the rolling waves of the American Mediterranean. Its structural limit is marked by the one-hundred-fathom line of sea-depth, beyond which the bottom of the sea slopes downward with great rapidity. Were the level of the sea lowered six hundred feet, it would, therefore, add many square miles of land to our coast, and an increase of depth of one hundred feet would decrease the present area of the State one-tenth and engulf some of our fairest cities. While in a general way the features of this area are a continuation of those of the other Gulf States east of Texas, there are, nevertheless, striking differences to be noted. The comparative absence of marsh land is one of these, for, except the Sabine marshes, in the eastern portion of the State, there is comparatively little marsh land on the coast. It is true that, owing to the defective drainage, many low places are to be found in which water stands in small lakes for some time after heavy rains; yet these are not true marshes, which, outside the limited area of sea-marsh, exist only in some of the bottom lands adjacent to the larger streams. The coast line differs also from that of the other Gulf States in having an almost continuous chain of islands and peninsulas along its front, instead of being indented by large bays extending many miles inland.

The plain is new-born. The eroding fingers of Time have only begun to hollow channels in its surface. The streams, crossing it in their flow gulfward, move sluggishly between low banks, with few if any tributaries, and many of the channels, on their approach to the Gulf, are buried in large estuaries. The Brazos alone of the Texas rivers has cut its way through the clay of the belt which it did so much to form, and empties its waters directly into the Gulf. The land bordering these estuaries, instead of sloping gradually up from the water, forms high, vertical banks, and

[1] The early writers on Texas (1836 to 1840) divided the State into the level, undulating, and mountainous or hilly region. The first corresponded to the Coast Prairies of the present classification; the second to the Lignitic and Black-Waxy subdivisions; while the third was at first our Grand Prairie, and later, as the borders were extended, it was made to include the mountain region west of the Pecos.

open prairies stretch to their very edge. The increase in elevation of this plain from the Gulf shore to the northwest is so gentle as to be almost imperceptible, its average being only about one foot per mile. It is slightest near the coast, becoming somewhat more rapid as the interior border is reached.

Outside the drainage channels the level of the surface is broken only in two ways. The first of these comprises small mounds, which dot the surface in many portions of the area, the origin of which have been variously attributed to the work of ants, the results of "hog-wallow," and to the action of mud volcanoes, such as are now to be seen in the delta of the Mississippi. These mounds are usually only a few yards in diameter and rarely three feet in height. The other and more pronounced interruption is a series of mounds, of which Damon's, in Brazoria County, may be cited as an example. This mound covers ten thousand acres, and has a vertical height of eighty feet. The extreme flatness of the country surrounding it makes it an object of much greater prominence than it otherwise would be. It probably marks the site of an island in the quaternary seas, of rock materials older than the coast clays which surround and partially cover it.

Along the banks of the streams is a growth of timber, and dotted here and there over the surface of the prairies lying between them, trees, single or in clumps or motts, break the general monotony of the landscape. In the eastern portion the long-leaf pine-flats cover a small area, and the short-leaf or loblolly pine-forests extend as far west as Houston. For many years the prairies were given over to stock-raising, and the land was not considered valuable for agricultural purposes, when, in fact, the sands and clays of this area form excellent soils, the value of which is being proved on the fruit farms between Buffalo Bayou and the Brazos.

The Lignitic Timber Belt.—Passing from the level coast country to the lignitic timber belt, the surface gradually becomes more and more undulating, and farther inland rolling and even hilly ground succeeds it. The northern limit of this plain is the main Black-Waxy Prairies, and in areal extent it covers nearly one-third of the State. In elevation it varies from one to seven hundred feet in East Texas (which latter height is, however, only attained by a few of the iron-capped hills), while the highlands of the Bordas, on the southwest, rise more than one hundred feet higher. The region, although treated as a single plain, is in reality compound, and might more concisely be described as plains and valleys in plains. The plains are, if terms may be applied which suggest their geologic relationship, the Reynosa, Fayette, Yegua, Marine, and the Lignitic. The principal basins are those of the Nueces and Red Rivers. The intermediate streams form valleys narrow in comparison with these, but, nevertheless, by their number have partially destroyed the ancient plateau whose remnants scattered through the area tell plainly of its former extent.

The Reynosa, or that strip of neocene deposits which forms the first of the component plains immediately north and west of the Coast Prairies, might almost be considered a part of that area but for its more undulatory character and the different rock materials of which it is composed. In the place of heavy clays with interstratified beds of sand, sand and gravel, with clay and limestone, occur. East of the Colorado the uppermost beds of this plain are present as sand and gravel, colored more or less strongly red by the ferruginous matter they have re-

ceived from the iron-ore region north of them. To the west of that stream the ferruginous matter is replaced by lime derived from the cretaceous area north of it, and forms the adobe rock of the southwest. These upper beds have had an areal distribution much greater than at present, and, while they may not have covered the higher points of the old iron-capped plateau, are known, by the occurrence of fragmentary deposits, to have covered all of the lower-lying lands of East Texas. In the west the adobe or lime conglomerate covered nearly the entire region northward to the Balcones, and now forms the divides between all of the principal streams and occupies the highest elevations of the region.

The general topography of the eastern portion of this plain is undulating, but there are places where, from greater induration and stronger erosion, decided hills are formed. Such are those near Willis and the Sun Mound west of Waller. In the west the Reynosa prairies sweep northward in gently swelling ridges to the escarpment south of the Nueces River, which is best known by its Spanish name of Bordas. So steep is the descent to the north from the top of this plain that it is often difficult to find a suitable place for a wagon to descend into the valley, which lies from one to three hundred feet below.

Immediately west of the clays which occur below the base of the Reynosa Plain are the underlying Fayette sands and sandstones, with opalized wood and fine beds of clay. These deposits, like the Reynosa, form a gently inclined plain with gradual ascent on their southern slope, but breaking away abruptly on the north and west, thus forming a disconnected range of hills whose northward-facing scarps and bluffs (often one hundred and fifty feet in height) can be traced from Rockland, on the Neches, westward by Trinity, Muldoon, and Tilden to the Rio Grande. To these beds of sandstone is due one of the marked features of the course of all of the Texas rivers in their gulfward flow,—a sharp cast or northeastward deflection, such as that of the Trinity on the northern boundary of Walker County.

Passing towards the interior, the next subdivision is a broad belt of clays and lignites, which here and there from local causes assert themselves in the form of hills, to whose gently rolling area has been given the name of a stream—the Yegua—which flows entirely across it at its most typical locality.

North and west these are succeeded by more compact rock materials and a more rugged topography,—those of the Marine Beds,—with brown sandstones in the west and heavy deposits of iron ores in the east, which have withstood the wear of time and preserved, as rugged timber-covered hills, the highest elevations of the whole area, save only those of the Bordas. North of these are the Lignitic Clays whose gently rolling hills melt almost imperceptibly, from a topographic point of view, into the Black-Waxy Prairies of the cretaceous. The stream channels which cross the Lignitic Plain show that they have passed through many changes of level, and their broad, terraced bottoms tell of elevations and depressions, while the lakes and deserted channels plainly speak of their capricious change of course. The eastern portion of this plain is densely forested, with only a few scattered prairies; the central part is less thickly wooded, and usually with trees of more stunted growth, while that portion west of the Frio River comprises rolling prairies with thickets of mesquite and jungles of *chaparral* and prickly pear. In this timber belt

ONION CREEK—TRAVIS COUNTY.
Contact of Austin Chalk and Volcanic Ash.

—the low lands covered with pine, the uplands clothed with oak and hickory—is found the termination of the forests of the Atlantic region, which to the west are gradually replaced with plants more akin to the Mexican flora.

The Black-Waxy Prairies.—Lying north and west of the Lignitic Plain, and scarcely separable by appearance from the northwestern portion of it, is that great body of agricultural land, the famous Black-Waxy Prairies. Its greatest width is on Red River, where it extends from Denison eastward almost to the northeastern corner of the State,—a distance of one hundred and forty miles. Going southward it becomes more and more narrow, until on the Colorado it has a width of only ten miles. Towards the Rio Grande, however, it again widens out and extends along that river for eighty-five miles. Southwest of San Antonio, while the materials remain the same as those of the region to the northeast, it gradually loses its black-waxy character, owing most probably to difference of climatic conditions. The western boundary of this plain is formed by the Lower Cross-Timbers between Red River and the Brazos; south of the latter stream it is approximately a line joining Waco, Belton, and Austin, from which point to the Rio Grande it occupies the area between the Lignitic Plain and the foot of the Balcones. Its rock material is, generally speaking, marly, as it consists of clays and lime-rock, which occur not only as such, but intermingled in almost every imaginable proportion.

Its topography is for the most part gently rounded hills, whose graceful contours pleasingly suggest their English homologue,—the "downs." In the more limy portions, known as the Austin Limestone, vertical bluffs fifteen to twenty feet in height are not uncommon, where earth fractures have somewhat disturbed the regularity of the deposits, where erosion has cut through them along some stream channel or along their western face, and where a scarp is formed by the more rapid weathering of the underlying clay. On the Rio Grande there is a more broken surface,—higher hills and a more precipitous scarp,—due to the greater induration of the rocky materials and the different conditions of erosion.

In elevation this plain varies from three hundred and fifty to five hundred feet above the sea in the east, but west of San Antonio it rises to seven hundred feet and over. South of Austin there is a considerable elevation known as Pilot Knob, —a group of rounded hills of basalt, remnants of one of the old volcanoes which existed in the cretaceous sea. Other similar remnants and "necks" occur nearer Austin, and to the westward from San Antonio to the Rio Grande, as dykes and hills. While this plain is predominantly a prairie region outside the Lower Cross-Timber belt, nevertheless it is not entirely barren of trees and shrubs. Great live-oaks dot its expanses, and the streams which meander across it are sometimes fringed with narrow strips of timber, often thickly overgrown with moss in the more southern portions of the plain.

The Grand Prairie.—East of the Colorado River that area included in the Grand Prairie is but the continuation of the black prairie in general character, modified somewhat by the harder rock materials of which it is composed. West and south of that portion of the main area, however, the character changes, and in the country between the Colorado and the Pecos and in the numerous detached masses that mark the former extension of the same conditions as far north as the head-waters of the Brazos a topography exists largely controlled by a persistent bed of limestone, the

surface rock of a greater part of the area, which lies in level or gently inclined beds, forming a vast plateau on the south and flat-topped buttes and mesas in the Basin Region on the north. No other single rock formation has had so wide an influence on the topographic development of the State. That part of the Grand Prairie between the Upper and Lower Cross-Timbers, the former of which occupies the surface exposure of its lowest (geologically) sandy beds, has been called the Fort Worth division. At Decatur and elsewhere its western boundary is a bold escarpment, but at places it loses this precipitousness and rises more gradually from the older beds below it. The waters of the Trinity and Brazos have cut their way through the plain. The elevation of this divison has an average along its eastern border of five hundred feet, which in its western part increases to twelve hundred or fifteen hundred feet. Points within its boundaries are still higher. The Plateau division, beginning near Austin, stretches westward from the Colorado across the Pecos and is merged into that mountainous region. It is entirely cut through only by the channels of the Colorado and Pecos Rivers. Between these streams it forms a gently sloping plain, deeply furrowed by canyons along its southern border, its northern boundary cut into bays and promontories and carved into fantastic crenulations by the head-waters of the Colorado. North of the main plateau are detached ridges of flat-topped hills and single buttes or mesas, all of like character, scattered over an area of thousands of square miles.

Beginning at Austin, at an elevation of only six hundred feet, this Plateau division rises to the westward, and in the extreme western part of Gillespie County reaches an altitude of two thousand two hundred and fifty feet. It maintains this altitude and even increases it towards the west. The southern boundary of this plateau is the escarpment of elevation known as the Balcones, which practically continues from the Colorado westward to the Rio Grande, and has almost vertical walls which in places attain a height of one hundred to two hundred feet above the black prairie at its base. From the foot of this escarpment, or from the canyons cut into it, flow the great springs at San Marcos, New Braunfels, and elsewhere.

The topography of this plateau is that of simple drainage erosion without extensive denudation. The streams, with their many-pronged branches, have cut numberless deep and narrow canyons, but the hard limestone layers have not been destroyed rapidly enough to keep pace with the stream erosion, and innumerable peaks and buttes, ridges, and mesas are the result. Its surface is almost treeless except the low mesquite and similar trees and the fine growth of pecan along the canyons of its southward flowing streams. Its agricultural possibilities are far greater than have been supposed, and much of the area now used only for grazing can be profitably utilized for farming purposes.

The Basin Region.—The Basin Region of the northern portion of the State consists of four distinct denuded areas separated by remnantal strips of their former coverings. The area extends from the foot of the Grand Prairie and Granite Highlands on the east and south to the Guadalupe Mountains on the west and the Wichita Mountains on the north.

The area is first divided into a northern and southern portion by the line of cretaceous-capped hills, buttes, and mesas south of the Texas and Pacific Railway, and the northern portion is again subdivided by a strip of materials of later age than

the Llano Estacado beds. The southern subdivision touches the granite highlands on the southeast, and stretching westward joins the western portion of the northern division in Mitchell County. West of the Llano Estacado another denuded area, similar to that just east of the plains, is found between the scarp and the Guadalupe Mountains. It is the valley of the Pecos River. The general elevation northwestward is very gradual, being only twelve to fifteen hundred feet in the entire distance of over two hundred miles. In these divisions are distinct classes of topography for each of the various rock systems which are represented,—carboniferous, permian, triassic, and cretaceous. There can be little doubt that the lower cretaceous at one time covered the entire region, and in many places in the carboniferous area it is so lately worn away that the present land surface is approximately that which was originally engulfed by the cretaceous sea, the original contours of which have been preserved throughout the intervening time by this rock mantle. These ancient rounded forms, representing a very advanced stage of erosion, differ from the topography which is the resultant of the present erosion on the same beds. This latter has been often described as resembling steps, with the rise on the eastern face and the tread dipping gently to the northwest. This is caused by the alternations of the limestones and clays, the latter of which, being more easily eroded, are more rapidly cut away, letting the fragments of the overhanging limestones fall in great masses over the incline. Thus, passing northwestward, an alternation or succession of scarps of greater or less height must be crossed, running in a northeast and southwest direction with nearly level ground between. This general step-like expression is, however, so interrupted, cut through, and modified by drainage channels that a hilly country is the outcome. This is especially the case in the coal measures, where a series of high hills and deep valleys results, as at Canyon, or flat-topped hills and level valleys between, as in the counties of Stephens and Young. When the red beds of the permian are reached a more level country is found, and one for the most part with rounded contours by reason of the prevailing clayey nature of the beds. The few hills which interrupt the undulating plains are usually capped with gypsum and are but of moderate height, the only prominent elevations being the cretaceous-capped buttes and mesas. These begin with Double Mountain, in Stonewall County, and extend westward to the Llano Estacado. They rise five to six hundred feet above the general level, and in their immediate vicinity canyons have been cut so deep that they cannot be crossed except under the most favorable circumstances. As the Llano Estacado is approached and the gypsum and clays of the permian give place to the conglomerate and sands of the triassic, a sharper topography is found, and the hills, although not very high, are steep-sided.

The Seymour Plateau.—This plateau, of very recent origin, varying in width from sixteen to fifty miles, stretches northwest from the Texas and Pacific Railway west of Sweetwater to the Red River north of Vernon. It has a length of one hundred and sixty miles. It is bounded on the west by a range of gypsum hills, and its elevation varies from twelve to sixteen hundred feet. This level plain, once a continuous plateau throughout its entire length, has been cut through by many streams, and their beds are now in some cases one hundred and fifty feet below its upper surface. Nevertheless, despite these interruptions, its general flatness of surface is still well preserved.

The Llano Estacado.—This great plateau—the Stockaded Plain, as Professor Dana Anglicizes its Spanish name—occupies the greater portion of the western half of what is known as the Panhandle. Steep escarpments, whose wall-like faces rise in height from one hundred and fifty to four hundred feet, bound it on the east, north, and west. On the south its boundary is not so well defined, as it descends gradually until it merges into the plateau country. In its present extent it is but the remnant of a much greater area which reached from its present southern boundary far to the northward, probably connecting with the plains of Kansas and Nebraska, and from the Guadalupe Mountains on the west an unknown distance to the east. In origin it is closely akin to the lake-basins of the trans-Pecos Mountain system. Its outline is very irregular, but its greatest length and greatest breadth are each about two hundred miles. It is one vast plain with a gentle inclination from northwest to southeast, the elevation of the northwestern point being four thousand five hundred feet, while at the southeastern corner it is only two thousand eight hundred feet. So level is it that one standing on its surface seems to be in the midst of a great bowl whose gently sloping sides rise up to meet the overarching sky. Its continuity is, however, broken by canyons of greater or less extent, and its surface is dotted with lakes, several of which are permanent, some containing fresh water, while others are salt.

In the southwest the general level is broken by a few sand hills, which change their position with every wind. On the eastern side great canyons penetrate into the plains for longer or shorter distances. All of the canyons have flowing streams in them, but usually the walls are so steep and precipitous that it is impossible to cross them even on horseback. Even the ascent to the top of the plains from the lower ground around them can be made at comparatively few points.

The Granite Highlands.—Lying at the point of junction of the Fort Worth and plateau divisions of the Grand Prairie, and at the time of the deposition of those divisions a land area which was not covered by the lower members of the Grand Prairie, are the Granite Highlands of Burnet and Llano Counties, with their fringe of paleozoic rocks. In extent they cover about three thousand square miles, and to the east, south, and west are completely surrounded by the Grand Prairie, and even along the northern border remnantal patches of similar deposits are found. In elevation these highlands vary from seven to eighteen hundred feet, and, as has already been stated, formed the starting-point or core of our entire land area. While it is comparatively small in extent, this granite highland has a topography as complex as its rock materials are diverse. The granitic rocks occur as a series of plateaux extending from Burnet County, on the east, westward through Llano into Mason. Bare, rounded peaks of similar rocks, such as Niggerhead Peak, in Burnet County, and the King Mountains, in Llano, form a separated and irregular cordon along the flanks of these plateaux, while peaks of later date are found along the outer borders of the older beds and are partly covered with still newer rocks. Where these latter rocks, the cambrian, form the surface, they break down in bold and picturesque cliffs, as on Sandy Creek in Llano County and elsewhere. Surrounding these sandy beds of the cambrian are the silurian limestones in more rounded contours, forming the outer fringe of the region, which for picturesqueness is unexcelled by any in the State. In many parts it is fairly well timbered with

oaks and pecan, and during the spring its scattered prairies are carpeted with flowers.

The Wichita Mountains.—The western terminus of the Wichita Mountains is all that touches Texas. Here a few scattered peaks of granite stand witness to the former extent of a mountain range of early times, which had close affinities with the granitic highlands of the Central Mineral Region, as shown by the similar rocks composing it, and by the parallelism of the disturbances which have operated on it. Eastward, in the Indian Territory, these granites are flanked by silurian limestones and form a more connected range.

Trans-Pecos Mountains.—Far-stretching plains, in whose immensity ordinary differences of elevation are so dwarfed as to make little impression against the general flatness; here, a sharp peak or rounded summit, rising solitary from the boundless plain; there, a mountain mass of rock, flat-topped, steep-sided, deep-canyoned, gray, and bare; on this hand, a cluster of peaks, whose jagged tops accentuate their deeply ravined sides; on that, low ridges, one face rising so sheer as almost to preclude their ascent, the other descending in a gentle slope; here, a range with granite core, making brave front against the plain, but soon lost in the all-surrounding level, which here and there and everywhere sweeps round and through the hills and mountains, covering and hiding all connections and masking their true relations, until they seem indeed "mountains buried to their knees" in seas of sand. Such is the area of mountains and lake-basins which occupies two-thirds of the entire trans-Pecos region, extending along the Rio Grande from the New Mexico line to the great bend,—a distance of two hundred and fifty miles, with an average breadth of eighty miles. The mountains are spurs of the Rocky Mountain range (or are the result of the same mountain-building forces which formed that range), which, dividing in New Mexico, crosses Texas in four distinct lines or axes of elevation. The most prominent of these is the eastern, which, in a general way, may be said to form the divide between the Pecos and the Rio Grande. The western spur has a very small extension in Texas, while the two intermediate ones are somewhat lower than the Guadalupe Mountains to the east. In addition to the general slope from the divide east and west towards the rivers, the level of the country as a whole also descends towards the south, the general elevation towards the Rio Grande being one thousand feet or more lower than in the northern portion of the region. Therefore, while the relative height of the mountains above the plains may be the same in both sections, the actual elevations of the more northern of them will be the greater.

Along the two railroad lines which cross the region traversing the flats, the elevations vary from three thousand six hundred to four thousand six hundred feet, and exceed this only on the divide. The peaks and mountain masses rise to a height of fifteen hundred to two thousand feet, or even more, above this general level. The average direction of these major axes of elevation is from northwest to southeast, and the different ranges and clusters of mountains grouped by their relations to these are the Franklin Mountains, which are the southern continuation of the Organ Mountains; the Hueco, Quitman, and Eagle Mountains; the Comanche, Wind, Diabolo, Carrizo, Van Horn, Viejo, and Chinati Mountains; the Guadalupe, Limpia or Davis, and Maravillas or Santiago Mountains.

This grouping, while given for convenience of description, does not include all the elevations of the region, for, in addition to these, there are single peaks or clusters (occupying intermediate positions or cross-trends), especially in the southern part of the area. Rounded hills, flat-topped mesas, and sharp-crested ridges of cretaceous rocks are also scattered here and there through the plain as elevations which, although of less height than the ranges proper, are, nevertheless, greater than those of prominences dignified by the name of mountains in other portions of the State. The Franklin range, lying directly north of El Paso, contains peaks which rise nearly three thousand feet above that city. The mountains are composed of granite and porphyries, capped and flanked by limestones of various ages. Between these mountains and the Hueco range to the east lies the broad Lanoria Mesa. The mountain cluster known as the Hueco lies partly in New Mexico and partly in Texas. On its western side are located the Hueco tanks or springs and it is continued by hills of less elevation, with frequent interruptions of level ground, southeastward to the Quitmans, which have their beginning just south of the Southern Pacific Railway line a few miles west of Sierra Blanca. Lying across the track to the north of this point are four peaks, the principal one of which rises fully two thousand feet above the plain. Composed of quartzitic materials, the white color of the Sierra Blanca Mountains, as they are called, is streaked by red-brown only in the deep ravines that score their sides. They are supposed to be the result of the intrusion between the strata of a great body of basalt or other eruptive rock, which has lifted the upper beds to their present position. The Quitman Mountains consist of two ranges, separated by a narrow valley looking north. The range nearest the railroad, which is much the smaller, is composed almost entirely of granitic rocks whose rugged peaks rise fifteen to seventeen hundred feet above the valley, but the more western one, while in its more northern part corresponding to its companion range, contains more porphyritic and basaltic material towards the southeast, and these are finally succeeded by limestones.

The Eagle Mountains, which are also in this trend, are peaks of porphyry thrust skyward through beds of limestone and clays of the carboniferous and cretaceous age. Between them and the north range of the Quitmans are several ridges of cretaceous rock, sometimes as much as five hundred feet in height. At the foot of the Eagle Mountains, on the northern side, are the Eagle Springs, for many years a stage stand and the scene of many conflicts with the Indians. It is now the watering-place for hundreds of cattle.

The third range, beginning with the Cornudas and Wind Mountains in New Mexico, finds its southern continuation in the Sierra Pricta and Diabolo Mountains, with a great escarpment facing eastward, but whose slope to the west, while rough and broken, is nevertheless more gradual. About eight miles north of the Texas and Pacific Railroad the main body of the Diabolo Mountains ends in an escarpment, many parts of which are almost perpendicular. This portion of the mountains is composed of a red grit or sandstone, capped by limestones of carboniferous age, cut through in places by dykes and sheets of basalt and porphyry, while hundreds of feet below, in the flat to the south, are low hills and ridges of cretaceous rocks. A bluff, forming the southern termination of a spur of this range and very similar to it in composition, faces the Texas and Pacific Railroad near Eagle Flat Station,

Cambrian Cliffs—Sandy Water-Gap, Llano County.

and in the schistose materials which underlie it is the connection between the Diabolo and the Carrizo Mountains to the south.

The last-named mountains are largely made up of such schistose material flanked by limestones, and are connected in a general way with the Chinatis, some seventy miles southeast. In the Van Horn Mountains, which are part of this connection, not only the older granitic and schistose materials are met, but newer eruptions as well. These are followed by the later ridges known as Viejo or Rim Rock Mountains and their continuation, which are composed of cretaceous rocks sloping gently upward from the east, capped with eruptive material to a depth of three hundred feet, and having almost vertical cliffs facing the Rio Grande. In the Chinati Mountains are again seen the carboniferous limestones accompanied by granites and other eruptive rocks. As a rule, the elevations along this axis are not so great above the general level as those of the others.

The Guadalupe Mountains begin in southern New Mexico in a low ridge, and increase both in height and width as they stretch southeastward, until they find their culmination in Guadalupe Peak, which rises three thousand feet above the valley at its base, two thousand feet of that height being a sheer precipice. This is probably the highest point in the State, being something over eight thousand feet above the sea. These mountains are composed almost altogether of carboniferous sandstones and limestones, and on their western side present a precipitous escarpment facing that of the Diabolo to the southwest. The eastern side of the mountains slopes more gradually towards the valley of the Pecos, and is cut by many deep and tortuous canyons. South of the peak the range is continued by foot-hills of carboniferous or permian limestone, their bluffs still facing westward, to the Texas and Pacific Railroad near Kent, where they are succeeded by lower hills composed of cretaceous rocks.

The Limpia or Davis Mountains cover an area about forty miles in length by thirty in width, between the Texas and Pacific and Southern Pacific Railways. They are largely composed of granite, porphyritic and volcanic rocks, forming high peaks, like Gomez Peak at the northeastern corner; ranges with serrated tops, as the Saw-Tooth Mountains; steep, perpendicular cliffs, as in the vicinity of Fort Davis; or more rounded contours, as at Wild Rose Pass. Limestones of various ages occur in these mountains, and numerous springs burst forth from the contact of the intrusive porphyries with the other rocks. Such are Apache and Antelope Springs, near San Martine. These are the best-wooded of all the mountains of the region, and Limpia Creek, in the vicinity of Fort Davis, affords sufficient water for a certain quantity of irrigation. South of Alpine, the Maravillas, or Santiago range, extends southeastward through Brewster and Foley Counties, a distance of sixty-five miles or more, towards the Rio Grande, where it meets the Rosillos, Corrazones, and Chisos groups. All these mountains are built up of igneous rocks, with limestone, sandstones, and shales, and are as yet little known.

The flats between the various mountain ranges are the sites of old lakes, the last stages of some of which may now be seen in Salt Lake valley, between the Diabolo and Guadalupe Mountains. These lakes probably existed in the region during long periods, for borings have penetrated more than a thousand feet without passing through the deposits which belong to them. They are at least as old as the

quaternary, from the fact that certain elephant remains have been found in them, and, from certain "calico hills" in the Rio Grande valley, it is probable that they existed even in tertiary times. These flats are covered with a luxuriant growth of gramma, or mesquite grass, which, although usually brown in appearance, will freshen with very little rain-fall and clothe the plain in richest verdure. Catclaws, greaseweed, Mexican dagger, cacti of various kinds, and many other plants of Mexican relationship grow upon them, and they are the grazing ground for herds of antelope.

Rivers.—Texas is drained by rivers flowing from the outer edges of the different great plains, radially towards the Gulf, the character of the streams differing among themselves, and each stream varying according to the plains through which it passes. The two limiting river systems are the Arkansas and Rio Grande. These, although their head-waters approach very nearly to each other, separate rapidly and find their way to the Gulf at points hundreds of miles apart.

The oldest drainage of the State is probably that of the Colorado, which may have had its inception before the deposition of the coal measures, and, although often interrupted and diverted, it has returned again and again to its work of erosion, and in places has reconquered and holds to-day its old drainage channels. On the emergence of the land, at the close of the paleozoic era, erosion scored and ravined its surface, and the predecessors of the Brazos and the Red Rivers were born. Through long ages they continued their work, cutting down and bearing away the soil and rock, until the cretaceous sea overwhelmed them and built new rock-beds above their channels to a height of hundreds of feet. Again the sea-floor became the land, and again the rivers came to the attack, and have not only regained the territory they had lost, except that here and there an outpost is left to tell the extent of their victory, but have in addition scored deeper into the underlying beds. With each new accretion of land new streams gradually developed, the old ones extended themselves gulfward, and at the same time continued to advance their head-waters, thereby growing in both directions.

The various systems may be grouped under the following heads: Rivers having their origin outside of the State,—Canadian, Red, Pecos, and Rio Grande; rivers of the Central Basin,—Trinity, Brazos, and Colorado; rivers of the Grand Prairie, —Sabine, Neches, Guadalupe, and Nueces; rivers of the Reynosa,—San Jacinto, Buffalo, Bernard, Lavaca, etc.; and streams of the Coast Prairies.

The Canadian has its origin in New Mexico, on the eastern slope of the narrow Taos range of the Rocky Mountains, only a few miles from the waters of the Rio Grande, which flows at the western foot of the same range. Running eastward it drains the northern portion of the Panhandle through a valley twenty to sixty miles in width and hundreds of feet below the level of the Llano Estacado,—a valley which has been cut by the waters of this river since the final desiccation of the old lake-basin. The stream which now winds through this valley is so shrunken as to appear incapable of having performed so herculean a task.

Red River is classed with the Brazos and Colorado as having its origin in the canyons of the Staked Plains, but one branch, the Prairie-Dog-Town Fork, reaches into New Mexico, and it must, therefore, be classed with the rivers originating without the State. This fork, as well as the others, is still at work channelling

View from Quitman Mountains towards Foothills.

deeper into the plain, and they have cut canyons hundreds of feet in depth and many miles in length through its comparatively soft materials. In addition to the amount of water furnished by the upper beds of the Staked Plains, as the erosion cuts through the underlying conglomerate of the triassic, it taps the great water-bed of the Llano and the pure water gushes forth from springs, furnishing streams which flow boldly out from the plains only to sink and disappear when they reach the adjoining belt of sand. After crossing the sands of the triassic and reaching the permian beds, the water of these streams dissolves portions of the salt and gypsum existing therein, and is then more or less saline or gypseous for many miles of their course. The river takes its name from the amount of red clay held in suspension, which it derives from these red beds in its passage through them, and which it carries onward throughout its course. After following an almost eastward course for many miles, forming the northern boundary of the State for the whole distance, from the intersection of the North Fork and one hundredth meridian, it turns southward.

In the system of lakes along the western boundary of Louisiana, only one or two of which, like Caddo Lake, reach into Texas, there exists a condition which in earlier times was very prevalent among the various streams in their passage across the lignitic plain. To-day, along these rivers, may be found such old lake-basins plainly defined, which have been filled in with sediment from the overburdened stream that, by later elevations, has been given fresh erosive power, and has cut new channels through them to the underlying rock.

This river drains twenty-nine thousand square miles, more than one-tenth of the entire State, and yet, east of its own principal forks, has no large affluents on the south side, except Pease River, the Wichita and Sulphur Rivers. Like all the Texas rivers, it has in the eastern part of its course its first and second bottoms between its channel and the uplands. The first of these has deep-red, sandy or waxy soils, heavily timbered with cotton-wood, elm, ash, walnut, pecan, etc. Beyond this is the second bottom or higher elevation, of dark, sandy loam, extending back to the bluffs. These bottoms are from one to two miles wide, and are succeeded by high, rolling uplands, ten to fifteen miles in width, timbered with oak and hickory, and interspersed with little prairies.

The Sabine, which for a portion of its length forms the boundary between Louisiana and Texas, is a river belonging to the black-prairie drainage, and its head-water erosion has reached northwestward into Hunt and Collin Counties. Its course is southeast until it reaches the intersection of the ninety-fourth meridian and the thirty-second parallel, when it turns southward and finds its way to the Gulf through Sabine Bay. It owes its name, it is said, to the Mexicans, who called it, after the cypresses which line its banks, the "Sabinas." Light-draught boats ply in it and run as high as Logansport. Its waters also form the logging way by which the saw-mills at Orange receive their supplies of timber. Its total drainage area is twenty thousand four hundred square miles.

The Neches is also one of the more recent rivers, and has not yet carved its way back to the black prairie, but has expended its energies on the deposits of the timber-belt region, which owe their present topographic form between the waters of the Sabine and Trinity principally to its operations. Its principal affluent is the Angelina, and it finally mingles its waters with those of the Sabine in Sabine Bay.

The Trinity River, although usually included with the rivers of the Grand Prairie, has stretched its arms over into the coal measures, and drains the area between Red River and the Brazos, between the ninety-sixth and ninety-eighth meridians. Southeast of this its basin is more restricted, being limited on the east by the Sabine and Neches, and, as it nears the Gulf, by the San Jacinto on the west. Its total drainage area is eighteen thousand square miles, and its estimated average discharge is seven thousand cubic feet per second.

Boats of light draught have made their way from its mouth as far up as Dallas, and work is now in progress to render its reaches below that city navigable.

The canyons of the Llano Estacado, which are occupied by the head-waters of the Brazos, are similar to those of the Red River, and an idea of the amount of water in them can be had from the fact that the Silver Falls of White River, a tributary of the Salt Fork, furnish thirteen million gallons daily. As in the case of Red River, the waters, after passing out from the plains, sink into the sands, and the lower reaches are strongly impregnated with salt and gypsum until the beds of the permian are crossed. The northwestern portion of the drainage basin of the Brazos is very wide, and its forks, Elm, Double Mountain, and Salt, spread over two degrees of latitude. As it flows southward, however, the main basin narrows until in Brazoria County it is less than ten miles in width. Its total drainage area, which is the greatest in the State, is estimated at fifty-nine thousand six hundred square miles.

In its flow towards the Gulf the Brazos crosses the various formations with their rock-sheets of different hardness, its general course being almost at right angles to the strike of the beds. It has on this account a very tortuous channel, flowing through a valley which in places is wide with bluff hill-sides bordering it on either side, while at others these bordering hills close in upon the channel and it flows in narrower confines. The former phase is well shown in Young County, while in the western part of Palo Pinto County the latter condition prevails. After reaching the limestones of the cretaceous in Hood County, the valley has a width, including the uplands, of from five to ten miles, and is timbered with oak, pecan, etc.; but on reaching the softer rock materials of eastern Bosque and Hill Counties the valley widens and the first bottom has occasionally a width of as much as two miles, and the second bottom spreads five miles on either side of it.

In the Lignitic Plain the bottom lands are usually wide, with growth of large timber,—oak, elm, ash, pecan, etc. In this area there occurs a feature which is repeated in the Coast Prairies. In Robertson County the Brazos valley not only includes the river itself, but the Little Brazos as well. In other words, the Little Brazos occupies a portion of the former channel of the larger river. This is also the case with the Caney or Canebrake Creek of Brazoria County. The red and muddy waters received from its northwestern branches are carried down and deposited on the bottom lands from the black prairie to the Gulf, adding to their fertility year by year. Much of the coastal plain between the San Jacinto and the Brazos was formed in a similar manner when that area was the bay into which the Brazos poured its sediment-laden waters.

As has been already stated, the Colorado River and its tributaries represent the oldest drainage system of the State, and have had a most eventful career. It

Silver Falls, Crosby County.

began its work early in the history of the land, and, although destroyed by incursions of the sea, it revived as soon as the land area again appeared, and has now cut its way through the solid limestones above Austin, and enters the black prairie region through a canyon. Its head-waters reach to the New Mexican line, and to their work is due the beautifully sculptured northern scarp of the plateau region. Beginning as it does south of the main gypsum area, its waters are not so saline or gypseous as those of the rivers north of it. The largest streams among its tributaries are the Conchos, San Saba, Llano, and Pedernales. Its drainage area is forty-one thousand two hundred square miles, and its bottom lands, like those of the Brazos, are synonyms for fertility. Below Austin its valley is wide and the bottoms are heavily timbered with cotton-wood, ash, walnut, elm, etc. The soils vary from reddish sandy to dark alluvial loams. The uplands are high and rolling, with broad skirts of post-oak timber, cedar brakes, or open prairies.

In its flow through Bastrop and Fayette Counties numerous instances may be observed of the prevalence of lakes along its course in the earlier stages of its growth.

The Guadalupe and its branches, the principal one of which is the San Antonio River, are by far the most beautiful streams in the State. Having their origin in the plateau region, and being fed by the great springs which burst forth along its base, their limpidity brings them into still greater contrast with the turbid waters of the rivers east and west of them. That part of the Guadalupe from its inception to New Braunfels has traversed the rocky plain of the plateau, cutting itself a channel of narrower or wider limits as the conditions rendered possible. At New Braunfels it reaches the black prairie and flows among the rounded hills through timber-covered banks. Farther down the trees become larger and the great pecan groves skirt its banks and overhang its pellucid waters in all the loveliness of sylvan quiet, broken only by the cry of the wild turkey or the footfall of the deer. Its waters and those of its affluents have been used for irrigation for many years.

The Nueces drainage occupies far the largest area of any river west of the Colorado, and includes all of the streams between the San Antonio and the Rio Grande Rivers north of the Bordas. Its head-waters have cut their way deep into the plateau region, where they are fed by great springs from the underlying sands. The Nueces drains about ninteen thousand square miles, and in its course from the cretaceous table-land to the Gulf has greatly exaggerated the tendency of all the rivers of Texas, having their source in or north of the lignitic belt, to be deflected eastward or northeastward in passing through the harder portion of the Fayette sands. Thus, from its source in the Nueces Canyon, in Edwards County, it flows south and southeast to the southern portion of La Salle County, where, suddenly swinging at right angles to its former course, it flows northeast for more than fifty miles, until, at Oakville, it resumes its normal course even more abruptly than it left it. It has numerous tributaries, among the principal of which are the Frio and Atascosa Rivers, Elm, Los Raices, Olmos, Salado, Prieto, Sulphur, Gamble, Lapara, Ramirena, Lagarto, and Penitas Creeks. The wanderings of the Nueces itself through this area are in part recorded by the lakes which still exist along some parts of its course, especially in La Salle and Dimmit Counties, where several long and comparatively narrow bodies of water are found. Some of these are directly connected with the present channel and are still utilized by the water in

time of flood, while others have been forsaken entirely and are now simply indications of the course of the river at some former time. The character of the deposits along its lower reaches shows that this part of the basin has also been the site of many lakes, which have since been filled up and again exposed by the erosive action of the river or its tributaries in still later times. Indeed, it would appear in places as if the river had been a chain of lakes stretching in and out among the higher ground which formed its banks and now constitute the second bottoms and the highlands. The changes, of course, are not confined to times before the present, but are even now in progress in several places.

In spite of the facts that the drainage channels of the Nueces are so abundant, that many of them start from the plateau with streams of limpid water, and altogether make such a goodly show as water-courses upon the map, it frequently occurs that at certain seasons of the year many of them are perfectly dry and at the surface, at least, innocent of moisture. Indeed, a great alteration has taken place in these channels during the past forty years. Before the settlement of the country many of these creeks were constant in their flow, and the grass, beginning at the water's edge, stretched out on either side of them over wide, open prairies. The advent of the stock-men into this ideal and beautiful grazing region gradually worked a change in the conditions. The cattle ate down the grass and broke up the turf by tramping, so that the strong winds which prevail and the heavy rains which fall occasionally had full sweep at the underlying sand. Together these filled up the channels of the creeks to such an extent that they now carry water on the surface only after heavy or continued rains, although an abundant supply may be had in many of them at other times by sinking shallow wells in their beds. The channels are comparatively small and the valleys are not wide. The water is generally clear except in time of flood, and the streams are fringed with skirts of timber by which their course can easily be marked for many miles across the prairies.

The Rio Grande, rising in the Rocky Mountains in Colorado, flows southward through New Mexico to the Texas line. While it receives a considerable volume of its water in this distance, much is taken out for irrigation purposes and a part of what is left sinks into the sands which form its bottom, so that at Paso del Norte the volume is not what it would otherwise be. Below this point it forms the boundary between Texas and Mexico for a distance of more than thirteen hundred miles, in which it receives no tributary of note on the Texas side except the Pecos. Taking this great length into consideration and omitting the Pecos drainage, the Rio Grande drains a smaller area in Texas than any other river, the average width of the strip drained by it being less than fifteen miles. The various channels opening into it are for the most part comparatively short, dry *arroyos*, which are the result of the character of the rainfall in the region. At times this is torrential, carrying everything with it and washing deep channels, which, the rains being passed, may remain dry for months together before a fresh torrent broadens or deepens them. The topography of its valley is therefore of a much younger type than would be the case under different conditions of rainfall. The course of the Rio Grande from El Paso to the boundary between Coahuila and Chihuahua is approximately that of the trend of the Rocky Mountains as manifested in the portions of that range crossing trans-Pecos Texas; but at this point the river makes a great

PALODURO CAÑON.

bend, "producing one of the most remarkable features on the face of the globe,—that of a river traversing at an oblique angle a chain of lofty mountains and making through these on a gigantic scale what is called in Spanish America a canyon,—that is, a river hemmed in by vertical walls." At the mouth of San Francisco Creek it again resumes its general southeastward course, which it maintains until the Gulf is reached. For many miles below El Paso the river-bed is a sandy plain, which is often entirely dry or with water standing in pools. At other times great floods pour down its channel and spread out into the valley. Farther down the river the hills draw closer in, its channel is more contracted, and the canyons and rapids begin as the Bofecillos Mountains are reached. Between the canyons which mark the passage through the different ranges (San Carlos, San Vincente, Carmen etc., of the boundary survey) the valley is narrow and broken. Below San Francisco Creek, as far as the northern line of Webb County, it flows in a valley cut through the limestones and clays of the cretaceous. This valley is in places three or four miles in width, and the river meanders through it, leaving broad valleys on one side or the other, which are fertile and susceptible of irrigation by its waters. In other places it, too, forms canyons, and the valley and the channel are co-extensive. Throughout the lower portion of this reach the river is thrown into a series of rapids by the beds of harder rocks forming obstructions to its flow as the gentle dip carries them down to the water-level. Below the Maverick-Webb county line, the valley, narrow in places and widening out in others, is also hemmed in by high hills, and the rapids continue at intervals nearly to Roma. Below Roma the river flows through banks of sand, limy sandstone, and silt in a channel which is continually changing, and finally it debouches into the Gulf through a delta, as it extends the land area outward by the amount of sediment it carries. The Rio Grande is navigable for boats of light draught as far north as Edinburg or Hidalgo, in the county of that name, and under favorable circumstances they ply even as high as Rio Grande City.

The principal affluent of the Rio Grande in Texas is the Pecos River, and it has even been suggested that the Pecos is the older river of the two, and that the capture of its channel by the Rio Grande is a work of comparatively recent times. The head-waters of the Pecos are found in New Mexico just south of those of the Canadian, and as it flows southward it takes the same general course as the Rio Grande, and for the same reason, following the eastern flank of the mountains as the latter does the west and centre.

The streams of the Reynosa are the consequence of and assistants in its erosion, their head-waters being now supplied from springs near its inner margin. Upon the elevation of the Coast Prairies their channels were extended to the Gulf. The San Jacinto is marked by lake conditions in the Reynosa Plain, but when it reaches the Coast Prairies it flows gently through banks of clay and sand to San Jacinto Bay. Buffalo Bayou, a stream with narrow bottoms and steep banks of clay and sand, also empties its sluggish waters into the same bay.

Similar streams are the Bernards, Lavaca, Aransas, etc.

Still younger are the creeks of the Coast Prairies, which occupy positions between and parallel to the courses of the larger streams.

Islands.—The fringe of islands and peninsulas along the coast are for the most

part keys, formed by the action of the waves of the Gulf and separated from the mainland by sounds or bays. These islands border the entire coast, but east of Galveston they occur only as shoals or drowned islands. Beginning on the east we have Sabine Bank, Trinity Shoal, and Ship Shoal with their connecting bars; then Bolivar Peninsula, followed by Pelican Spit to Galveston. Galveston Island and an unnamed peninsula mark the sea-line to the mouth of the Brazos. From the head of Matagorda Bay the various peninsulas and islands form a line almost continuous to the mouth of the Rio Grande, and vessels may ply the entire distance in the land-locked bays and lagoons. These lagoons and bays, separating the outer fringe from the mainland, have a width of from ten to twenty miles. The islands are usually banks of sand, covered with sand dunes fifteen to twenty feet high, which are shifted by every wind. The longest of these islands is that extending from Corpus Christi Bay to Brazos Santiago, a distance of more than one hundred miles, and is named Padre Island.

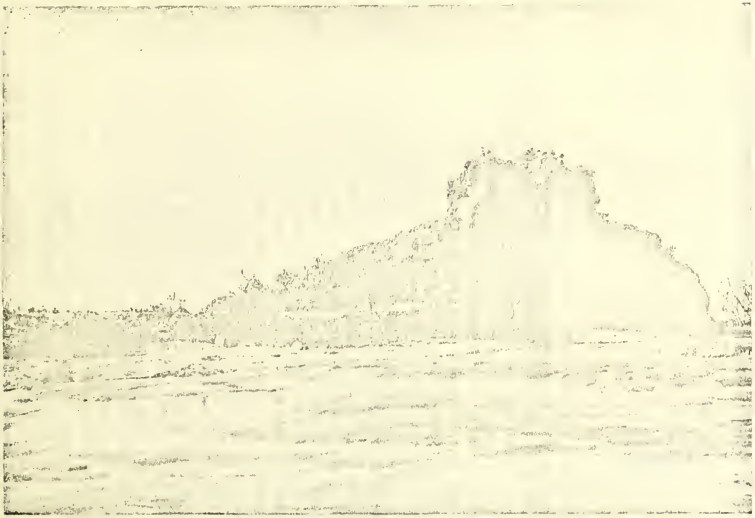
Lakes.—Texas has no large lakes, but scattered through the various parts of the State there are many small bodies of water, some of which are closely connected with the rivers, occurring in the bottoms reached by the flood waters, or marking an entirely deserted channel of the stream. Others occupy depressions and are fed by springs or by the drainage of the surrounding country, while a few are formed in "sink-holes," the source of supply being not so apparent. The most of the lakes within the Coastal Slope are within the Lignitic Plain. Among these may be noted Grand Lake in Montgomery County, Clear Lake in Harris County, Eagle Lake in Colorado County, Espantosa Lake in Dimmit County, and many others. In Cameron and Hidalgo Counties there are several salt lakes, one of which is about a mile in diameter, and the chain of salt lakes in the basin between the Diabolo and Guadalupe Mountains has already been mentioned. The lakes of the Llano Estacado vary in size from half a mile in diameter to Sabinas Lake, in Gaines County, which is six miles long and four miles in width. These lakes are numerous, some of them, like the Sabinas, being salt water, but many of them are fresh, being fed by springs around their sides. In addition to these there are hundreds of others known as wet-weather lakes, which hold water during a portion of the year.

CLIMATE.

A region of such extent must necessarily present great diversity of climatic conditions. The eastern portion of the State lies within the humid belt, a large area in Central Texas is subhumid, while portions of West Texas, especially in the basin of the Rio Grande, are distinctly arid, some of them presenting well-marked desert phenomena.

Rainfall.—The belt of greatest rainfall is confined to the coastal plain, the average at Galveston being given at 52 inches and at Palestine at 47 inches. This decreases southward, however, and varies greatly through different years. Thus, the "Bulletin of the Texas Weather Service" gives the rainfall of Galveston for the year 1893 (which was extremely dry), at 35.48 inches; Palestine, 30.58 inches; Corpus Christi, 20.50 inches; and Fort Brown, 14.36 inches.

The average rainfall of the black-prairie region is about 35 inches, but in 1893 the records show at Austin only 17.77 inches; Paris, 33.70; San Antonio,



Falls of the Llano—South of Long Mountain.

18.30; and Waco, 22.13. In the plateau region, the rainfall, which is usually somewhat smaller, especially towards the west, in the subhumid belt, has been considerably less for two or three years past, falling as low as 16.96 at Boerne and 7.07 at Fort Clark, in 1893.

The Central-Basin Region lies largely in the subhumid belt, and he average annual rainfall closely approximates 25 inches. In 1893 it varied from 11.92 at Brownwood to 21.85 at Graham and 19.08 at Albany. The rainfall of the Panhandle, although usually a little under 20 inches annually, in some years nearly doubles that amount, 37.07 inches being reported at Fort Elliott in 1885.

West of the Pecos the decrease is equally marked, for, while the average of five years at Fort Davis gave an annual precipitation of nearly 20 inches, the average at El Paso did not exceed 13 inches, and in 1893 it was only 10.86 inches.

In a report on the rainfall of the Pacific Slope and Western States and Territories, made in 1888, General Greely, chief signal officer, does not hesitate to express the opinion "that the trans-Mississippi and trans-Missouri rainfall is slightly increasing as a whole," and states that a continuous record, kept at Austin and covering thirty-two years, shows that the mean rainfall during the last sixteen years is 5.1 inches greater than for the first sixteen. This is borne out by the records at Ringgold Barracks and at Fort Bliss. An examination of this report shows that the least yearly rainfall known in Texas varied from 4 inches about El Paso to 40 inches in a narrow belt east of Dallas, while the heaviest yearly rainfall recorded gives 20 inches on the Rio Grande, 70 inches at Houston, and 110 inches in Northeast Texas.

Temperature.—The temperature varies as widely as the rainfall, the least variation in the extremes being in the coast country, while the greatest is in the trans-Pecos and Panhandle. During 1893 the mean temperature at Galveston was 70.3°, with a minimum of 37° and a maximum of 92° F. At Amarillo, with a mean of only 56.1°, a minimum of 4° was observed and a maximum of 102° F. At Fort Hancock, on the Rio Grande, the greatest variation of the year is found, —a minimum of 3° and a maximum of 110° F.,—although its mean is 10° below that of Galveston, being only 59.8° F. The following statement from the reports of the weather bureau gives the maxima and minima for the months of July and December, 1893, for the several places mentioned:—

	July.		December.	
	Min.	Max.	Min.	Max.
Galveston	71°	92°	37°	74°
Palestine	70°	100°	26°	80°
Austin	70°	100°	29°	79°
Abilene	67°	102°	21°	81°
Amarillo	61°	98°	17°	65°
Fort Hancock	56°	107°	4°	76°

The apparently higher temperature of the western part of the State is largely counteracted by the elevation of the region, dryness of the atmosphere, and the breezes, which are almost continuous; and to this must be added the fact that the nights are cooler than on the coast.

The rapid changes of temperature accompanying the "northers" is a feature of interest. From a summer heat the temperature will fall within a few hours to or

below the freezing-point. These sudden extreme variations are, however, very rare, and are confined to the midwinter months. Premonitions also precede them, well known to the older inhabitants, which give time for preparation to meet them.

In point of salubrity the climate of Texas is unsurpassed, the general exhilarating balminess of the atmosphere frequently giving rise to the expression that "it is a pleasure simply to live," and justly entitling the State to be called "the Italy of America."

FLORA.

The principal forest growth of the State is confined to its eastern portion, the westward extension of the maritime or Atlantic timber belt ending about midway between the Trinity and Brazos Rivers. These forests, which are mainly of pines, are in three belts. The lower one, the principal growth of which is long-leaf pine, reaches to within twenty miles of the Gulf and is succeeded on the north by forests of "loblolly" pine and hard woods, and these by a belt of short-leaf pines and oaks, which stretches to Red River. Towards the western margin of this upper belt the pine disappears altogether and the forest consists of oaks, with hickory and ash. In the swampy bottoms bordering the eastern, gulfward-flowing streams, large bodies of cypress are found. In their fertile, alluvial plains are also found elms, catalpas, wild plums, and sumach, and in many places the undergrowth of vines and shrubbery is very dense.

These forests, covering so large a portion of Eastern Texas, are the basis of a great lumber industry, and furnish a supply of building material not only for the untimbered portions of Texas, but for Kansas and other Western States as well.

Among the evergreens none have a richer foliage than the stately magnolia, and the dark green of its satiny leaves forms a background well suited to the velvety softness of the great blossoms which cover it in the spring.

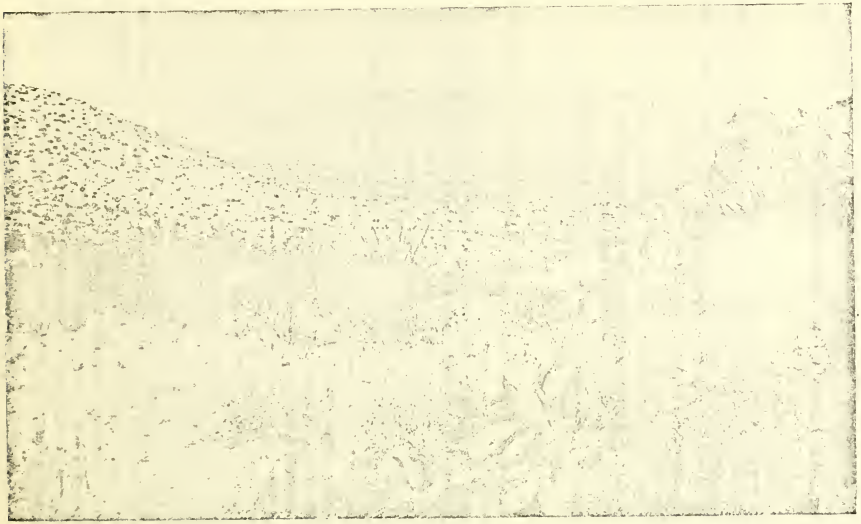
To the west of the pineries more open forests of post, black-jack, and other oaks, alternating with open prairies, occupy a considerable area in the lignitic plain, and continue westward to the Nueces River in a belt twenty to fifty miles wide. In the midst of this, in Bastrop County, a small body of pine occurs.

The *bois d'arc* is common along the banks of streams in Eastern Texas. Among the giants of the forest may be noted the live-oaks in the Colorado valley near Columbus.

The Cross-Timbers are two bodies of small, stunted, post and black-jack oaks, which extend in long, irregular belts from the Indian Territory south through the prairie region. The Lower Cross-Timbers mark the western border of the Black-Waxy Plain from Red River to Waco, a distance of one hundred and fifty miles, and their greatest width is about fifteen miles. The Upper Cross-Timbers occupy in a general way the area of outcrop of the trinity sands, or basal beds of the Grand Prairie, and the entire carboniferous area as well. They appear in the latter as bodies of post-oak wherever the beds are sufficiently sandy to support their growth, but on the more clayey soils are more scatteringly distributed.

West of the Colorado Mexican forms of vegetation appear, and the mesquite[1]

[1] The mesquite is gradually extending its range east and south, being found east of the Trinity and in the Coast Prairies.



Hueco Mountains—From the Quitman Valley.

(the beans of which are largely used as food for cattle), Mexican persimmon, various acacias, and other small trees take the place of Eastern forests. The river bottoms are for the most part well timbered with cotton-wood, elms, hackberries, willows, etc., and the pecan, which has become of considerable commercial importance on account of its nuts, is found in the vicinity of the principal streams, as far west as the Devil's River. The western cedar covers the white limestone hills of the Colorado valley and extends westward into the trans-Pecos Mountain region, where it is joined by the Chihuahua pine, Pignon pine, and the upland live-oak. Through the northern portion of the State are found bodies of shin-oak, known as shinneries, having its dense growth in the beds of sand which occur at various localities. Throughout the cretaceous area and in part of the Reynosa Plain the *cactaceæ* abound, and two-thirds of the species found are peculiar to the region. When grass fails for pasture the prickly pear is often the entire subsistence of the cattle in certain portions of the West. Of the woody growth may be mentioned the Algerita (*Berberis trifoliata*), the Texas persimmon (*Rhus microphylla*), etc. A small agave is common, and the resurrection plant prevails from the Devil's River westward. The western portion of the State, including trans-Pecos Texas, is the place of greatest abundance of *cactaceæ*, both in species and in quantity, and by far the greater number of them are peculiar to the area. *Fouquiera splendens*, with its long, thorny stems and clusters of scarlet flowers; greaseweed or creosote bush, an ephedra, with leafless branches, and other characteristic shrubs are mingled with the century plant (*Agave Americana*), lecheguilla, and several yuccas, "which by reason of their numbers, size, and mode of growth are striking objects in the floral landscape."

In the valley of the Rio Grande the screw bean (*Prosopis pubescens*), or tornillo, is very common.

In the Rio Grande region are *chaparrals* or dense thickets of various Mexican trees and shrubs, consisting of acacias, mimosa, mesquite, and many others, usually armed with thorns often so thickly intergrown as to be almost impenetrable.

The principal grasses are the gramma and mesquite.

The growth of timber along the river bottoms, notably the lower reaches of the San Jacinto, Trinity, Brazos, Colorado, etc., has already been mentioned in the description of the rivers.

The number and variety of flowers which deck the prairies or breathe out fragrance from thicket, *chaparral*, and wood have been claimed by some to have given the State its name. While this is probably an error, the fact remains that during the spring acre upon acre of bloom is found upon the prairies, forming veritable carpets of flowers, and the flowering shrubs and vines are no less abundant in various portions of the State.

FAUNA.

In faunal relations, as in other respects, Texas occupies a transition ground between the species of animals, birds, etc., common to the more eastern and northern regions and those of the Mexican provinces, the types of both being here commingled. While many of the species of eastern and northern provinces are common in the eastern portion of the State, they are rare in the west, and numerous Mexican species abundant in the west do not extend to the eastern or northern

parts of the State. This is true of animals, birds, reptiles, fishes, and of land-shells. In addition to this, it may be noted that many of the species of birds which are found in Texas present varietal characters entitling them to subspecific rank, usually on account of their paler (bleached-out) plumage or smaller size, sometimes both combined. The Texan "Bob White" is an example in this line, where the usual brown colors of the eastern species are replaced by gray and the blacks by browns. It may be that closer study of these various differences will finally result in making the Texan region a sub-province.

Among the mammals belonging to the Mexican province which are found in Texas may be mentioned the jaguar (*Uncia onca*), the ocelot (*Felis pardalis*), armadillo (*Dasypus peba*), and the peccary (*Dicotyles torquatus*). While these animals are principally confined to West and Southwest Texas, they are sometimes found farther east. The armadillo, which up to a few years ago was unknown east of the Nueces River, has now extended its range to the Brazos east of Austin. Formerly great herds of buffalo roamed the Western prairies, but now there remains only a single herd in the pasture of Colonel Goodnight, in the Panhandle. Antelope are still abundant in the western portion of the State, and black-tailed or mule deer and big-horn sheep are occasionally found in the mountains of trans-Pecos Texas. In the more eastern part the red deer is common. The brown bear (*Ursus Americanus*) is also found there, but occurs still more abundantly in the forest region of East Texas.

Among the wolves may be noticed the lobo, or loafer, and the prairie-wolf, or coyote. The foxes are represented by two varieties, the red and gray, and the skunks by four. The wild-cat (*Lynx rufus*) is abundant, and the civet-cat (*Bassaris astuta*) is also found. The prairie-dog is so abundant as to be a public nuisance, destroying the grass as badly as an overstocking of cattle would do. The Texan hare, or jack-rabbit, is very abundant.

Among the other animals common to Texas and the region east may be mentioned the panther, beaver, squirrels of various species, gophers, badgers, opossums, raccoons, swifts, etc.

Birds are very numerous, both in numbers and in species. Among the game birds, the prairies of the coast and lower lignitic plains are at times covered with wild-geese; ducks of various kinds frequent the streams and lakes; the pinnated grouse, or prairie-chicken, is found from the Gulf to the Staked Plains; curlew, plover, and snipe are abundant, as are quail of different kinds; wild-turkeys are found along the river bottoms, especially in the region of the pecan groves. Among birds of prey are found the bald-headed eagle, the vulture or turkey-buzzard, the crow and raven, and various hawks and owls.

The song-birds are represented by the mocking-bird, nonpareil, Mexican canary, and various warblers.

Among the Mexican and South American birds found in Texas may be noted the St. Domingo grebe, California gull, black-bellied tree-duck, the jabiru, Mexican jacuna, scaled partridge, Gamble's partridge, and Massena partridge. The paisano, chaparral cock or road-runner, is an abundant resident. The red-billed pigeon, although rare, is found on the Rio Grande, and both the white-fronted and Inca doves breed in the State. The white-tailed hawk is found from Northern to

Southern Texas. Among the casual visitors may be noted the harpy eagle, coppery-tailed trogon, Aplamado falcon, and frigate-bird. The pigmy owl is abundant and can be seen at the mouths of prairie-dog holes all over the prairie.

Both the Texan kingfisher and the Texan woodpecker are confined to the western portion of the State, and extend into Mexico and the Western United States. A Texan variety of Merrill's paraquué is found along the lower Rio Grande. In addition to these there are several species of humming-birds, four of fly-catchers, the green jay (Audubon's), and the hooded oriole. The Texas sparrow and Sennet's warbler are West Texas forms which extend into Mexico, while the golden-cheeked warbler, which is common in the highlands of Guatemala, is known in the United States only from the cedar-brakes at New Braunfels.

Among the reptiles are the alligator, various tortoises, numerous species of snakes (of which the copperhead, water-moccasin, and rattlesnake are alone considered dangerous), the horned toad (two species), and lizards of several species. Among the lizards are five species belonging to the Mexican province, and one Mexican snake (*Sibon annulatum*) is also found in Western Texas.

No less than two hundred and thirty species of fishes are given by Messrs. Evermann and Kendall [1] as belonging to the Texas fauna.

"With regard to its fresh-water fishes, Texas is chiefly remarkable for the abundance of species in its lowland streams. A large proportion of its species are confined chiefly or almost wholly to the streams of the narrow strip known as the coast-plains region. The lower portions of the larger streams crossing this teem with many species of valued food fishes, such as the channel cat, chuckle-headed cat, mud cat, buffalo, large-mouthed black bass (the trout of the South), various species of sunfishes, and the fresh-water drum. . . . The coast of Texas is also remarkable for the number of brackish-water species, the single family of *cyprinodontidæ* being represented by at least nineteen species, most of which are found only near the coast."

Among the two hundred and thirty species enumerated are the shovel-nosed shark, saw-fish, sting-rays, eagle-ray, sturgeon, three gars, eleven varieties of catfishes, suckers, pike, mullet, sea bass, snappers, red fish, croakers, flounders, etc. The streams of the central, northern, and northwestern portions of the State are well supplied with bass, catfish, buffalo, sunfish, etc.

The invertebrate fauna is equally varied. The crustaceans are represented by lobsters, crabs, shrimp, crawfish, and wood-lice; the myriapeds by both millipeds and centipeds. Spiders are abundant in species, and brilliant colors and singular forms are found. The tarantula is the largest and fiercest of the tribe, although not so venomous as often reported. Among the insects are many species of neuroptera, beetles, butterflies and moths, diptera, etc.

The mollusca are also well represented. Mr. Singley [2] enumerates five hundred and sixty-nine species, divided as follows: terrestrial species, ninety-seven; fresh-water species, one hundred and twenty-six; marine species, three hundred and forty-six; and he states that future collections may largely increase the latter two divisions.

[1] Bulletin of the United States Fish Commission for 1892, pp. 57–126. "The Fishes of Texas and the Rio Grande Basin."

[2] Fourth Annual Report of the Geological Survey of Texas. "Texas Mollusca," p. 300.

The oyster and clam (*Grathodon cuneata*) are very abundant on the coast, while the streams abound in mussels, or unios, some of which, in the Colorado and its tributaries, have furnished pearls of good quality.

AGRICULTURE.

The resources of the State from an agricultural point of view have long been recognized. The richness of the soil, the ease with which it can be tilled, the temperate climate permitting field-work to be done at almost any time, and the good average rainfall in that portion of the State devoted to farming have all contributed to this renown. Certain areas have earned high reputation for fertility or adaptability to certain crops, while others, in reality of nearly equal value, have been passed over almost entirely. The Black-Waxy Prairies of Central Texas and the bottom lands of the rivers have long held a pre-eminent place for fertility ; the red lands of East Texas and the Cross-Timbers areas have become noted as fruit-growing lands ; but it is only lately that the Coast Prairies and the lands of Northwest Texas have attracted the attention they deserve and have begun to be utilized.

Soils.—The alluvial soils, or those of the bottom lands, are of every possible variety, from the black hammock of the smaller streams to the chocolate loams of the larger, but all alike are of great fertility. The principal bodies of these soils are, of course, connected with the river systems—Red, Trinity, Brazos, Colorado, Guadalupe, and Nueces ; yet there are valuable bodies also along the minor streams. These lands have been formed from the materials derived from the different beds over which the rivers flow in their upper reaches, mingled with animal and vegetable matter carried down and deposited in the less rapid waters and broader channels of the lower country. In many places they are still subject to periodical inundations, and the materials deposited at such times are in themselves fertilizers of value. Such deposits, half an inch or more in thickness, have been made by a single inundation, and the depth of fifty feet, which is claimed for the alluvial soil of the Brazos in the "sugar-bowl," shows the possibility of indefinite cultivation without impoverishment.

Of all these alluvial soils that of the Brazos is considered the most valuable, both for fertility and endurance. It is the most extensive body in the State, and will compare favorably in all respects with the richest alluvial land in the world. The valley has a length of about three hundred miles and its width in this distance will average four miles. The principal soil is a chocolate loam, which occurs in belts from one-half mile to one mile in width, and is regarded as the best on account of its perfect drainage, easy tillage, and great fertility. Cane-brakes, a dense timber growth, and bowers of grape-vines almost cover the land. It shows no diminution of fertility after fifty years of cultivation. The soil of the ash and elm lands in the Coastal Slope is not much esteemed, but the black peach-soil, named from its abundant growth of wild peach, is easily tilled and especially adapted for sugar-cane. The other soils vary not only with the different composition of the materials of the various plains, but through the modifications of these materials from subsequent submergence, erosion of overlying beds, and local transportation by both water and winds.

While there are large areas of residual soils, or those derived directly from

the underlying rock materials, each belt of which is therefore dependent on and characteristic of the plain in which it occurs, there are also those which have been derived from other sources, but the study of the geology of the State has not yet proceeded far enough to thoroughly classify them. The soil of the Coastal Plain is usually a sandy loam, with subsoil of red or yellow clay. This is almost all susceptible of cultivation when properly drained, and portions of it are very fertile. The farms between Galveston and Houston show its especial adaptability to fruit culture and for market gardening. When the underlying clays come to the surface, residual soils of black, waxy character are found, especially west of the Brazos. The Reynosa Plain has a black, sandy soil in the eastern portion of the State, which is replaced beyond the Brazos by chocolate loam and black, waxy lands covered in places by brown sand. These are also fertile soils. The black prairies of Washington and Fayette Counties occur in this belt, but are probably closely akin to the coast clays. The Timber-Belt Plain has soils of various characters. The uplands of much of the pine region are covered with gray sand of little fertility, but the lowlands and valleys, with their sandy loams, are very productive, although usually not so enduring as some other soils. In the area underlaid by the marine division of this plain are the red lands of East Texas, long noted for their richness and adaptability to fruit culture.

The black, waxy soils, comprising the main prairies of that name and a smaller strip of similar character just east of the Lower Cross-Timbers, have for years been recognized as one of the finest bodies of agricultural land known. They are almost entirely prairie soils, and take their name from their waxy character when wet. While more difficult to till than some of the lighter soils, their fertility and endurance are such as to make them the favorite outside the bottom lands, even if they do not rival these in popularity.

The soils of the Grand Prairie are for the most part shallow and rocky. Where they are of sufficient extent for cultivation they usually consist of chocolate loams.

The soils of the Central-Basin Region also vary according to the character of rock materials underlying them. The hill-tops are usually sandy, while the valleys have red soils and the mesquite flats a very productive, dark, stiff, or waxy clay. Farther west the chocolate loam predominates and forms the wheat soil of the Panhandle country.

The soil of the Llano Estacado is chiefly of a brown loam, sometimes sandy, and well adapted for farming or fruit culture. The mesas and flats of trans-Pecos Texas have soils which are sufficiently rich to guarantee fine production if sufficient moisture can be supplied. They are red sands or sandy loams.

Corn, oats, and cotton are grown almost everywhere, the latter having been successfully raised even in the Panhandle. The adaptability of the coast country for sugar and rice culture has been fully proven, as has that of the more northern portions for wheat. Tobacco is also being successfully grown in several counties of East Texas. Nearly all the field crops of the United States can be grown somewhere within the borders of the State.

Melons of different kinds find here their highest development, and by suitable selection of location almost every fruit and vegetable of temperate or subtropic climate may be grown. Year by year the growth of vegetables for foreign markets

is on the increase, and carload after carload is shipped northward weeks before they are in the market from any other source.

Irrigation.—Irrigation was first introduced into Texas by the founders of the Missions. Of the ditches constructed by them for this purpose those on the San Antonio and Rio Grande are still in use, but those farther eastward fell into disuse with the abandonment of the Missions and have little left to even mark their location.

Along the Rio Grande ditches have been added from time to time, until water is now being taken out for irrigation purposes at a number of places, and near its mouth there is a sugar plantation of considerable size which is under irrigation by water from the river. Numerous projects for increasing the acreage of irrigable lands in its valley are in contemplation, the principal of which are those in the vicinity of El Paso and above Eagle Pass. The ditches on the San Antonio River have also been increased and the area under irrigation considerably enlarged, but it is nowhere practised to the extent which the volume of the water and the available land render possible.

Irrigation has been practised to some extent in Llano and adjoining counties, but the ditches are small and of very limited capacity. In Tom Green County, however, irrigation from the Conchos has attained somewhat larger proportions and has been quite successful.

On the Leona, below Uvalde, several irrigation enterprises have been projected. One of these was the growth of sugar-cane by irrigation. Works were constructed, sugar-houses built, and the experiment given a trial, but it did not prove a successful venture; partly, at least, from lack of proper transportation facilities at the time of its operation, and the work was abandoned. At present the only irrigation of any extent on the Leona is at Batesville, the results being sufficient to convince the most skeptical of its value, for during the past three years, when the surrounding country was parched with drought, this locality has been a veritable oasis. Excellent results have also been obtained at Del Rio, where water from San Felipe Springs is used to irrigate the valley between Del Rio and the Rio Grande. The land which can be irrigated amounts to five thousand or six thousand acres, and such a thing as failure of crops is unknown.

Among the largest works in the State are those on the Pecos River, above Pecos City, and there are a few others in different portions of the State, but the aggregate is by no means what it should be under prevailing conditions.

The future of Texas is largely bound up in the development of irrigation, and the possibilities of agriculture in the subhumid and arid portions of the State under its influence can hardly be overestimated. In these regions there are many streams which can be dammed and their flood-waters stored for use in the adjacent valleys; ravines and canyons offer like favorable opportunities in many parts of the State, and, by taking advantage of these, many places which under existing conditions are little better than desert lands can be made into perfect garden-spots.

ARTESIAN WATER.

The available artesian water-supply of the State is confined to the Coastal Slope. While a few flowing wells occur in the northern basin, they are so highly charged with saline matter that they cannot be used for ordinary purposes. In the coastal

area, however, the dip of the rock material gulfward, or in the same direction as the slope of the country, and at a slightly greater angle; the alternations of the porous, sandy beds with clayey or other impervious strata; the lack of disturbance or deeply eroded channels, and the heavy rainfall, are circumstances which furnish ideal conditions of artesian water-supply. While flowing wells cannot be had throughout the entire area, a large portion of it is underlaid by these valuable water-beds, and at many places two, three, or more flows can be had from different depths.

The principal water-bearing sands are the following:—

Productive in Coast Prairies	The Reynosa beds. The Lapara beds.	. Neocene.
Productive in Lignitic Plain	The Fayette sands. The Marine beds. The Carrizo sands.	. Eocene.
Productive in Black and Grand Prairies .	The Lower Cross-Timber sands. The Paluxy sands. The Trinity sands.	Cretaceous.

In addition to these there are beds of sand in the coast clays and other divisions which occasionally furnish small flows, and flowing wells from the sandy limestone between the Paluxy and Trinity sands are not uncommon.

The different beds of sand outcrop, or appear as the surface rock, in bands of varying width, rudely parallel to the Gulf coast. They are separated from each other by broad bands of clays, sandy clays, and limestones. The rainfall of the area is in part absorbed by the porous beds and carried downward towards the Gulf between the under and upper clays, or other impervious rocks, and furnishes a water-supply as long as it can be reached by boring. The wells nearest the area of out-crop and at the same general elevation are negative, non-flowing, or surface wells, while those farther south and at lower levels usually give excellent flows.

The water-bearing sands nearest the coast are those of the Reynosa division, comprising the orange-colored beds of Willis, Hempstead, Alleyton, and elsewhere in East Texas, and their more limy and therefore whiter extension to the west, as seen at Beeville, San Diego, and elsewhere. In the east the water gotten from these sands is usually of excellent quality, if the wells be not bored directly on the Gulf coast; but on the coast they generally yield salt water, and the same is true of some of the wells in the southwest. The area in which water is to be expected from these sands is that of the Coast Prairies. A local thinning out, change of character, or induration of the water-bearing bed may occur here or there, but in the greater part of the area water can be obtained from them, and at places less than fifty feet above the Gulf flowing wells may be secured at depths of from one hundred and fifty to one thousand feet and over, depending upon the portion of the country, distance from outcrop, etc. To these water-beds we owe the fine flowing wells at Houston and in the country between that city and Galveston, as well as many others to the east and west.

The Lapara beds are also water-bearing, consisting as they do of sand with balls, strings, and beds of clay, but the water they afford is almost always salty. This is especially noticeable along the Nueces River, south of Oakville, for along that stream almost every spring and sipe which comes from these sands is brackish or sulphurous. Therefore, while the inclination of the beds carry them below the Coast Prairies, and they could probably be reached at much less depth than is sometimes attempted for artesian water, they are not likely to prove of use. These sands were those reached in the Galveston deep well, between one thousaud five hundred and ten and two thousand nine hundred and twenty feet.

The Fayette sands, as has been stated in the description of the Coastal Plain, extend from Rockland on the Neches by Riverside, La Grange, and Tilden to the Rio Grande. They are more indurated in places than are either of the two preceding beds, but in many places the sands and sandstones are sufficiently porous to carry a good supply of water. So far few wells have been sunk into these sands to prove their water-bearing character, but the water, while doubtless saline or sulphurous in some of the sands, from the mineral matter contained in them, should be of excellent quality from other beds which are comparatively free from such impurities. They were not reached by the Galveston well.

The Marine beds contain beds of sand which have been proved by actual borings to be water-bearing. Indeed, nearly all of the flowing wells west of the Nueces derive their supply from them. This includes the well at Pleasanton and those of Frio County, which, although somewhat saline, are nevertheless made use of. Similar wells may be obtained throughout the lowlands of the entire brown sandstone area, and, while the water is not the best, it is fairly good in many places, and will afford stock-water at least in others. Besides, if better water be wanted, it can be procured throughout the same area by sinking deeper wells into the red and white sands of the Queen City beds or Carrizo sands. These beds form a clear and distinct horizon from Cass County in the northeast to Carrizo Springs in the west, at which place artesian water was first secured from them. They lie between the gray sands of the lignite beds and the basal clays of the Marine beds, and, although sometimes mineralized in their upper portion, as a rule furnish excellent water. The only flowing well in Western Texas which these sands supply, with the exception of the Carrizo Springs district, is that at Cotulla. This well, ten hundred and twenty feet deep, only reaches the upper portion of the beds, and the water is impregnated with common, Epsom, and Glauber salts. Better water could probably have been secured from fifty to two hundred feet lower. These Carrizo sands are destined to be great water-furnishers for the valley of the Nueces and its tributaries.

The Lower Cross-Timber sands, as the name indicates, are those on which are found the strip of scattered forest stretching southward from Red River to Waco. South of the Brazos the sands are replaced by clays. These sands greatly resemble those of the Marine beds not only in appearance, but in mineral contents, and the water from them is, therefore, frequently more or less saline. It is from these beds that the non-flowing wells at Denison, the flowing wells of Dallas, and very many others north of the Brazos are supplied.

The shallow flows at Fort Worth and elsewhere in the same region are from the Paluxy sands, a bed which, in the Red River region, is scarcely separable from

the Trinity. Southward, however, a wedge of sandy limestones, the Glen Rose beds, gradually separates the two, until finally, in the neighborhood of Austin, the upper or Paluxy sand disappears as such, being merged into the sandy limestone. The flows from this bed are sometimes very strong, as shown by the well at Marlin and the first flows of the Waco wells. The water, however, is often sulphurous and contains both salt and Glauber's salt; so that it is frequently necessary to cut off this flow by piping through it and going still deeper to the underlying Trinity sands for water of a satisfactory quality.

Like the Lower, the Trinity or Upper Cross-Timber sands owe their name to the timber belt which occupies a portion of their outcrop. They are the greatest of all our water-bearing beds, and the wells already flowing from them furnish a volume of water exceeding that of many of our rivers. Not only so, but from them also arise the great springs which issue from the line of faulting beginning at Belton and stretching westward *via* Austin along the Balcones; and the San Marcos, and other rivers to the west, all have their origin in the waters gushing upward from these sands through natural artesian wells made by this line of fracture and faulting. The water from it is pure and practically free from mineral taint, and the supply has proved abundant. Flows have been secured throughout a large part of the Fort Worth division of the Grand Prairie and nearly to the eastern edge of the black prairie east of it. South of the Colorado no wells are known save those of San Antonio which have their supply from it, but others can be gotten. In the Plateau Region, while it will furnish all necessary water, flowing wells can be secured only at a few places.

MINERAL RESOURCES.

Although the agricultural resources of Texas are very great, they are rivalled by the deposits of useful minerals, which are not only varied in kind, but occur in deposits of such richness and extent that their utilization can hardly be much longer delayed. Their present undeveloped condition is not due to any deficiency of the minerals and ores, either in quantity or quality, but rather to a lack of effort or, in some cases, to misdirected effort. Attempts at their development properly directed have been successful, and mines and manufactories are now being operated with profit in different parts of the State, but these are insignificant compared to the possibilities. While private exploration and enterprise have done much to call attention to this wealth of minerals, it has been the work of the Geological Survey to determine what minerals occur in workable quantities, their location, extent, and quality, and, although much has already been accomplished, the investigation is by no means complete

Of the metallic minerals, ores of gold, silver, copper, lead, zinc, iron, manganese, and, probably, bismuth exist in workable quantities.

Gold, Silver, Copper, Lead, and Zinc.—The precious metals, gold and silver, occur both free or "native," and also in connection with the ores of copper, lead, and zinc. The deposits of these ores are confined to two well-defined but widely separated districts, outside of which there is little hope of finding them in quantities sufficient to repay the cost of mining. One of these, comprising Llano, Mason, with parts of Burnet, San Saba, McCulloch, Gillespie, and Blanco Counties

in Central Texas, is called the Central Mineral Region, while the other, including the counties of El Paso, Jeff Davis, Presidio, Buchel, and Foley, lying between the Pecos and Rio Grande, in the extreme western portion of the State, has been named the trans-Pecos Region.

The mountain peaks and ranges of the trans-Pecos district are, as has been stated, a part of the great Rocky Mountain range crossing from Colorado and New Mexico into the republic of Mexico. Composed of similar rock materials, the Texan portion contains also the same character of mineral deposits. The surface indications of the metalliferous veins are numerous, easily distinguishable, and continuous over considerable distances. These indications consist of iron outcrops or gossan, quartz veins from a few inches to more than fifty feet in width, outcrops of spars, etc.

In the Quitman Mountains free gold has been found in the outcrops of fissure veins in the granitic rocks and in float specimens, one of the latter assaying as much as seventeen ounces per ton. Although the prospects are so flattering, no work of any consequence has yet been done.

Free gold also occurs in small quantities in the sands of Sandy Creek, Llano County, in the Colorado River, and in a few other localities, but at these places the quantity seems to be too small to warrant mining.

Native silver occurs in the trans-Pecos region, and has been mined for several years at the Presidio and Cibolo Mines, near Shafter, in Presidio County, the mills of which have a capacity of one thousand ounces per day. These may be said to be the first well-equipped and successful mines in the State. It is also found as wire silver, in small quantities, in connection with the copper ores of the Hazel Mine, in the Diabolo Mountains of El Paso County.

The principal deposits of the precious metals, however, will probably be found in connection with the ores of copper, lead, zinc, and iron.

In the Quitman range, as well as in the adjacent mountains, the veins show, at and near the surface, small quantities of copper carbonates or galena, sometimes both. Somewhat lower down galena forms the body of the ore, but is gradually replaced in part by blende or zinc sulphide as greater depths are reached. Numerous prospecting shafts have been sunk in this region, and some ore has been shipped by the Bonanza, Alice Ray, and others of the better-developed mines. They are not now in active operation, because of the lack of suitable reduction-works within shipping distance and the refractory character of the ore.

In the Carrizo Mountains there are also a number of prospect shafts, or rather "scratches," some of them showing impregnations of copper carbonates and an iron lead, which in places carries gold and silver.

In the Diabolo Mountains and foot-hills there are very well defined leads, showing copper carbonates in the upper portion, passing into sulphides as moderate depth is attained. The Hazel Mine in this range is one of the best-developed mines in the district. The main shaft is about six hundred feet in depth, with cross-cuts and drifts. The principal ores are copper glance and gray copper, both silver bearing,—silver glance and native silver. The gray copper has yielded assays up to two thousand ounces of silver to the ton, and some of the copper glance has exceeded six hundred ounces of silver per ton.

While the Eagle Mountains do not show as favorable indications as the Quitman or Sierra Diabolo, there has been some prospecting done, which shows the existence of small quantities of galena.

In the Apache or Davis Mountains a little prospecting has been done, but the indications of ore deposits are somewhat obscured by the lava-flows, and for that reason their value is not so readily determinable.

The Mount Ord range contains large ferruginous leads, assays from which show the presence of silver, and prospect shafts have disclosed fair veins of silver-bearing lead ore near the surface.

The Chinati Mountains, or, as they were formerly known, the Sierra Pilares, in Presidio County, have, in addition to the silver deposits at Shafter, veins of galena which are silver-bearing, and also some ores containing bismuth. While prospecting has shown that these are probably in paying quantities, no development has so far been had, except the mines at Shafter, to which reference has already been made.

The mountain ranges to the south and east have not been so thoroughly examined, but from specimens collected the existence of ore deposits containing the precious metals with copper and lead is a certainty.

In the Central Mineral Region nothing like systematic mining for the precious metals, lead, or copper has been attempted. Zinc is almost entirely wanting in this district. The copper deposits are directly connected with the oldest rocks of the region, and not only are veins found showing impregnations of the copper carbonates, but the sulphides, such as bornite, chalcopyrite, etc., occur, usually carrying silver or gold, or both. Much prospecting has been done on these deposits, but up to this time no mines of value have been developed. While the indications are favorable for the occurrence of copper in workable quantities, a different manner of work from the desultory prospecting hitherto carried on will be required to show what really can be depended on. The same may be said regarding the deposits of lead in this region. Hand specimens of both these metals give high assays for gold and silver, while others contain none at all.

Copper is also found in the Permian formation, or the "red beds" of Northwest Texas, where it occurs in three belts, extending from the Brazos to Red River. The ore does not occur in veins, but is a deposit in beds of clay, which are from two to four feet in thickness, and the copper is irregularly distributed through them. It is sometimes found in a pseudomorphic form where the sulphide of copper has replaced the fibre of the wood. In other places it occurs in nests of rounded nodules, and at some localities the clay bed is so impregnated as to form a low-grade ore, analyses showing from one to four per cent. of copper. Silver is sometimes found in the ore. It has not been developed to any extent as yet, but if suitable methods of concentration be found it may become the basis of a considerable industry.

Iron.—Outside of the trans-Pecos region, the iron ores of which have not been examined, there are two other districts in which they are known to be in workable quantities,—the Central Mineral Region and the Iron-ore Region of East Texas.

The ores of the East Texas region are all limonites or hydrated peroxides, and occur in beds in the tertiary deposits. The two principal kinds are the lami-

nated and geode ores. The former, which was possibly the earlier in time of deposition, is found in beds from one to four feet in thickness, lying almost horizontally, and forming the tops of many of the hills. The geode ores, which occur at a slightly later stage in the deposits, are in beds of considerable thickness. This character of ore is most plentiful in the northern portion of the region, while the laminated ores predominate in the southern part. It has been demonstrated, by actually tracing them out, that workable deposits of these ores cover an area of more than one thousand square miles.

The efforts at development have met with various degrees of success. In the fifties the first furnace was erected in Cass County by Mr. Nash, and was run successfully for several years. In 1861, the eighth legislature, by joint resolution, invited the government of the Southern Confederacy to consider the propriety and importance of establishing "foundries" and manufactories in this region for the manufacture of ordnance and arms. In response to this invitation the Confederate government took charge of some of the furnaces already in operation and ran them for the purpose indicated. Others were erected in various localities, and gun-barrels and other munitions were manufactured. A few other furnaces were erected during the period by private capital, and thus the total number was considerably increased, although the output of iron was comparatively small, on account of the small size of the works. These furnaces—or bloomaries, for the most of them were of this character—made an iron from the rich ores of this region which was very malleable and tough, and in travelling through the country to-day there is frequently found articles in daily use among the farmers which they claim were made directly from the ore at the "Foundry," as the furnaces were always called. There are records of the following bloomaries or furnaces besides that of Mr. Nash, already mentioned: Sulphur Fork Iron Company, located just west of Springdale; Hughes' Furnace, one and one-half miles southeast of Hughes' Springs; Young's Iron Works, eight miles southeast of Jacksonville; Philleo's Iron Works, eight miles south of Rusk; Nechesville Bloomary, near Nechesville; and the Kickapoo Bloomary, six miles from Linn Flat. There may have been one or two others, but no record of them has been obtained. Some of these were burned previous to or about the time of the fall of the Confederacy; one or two continued operations for a few years afterward, but were finally abandoned.

In 1870, the Kelleyville Furnace, situated five miles north of Jefferson, was put in blast and run until 1886, when it was closed down.

The "Old Alcalde" Furnace, of twenty-five tons' capacity, at the Rusk Penitentiary, went into blast in November, 1885, and has run every year since that time. The most notable work of this furnace, which is run with convict labor, is the castings which were furnished for the new capitol building, including the artistic architectural work of the pillars for the first, second, and third floors. A pipe foundry is run in connection with this furnace, using its product without remelting. In 1892 a new pipe foundry was built, with a capacity of seventy-five tons per day. The pig-iron made at present is largely used in the manufacture of car-wheels, for which purpose it is especially well adapted.

The Lone Star Iron Company at Jefferson operate a furnace of sixty tons' capacity, which first went into blast on March 15, 1891, and has been run each

year since. The iron is reported excellent for the manufacture of car-wheels and also for general foundry purposes.

The ores of this region are comparatively free from phosphorus and sulphur and are easily reduced, the yield at the "Old Alcalde" Furnace being forty-eight to fifty per cent. of iron from the roasted ore.

Since coke is not available, all the furnaces use charcoal for fuel, and the cost of this is the stumbling-block which has so far prevented the development which would otherwise have resulted from the existence of so large a body of such excellent ore.

The ores of the Central Mineral Region comprise magnetites, hematites, and the various hydrated sesquioxides of iron usually included under the general name of limonites or brown hematites.

The magnetites occur in connection with the oldest rocks of the region, in several well-defined bands or belts which have a general northwest and southeast course. Seven of these bands have been recognized and mapped, and the ores found in them are shown, by analyses made by the chemists of the State Survey, to be equal to any in America. They are, in fact, high-grade Bessemer ores, containing only traces of phosphorus and sulphur, and with a percentage of metallic iron ranging as high as sixty-eight per cent. A considerable amount of prospecting has been done by use of diamond-drill and cross-cuts and pits at numerous locations along the central and western portion of the area. The Olive Mine is located near the town of Bessemer, on the Austin and Northwestern Railroad, and has already reached a depth of two hundred and fifty feet. Machinery for pumping and hoisting has been erected, and the company is making arrangements for shipping the ore.

Connected with the basal cambrian rocks are extensive deposits of comminuted sandy ores, which were derived from the magnetites by erosion along the early cambrian sea-shore. While these ores occur only in patches, it is probable that some of them will be found to be workable. The soft ores or limonites, while not always abundant enough to sustain a metallurgic industry by themselves, may become important sources of revenue in addition to the other iron ores. They are directly connected with the magnetites, and occur in veins, many of which have been traced and mapped by the Geological Survey.

The quality of these ores, taken in connection with the evidences of adequate supply, warrants the statement that this region must be the seat of a very important iron industry if the proper fuel-supply can be developed within a reasonable distance; and, even if that be impossible, the quality of the magnetites themselves will ensure their being mined and shipped to such places as may have the necessary fuel.

It may be noticed in this connection that the distance by rail from Llano to Birmingham, Alabama, is a thousand miles less than the point from which the hard ores of Lake Superior are now shipped to those furnaces.[1]

Manganese.—Manganese ores occur both in the Central Mineral Region and in trans-Pecos Texas, but the latter have not yet been examined. The ores of the

[1] For the details of these deposits, with the analyses of the various kinds of ore, reference is made to the First Annual Report of the Geological Survey of Texas, pp. 348 *et seq.*, and the Second Annual Report of the Geological Survey of Texas, pp. 608 *et seq.*

Central Mineral Region are associated with the older rocks and dip at various angles, sometimes standing almost vertically. The ores occur both as oxides and silicates, although the latter are not available at present for use as a source of manganese. They are found in the enclosing rock as lenticular layers varying from a few inches to several feet in thickness. They have been prospected at the Spiller Mine in Mason County by sinking shafts and diamond-drill borings, with the result of proving clearly that the deposit is workable both in quality and extent. Other localities which have been prospected are the Kothmann tract, Horse Mountain, and certain places in Blanco County. In addition to these, deposits of manganese ores also occur in many places in veins as a constituent of limonitic iron ores.

Tin.—This metal occurs at one or two localities in the Central Mineral Region, and also among the ores of the trans-Pecos area, but nowhere has a workable quantity been found up to the present time.

Coal.—The development of a country depends to a large extent upon the existence in it of an adequate fuel-supply. While wood, when sufficiently abundant, may answer for fuel up to a certain point, manufactures and industrial operations require a more concentrated and better combustible, such as can only be found in the fossil fuels which occur at many different horizons from the carboniferous to the present, the older, as a rule, being the better ; but even the youngest, under proper conditions, can be made serviceable. The aggregate area which is underlaid by beds of fossil fuel in Texas is very large. In the northern central portion of the State the coal measures occupy an area of several thousand square miles. In the vicinity of Eagle Pass, on the Rio Grande, there is a second basin belonging to the upper part of the cretaceous formation. A third, but as yet only partially explored, basin of similar age occurs on the Rio Grande border, in Presidio County ; but by far the most extensive beds are those occurring in the tertiary area, which stretches entirely across the State from Red River to the Rio Grande.

The coal of the first three basins may be classed as bituminous, while that of the tertiary is known as brown coal and lignite.

In the Central Coal-Field, by which name we know the region underlaid by the true coal measures, there are nine distinct seams of coal, two of which at least are of workable thickness and of good quality, and a third appears in places to be of sufficient thickness to give it economic value.

The first seam appears at the surface in Wise County, some eight miles west of Decatur. Its line of outcrop continues in a southwestern direction nearly to the southwest corner of that county, when it turns more sharply westward and appears in the southeastern portion of Jack County. Thence it crosses into Palo Pinto, near the northeast corner of the county, and its various outcrops appear in a south-southwest direction entirely across this county and down into Erath, until it finally disappears beneath the white limestone hills of the cretaceous and is found no more. On this seam are located several mines and prospect holes, among which may be mentioned those of Wise County Coal Company, Mineral Wells Coal Company, the Lake Mine, Carson & Lewis's, Adair Coal Company, and Texas and Pacific Coal Company. Of these the latter has a capacity of two thousand tons per day.

The second seam is first observed outcropping near Bowie, in Montague

VALLEY OF THE COLORADO RIVER FROM MOUNT BONNELL.

County. From this point it bends southwestward, passing north of Jacksboro, through Belknap, when it turns south, running just west of Eliasville, by Crystal Falls and Breckenridge, to and south of Cisco, when it, too, passes under the cretaceous ridge. South of this ridge the seam appears again on Pecan Bayou, in Coleman County, and from this point the outcrops extend in a southerly direction by Santa Anna Mountain to Waldrip, in McCulloch County. The Stephens Mine, in Montague County, and various prospects in Jack County are on this seam. Considerable work has been done in Young and Stephens Counties, but lack of transportation facilities has prevented the mines being opened. The seam becomes thinner and much poorer towards Cisco, graduating into a material little better than bituminous shale. On the southern portion of this seam, where it again becomes of good quality, numerous prospecting shafts have been sunk, as at Waldrip, on Bull Creek and Home Creek, and at the Silver Moon Mine, north of Santa Anna Mountain. Preparations are now being made to open a mine at Rockwood.

The thickness of the two seams is about equal, averaging some thirty inches. They are also similar in having usually one or more partings of clay or slate an inch or more in thickness. The beds dip towards the west or northwest not more than sixty feet per mile, and as the surface of the country rises very gradually in that direction it will be possible to secure coal from the beds for a considerable distance west of these outcrops at less than six hundred feet in depth. Their linear outcrop is fully two hundred and fifty miles in length, and if they be workable for ten miles west of the line of outcrop they have an area of two thousand five hundred square miles of coal land. Even if only two-fifths of this prove adapted to coal-mining, it gives a thousand square miles, each of which is underlaid by two million five hundred thousand tons of coal.

While the quality varies considerably in places, careful selection results in a fuel giving perfectly satisfactory results. Its value as a steaming coal has been thoroughly proved by the Texas and Pacific Railroad. Its coking qualities, although only tested once in a practical way, seem to be excellent.

The Eagle Pass Coal-Field has a probable area, according to Mr. J. Owen, of one hundred and twenty square miles. The coal, which is of cretaceous age, has a dip towards the southeast and a measured thickness in the mine of over four feet. The Hartz Mine, located about four miles above Eagle Pass, has been in operation for a number of years, with an average output of about twenty thousand tons annually. The coal has been used principally by the Southern Pacific Railway. About three years ago that company commenced work on the western extension of the same coal-field in Mexico. A boring at Eagle Pass proves the extension of this coal-seam in that direction. It was found at a depth of five hundred and twenty-five feet. While somewhat friable, this coal, when properly selected, is an excellent fuel.

The Capote basin lies in the valley of the Rio Grande, between the Chinati and Eagle Mountains. The coal mined at San Carlos is of the same age as that at Eagle Pass, but seems harder and not quite so friable. The workable coal lies in two benches separated by a seam of slate of variable thickness. In the different tunnels examined, the lower bench, which is the harder coal, has an

average thickness of two feet or over, and the upper was fully as thick. In places this widens out to a total of six feet or more. The parting is not so thick but that both benches can easily be mined together. While the western portion of the valley is very much broken and faulted, that part in which the work is being done, and from which the coal dips back into the mountains, seems to be perfectly regular in its stratification and undisturbed by faulting, although a monoclinal fold is seen towards its southern end. The average dip is to the northeast at an angle of five degrees.

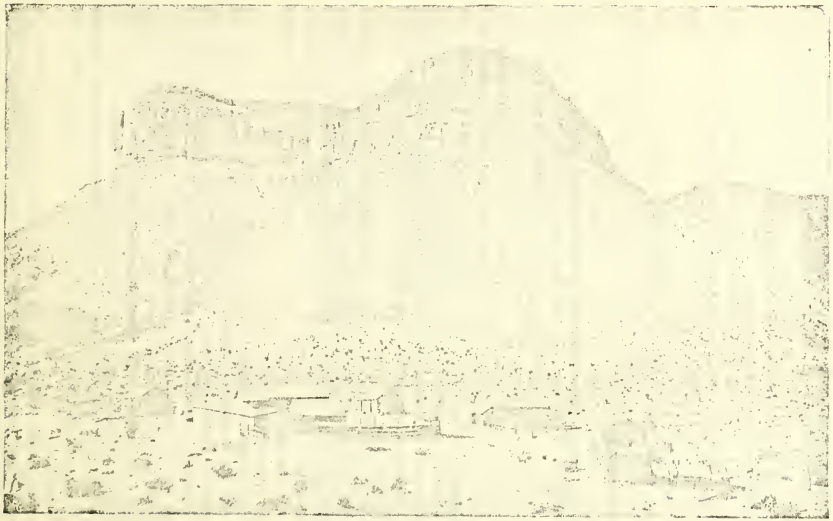
Trial of the San Carlos coal for steaming purposes has been made on the Southern Pacific Railroad, and it proved satisfactory. Tests of the coking qualities of the lower bench have been made with good results, and will be followed by others in ovens built at the mines.

So far as could be determined by a rapid examination, this deposit of coal, on account of its quality and extent, as well as from its location in a region otherwise practically destitute of fuel, must prove to be a prominent factor in the development of the western portion of the State. Specimens of similar coal from two other localities in the same region have been obtained, but the deposits have not yet been satisfactorily examined.

The beds of brown coal and lignite are found in connection with the deposits of the tertiary age, which stretch across the State between the main Black-Waxy Prairies and the coast. While the brown-coal beds have not been found everywhere within this area, their existence is known in more than fifty counties.

The best, and probably the largest deposits as well, are found in connection with that division of the tertiary named from their abundance in it, the Lignitic. The known occurrences begin in Bowie County near Red River, and extend southwest through the counties of Cass, Marion, Harrison, Morris, Titus, Hopkins, Camp, Upshur, Wood, Raines, Van Zandt, Smith, Henderson, Anderson, Freestone, Limestone, Leon, Robertson, Milam, Lee, Bastrop, and Caldwell. From this point the deposits are not very well known until Atascosa and Medina Counties are reached, where again the coal is found and can be followed west to the northern part of Zavalla, and through Dimmit and Webb Counties to the Rio Grande. The existence of the brown coal and lignite throughout this area is shown by many outcroppings and numerous well-borings, in addition to the mines which have been opened on it. The coal itself resembles most closely the brown coals of Bohemia. It occurs in beds more or less lenticular, perhaps, and of a thickness varying from four to twelve feet. As a rule, the bed of coal is of massive structure, but contains, scattered here and there through it, the remains of trees in a lignitized condition. Mines have been opened in various localities at different times, and the coal has been mined with greater or less success for several years. The principal mines now in operation are the Santo Tomas, near Laredo; the Lytle, Medina County; Mowatts's, Bastrop County; Rockdale Mining and Manufacturing Company, Milam County; Vogel, Milam County; Calvert Bluff, Robertson County; Alba, Wood County; Athens, Henderson County.

The second series of brown-coal deposits occurs in connection with the greensand beds lying southeast of the deposits just mentioned. They are usually thinner than the beds of the lignitic division, but are in places of good quality and in beds



THE HAZEL MINE AT THE FOOT OF SIERRA DIABLO, EL PASO COUNTY.
A Carboniferous Butte.

of sufficient thickness for exploitation. Still, a third series of beds from two to fourteen feet in thickness is found in connection with Yegua clays, which, while not so compact as those of the Lignitic division, are nevertheless of economic importance.

The investigations in comparing the Texas brown coal with that of Europe has shown that under proper conditions it is fully capable of replacing bituminous coal for any and all household, industrial, and metallurgic purposes, and proved to be most excellent fuel. The deposits are so situated and of such extent as to permit mining and delivery in the various markets of the State at prices far below anything that can be attained with bituminous coal under the most favorable conditions, and the fuel value is such as to compete successfully with any and all bituminous coals which are accessible. Under proper conditions as to fire-boxes, grate-bars, and drafts, the raw coal may be used for all purposes in stoves and grates; under stationary boilers or locomotives; as part fuel in iron-smelting; for burning clay, bricks, cement, lime, etc.

In the form of producer gas it may be used for any and every purpose for which such a fuel is applicable. It can be made into an illuminating gas and used for lighting and heating, or it can be made into an artificial fuel with coal-tar or some similar agglomerant, and the resulting briquettes will constitute a fuel which can be used in the same manner, as satisfactorily and for the same purposes as any ordinary bituminous coal.

Asphaltum.—This material exists in Texas under several conditions. Tar springs occur in various portions of the State, which are simply the seepage from deposits of the material, and the sour lakes of Hardin and Liberty Counties may be included in them. The main deposits, however, consist of beds of sand, sandstone, or limestone, in which bitumen exists as an impregnation in amounts varying from one-tenth to one-fifth of the entire rock material. Among the asphaltic sandstones may be mentioned the various deposits occurring in the tertiary belt of East and South Texas, like those near Palestine, in Anderson County; the beds at Saint Jo, in Montague County, and a portion of the deposit near Cline, in Uvalde County. The principal asphaltic limestones are found in the vicinity of Burnet and near Cline, in Uvalde County. As a rule, the deposits in the limestone are richer than those in the sand. While in many cases the so-called asphaltums seem to be only the residue from the evaporation of the oils, and only to be classed as heavy oils, at others, either from different conditions of genesis or a more advanced evaporation, they are true asphaltum.

The deposits of asphaltic sands have been utilized but little as yet. While small amounts have been used at Palestine and St. Jo for sidewalks and streets, and have proved very satisfactory, their extended use at other points is largely dependent on more favorable transportation facilities.

So far as can be learned, the use of the asphaltic limestone has been even more limited than the sands. A manufactured product from the Uvalde asphalt, under the trade name of "Litho-Carbon," has been widely advertised, but no great quantity of the asphaltum has been used up to the present.

Oils.—Oil occurs in small quantities in various portions of the State. It usually accompanies the tar springs and deposits of bitumen which are found in the

tertiary area and in the fish-beds of the cretaceous It is found in the counties of Sabine, Shelby, Nacogdoches, San Augustine, Anderson, Grimes, Travis, Bexar, Encinal, and others. It also occurs in the southern portion of Brown and certain other counties of the Colorado Coal-Field.

The principal development has been in the Nacogdoches and Bexar Counties. A number of wells were bored south of Nacogdoches, a pipe-line constructed between them and the railroad, and tanks built at the station; but, although the shipments previous to this had been remunerative, no oil has been shipped for two or three years. South of San Antonio wells have been dug which have yielded small amounts of oil for several years. All of the oils so far found are heavy and well adapted for lubricating purposes; but, while the deposits are of some economic importance and will doubtless be worked, and while a possibility exists that they may be found in larger quantities, there are no grounds for a positive statement that such an event is probable.

The occurrences of gas are also wide-spread, but quantities so far found are inconsiderable. It has been observed most frequently in connection with the tar springs.

Fertilizers.—The fertilizers of the State, so far as they have been determined, are the bat-guanos, gypsum, green-sand marls, and calcareous marls. As yet no phosphates of any kind have been found in workable quantities.

Bat-guanos are found in caves in the limestones of Williamson, Burnet, Lampasas, Llano, Gillespie, Blanco, Bexar, Uvalde, and other counties. These caves are of various sizes, and the accumulations in them are not all of equal value, some being so situated that water has access to the beds, dissolving and carrying off parts of the valuable salts, while others are injured by fire. This guano is as valuable as the Peruvian, and large quantities of it have been shipped to other States and to Europe.

Gypsum, which is used as "ground plaster" for top dressing many crops, occurs in large deposits in the permian beds of the Abilene-Wichita country, and is also found throughout a large portion of the tertiary area along the streams and scattered through the clay as crystals of clear selenite. It has been little used for this purpose in Texas.

Green-sand marl, which is a mixture of clay and green-sand, often containing quantities of shells, occurs both in the tertiary and cretaceous beds. In its unaltered condition it is of a more or less pronounced green color, but when altered chemically under atmospheric influences it assumes a great variety of colors, forming much of the red or yellow sandstone of East Texas. The marls have been tested in several localities and have proved to be well suited to fertilizing the sandy soils, and for renewing and increasing the fertility of those that have been worn out. While no deposits have been found of sufficient richness to bear long railroad transportation, they are rich enough to be of great economic value to the farmers in whose vicinity they occur, since, in addition to the phosphorus and potash they contain, the shells are a source of lime, which is often beneficial to the soils.

Calcareous marls are very abundant, those of the cretaceous and upper tertiary being the most extensive of the deposits. Very little use has been made of them.

In addition, there are certain clays which may become of value as fertilizers because of the considerable quantities of potash they contain.

Clays.—The variety, extent, and quality of her clays entitles Texas to take rank among the first manufacturers of clay products. Within her borders are found materials suitable for all purposes, from common building-brick to porcelain of the finest quality. Beginning with the more recent formation brick loams appear in most of the river valleys, and among the materials of the coast clays are some that are suitable for coarser stoneware, drain-tile, etc., and others which, from their refractory character, are well adapted for the manufacture of charcoal furnaces and possibly of sewer-pipe. Still others seem adapted to the manufacture of vitrified brick for paving. In the tertiary deposits are clays of all grades. In the upper portion of the eocene are beds of clay of light or even white color, some of which are well suited to the manufacture of every grade of earthenware below that of porcelain. Clays of this character have been secured in various localities,—from Angelina to and below Atascosa County. In this same belt, in connection with the brown coals, fire-clays of excellent quality occur, and also other clays sufficiently high in iron and alkalies for the manufacture of vitrified brick. Many of the clays of the cretaceous are of value not only for brick and earthenware, but as part of the raw material necessary for the manufacture of Portland cement. In the carboniferous and permian are very extensive deposits of brick, fire, and pottery clays. Some of the permian clays are very similar to those used so extensively in England for the manufacture of tile. The kaolins, or china-clays, are found among the deposits of the tertiary age, and also as secondary deposits in the cretaceous limestones west of San Antonio. The former are largely confined to the horizon known as the Carrizo sands, at the top of the lignitic division, and are mixed with sand, from which they may be easily separated by washing. The latter occupy basins eroded in the cretaceous limestones in Edwards and Uvalde Counties, and some of the deposits are remarkably pure. Others contain an admixture of lime and other impurities.

The development of the clay industry in Texas has hardly begun. It is true that there are numerous brick-yards, and that the output of ordinary building-brick and pressed brick is assuming a large total; that vitrified brick are successfully made in one locality, and that several small potteries are actually at work on the common grades of earthenware; but as yet the best deposits are hardly touched.

Bricks.—The principal localities in the coast country for the production of building-brick are Virginia Point, Cedar Bayou, Harrisburg, and Houston, where brick are made both by hand and by machine, and are of various shades of red or brown. Austin is supplied by yards using the Colorado alluvium, the bricks being a light brownish yellow, and both soft-mud and dry-pressed brick are made. San Antonio receives her principal supply from works located at Calaveras, on the San Antonio River. Several yards at Laredo use the alluvial deposits of the Rio Grande in making brick of good quality. Dallas has large brick-yards using the alluvial deposits of the Trinity, and to the west, on the Texas and Pacific Railway, are manufactories of pressed brick utilizing shales of the carboniferous age and producing brick of a very pleasing color.

At present there is only one paving-brick establishment in operation in the State, that at Garrison, the product of which is used for street-paving in Houston.

Fire-brick and other refractory goods have been manufactured at Flatonia, Kosse, and Athens during the last few years. The Athens factory is turning out furnace-linings which are found to be very satisfactory in use in the iron furnace at the Rusk Penitentiary. Charcoal furnaces are manufactured by a factory at Harrisburg. Potteries making ordinary stoneware, black or salt-glazed; curbing, drain-tile, flower-pots, and sewer-pipe are located at Weatherford, Denton, McDade, Henderson, Athens, Texarkana, Ladonia, Elmsdorf, etc. The amount produced is small compared with the demand for such goods, the greater part of which is brought in from outside the State.

The kaolins of Robertson and Edwards Counties have been tested at some of the Eastern potteries, and their excellent qualities proved, but so far the deposits have not been developed.

Refractory Materials.—In addition to the extensive deposits of fire-clay, which exist in connection with the bituminous and brown coals of the State, other refractory materials, such as graphite, soapstone, mica, and asbestos, have been found.

Graphite occurs to a limited extent in the Central Mineral Region as graphitic shales. While the greater portion of it is too impure for use, some specimens have been recently obtained which are of much better quality, and may prove to be of economic value. Soapstone is found in large quantities in the same region. One of the best exposures is about two miles south of west of Smoothing Iron Mountain, and the most favorable district for its further occurrence is between House and Smoothing Iron Mountain, and to the west of that area in Llano and Mason Counties. It also occurs southeast of this district, in Llano, Gillespie, and Blanco Counties. As a lining for furnaces and other purposes which do not require a very firm texture this material is fully suitable, and it can be cut or sawed into blocks or masses of any desired shape, with a perfectly smooth surface if desired.

While mica is a very abundant material, both in the Central and trans-Pecos Regions, it is not commonly of such transparency and size as to be commercially valuable. Specimens containing both these requisites are found in both localities, and workable deposits may yet be found.

Asbestos of good quality is found in the Central Mineral Region, in the southern part of Llano and the northern edge of Gillespie Counties. It may also extend into Burnet. While there has been considerable inquiry for it recently, no shipments have yet been made.

Sulphur.—Native sulphur has been received from Edwards County, and has also been found in some quantity in El Paso County, but the deposits have not yet been examined.

Strontia.—Two minerals having this earth as a base (celestite and strontianite) are found in the lower magnesian rocks of the cretaceous of Central Texas. Its best-known occurrences are at Mount Bonnell, near Austin, and in the vicinity of Lampasas, the latter locality being that from which the largest amount has been taken. It has not been worked commercially.

SIGNAL MOUNT—HOWARD COUNTY.
A Cretaceous Battle.

Salt.—This useful material, like many other valuable mineral deposits of Texas, is wide-spread. Along the lower coast there are numerous small lagoons which extend inland from the Laguna del Madre and Corpus Christi Bay, and in these, during the summer, salt is produced naturally from sea-water by solar evaporation.

Still farther inland in the same region are salt lakes, of which Sal del Rey, in Hidalgo County, is the principal and may be taken as the type. This lake is about three miles in circumference, has been for many years, and is still, the source of supply for the people on both sides of the lower Rio Grande. The brine is so strong that it deposits with considerable rapidity, and the salt is comparatively pure as dug from the bed.

In addition to these lakes in the Gulf region, others occur in Salt Valley, between the Diabolo and Guadalupe Mountains, in El Paso County, reaching to the New Mexico line.

Throughout the red-beds region the constant recurrence of such names as Salt Fork, Salt Creek, etc., tell of the prevalence of the material,—a prevalence little to the taste or comfort of the traveller in that region who is dependent on such streams for water. These creeks derive their salinity from the deposits of the permian age, whose strata include beds of rock-salt of great thickness. The only development at present is that by two companies at Colorado City, both of which have sunk wells through the beds of salt, which is lifted as brine and the salt manufactured by evaporation. These beds have been penetrated at other places as well, but so far no other works have been established.

Salt is found in salines also as rock-salt. The principal salines are: Jordan's; Grand Saline, Van Zandt County; Stein's Saline and Brooks's Saline, Smith County; and those of Anderson and Freestone Counties. These salines generally occupy a depression surrounded by wooded hills. The depressions are sometimes marshy or during the winter months hold a body of water, which evaporates as the summer approaches, leaving an incrustation of salt on the ground. Salt was made at several of these places in former years by digging shallow wells and evaporating the brine gotten from them, but at present little is being done with the surface material.

At Grand Saline, however, in boring a deep well with the hope of striking a stronger brine than that at the surface, a bed of rock-salt was encountered at a depth of two hundred feet, into which the drill entered one hundred and fifty feet without passing through it. This has since been developed gradually, until at the present it produces large quantities of all grades of salt.

Building Material.—Outside of the Coast Prairies almost every portion of the State contains building stones of one kind or another. So varied are they and so widely distributed that it is impossible to enter into details regarding them. The Reynosa furnishes a white, limy, clay "adobe," which is quarried in large blocks and used extensively for building in the southwest. The sandstones of the Fayette furnish excellent quarry material, and the court-house at La Grange and many other public buildings throughout the area testify to their utility and beauty. It has also been largely used in the Galveston jetties. The brown sandstone and green-sands of the Marine beds furnish building material which is used throughout that region,

the Rusk Penitentiary being built of the latter and the court-house at Pleasanton of the former. In the Lignitic are workable beds of gray, siliceous limestone which are very durable. The limestones of the cretaceous vary in hardness, but many deposits of excellent quality exist, and numerous quarries are open on them. Two localities may be mentioned,—the first near Austin, where the shell limestone known as Austin marble is gotten, and the other at Granbury, in Hood County.

The limestones and sandstones of the coal measures not only furnish building materials within their own borders, but are shipped to various parts of the State, and the same is true of the Pecos red sandstone, which is coming into general use. The marbles of Llano, Burnet, San Saba, and adjoining counties are of excellent color and take a fine polish. The various granites are too well known from their use in the State capitol building and various other structures to need comment. The serpentines and other ornamental stones of the same region must find general favor as soon as their possibilities are properly known. The granites, porphyries, and marbles of trans-Pecos Texas are equally valuable, the marble, indeed, being superior to any others so far found in the State.

Lime is made in various portions of the State, but the best is probably that from the linestones of the cretaceous, and its manufacture for commercial purposes is principally carried on in that area.

Materials for Portland cement are found throughout the same area, and factories exist at San Antonio and Austin, where cement of good quality has been manufactured.

From the vast deposits of gypsum through the permian or red-beds region plaster of Paris and various cements may be manufactured. Two plaster factories are at work near Quanah.

PART V.

TEXAS AND TEXANS IN THE CIVIL WAR.

1861—1865.

PREFATORY NOTE.

IT was the original purpose of the Publisher of these volumes to make this Part of the work contain a complete account of the operations of Texas troops in the war between the States, as well as a narrative of events within the State during that period. But the great difficulty and delay incident to procuring full and accurate details of the subject from those who were reasonably expected to furnish them, finally compelled the publication of the History without the complete realization of the design as at first conceived. It was concluded to postpone the preparation of a thorough history of Texas and Texans in the Civil War to a separate volume, which has been definitely arranged for, to appear in the near future. What is here presented, however, will furnish a very fair idea of the organization and services of Texas soldiers in the Confederate armies during the years from 1861 to 1865, as well as a succinct account of the condition and experiences of the State itself for the same period. The first portion of the narrative, covering operations on the coast and in the interior of Texas, is a compilation by Charles I. Evans, Esq., from official reports and documents, and from valuable manuscripts furnished by Colonel John S. Ford, Major K. M. Van Zandt, and other ex-Confederate officers and soldiers, to whom special acknowledgments are due. The several separate chapters on noted brigades and subordinate organizations are duly credited to their authors, and their merits speak conclusively for themselves. Although the Publisher has not received as much practical aid in the collection of the materials for this department of the work as he could have wished, he is yet under many and grateful obligations to the old Confederates throughout the State for their cordial encouragement and sympathy, and it is believed that they will enjoy and prize even this brief and imperfect compilation of the records of their heroic services in the greatest war of modern times. At no distant date it is hoped that their interest in this work will be rewarded by the publication of a complete and appreciative narrative of their part in the stirring scenes of those days.

THE PUBLISHER.

CHAPTER I.

MILITARY EVENTS AND OPERATIONS IN TEXAS AND ALONG THE COASTS AND BORDER, 1861–1865.

WHEN the secession convention assembled, Brevet Major-General David E. Twiggs was in command of the United States troops in Texas. After passing the ordinance of secession on the 1st day of February, 1861, it elected a Committee of Public Safety, of which John C. Robertson was chairman. This committee appointed J. H. Rogers, T. J. Devine, S. A. Maverick, and P. N. Luckett commissioners to treat with General Twiggs relative to the surrender to the State of the government property under his control, but the first named did not act with the commission. Upon presenting their credentials from the convention to General Twiggs and demanding the public property, he acceded to the demand, and appointed a military commission, consisting of Major Vinton, Major Maclin, and Captain Whiteley, of the army, to negotiate with them respecting the terms and details of the surrender. These commissions met in the city of San Antonio on the 9th of February, and continued their conferences from day to day until the 15th, when intelligence was received that the action of General Twiggs had been disapproved by the War Department at Washington City, and that he had been removed from command and Colonel C. W. Waite ordered to relieve him. The Committee of Public Safety, seeing in this change a strong probability that the arrangements made with General Twiggs would not be carried out by his successor, took immediate steps to seize the government property by force. Ben McCulloch, Henry E. McCulloch, and John S. Ford were appointed colonels of State troops, with instructions to lead three separate bodies of volunteers to designated points and demand of the officers commanding the United States troops an evacuation of the State and the surrender of all government property to the State of Texas. Colonel Ben McCulloch was directed to lead the volunteers under his command to San Antonio, Colonel Henry E. McCulloch to lead those under his command to the various posts on the northwestern frontier, and Colonel John S. Ford to lead those under his command to the posts on the lower Rio Grande. Accordingly, on the morning of the 16th of February, a number of volunteer companies, which had assembled near the city of San Antonio under Ben McCulloch to enforce the demand of the committee, marched into the city, placed sentinels at the various department offices, and quietly took possession of everything, including about thirty thousand dollars in gold and silver coin.

The companies participating in this seizure were commanded by Captains John A. Wilcox, James Duff, S. A. Maverick, W. M. Edgar, and others.

During the time that these transactions were taking place at San Antonio, Henry E. McCulloch, with several companies of volunteer State troops, was de-

manding and receiving, in the name of the State of Texas, the surrender of all the military posts along the frontier north of San Antonio. Among the officers at these posts, Captain E. Kirby Smith, who was in command at Camp Colorado, on Jim Ned Creek, in Coleman County, surrendered to Colonel Henry E. McCulloch, resigned his commission in the United States army, tendered his services to the Confederate States and afterwards became a distinguished lieutenant-general, and was in command of the Trans-Mississippi Department at the close of the war.

While these operations were taking place in the western and northwestern portions of the State, Colonel John S. Ford had proceeded to Houston and Galveston, where he was organizing an expedition of volunteers for the capture of Fort Brown and other posts on the lower Rio Grande. Upon his recommendation, Hugh McLeod was appointed lieutenant-colonel of his command, and a camp was organized, where all late United States soldiers who desired to enlist in the army of the Confederate States could do so and find a stopping-place. Mr. E. B. Nichols, a prominent citizen of Galveston, was appointed commissioner on the part of the State government to co-operate with Colonel Ford, and to receive the public property which should be turned over by the officers of the United States government. Out of his own private fortune he furnished means to defray expenses, and, with the assistance of other distinguished citizens, chartered the steamer *General Rusk* and the schooner *Shark* for the transportation of the volunteers from Galveston to Brazos Santiago; and on February 19, 1861, six companies, consisting of about five hundred men, commanded by Captains Edwards, Odlum, Redwood, Conner, Van Buren, and Davis, sailed from Galveston and came to anchor off the bar at Brazos Santiago on the 21st. Mr. E. B. Nichols and Colonel Ford went ashore at once, and, after some negotiation with Lieutenant James Thompson, of the United States army, commanding a small body of men guarding some stores on Brazos Island, these were withdrawn and the stores were taken in charge by the Texans. The State commissioner, Mr. Nichols, and commander of the troops, Colonel Ford, proceeded to Brownsville, leaving Lieutenant-Colonel Hugh McLeod in command of the troops at Brazos Island. Captain Bennett H. Hill, of the First United States Artillery, was in command at Fort Brown, and refused to recognize officially the authority of the commissioner on the part of the State of Texas, but several informal and friendly interviews were held between them. Captain George Stoneman, afterwards a general in the Union army, was in command of a squadron of the Second United States Cavalry, and expressed himself as being very hopeful of a peaceful solution of the political troubles.

By a calm and prudent course on the part of the representatives of the State government, which was met in a similar spirit by the United States officers, a conflict was avoided, although it was difficult to restrain some of the hot-headed men and subordinate officers among the State troops.

On February 25, Mr. Nichols returned to Galveston to raise more troops and forward them to Brownsville, and four large companies under Colonel B. F. Terry were forwarded and reached Brazos Santiago, March 22. This reinforcement raised the number of State troops to about fifteen hundred, and a conflict was imminent any day. As illustrating the feeling among the United States army officers, it is related that those at Brownsville refused to meet or receive an introduction to

Lieutenant-Colonel Hugh McLeod, on the ground that he was a graduate of the Military Academy at West Point, and had, in an unsoldierly manner, surrendered his command in the Santa Fé expedition. This most unjust accusation piqued Colonel McLeod very much, and its being entirely groundless did not prevent his extreme mortification and earnest desire to precipitate a conflict between the State and United States troops; but cooler counsels prevailed, and, while the relations were very strained all the time during the joint occupancy, actual hostilities were prudently avoided.

On March 3, 1861, the United States steamship *Daniel Webster* arrived off the bar, and it soon became known that Major Fitz-John Porter, assistant adjutant-general on the staff of General Winfield Scott, was on board. He assured the representatives of the State government that his mission was a purely pacific one, and that under his orders a collision could not occur, unless it was precipitated by the Texas forces. He also expressed himself personally as favoring a peaceful solution of the troubles between the States; and announced that as soon as the necessary transportation arrived, all the United States troops would take their departure. When Major Porter left Fort Brown he placed Captain Stoneman in command of the United States troops at that place, with instructions to receive all public property as it arrived there from the interior posts, and to turn it over to the State authorities in accordance with the agreement previously made between General Twiggs and the State commissioners at San Antonio.

It was agreed between the State authorities and the commander of the United States forces that all the United States troops should be removed from Texas, those at San Antonio and contiguous points being ordered to Green Lake, near Indianola, and those on the Rio Grande to Brazos Santiago, to await transportation to the north. Upon the expected withdrawal of the United States troops, the question of the protection of the frontier against Indian depredations and forays by Mexican banditti began to attract the serious attention of the State authorities. Much well-founded apprehension was felt and expressed that serious consequences would result from leaving the frontiers entirely unsupported; and the Committee of Public Safety began at once to address itself to this question. Two regiments of mounted men were ordered to be raised for this purpose; and before they were completed, the Provisional Congress of the Confederate States had passed an act authorizing the raising of a provisional army. Under this act, these two regiments were mustered into the Confederate army for the period of six months. These were the First Regiment Texas Mounted Rifles, commanded by Colonel H. E. McCulloch, and garrisoned the posts on the northwestern frontier from Fort Mason to Red River; and the Second Regiment Texas Mounted Rifles, commanded by Colonel John S. Ford, which garrisoned the posts from El Paso to the mouth of the Rio Grande. These regiments were soon filled up, and ample provision made for the protection of the frontiers.

Up to this time the delusive hope had been indulged by many that war would not result from the secession of the Southern States, and the United States troops were being permitted to depart in peace; but on April 17, after the hostile demonstrations in Charleston harbor and the firing on Fort Sumter, Colonel H. E. McCulloch addressed a communication to the Confederate States Secretary of War,

suggesting that when the agreement was made to permit the United States troops to leave the State with their arms war did not exist; but that since then the conditions had materially changed, and war between the North and South was clearly imminent, if not already begun. Under these changed conditions he suggested it would be right and proper not to permit the armed forces of the enemy to march out of the territory with their arms and equipments; and that unless ordered to the contrary at once, he would require them to surrender their arms and disperse. The Secretary of War replied by approving the course indicated by Colonel McCulloch, and ordered him to hold the United States troops as prisoners of war; but before any action had been taken by him, on April 21, Colonel Earl Van Dorn assumed command of the Department of Texas, under orders from the Confederate States War Department, and proceeded forthwith to carry out these instructions. A few days afterwards, on April 25, seven companies under Major C. C. Sibley, of the Third Infantry, surrendered to Colonel Van Dorn at Saluria, and were paroled as prisoners of war. The surrender was not made by Major Sibley without attempting to escape on the transports that were awaiting him in Matagorda Bay. The intention to attempt to escape having been discovered by Colonel Van Dorn, he seized the steamship *Star of the West* before Major Sibley reached her anchorage, which he was intending to do in the steamship *General Rusk*. Four steamers arrived from Galveston the night of the 24th, with about one thousand armed volunteers and several pieces of artillery, and completely cut off the escape of the United States troops by sea; and a land force of twenty-one companies of volunteers having arrived from the interior, Major Sibley was obliged to surrender on the terms proposed. The companies composing the land force which assembled to back up the demand of Colonel Van Dorn with arms, if necessary, were commanded by the following officers: Captain Herbert, of Colorado County; Captain Scarborough, of De Witt; Captain McDonnell, of Caldwell; Captain A. C. Horton, of Matagorda; Captain W. R. Friend, of De Witt; Captain Hampton, of Victoria; Captain Upton, of Colorado; Captain Hall, of Fort Bend; Captain Jones, of Gonzales; Captain Williams, of Lavaca; Captain Fulcrod, of Goliad; Captain Kyle, of Hays; Captain D. M. Stapp, of Calhoun; Captain Searcy, of Colorado; Captain Phillips, of Lavaca; Captain Finlay, of Lavaca; Captain Pearson, of Matagorda; Captain C. S. Olden, of Jackson; Captain Barkley, of Fayette; and Captain Gordon, of Matagorda.

Several companies under Captains Pitts, Tobin, Ashby, Bogges, and Nelson, with a battery of light artillery under Captain W. M. Edgar, all commanded by Colonel H. E. McCulloch, made a forced march from San Antonio to get in at the capture, but did not arrive until after the surrender.

On the 9th of May six companies of the Eighth Infantry, under Lieutenant-Colonel I. V. D. Reeve, surrendered to Colonel H. E. McCulloch at San Lucas Spring, fifteen miles west of San Antonio, while on the march from Fort Bliss to that city. The volunteer companies participating in this capture were the ones heretofore mentioned as having marched from San Antonio under Colonel McCulloch,—one under Captain James H. Fry; a battalion of six companies under Captains Maverick, Wilcox, Kampmann, Navarro, and Prescott, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel James Duff and Major John Carolan; one company under Cap-

tain Goode; two companies of Ford's regiment under Captains Walker and Pyron, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel John R. Baylor; and a battery of light artillery under Captain Teel.

A short time prior to the surrender of these troops, Mr. F. W. Lander, a special commissioner from President Lincoln, arrived at Austin to negotiate with Governor Houston, with a view to rendering him such aid as might be necessary to sustain his authority in overcoming the secession movement; and to this end Colonel Waite was ordered, in case Governor Houston indicated to Mr. Lander a willingness to enter into the scheme, to erect fortifications at Indianola and hold the place until reinforcements could be sent him. This movement, however, fell through for the want of Governor Houston's acquiescence. He not only declined the proffered assistance, but protested against it most strongly. He wrote to Colonel Waite as follows: "I have received intelligence that you have, or will soon receive, orders to concentrate your command at Indianola, in this State, to sustain me in the exercise of my official functions. Allow me most respectfully to decline any such assistance of the United States government, and to most earnestly protest against the concentration of troops or the erection of fortifications in Texas, and request that you remove all such troops out of this State at the earliest date practicable; or, at any rate, by all means take no action towards hostile movements until further ordered by the government at Washington City, or particularly of Texas."

At the same time Mr. Lander wrote Colonel Waite from Austin that his mission had been undertaken by order of the Secretary of State of the United States, and was endorsed by General Scott and President Lincoln; but that it had necessarily failed on account of the determination of Governor Houston to protest against such military aid being rendered him.

In May Colonel W. C. Young entered the Indian Territory with a regiment of volunteer State troops and captured Forts Arbuckle, Washita, and Cobb, the United States troops retiring towards Kansas upon his approach. He made a treaty of peace with the Chickasaw Indians, agreeing that the Confederate States would feed and protect them, as had been previously done by the United States government; and turned over to them all the government stores found in the above-named forts.

In the early days of 1861, during the excitement incident to the secession of the State and the withdrawal of the United States troops, the United States steamship *Star of the West* was captured by Texas volunteers off the Texas coast near Indianola, which created intense and wide-spread excitement at the time, owing partly to the fact that this was the vessel which had a short time previously attempted to carry supplies of ordnance and commissary stores to Fort Sumter, and thus drawn from the Confederate batteries at Charleston the first shot of the great Civil War which reverberated around the world. The exact date of this incident cannot be fixed definitely. The War Records published by authority of the United States government contain no reference to the affair, and the date as well as the details have been gathered from the memory of gentlemen who participated in it. From these it appears that it must have occurred about April 17, because the capture was only a few days prior to the surrender of the United States troops under Major C. C. Sibley at Indianola, and this is known to have been on the 25th day of April.

From Captain William Scrimgeour and Captain Robert G. Murray, the former of whom was the pilot and the latter fireman on board the *General Rusk*, and Mr. Robert M. Franklin, who was a member of the Galveston Artillery, and all of whom are now honored residents of the city of Galveston, the following facts are gleaned. It seems that as soon as Colonel Earl Van Dorn was appointed to the regular army of the Confederate States, he formed the design of compelling the surrender of all the United States troops in Texas and discharging them on parole, and in compliance therewith he arrived at Galveston on April 16 and called for meetings of the several volunteer military companies at their respective armories. At these meetings he announced that he had instructions from the Confederate War Department to call for volunteers, and to raise a force which would be adequate to insure the surrender of all the Federal troops in Texas without the necessity of bloodshed; and as a large body of such troops were then marching from San Antonio to Indianola with the intention of there embarking for the Northern States, he desired to raise immediately a sufficient force to proceed by water and intercept them at Indianola. The steamship *Matagorda*, a freight and passenger packet of the Harris & Morgan Line, Captain John Y. Lawless, commander, was then lying at the wharf in Galveston, ready to sail on her regular trip to Indianola, and Colonel Van Dorn detained her to carry the volunteers. By midnight he had only secured about eighty men, as the holiday soldiers of that period had not as yet learned to move on such short notice. He decided, however, to proceed at once with these and take the chances of recruiting his force after reaching Indianola, and he left Galveston about four o'clock A.M. on the morning of the 17th with the following force, viz.: a detachment of the Galveston Artillery, consisting of twenty men and two six-pounder field pieces, under Lieutenants Van Buren and Malone; the Turner Rifles, forty men strong, under Captain John Mueller, who was afterwards captain of Company F, Second Texas Infantry, and was killed in the assault on Battery Robinett at Corinth, Mississippi; and a detachment of twenty men from the Wigfall Guards. All of these were volunteers, who had not yet enlisted in the Confederate service.

As the *Matagorda* approached Pass Cavallo, the entrance to Matagorda Bay and Indianola, a large steamer was discovered lying at anchor off the bar. The men were ordered below, out of sight, and the *Matagorda*, about an hour before sunset, glided by the unknown steamer into the bay, and stopped her engines opposite the Powder Horn wharf. To the surprise of all on board, the shore was found to be dotted with the blue coats of the Federal soldiers, who had reached the coast earlier than expected, and in such numbers as to deter Colonel Van Dorn from demanding their surrender, as his orders were not to precipitate a conflict. Without landing, the *Matagorda* steamed across to the Saluria wharf, when after night she called by signal her companion steamer, the *General Rusk*, which was lying at the Indianola wharf, about fifteen miles up the bay. The *Rusk*, under command of Captain Leon Smith, ran down to the *Matagorda*, and gave the information to Colonel Van Dorn that the steamer outside the bar was the *Star of the West*, noted as the vessel which had drawn the fire of the first gun of the Civil War; and that arrangements had been made to use the *Rusk* in carrying the Federal troops across the bar to this transport.

This was the first intelligence which Colonel Van Dorn had of the presence of

the *Star of the West*, but he at once determined to capture her, and quickly formed his plan of doing so.

He transferred his entire force to the *Rusk* and sailed out for the purpose of surprising the transport. The moon was shining brightly, painting with all the colors of the rainbow the fleecy Gulf clouds as they were driven landward by a half gale from the south. As the *General Rusk* passed over the bar the dim outline of the *Star of the West*, plunging and tugging at her cable, appeared upon the horizon; and in a short time the ships were within hailing distance of each other, a voice from the watch on the transport, came over the rolling billows: "Ship ahoy! avast there, you'll run in to us! What vessel is that?" The answer was returned in the stentorian voice of Captain Leon Smith: "The *General Rusk;* I have some troops for you; stand by to catch our line." The captain of the transport replied: "Keep off, you'll tear my ship to pieces; I cannot let you come alongside in this gale!" "All right," returned Captain Smith, "I have orders to sail for New York, and will have to put the troops back on shore." This caused a short parley on the transport, after which came the words: "Send us your line." The *Rusk's* cable was made fast, and after a hard pull by both sailors and soldiers she was brought alongside the anchored transport, both vessels pitching on the heavy swell so as to make the boarding very difficult. The orders to the men were to board quietly and scatter over the vessel in squads, without disclosing their character, and without using any violence, if it could be avoided.

The officers and watch on the transport rendered every assistance to their supposed friends in getting aboard, and when it was accomplished the boarders scattered about the quarter-deck, engine-room, and forecastle, ready and prepared to overcome any resistance which might be offered. Colonel Van Dorn approached the captain of the vessel, made himself known, and informed him that he had taken possession of the vessel in the name of the Confederate States. That officer was probably more surprised than ever before in his life; he cursed and swore as none but a sailor can, and declared that a d—d ungentlemanly trick had been played upon him. As was natural, he took the loss of his vessel very hard, and was quite morose during the subsequent trip to New Orleans.

After the capture of the ship it was ascertained that she was an unarmed transport, with a crew of about forty men, one six-pounder carronade, and a large supply of fireworks for signals. The Texans were not aware of the unprotected condition of the ship, and it is not probable that Colonel Van Dorn himself was advised of it; for the prominent part taken by her at Charleston in the inauguration of the bloody scenes of civil war would naturally cause them to expect that she would be prepared for any emergency.

The prize and the *General Rusk* were carried to Galveston, but the *Star of the West*, drawing too much water to cross the bar, was placed under command of Captain Sam Farwell, of the steamship *Mexico*, and sent on to New Orleans. After entering the Mississippi River the passage to New Orleans was one continuous ovation from the sympathetic crowds which lined the river-banks at the plantations. News of the capture had flashed over the wires, and the first ocean steamship sailing under the flag of a new-born nation inspired its votaries with unbounded enthusiasm; and the little carronade on deck was kept hot all the way to New Orleans,

responding to the salutes of the generous friends. Upon arrival at that city the prize crew received a royal welcome amid booming cannon and blazing fireworks, and the midnight scene was one of unalloyed rejoicing. The next day the prisoners were paroled and sent north, the Texans discharged; and for three days the hospitable citizens of the Crescent City entertained them in princely style. Each man received his mileage of forty-five dollars, returned to his home, and was soon involved in the black vortex of war, where he was a gallant participant in more bloody, but not more exhilarating scenes than the capture of the *Star of the West*. This vessel was carried up the Mississippi River, thence into the Yazoo, and about a year after her capture was sunk by the Confederates in the Tallahatchee River at Fort Pemberton, to prevent the descent of the Federal fleet under General Washburne into the Yazoo River, in his expedition to take Vicksburg in the rear.

When Colonel Van Dorn returned to Galveston, he found the volunteer companies at that city still unprepared to take the field, and he proceeded to Indianola overland, and was joined on the route by the volunteer companies from Colorado, De Witt, Matagorda, Caldwell, Victoria, Fort Bend, Lavaca, Gonzales, Goliad, Hays, Calhoun, and Jackson Counties, before named, and the volunteers from Galveston, having gone by water, arrived in Matagorda Bay in time to witness the surrender of the Federal troops from a distance, but did not reach the shore in time to participate in the achievement.

OPERATIONS ON THE COAST.

During the summer of 1861 the blockading fleet of the United States navy appeared off the city of Galveston, declared all the ports on the coast in a state of blockade, and prepared to enforce the order. Vessels were anchored off all the harbors and commerce suspended. The coast of Texas was in a very defenceless condition, there being no fortifications at any point, and but few heavy guns were in the State. Some large guns from New Orleans for the defence of Galveston were sent up Red River to Alexandria, and thence overland to Houston, but they did not arrive until late in the fall. There was a great scarcity of lead, powder, and ammunition of all kinds, as well as arms. This matter soon attracted the attention of the commanding general, and he instructed the quartermasters to make arrangements for the shipment of cotton to Mexico with which to purchase ammunition. The commanding general, being without means to put the coast in a state of defence, called on the owners of slaves throughout the State to hire them to the government for the purpose of building fortifications. This appeal was very generally responded to, and a large number of negroes put to work building fortifications at Galveston, Sabine Pass, Velasco, and other places. These were paid for in Confederate States money, which, at that very early period of the war, was available as currency for the purchase of articles that were to be had in the country. Until the money could be received, the patriotic citizens of Galveston and Houston advanced five thousand dollars to General P. O. Hebert for these purposes, and took the obligations of the government until it could be repaid them.

On the 4th of September, Colonel Van Dorn, having been promoted to brigadier-general and ordered to Richmond, relinquished the command of the Department of Texas to Colonel H. E. McCulloch until the arrival of his successor.

Brigadier-General P. O. Hebert, and on the 18th of September General Hebert arrived and assumed command.

During this year the excitement was very great throughout the State, and the military ardor ran high. A great many companies were organized all over the State, and the announcement was made by the Confederate States authorities, in the early part of the year, that only a limited number of troops from Texas would be accepted. This determination was prompted by the strong peace sentiment in the North, which for a time gave promise of prevailing, that the Southern States, the "erring sisters," as they were called by Horace Greeley, be permitted to go their way in peace. From the beginning there was a very decided preference manifested by Texas for service in the cavalry, and a very marked indisposition to enlist in the infantry or artillery, while the authorities wanted the latter more than the former.

The State authorities also insisted that all the troops raised in Texas should remain in the State for the purpose of defending the State against an expected invasion, and the authorities of the Confederate States seemed for a time to have lent a willing ear to this demand. For these reasons a number of independent companies left the State singly, at their own expense, for the scenes of hostilities in Virginia, Kentucky, and Missouri, and were there organized into regiments, and some fully organized regiments also left the State for a like purpose.

About three o'clock on the morning of November 8, 1861, a small party of Union sailors in launches from the blockading squadron entered Bolivar Channel, at Galveston, and captured the schooner *Royal Yacht*, with its crew, which was the private property of Captain Thomas Chubb, and was doing service for the Confederates in watching the blockaders.

In February, 1862, a force of marines from the blockading ship *Afton* landed on Mustang Island and burned the dwellings of Mrs. Cluff and Mrs. Mercer, and captured the patrol-sloop used by Captain Neal's company of cavalry. The ship shelled the town of Aransas Pass, but without any loss of life to the inhabitants. The intention of the blockaders was expressed by them to be to break up the coastwise trade that was being carried on through the bays and inlets along the coast. On the 21st of February they captured a sloop entering Corpus Christi Bay from Bagdad, laden with medical supplies for the government, and the same party came very near being captured themselves by Captain B. F. Neal's company.

On April 4, 1862, the United States steamer *Montgomery* appeared off Fort San Luis, at San Luis Pass, near the west end of Galveston Island, hoisted the English flag and signalled for a pilot. Lieutenant O. W. Edwards, with seven men of Captain Ballowe's company and a citizen named A. G. Follet, went out to the steamer, and they were all taken prisoners and carried away. Two launches from the steamer entered the bay and burned the schooner *Columbia*, loaded with cotton, and waiting a favorable opportunity for running the blockade.

On April 22, 1862, Captain Kittredge, of the blockading ship off Aransas Pass, entered the bay with a small body of men in two launches, and captured the schooners *Democrat*, *Swan*, and *Mustang*; and as they were attempting to return to the blockading ship, Major William O. Yager, with thirty-two men in two sloops, cut them off. They could not get their prizes out by the schooners, so they aban-

doned them and took to their launches, returning to Blind Bayou and entered it. Major Yager, with his force, abandoned his boats and hurried across the land to intercept them, and did so, when the enemy abandoned their launches and took to the sand-hills, and escaped in the darkness. Major Yager recaptured the crews of the *Democrat*, *Swan*, and *Mustang*, who were found to be handcuffed; and among the various articles captured in the enemy's launches were several pairs of handcuffs.

During the months of August and September, 1862, the blockading fleet at Corpus Christi was very active. On the 16th of August four of the ememy's vessels bombarded the town, but were driven off by the Confederates under Major A. M. Hobby with two pieces of heavy artillery. And again on the 18th of the same month the enemy bombarded the town, and landed a cannon on the beach with about forty men, who advanced upon the fort, firing the cannon as they advanced, under cover of the fire from their ships. Major Hobby, with twenty-five men, charged the land force and drove them back to their ships.

On September 12, 1862, Captain Kittredge, who commanded the blockading fleet at Aransas and Corpus Christi Bays, went to Corpus Christi town under a flag of truce, requesting permission to convey the family of E. J. Davis, a citizen of Texas who had joined the Union army, to New Orleans. Major E. F. Gray, commanding the Confederates at that place, referred the matter to General Hebert, and notified Captain Kittredge that he could not return an answer for about ten days, as it would take that length of time to hear from head-quarters; whereupon Captain Kittredge withdrew and proceeded down the bay some fifteen miles towards the salt-works, on Laguna del Madre. Major Gray sent Captain John Ireland with fifty men to watch his movements, who secreted part of his men in a vacant house near the shore at Flower Bluffs. On the 14th, after shelling the sand-hills for a time, Captain Kittredge, with seven men, landed and fell gracefully into the trap set for him, and, with all his companions, was captured by Captain Ireland, with their arms and equipments and one flag.

On the morning of September 23, 1862, two sail-vessels of the blockading fleet entered Sabine Pass and opened fire on the Confederate fort at that place, which was promptly replied to. The cannonading continued all day, but the Confederate guns being of inferior calibre their shots fell short, while the enemy's long-range guns threw their shot into and around the fort. The yellow fever had been raging among the Confederate troops for some time, and in consequence Major J. S. Irvine, of Lieutenant-Colonel A. W. Spaight's battalion, who was in command at Sabine Pass, had furloughed most of his men, and at the time of the attack there were only thirty men at the post. When night came, Major Irvine determined that it would be a needless exposure of the men to attempt to hold the works any longer, and retired to Beaumont, spiking the four cannon in the fort and removing all other property. Two of his men who had been recently attacked with yellow fever were not in a condition to be moved, and they were left in the hospital in the care of competent nurses.

On the 26th of September the two vessels anchored opposite Sabine town and sent some men ashore, but offered no indignity to the citizens and committed no depredations.

On the night of the 27th of September the enemy sent three launches with forty men up to the mouth of Taylor's Bayou, a short distance above Sabine, and attempted to burn the railroad bridge across that stream, but the fire was extinguished by the guard stationed there. They carried away with them three citizens whom they found in the vicinity, and returned to Sabine, occupying the town. They committed no depredations on the citizens at the town of Sabine and prohibited their soldiers from mingling with them.

On the 20th of October, 1862, a small party of the enemy burned the railroad dépôt, about a mile from Beaumont, but did no other damage in the vicinity.

All efforts by Lieutenant-Colonel A. W. Spaight, who was in command at that place, were completely paralyzed by sickness among the troops. The yellow fever and the measles were both prevailing in his camp at this time, and more than half of his men were unfit for duty.

On the morning of October 4, 1862, the *Harriet Lane*, one of the ships of the blockading fleet off Galveston harbor, crossed the bar, flying a white flag; and when opposite Fort Point, at the east end of the island, a shot from the Confederate battery was fired across her bow, and she immediately came to anchor. An officer from the ship soon after landed in front of the battery, and asked for an interview with the commander of the post. Upon being advised of this, Colonel Joseph J. Cook, the Confederate commander at Galveston, repaired to Fort Point, and was informed by the officer that the commander of the fleet desired him to send out a messenger to receive a communication from him. Having no boat at the Point, Colonel Cook returned to the city and immediately despatched a messenger from the wharf in a boat flying a white flag. The messenger left the wharf about one o'clock P.M., and before he reached the Point the *Harriet Lane* weighed anchor and steamed out to the fleet, when she and four others, with a mortar boat in tow, came in over the bar. A shot was fired from the Fort Point battery in front of the foremost of the advancing vessels, and they came to anchor about where the *Harriet Lane* had previously anchored. The messenger boat under the flag of truce was but a short distance off, when the enemy, disregarding their own flag of truce, immediately opened fire from all their vessels with about twenty guns on the Fort Point battery, and soon disabled the only gun in it. The Confederates then spiked the gun, set fire to the barracks, and retreated to the city. The five vessels steamed up the channel and anchored opposite the city, and took up the messenger under the flag of truce. About half-past three P.M. Colonel Cook's flag of truce messenger returned from the fleet, bearing a demand from Captain Renshaw, its commander, for the immediate surrender of the city. Colonel Cook sent a reply refusing to comply with the demand, and informing the commander of the fleet that there were many women and children in the city, and asked for time to remove them. After some negotiations it was agreed that no attack should be made for four days; that during this time the Confederates should not construct any new, nor strengthen any old, defences; and the fleet should not approach any nearer the city in the mean time. During this time the city was evacuated by the Confederates, all the public property having been removed, and all but a few of the citizens departed. Colonel X. B. Debray, who was in command of the Confederates, began at once to strengthen the fortifications at Virginia Point, and determined to resist the enemy at that place.

Although the ships of the blockading fleet lay in the bay in front of the city, no troops were landed upon the island, and there was no actual occupancy of the city by United States troops until December 25, 1862.

On the night of October 29, 1862, a small body of Lieutenant-Colonel A. W. Spaight's battalion, under Captain Marsh, secreted themselves below the town of Sabine, and as the United States steamer *Dan*, with a schooner in tow, approached, going up the channel, the Confederates poured a heavy fire into the crowded decks, not more than a hundred yards distant, killing and wounding about thirty of the enemy. As soon as the vessels got out of range of the Confederates' rifles they opened upon them with grape and canister, but did no damage. The next morning the enemy took revenge by vigorously shelling the defenceless town and burning Wingate's saw-mill and dwelling and Stamps's dwelling.

On December 8, 1862, while Captain H. Wilke, commanding post at Corpus Christi, and Captain John Ireland, with seven men of the latter's company, were on the sailing-sloop *Queen of the Bay*, sounding the depth of the water in Corpus Christi Pass, they were attacked by twenty-two men in two launches from the blockading bark *Arthur*. As the wind was blowing strong from the north and the Pass too narrow for tacking, the Confederates turned the *Queen of the Bay* towards the Gulf and ran before the wind for Padre Island. The launches pursued them, using both sails and oars, and gained on them slightly. The Confederates ran their boat ashore close to the bluffs on Padre Island, jumped out and secreted themselves in the hills within about two hundred yards of the boat. As the enemy approached the *Queen of the Bay*, thinking they had an easy victory, the Confederates opened fire upon them with good effect, for they at once changed their course and made for Mustang Island, on the opposite side of the channel. Here they beached both of their boats, and, taking only their guns with them, proceeded farther up the beach. When about a thousand yards from the Confederates they stopped and commenced firing at them, when the latter returned the fire, killing one of their number. During this time the wind blew the launches from the shore, and one came directly towards the Confederates, and Captain Ireland with two men waded into the water waist-deep and secured it. He found one man dead and another wounded in the boat, with many articles of clothing, arms, and ammunition. The other launch, whose sail was still hoisted, drifted towards the Gulf, and a sailor named Jack Sands took a yawl and went after it and brought it in safely. After securing the body of the man who was killed on Mustang Island the party returned to Corpus Christi without the loss of a man.

On October 31, 1862, two of the blockading steamers appeared before the town of Lavaca and cast anchor about eleven o'clock A.M. At one o'clock P.M. the commander of the vessels sent a boat with a flag of truce to the shore, which was met by Major D. D. Shea, commanding the post, with four citizens. A short interview succeeded, during which the surrender of the town was demanded by the Union officer. Major Shea replied that he was there to defend the town, and should do so to the best of his ability with all the means at his command, and requested time for the removal of the women, children, and sick persons from the town. The Union officer replied that one hour was the time he was authorized to grant, but, in consideration of the fact that an epidemic of yellow fever was still raging in the

town, he would extend the time to one hour and a half. At the expiration of this short time the vessels moved up in front of the town and opened fire from both steamers on the town and batteries. There were still many women and children in town who had been unable to leave for want of time. The batteries promptly returned the fire, and, although many of the men had but partially recovered from the fever, they stood to their guns with great coolness and courage. Their fire was so well directed that both the vessels were struck several times, and one of them partially disabled. They soon steamed out of range of the batteries, when they anchored and kept up a steady bombardment until night. The next morning they again opened fire upon the town and batteries, but did not again venture in range of the batteries. No lives were lost on the shore, but the houses in the town were very much damaged by the enemy's shot and shell. The citizens acted heroically in rendering assistance to the soldiers in defence of the town, and Mrs. Dunn and Mrs. Chesley, and the beautiful and accomplished young daughters of the latter, are particularly mentioned as genuine heroines. Amid the heaviest of the bombardment they carried to the soldiers at the batteries lunches of coffee, bread, and meat, in utter disregard of the peril which they incurred from the flying shot and shell.

On October 10, 1862, Major-General J. B. Magruder was ordered to take command in Texas, superseding Brigadier-General Hebert, and on November 29 assumed command of the District of Texas, New Mexico, and Arizona, with headquarters at Houston. He immediately began to devise measures for the recapture of the city of Galveston, making several visits to the city at night and ascertaining the situation and condition of affairs there as well as he could. The plan of attack was boldly conceived and brilliantly executed, and reflects great credit upon all who were engaged in it. The enemy's fleet lying in the bay consisted of the *Harriet Lane*, carrying four heavy guns and two twenty-four-pounder howitzers, commanded by Captain Wainwright; the *Westfield*, flag-ship of Commodore Renshaw, a large propeller carrying eight heavy guns; the *Clifton*, a steam propeller of four heavy guns; the *Sachem*, a steam propeller of four heavy guns; two armed transports, two large barks, and an armed schooner. Three companies of the Forty-second Massachusetts Regiment occupied Kuhn's wharf, which was strongly barricaded, and the planks torn up between the barricade and the land. The two Buffalo Bayou steamboats, *Bayou City* and *Neptune*, were fitted up by General Magruder as gunboats, protected with bales of cotton, with one tender for each, loaded with wood for fuel. The boats were prepared and commanded by Commodore Leon Smith. The *Bayou City* was under the immediate command of Captain Henry S. Lubbock, with Captain A. R. Wier, of the First Regiment Heavy Artillery, commanding the artillery, and Captain Martin commanding the riflemen, consisting of a company of dismounted cavalry armed with Enfield rifles and double-barrelled shot-guns. The *Neptune* was under the immediate command of Captain Sangster, with Captain Harby commanding the artillery, and Captain Snyder commanding the riflemen, also armed with Enfield rifles and double-barrelled shot-guns. Colonel Tom Green accompanied the expedition, on board the *Bayou City*, in command of the land forces on the boats, and Colonel A. P. Bagby, his second officer, on board the *Neptune*. To Colonel Joseph J. Cook, of the First Regiment Heavy

Artillery, was intrusted the command of the storming party of about five hundred men, composed of volunteers from Pyron's regiment, under Brigadier-General W. R. Scurry; from Elmore's regiment, under Lieutenant L. A. Abercrombie, and Griffin's battalion, who were furnished with ladders with which to scale the wharf occupied by the enemy's infantry.

The land forces under the immediate command of General Magruder, in addition to the storming party under Colonel Cook, comprised a number of volunteers from Sibley's brigade, which was passing through the State on its way from New Mexico to Louisiana. Six heavy siege-guns and fourteen pieces of field artillery were carried across the bay on the railroad bridge, and hauled into the city by hand, the infantry and dismounted cavalry doing the work of horses. An eight-inch Dahlgren gun was mounted on a flat-car, to be run out on the railroad track on the wharf west of Kuhn's wharf occupied by the enemy's infantry, and within three hundred yards of where the *Harriet Lane* was anchored. Captain S. T. Fontaine, of Cook's regiment heavy artillery, was sent forward in advance with three of the siege-guns to Fort Point, at the east end of Galveston Island, supported by six companies of Pyron's regiment of cavalry (dismounted), under the personal command of Colonel C. L. Pyron; while the other forces, with the artillery, were placed in position along the bay front of the city, covering a distance of about two and a half miles, with the centre resting opposite the Central wharf. Twelve o'clock was the hour agreed upon for the attack to be made, but it was considerably later than that when the signal was fired from the centre gun by General Magruder in person. This was promptly responded to by an almost simultaneous discharge along the whole line. The attack was promptly replied to by the *Harriet Lane* and the *Owasco*, the vessels lying nearest the wharves, and by the Massachusetts troops behind the barricades on Kuhn's wharf. Colonel Cook gallantly led the storming party under a galling fire of the enemy's infantry, through the water where the planking of the wharf had been torn up; but when they reached the barricades it was discovered that their scaling-ladders were too short, and, therefore, they could not reach the wharf. They then sought cover in and behind the buildings nearest the wharf, from which they did effective work with their rifles. The Dahlgren gun on the flat-car was run down the railroad track on to the Brick wharf, and it poured a flanking fire into the enemy's infantry behind the barricades on Kuhn's wharf. As daylight was approaching, and the Confederate gunboats had not arrived, it was evident that the position assumed by General Magruder at the time of the attack could not be maintained in daylight against the heavy guns of the Union fleet; and, therefore, orders were issued for the withdrawal of the artillery for the purpose of erecting fortifications, with a view to the permanent occupation of the city. But before these orders were carried out, and just about daylight, the *Bayou City* and *Neptune* came steaming down the bay, and immediately engaged the *Harriet Lane* in gallant style, one of them running on each side of her and pouring on her deck a deadly fire from rifles and shot-guns. The *Harriet Lane* got under way, ran down the *Neptune* and sunk her; but at the same time the *Bayou City* drove her prow into the iron wheel of the *Lane* in the face of the broadsides from her heavy guns. The moment the vessels struck, Commodore Leon Smith, sword in hand, leaped upon the deck of the *Lane*, followed by the volunteers on the *Bayou City*; and

after a short but fierce contest, the enemy hoisted the white flag and surrendered. The other vessels and the infantry on the wharf then hoisted the white flag also. At the beginning of the engagement the *Westfield* was at anchor in Bolivar Channel, and in attempting to get into position for action ran aground on Pelican Spit; and after several ineffectual efforts to get her off, Commodore Renshaw blew her up, and in the explosion lost his own life with six of his crew. The steamers which had hoisted the white flag drifted slowly towards the bar, and while officers were proceeding to receive their surrender, they steamed off over the bar and proceeded to sea with white flags flying, under the fire of Captain Fontaine's guns at Fort Point. It is a somewhat remarkable coincidence that these same vessels entered Galveston harbor but three months before under the protection of the white flag, and now took advantage of the same protection to make their escape.

The Union loss was the *Harriet Lane*, one schooner, and two barks, and about four hundred prisoners, the number of killed and wounded on the *Harriet Lane* not being reported; but among the former were Captain Wainwright and Lieutenant Lea, of the *Harriet Lane*, and Captain Wilson, of the *Owasco*. The Confederate loss was twenty-six killed and one hundred and seventeen wounded.

One of the saddest incidents of this fratricidal war was presented in this engagement. Immediately after the capture of the *Harriet Lane*, Major A. M. Lea, of the Confederate army, who was serving on General Magruder's staff, stepped upon her deck, and the first object which met his astonished gaze was his own son, Lieutenant Lea, of the United States navy, the second officer of the ship, lying upon the deck mortally wounded. The son lived but a short time, and died in his father's arms. The next day Captain Wainright and Lieutenant Lea were buried in the same grave with Masonic and military honors, and the father of the latter, Major A. M. Lea, of the Confederate army, conducted the funeral services.

Among the killed of the Confederates were Captain A. R. Wier, commanding the artillery on board the *Bayou City*, and who was the first man to volunteer for the expedition, and Lieutenant Sidney A. Sherman, a son of General Sidney Sherman, who commanded the Texan cavalry at the battle of San Jacinto.

When the Confederate army reached the suburbs of the city on its advance, General Magruder sent a staff officer with a number of ambulances to the Ursuline convent, with instructions to place the conveyances at the disposal of the nuns for their removal to a point of safety; but, while recognizing the courtesy extended to them, these noble women expressed a preference to remain and nurse the wounded, and tendered the use of the convent as a hospital, and right nobly did they discharge their self-imposed duty.

On the 3d of January, the United States steamship *Cambria* arrived outside with a number of troops on board under Colonel E. J. Davis, of the First Texas (Union) Cavalry, and seven companies of the Forty-second Massachusetts, and as the blockading vessels had sailed for New Orleans after their discomfiture, the officers of the *Cambria* had no information of the recapture of the city. She came to anchor and sent in a boat with several men for a pilot, when a pilot-boat was sent out to her under Captain T. W. Payne, a sailor of Galveston, with instructions to entice her in. He boarded the *Cambria*, when she sailed away with him and sent the pilot-boat back. General Magruder and Captain Mason speak in the highest terms of Captain Payne

and deplore his capture, but there seems to be some doubt as to his deserving their praise and sympathy. Mr. Lewis Bach, acting purser of the *Cambria*, says that Captain Payne betrayed to the commander of the *Cambria* the fact that Galveston was in the hands of the Confederates, and thus enabled her to escape.

Among the men on the yawl boat which came in from the *Cambria* for a pilot was a man named Thomas Smith, recently a citizen of Galveston, who had deserted from the Confederate army, and who was accused of setting fire to the city several times before his desertion, and had been known as "Nicaragua" Smith. He was shortly afterwards tried by a court-martial, convicted, and shot in accordance with the rules of military law.

This brilliant achievement very much elated the Confederates, and caused great rejoicing among their friends. Shortly afterwards General Magruder was the happy recipient of congratulatory letters from the President of the Confederate States and many of the generals and prominent citizens. The Congress of the Confederate States and the legislature of Texas passed resolutions of thanks, and commending the gallantry of the men engaged in the affair. But among all the congratulations received by General Magruder, it may well be doubted if any gave him more genuine pleasure than one from General Sam Houston. From his retirement at Huntsville, under date of January 7, 1863, he wrote: "It gives me great pleasure to mingle my congratulations with the many thousands that you have received. You, sir, have introduced a new era in Texas by driving from our soil a ruthless enemy. You deserve, sir, not only my thanks, but the thanks of every Texan. Your advent was scarcely known in Texas when we were awaked from our revery to the realities of your splendid victory. Its planning and execution reflect additional glory on your former fame, as well as on the arms of Texas. Most sincerely do we trust that a new era has dawned upon us, and that you may be enabled again to restore Texas to her wonted security. We hope that Texas, with so gallant a leader as you are, general, will yet show to the world that she is capable of defending her own soil, notwithstanding she has already been drained of her only resources, which have been transferred to other battle-fields. You will find that all Texans want is a general who is capable of leading them to victory, and now having obtained that, I hope you will ever find them ready to second your efforts, and that your future may be as glorious as your past. When you arrived here, general, you found our country without organization, without plans for our defence, and our situation most deplorable. What few resources we had were without organization, without discipline, and without everything that was calculated to render the means she had efficient. You have breathed new life into everything; you have illustrated to them what they can do, and most sincerely do I trust that the past may only be the dawning of the future, and I pray that under the guidance of a Divine Being you may be enabled to carry out the regeneration of Texas. It would give me pleasure, general, to call and pay my respects to you, but that I have recently arisen from a sick bed."

On the night of January 4, 1863, Captain E. S. Rugeley, of Colonel R. R. Brown's regiment, with about forty men, went down the bay on the gunboat *Carr*, for the purpose of making a night attack upon an intrenched camp which the enemy had erected on the peninsula. The party left the gunboat in three small

boats about ten o'clock at night, to row quietly up to the shore near the encampment, and when about half-way a most terrific norther began to blow, and two of the small boats were capsized and twenty-two of the party drowned.

On Sunday night, January 11, 1863, the citizens and soldiers at Galveston were startled by hearing firing at sea, and were on the lookout for some startling news. But no explanation of the firing was known for some time afterwards. Then it was ascertained that the cause of the firing was an engagement between the United States steamer *Hatteras* and the Confederate *Cruiser 290*. Acting Master S. H. Partridge, of the *Hatteras*, gives the following account of the affair :—

About three o'clock P.M., Sunday, January 11, 1863, a strange vessel hove in sight to the southeast of the blockading fleet off Galveston. The *Hatteras* was ordered to give chase, and as she approached the stranger the latter appeared as if endeavoring to escape. After dark the *Hatteras* gained rapidly on the stranger and overtook her, lying to, but under steam. As the *Hatteras* came alongside her officer hailed and asked what ship it was. She answered: "Her Britannic Majesty's ship *Spitfire*." The officer of the *Hatteras* then ordered a boat to go aboard the stranger, and when the boat was lowered Mr. Partridge was ordered to take charge of it and board the stranger. Before the boat was half a boat's length away the stranger opened fire. It was returned by the *Hatteras*, and both vessels started ahead under full head of steam, exchanging broadsides as fast as they could load and fire with big guns, for about twenty minutes, and with musketry from both vessels. All this time Mr. Partridge had been trying to board his ship, but could not catch up with her. After the musketry had ceased he discovered that the *Hatteras* was stopped and was blowing off steam, and that the stranger was alongside of her for the purpose of boarding. He heard the crew of the stranger cheering, and knew that the *Hatteras* had been captured ; and instead of giving himself up as a prisoner, rowed back to the fleet in the darkness. The United States steamer *Brooklyn* went out the next day and found the *Hatteras* sunk.

This affair occurred about sixteen miles south of Galveston.

On January 31, 1863, the two Confederate cotton-clad gunboats *Josiah Bell* and *Uncle Ben* passed out of Sabine Pass and attacked a Union war-ship of nine guns and a schooner of two guns. The Union vessels sailed out to sea, and after a running fight of about two hours the Confederates overtook them, and by a deadly fire from the infantry and dismounted cavalry secreted behind the cotton bales, compelled their surrender about thirty miles from land. Both vessels, the *Morning Light* and the *Velocity*, with one hundred and thirty prisoners, and about one hundred thousand dollars' worth of military stores, were captured and carried into Sabine. Major O. M. Watkins, of General Magruder's staff, commanded the Confederates, and Captains Fowler and Johnson, sea captains, commanded the *Bell* and *Uncle Ben*, respectively. The land forces on the boats were a detail from Company F, Cook's regiment heavy artillery, under Captains Odum and O'Bryan, and Lieutenants Dowling and Aikens, and details of riflemen from Colonel Pyron's cavalry regiment and Colonel A. W. Spaight's infantry battalion, under Captains Nolan and Aycock, aggregating three hundred.

On the afternoon of April 17, 1863, a party of seven men from the blockading fleet landed on the Louisiana shore opposite Sabine Pass, and made quite extended

observations from the light-house. As soon as informed of this Lieutenant-Colonel W. H. Griffin, of Griffin's Battalion, Twenty-first Texas Infantry, commanding the Confederates at that point, determined to lay a plan for the capture of the next party that should land. Accordingly, on the night of the same day, he placed a party of thirty men of his command, under Lieutenant W. J. Jones, of Company C, and Lieutenant E. T. Wright, of Company D, in the light-house and the dwelling-house near by, with instructions to keep themselves well under cover. About eleven o'clock the next day thirteen men in two small boats from the blockading ships *Cayuga* and *New London* landed some six hundred yards from the light-house. Three of this party approached very cautiously to within a few yards of the light-house, when, upon demand, they surrendered. The others immediately ran for their boats, followed by the Confederates, led by Lieutenant Jones and Lieutenant Wright, and quite a spirited running fight took place. Captain McDermot, of the *Cayuga*, with his boat and five sailors, were captured, the captain being severely wounded. Captain Read, of the *New London*, escaped with the other men in his boat, but every man in it except one was wounded, Captain Read losing an eye besides other wounds. Captain McDermot died of his wounds about two o'clock the same day, and his body was sent aboard his ship under a flag of truce.

The only casualty among the Confederates was the death of the gallant Lieutenant E. T. Wright, who was shot through the head while bravely leading his men in the fight.

JOINT RESOLUTION BY THE TEXAS LEGISLATURE.

"*Resolution 1. Be it resolved, by the Legislature of the State of Texas*, That the thanks of the Legislature are hereby tendered to General J. B. Magruder and the officers and men under his command for the brilliant victory which they gained over the Federalists at Galveston on the 1st of January last. To Major O. M. Watkins and the officers and men under his command for their gallant conduct at Sabine Pass and the recapture of that post and capturing the blockading vessels of the enemy; and to Major Daniel Shea and the officers and men under his command for their brave defence of the town of Lavaca; and to Major Hobby and the officers and soldiers under his command for the repulse of the enemy's attack on Corpus Christi, the commencement of our success on the Texas coast; and to Captains Ireland and Ware and the officers and soldiers under their command for their exploit in the capture of Captain Kittredge and his men near Corpus Christi; and to Captains Ireland and Wilke and the officers and soldiers under their command for their good conduct in defeating the enemy's attempt to capture one of our vessels and in capturing his barges in the bay of Corpus Christi; and to Captains Santos Benavides and Refugio Benavides and the officers and men under their command for their vigilance, energy, and gallantry in pursuing and chastising the banditti infesting the Rio Grande frontier.

"*Resolution 2.* That the governor be requested to transmit a copy of these resolutions to General J. B. Magruder and the other officers mentioned, with the request that they make them known to the officers and men under their command.

"Approved March 6, 1863."

On May 3, 1863, Captain E. E. Hobby, of Company D, Eighth Texas Infantry, with twenty-eight men, attacked three launches with forty men as they approached the shore of St. Joseph's Island, near Aransas Pass, and captured one

launch and five prisoners. The second launch, being about three hundred yards from the shore, also hoisted the white flag, when Captain Hobby ordered the firing to cease, and while his men were securing the prisoners and arms in the first launch, the blockading bark having opened fire on them, the second one began to pull out for the bark under cover of the fire. The Confederates again fired on it, doing much execution. They could distinctly see the men in the launch drop their oars and fall in the boat, and several bodies were seen floating in the water. It reached the bark with only two men in it.

On May 30, 1863, about six o'clock A.M., a Union force of about one hundred and fifty men in four launches from the United States frigate *Brooklyn* effected a landing at Point Isabel and burned a small schooner which was in the service of the Confederate custom-house officials. Lieutenant J. B. Ammons, of the Thirty-third Texas Cavalry, with eleven men, was stationed there to guard the schooner *Eager*, which had just succeeded in running the blockade with a cargo of merchandise, and to observe and report the movements of the blockading fleet. He was unable, with his small force, to prevent the landing of the launches, but he burned the *Eager* and her cargo to prevent them falling into the hands of the enemy, and, after exchanging a few shots, retired, and the launches returned to the *Brooklyn*.

For a long time the Rio Grande frontier had been the scene of depredations by lawless characters and bandits from Mexico. Many murders were committed, and numbers of horses driven across the river by them. The leader of one of these bands was a Mexican named Octaviano Zapata, who was encouraged by the representatives of the United States in Mexico, and had already received, or been promised, a commission as colonel in the Union army as a reward for his zeal, and actually displayed the United States flag in one of his raids. During this summer this noted outlaw made a raid into Texas, drove off large quantities of stock, and murdered Colonel Jesus Garcia Ramires. Major Santos Benavides, of the Thirty-third Texas Cavalry, with thirty-nine men and three lieutenants of Company H and thirty-five men and two lieutenants of Company D of that regiment, followed the outlaws into Mexico, overtook the band near Mier and routed them after a lively engagement. The bandits fled, leaving ten of their number dead upon the ground, including their leader, Zapata.

On the 8th of September a spirited affair took place at Sabine Pass, which defeated a contemplated invasion of the State and reflected great credit upon the Confederate arms. About half-past six o'clock A.M. of that day a large force of Union troops and gunboats appeared off the Pass and bombarded Fort Griffin for about an hour, and then withdrew. The Confederate forces consisted of Company F (Davis Guards), Cook's regiment of heavy artillery, numbering forty-seven men, under the immediate command of Lieutenant Richard W. Dowling, Captain F. H. Odlum of that company being in command of the post, and the small cotton-clad gunboat *Uncle Ben*, carrying a small force of infantry under Lieutenant Joseph O. Cassidy, of Company B, A. W. Spaight's battalion. The armament of Fort Griffin consisted of two twenty-four-pounder smooth-bores, two thirty-two-pounder smooth-bores, and two thirty-two-pounder howitzers,—six guns in all.

The Union forces consisted of the gunboats *Clifton*, *Sachem*, *Arizona*, and *Granite City*, under the command of Lieutenant-Commander Frederick Crocker,

United States navy, and eighteen transports laden with about fifteen thousand infantry, artillery, and cavalry, all under the command of Major-General W. B. Franklin, Nineteenth Army Corps.

About eleven o'clock A.M. Captain Odlum sent the gunboat *Uncle Ben* down from Sabine City to Fort Griffin, when she was fired on by the Union gunboats, and about three o'clock P.M. the gunboats began to advance towards the fort. The *Clifton* steamed up the Texas channel, and the *Sachem* up the Louisiana channel, both firing on the fort as they advanced, and were followed by the other two gunboats. The Confederates held their fire until the leading gunboats were within about twelve hundred yards, when they opened upon them a rapid fire. At the third round a shot penetrated the steam-drum of the *Sachem* and she hoisted the white flag. All the guns of the fort were then turned upon the *Clifton*, and for about three-quarters of an hour the contest was lively and exciting. A shot from the fort carried away the tiller-rope of the *Clifton;* she became unmanageable and drifted around and grounded about five hundred yards below the fort, when she also hoisted the white flag. The other gunboats and transports steamed out of the Pass and returned to New Orleans. With the two gunboats were captured about three hundred and fifty prisoners, including Lieutenant-Commander Crocker, thirteen cannon and a quantity of small-arms, stores, etc. The Union casualties were three officers and ninety-four men ; of the Confederates not a man was hurt.

This brilliant affair was heralded over the country, and the Confederate commanders took advantage of it to encourage the failing spirits of the citizens and soldiery, and the Confederate Congress passed a resolution extending thanks to Captain Odlum, Lieutenant Dowling, and the Davis Guards for their daring, gallant, and successful defence of Sabine Pass.

The expedition to Sabine Pass was intended to be the entering wedge of an invasion of Texas, and, had it been successful, there can be little doubt but that the State would have been subjected to all the horrors accompanying the triumphant march of an invading hostile army. As having saved the State from such a calamity, the gallant defence of Sabine Pass cannot be too highly appreciated.

On October 26, 1863, Major-General N. P. Banks sailed from New Orleans with an army of about seven thousand troops, with the avowed intention of hoisting the Union flag on the soil of Texas at the mouth of the Rio Grande River, capturing the city of Brownsville, and by a movement up the river cut off the very important trade between Texas and Mexico, and by a simultaneous movement eastwardly along the coast capture the cities of Houston and Galveston ; and by these operations acquire control of the State. The United States government seemed to regard it as all-important that its flag should float over some portion, if not all, of the State of Texas. The most urgent communications were written to the authorities at Washington by the governors of Massachusetts and New Hampshire demanding the invasion and occupation of Texas. Their influence was doubtless brought to bear through the influence of A. J. Hamilton, who had been appointed military governor of Texas by the President of the United States, and his friends in the North and East. General Banks says that in August, 1863, he was informed by the authorities at Washington that there were important reasons why the flag of the United States should be established in Texas with the least possible

delay; that there were reasons other than military why the operations against Texas should be undertaken before others which had been suggested by him. He further says that he was advised that this object could be best effected by combined land and naval movements upon Red River to Alexandria, Natchitoches, or Shreveport, and the occupation of Northern Texas; that this line was recommended as superior for military operations to the occupation of Galveston or Indianola, but that the final selection was left to his judgment.

He also says that the difficulties attending a movement in the direction of Shreveport—a route which had been thoroughly explored in the spring campaign of 1863—satisfied him that it was impracticable, if not impossible, for the purposes entertained by the government. That the selection of the line of operations having been left with him, he made immediate preparations for a movement by the coast against Houston, selecting Sabine Pass as the point of attack. He regarded it as possessing advantages over any other route by reason of its being immediately connected by the Gulf of Mexico with Berwick Bay, then in his possession, and with New Orleans by the Mississippi River, and by rail from Berwick Bay. His objective point seems to have been Houston, the occupation of which would have placed in his hands the control of all the railway communications of the State, reduced to subjection the most populous and productive portion of the country, and enabled him to move at any moment into the interior in any direction, or to fall back upon Galveston, which could be defended with a very small force. The failure of the ill-fated expedition to Sabine Pass under General Franklin having notified the Confederates of his purpose and rendered it impracticable to repeat the attempt at that point, and the instructions of his government being imperative, he then began an attempt to carry them out by a movement towards Alexandria and Shreveport, or, if possible, across the southern part of Louisiana to Niblett's Bluff. He says that it was soon found to be impracticable, if not impossible, to enter Texas in that direction, because the country between the Tèche and the Sabine was without supplies of any kind, and entirely without water; and the march of three hundred miles across it with wagon transportation alone, where it was certain to meet the Confederates in full force, was necessarily abandoned. He also says that a movement in the direction of Alexandria and Shreveport was equally impracticable; that the route lay over a country entirely destitute of supplies, which had been repeatedly overrun by two armies, and which involved a march of five hundred miles from New Orleans, and nearly four hundred from Berwick Bay, with wagon transportation only, mostly upon a single road, very thickly wooded and occupied by a thoroughly hostile population. And becoming satisfied that it was impossible to execute the orders of his government for the occupation of Texas by either of these routes, he decided, as the only alternative for the accomplishment of this object, that the attempt to get a foothold on the southwestern frontier of Texas, along the Rio Grande, should be made.

Accordingly, on October 26, 1863, he sailed from New Orleans with a force of about seven thousand men, with thirteen transports and three gunboats, for the mouth of the Rio Grande. His army reached Brazos Santiago on November 1, and the next day occupied Brazos Island. On the 6th his army marched for Brownsville, and the Confederate force under General H. P. Bee, being too weak to offer

any resistance, was withdrawn, and fell back to Las Animas Ranch, after burning the barracks, all the cotton in the town, and all the public stores which could not be moved, and General Banks's army entered the town on the morning of the 7th. General Banks reported that the Confederates had burned the town, or a portion of it; but this is not true. The fire from the burning barracks communicated by accident to some houses near by and destroyed a block of buildings in front of the ferry, but it was not the wanton act of the Confederates. Accompanying this expedition was Colonel E. J. Davis, a prominent citizen of Western Texas, with a regiment of cavalry composed of some Union men who had left the State on account of their Union sentiments, and some Mexican bandits from both sides of the Rio Grande.

Among the several companies of Mexicans which had been received into the Confederate service along the Rio Grande was one commanded by a Mexican named Adrian T. Vidal. A few days before the arrival of General Banks's army this company was on duty at the mouth of the Rio Grande, and General Bee sent orders for it to come into Brownsville to perform garrison duty in the place of the three companies of the Thirty-third Texas Cavalry, which had been ordered to Houston. The order was not obeyed, and General Bee then sent Privates Dashiell and Litteral, of Company A, Thirty-third Texas Cavalry, to ascertain the cause of disobedience, and with renewed orders for Vidal to bring in his company at once. They met Vidal with his company on the road about fourteen miles below Brownsville and started to return with them, and when a short distance had been travelled the Mexicans opened fire on Dashiell and Litteral, killing the former and wounding the latter badly. He made his escape and returned to Brownsville with the alarm, and General Bee made immediate preparations for defence. There were only nineteen soldiers in the garrison, but a volunteer company of about one hundred citizens was soon raised, and these met the mutineers near town and drove them back. In the mean time Captain Richard Taylor arrived with Company A, Thirty-third Texas Cavalry, and gave close pursuit to the Mexicans and drove them across the river. When Captain Taylor reached the left bank of the river where Vidal had just crossed he was met with scoffs and jeers by a large party of several hundred Mexicans and Union men on the right bank of the river. Vidal soon after joined the Union army with his company, and the evidence is very strong that he joined the Confederate army for the purpose of betraying it, and at the suggestion of representatives of the United States government.

Upon the arrival of General Banks at Brownsville he found a chronic state of revolution prevailing in Matamoras. A few days before his arrival the notorious Juan N. Cortina, in conjunction with José Maria Cobos, had deposed Manuel Ruiz, governor of the state of Tamaulipas, and incarcerated him in prison. Then Cortina, with his characteristic treachery, raised a revolt against his coadjutor Cobos, and had him and two of his friends executed by shooting them on the plaza in the presence of an immense crowd of citizens, and released Ruiz from jail. Pretending to be a friend of Ruiz, who was popular with the masses, he restored him to power, and the next day whispered to him that he thought his life was in danger if he remained in Matamoras, and tendered him an escort of twenty-five of his men if he desired to leave the city. Governor Ruiz rightly comprehended that this meant

assassination, and was glad of the opportunity to save his life by crossing to Texas, without waiting for the treacherous escort of Cortina, and asking protection of General Banks on the day of his arrival.

Cortina being thus in power, received the United States troops, with whom his sympathies were while they were in the ascendant, with great cordiality; and showed his entire willingness to be serviceable to General Banks by forcibly seizing three steamboats belonging to King and Kennedy, citizens of Texas who were in sympathy with the Confederate States, and turning them over to him.

On the 13th of November, 1863, General Banks left Brownsville for the purpose of moving against the passes east of Point Isabel, carrying with him about fifteen hundred men, one battery of light artillery, his gunboats, and two of the light-draft river steamboats of King and Kennedy, which Cortina had turned over to him. His command reached the pass at Corpus Christi on the 16th, but his lightest draft vessels, drawing three and a half feet, finding only two and a half feet of water on the bar, could not enter. It was then decided to land his forces on Mustang Island, which was successfully accomplished. The landing was made on the south end of the island, and about five hundred men under Brigadier-General Ransom marched up the island without opposition, until they reached the north end, where they were met on the morning of the 17th by Captain William H. Maltby's company of the Eighth Texas Infantry and Captain Garrett's company of State troops, all under command of Major George O. Dunaway; and after an engagement of more than half an hour the Confederate force, numbering about one hundred men, surrendered to the largely superior force of General Ransom. The Union force captured three siege-guns, all the small-arms of the Confederates, and ten small boats. The next day General Ransom crossed over to St. Joseph's Island, where he was reinforced by several more regiments of infantry, and Major-General C. C. Washburn assumed command of the expedition. On the 22d of November, General Ransom pushed on up St. Joseph's Island with his forces, and when near the north end was met by a flag of truce from the Confederates, to inquire as to the fate of their comrades who were on Mustang Island. Major Charles Hill, who was in command of this party with the flag of truce, was killed, under circumstances of suspicion that he was shot while under the protection of a white flag. Some of the Confederate officers so charge it, but General C. C. Washburn in his report to General Banks, from Cedar Bayou, dated November 25, says: "A rebel major was shot on yesterday. His body was found this morning. He came down with a flag of truce. A sergeant from General Ransom's command swam over to him. He got into a dispute with the sergeant, and drew his pistol and shot him, wounding him severely. Our soldiers, witnessing the struggle, fired, and the major was seen to limp away. His body was found a few hundred yards from where he was struck. His inquiry was as to what had become of the Confederate troops that were on Mustang Island." In his report of this incident, Brigadier-General Ransom, who was in immediate command of the Union troops engaged, says that he reached Cedar Bayou (the channel which separates St. Joseph's Island from Matagorda Island) about noon the 23d of November, "where my advanced guard of mounted infantry, under command of Captain C. S. Isley, Fifteenth Maine, had a slight skirmish with a scouting party of the enemy, in which Major Charles Hill, com-

manding the rebel party, was killed, and Sergeant James Saunders, Company F, Fifteenth Maine, was slightly wounded."

Ex-Governor John Ireland, who at the time commanded a company at Fort Esperanza, says in a recent letter that Major Hill left the fort and went down the island some twenty miles. At a bayou he met the Federals under General Banks, and for some purpose he showed a white flag. Instead of sending a flag to meet him, the Federal commander ordered a large stout man to strip himself and swim across to Hill. He did so, and at once seized Hill and held him at arms' length while his comrades shot Hill to death. There was no quarrel or difficulty: it was a pure assassination. Major Hill was not a citizen of Texas, and is first mentioned in General Magruder's report of the recapture of Galveston; and on June 8, 1863, he is recommended by General Magruder to the War Department for promotion to major of artillery. In that recommendation he is designated as First Lieutenant Charles Hill, of Virginia, acting assistant chief of artillery, Western Sub-District.

On November 25, 1863, the Union army crossed the channel between St. Joseph's and Matagorda Islands, and on the morning of the 29th appeared before Fort Esperanza, on the north end of the latter. The fort was occupied by about five hundred Confederates under Colonel W. R. Bradfute, and contained eight pieces of heavy artillery, one a twelve-pounder, and the others twenty-four-pounders. After driving in the Confederate pickets, the enemy opened fire on the fort with two land batteries and the heavy guns from two gunboats, which was promptly returned by the guns in the fort. After a heavy bombardment all day, the Confederate commander determined to evacuate the fort, as it was too apparent that the three thousand Union troops would soon cut him off from the mainland, and his surrender would be a question of a very short time. So about ten o'clock that night he withdrew his force and crossed to the mainland, blowing up his magazine and destroying what property he could. The enemy's loss was one killed and ten wounded, and the Confederates lost one man killed and six prisoners, the latter having been left to fire the magazines and pontoon bridge, and were captured.

On the 30th of November, General Washburn crossed about one thousand of his men over to Matagorda Peninsula, but before his entire force of four thousand men had crossed he received orders from General Banks to remain at Esperanza until further orders. Part of his command was pushed on up the peninsula as far as De Crow's Point, and with the occupation of Matagorda Island and Peninsula, and the contiguous points on the mainland, the enemy seemed satisfied during the month of December, and made no effort to penetrate to the interior of the State. December 23, 1863, a brigade of United States troops marched from Saluria and occupied Indianola.

The movements of the invading army caused great activity on the mainland among the Confederate troops in preparation to meet the invaders. Several points along the coast of the mainland were fortified, the State troops were ordered to the field, and, with the consent of Lieutenant-General E. Kirby Smith, General Tom Green's division was ordered back to Texas from Louisiana.

Shortly after the arrival of the Union army at Brownsville General Banks sent an expedition up the Rio Grande for the purpose of capturing all the cotton it

might intercept in transit from Texas to Mexico. This force was under the command of Colonel E. J. Davis, of the First Texas (Union) Cavalry, with his own regiment and the Thirty-seventh Illinois Infantry. Part of the force went up on the steamboat *Mustang* belonging to King and Kennedy, and which had been seized by Colonel Cortina and turned over to General Banks. The expedition went up the river as far as Rio Grande City and captured eighty-two bales of cotton, which were sent down the river to Brownsville. Colonel Davis remained at Rio Grande City and in the vicinity for several months; and in March, 1864, marched from there up the river for the purpose of capturing Laredo, where he was defeated by Colonel Santos Benavides on the 19th of that month.

Brigadier-General A. J. Hamilton, a former citizen of Austin, who had espoused the Union cause and been appointed a brigadier-general in the United States army and military governor of Texas, arrived at Brownsville, December 1, 1863, and for the first time since his appointment assumed to exercise the functions of his office upon the soil of the State. He was accompanied by his staff, civil as well as military, composed principally of shrewd New Englanders who had rendered him financial aid during his exile, and had now accompanied him for the purpose of taking advantage of the opportunities for speculation which the expedition to and occupation of Texas by the United States army was expected to present. General Banks, commanding the expedition, does not seem to have been imposed upon by these satellites of General Hamilton, for his estimate of their character and purposes as expressed in his correspondence with Mr. Stanton, referred to in another part of this chapter, seems to have been justified by subsequent events.

In January, 1864, after the return of General Banks to New Orleans, Major-General N. J. T. Dana, of the United States army, occupying Brownsville, discovered a plot hatched by Captain Jasper K. Herbert, assistant adjutant-general to Brigadier-General A. J. Hamilton, and one Turner, an agent of the United States Treasury Department, in which they had agreed with Governor Jesus de la Serna, of the state of Tamaulipas, to deliver to him on his requisition certain Mexican citizens who were then refugees in Brownsville; and to recompense them for their services in complying with this requisition in the name of General Hamilton, Governor Serna, by proclamation, under the pretext that the Confederates were in friendly communication with the French and therefore enemies of Mexico, was to seize all the Confederate cotton and other property then in Matamoras, have it confiscated, condemned, and sold, and the proceeds divided into four parts, one for Serna, one for the United States consul, one for Captain Herbert, and the other for Turner. Be it said to the credit of Mr. Pierce, the consul, that he gave the whole scheme away to General Dana, and Captain Herbert was arrested and tried by a court-martial convened by and on charges preferred by General Dana. He was convicted on the charges, but President Lincoln decided that the conviction was, by law, "void and inoperative," because General Dana, who convened the court, was also the accuser in the case, and ordered his discharge from custody with a reprimand, because the offence of which he had been found guilty was of so grave a nature that it could not be allowed to pass unrebuked. With a seeming desire to place Captain Herbert in company more suited to his peculiar talents and traits of character, Mr. Lincoln closes his consideration of the case by ordering him to "report in person

without delay to Major-General B. F. Butler, commanding Department of Virginia and North Carolina." This may or may not be one of those grim, unconscious jokes for which Mr. Lincoln was so noted, but it bears strong marks of his facetious ebullitions.

January 3, 1864, Major-General Francis J. Herron took command of the United States troops on the Rio Grande, with head-quarters at Brownsville, relieving Major-General N. J. T. Dana, who took command of the forces on the Texas coast with head-quarters at Fort Esperanza.

On January 8, 1864, a Union gunboat commenced shelling the Confederate fortifications at the mouth of Caney Creek, opposite Matagorda Peninsula, which was continued at intervals during the day. In the afternoon a transport loaded with troops appeared close in shore about six miles below the fortifications, manifesting an intention to effect a disembarkation on the mainland; but Colonel A. Buchel, commanding a brigade of Confederates, moved his command down opposite the point where the transport appeared, and if the enemy had any intention of landing there, they abandoned it upon this show of resistance, and went away in the direction of De Crow's Point. The next day the gunboat fired about forty shots at the Confederate battery, and then retired. The Confederate loss was one man of Company E, First Texas Cavalry. Again, on February 7, a gunboat fired about sixty shots at the fort with great accuracy, wounding three men and three horses.

On the night of January 12, 1864, one of the periodic Mexican revolutions broke out in Matamoras which was characteristic of that heroic city, in which the notorious Colonel Juan N. Cortina overthrew and deposed the governor, Manuel Ruiz. The fighting between factions was fierce and furious, the forces of Governor Ruiz numbering about eight hundred men and four pieces of artillery, and those of Colonel Cortina about six hundred men and four pieces of artillery. During the fight, Mr. L. Pierce, Jr., the United States consul at Matamoras, despatched a messenger to Major-General Francis J. Herron, commanding the United States forces at Brownsville, informing him that he and his family were in danger, as well as about one million dollars of public funds in his possession, and asking the protection of the United States army. About the same time General Herron received an invitation from Governor Ruiz to send troops across the river for the protection of the lives and property of American citizens in Matamoras, declaring his own inability to protect them. General Herron then promptly despatched Colonel Henry Bertram, of the Twentieth Wisconsin Infantry, with four companies, to the heroic city of Matamoras, took charge of the consulate, and at seven o'clock next morning removed the public funds and the families of American citizens to Brownsville. Cortina declared himself governor of the state of Tamaulipas, and Ruiz sought refuge in Texas.

On January 15, 1864, the Union troops, under Colonel Geo. W. K. Dailey, evacuated Pass Cavallo, after having torn down nearly all the houses by order of Major-General Herron, and shipped the lumber to Brazos Santiago. The heavy guns which were captured from the Confederates at Fort Esperanza were also carried away. Everything combustible, except the residence of Colonel Forrester, was burned and the forts blown up.

On February 11, 1864, about seventy-five men of the enemy landed at Lamar, a village on the east side of Aransas Bay opposite Fulton, and tore down a large warehouse they found there, removed all the lumber they could carry and loaded it on a large scow which they brought with them. The men were then turned loose for indiscriminate plunder, and they entered almost every house and took whatever they desired. Among the invaders were several citizens of Corpus Christi; one a Captain Anderson and his son were the most conspicuous. Mr. J. B. Wells, a citizen of Lamar, played the *rôle* of the inoffensive citizen and obtained much information from the officers. They told him that all the citizens of Corpus Christi had gone over to the invaders; that they had upon Mustang Island a Texas regiment enlisted in Corpus Christi, and that General Banks had twenty-five thousand men, with whom he intended taking Galveston; but that their heaviest force, and the one upon which they mainly depended, was coming by way of Red River, and that Texas would be overrun in less than three months.

On February 22, 1864, a squad of twenty-five mounted men of the enemy were out eight miles from Indianola on the Lavaca Road, driving a herd of cattle which they had gathered upon the prairie, when they were attacked by a small party of Confederate cavalry under the command of Major J. T. Brackenridge, of the Thirty-third Texas Cavalry Regiment, and three of them were killed and fourteen taken prisoners and sent to Houston.

In March, 1864, one Dietz, a captain of engineers, who was sent out by General Magruder to inspect roads, fords, and ferries on the mainland opposite Matagorda Bay, came to the house of a Mr. Adams, on Hines's Bay, in an ambulance drawn by a pair of mules, and accompanied by his servant. He rode around the country several times examining the approaches from Matagorda Island to the mainland; and one day he went out alone riding a horse which he had borrowed from Mr. Adams, taking his compass and telescope with him. He never returned, and Captain E. P. Upton, commanding the local defence company of State troops, scoured the shores of the bay for thirty miles in search of him, but without success. It was suspected that he had unexpectedly met with a marauding party of Union soldiers and been either taken prisoner or killed. But the report of Major-General Dana to General Banks from Pass Cavallo, dated March 7, 1864, explains the mysterious disappearance of Captain Dietz by saying that he had deserted from the Confederate army, was then with him at Pass Cavallo, and had given him much valuable information. It seems that this man Dietz carried with him plans of the fortifications at Galveston and the coast, and topographical drawings of the country bordering on the coast, and was rewarded with a position in the Union army by Major-General John A. McClernand.

On March 13, 1864, Major Mat Nolan, of Ford's regiment, Second Texas Mounted Rifles, with a detail of sixty-two men, under Captains Ware, Cater, Taylor, and Richardson, came up with a party of about a hundred men of the enemy posted in a dense thicket about fifty miles southwest from Banquete. The enemy were under command of a Mexican named Cecilio Balerio, who was a captain in Colonel John L. Haynes's Second Regiment (Union) Texas Cavalry, and they made a determined fight. For some fifteen minutes the fight was hand-to-hand, and of the most desperate character, but the enemy were repulsed and fled from

the ground, leaving five of their men dead, and thirty-one horses with equipments in the hands of the Confederates.

Colonel John S. Ford says that Captain Balerio's son was an enterprising spy who was frequently in Corpus Christi for the purpose of obtaining news of the movements of the Confederates and conveying the intelligence to his father's camp, whence it was sent out by courier to Brownsville, and that Captain Richardson captured him in the very act of spying. When the spy was confronted with the usual penalty in such cases under the military code, it was hinted that possibly his life might be spared if he would divulge the site of his father's camp and lead a party of Confederate soldiers to it. The struggle in the mind of the young man was a long one, but the love of life prevailed. He was placed on a horse with his feet tied underneath, and, after an all-night march, the secret camp in the *chaparral* was surprised just at daybreak. The son was permitted to escape, and soon rejoined his father, who also made his escape in the darkness.

On March 15, 1864, Major Mat Nolan left his station at Banquete with about fifty men for the purpose of capturing a party of the enemy who were reported to have landed at the Oso and were collecting cotton. He found that the enemy had landed as represented, and that their force consisted of ninety-three men. They had already collected a lot of bales of cotton, and left with it for Corpus Christi. He found two wagons loading with cotton at the house of W. S. Gregory, and he arrested Mr. Gregory, Thomas S. Parker and his son Peter, who were assisting him with the cotton, and sent them, together with the wagons and teams, to Banquete. His scouts having ascertained the strength of the enemy at Corpus Christi, and that they had sent for and momentarily expected reinforcements by boats from Mustang Island, Major Nolan at once sent a courier to Captain Ware, on the San Fernando, ordering him to join him with forty men, and proceeded to Corpus Christi in pursuit of the enemy.. About one o'clock P.M. of the 16th he encountered the enemy's pickets near the town, and ascertained that the main body was posted at the wharf behind some ninety-five bales of cotton which had been brought in from the Oso and other points. At the same time three sail-vessels were observed in the bay approaching the wharf. He waited here for the reinforcements under Captain Ware, but they did not come, and about dusk the vessels landed and about seventy-five men disembarked from them. Being unable to attack with any show of success with the small force at his command, Major Nolan invested the town all night with a view to prevent communication with the surrounding country, and to pick up any small party that might be thrown out by the enemy. About eleven o'clock of the 17th, having concealed most of his forces in the *chaparral*, with two officers and seven men, he, in person, drove the enemy's pickets into the town on the south side, killing one and wounding one, with only one man wounded in his party. The enemy then rallied and threw out a heavy force, when the Confederates retired before them to the line of the *chaparral*, where they made a stand and kept the enemy within the town. During the day the cotton was loaded on the vessels, and at ten o'clock at night the whole force of the enemy embarked, taking with them the families of several men who had joined them.

Owing to the fact that the town was full of helpless women and children, many of whom were the families of soldiers serving in the Confederate army, and knowing

that a fight in the town would expose them to great danger, Major Nolan did not deem it proper to enter the town upon the heels of the enemy and harass their embarkation. On the 18th, still keeping the town invested and his main force concealed, Major Nolan entered with a party of twenty men, and found that the enemy had made close search for several well-known Southern men with a view to their arrest. They had searched the residence of Colonel Lovenskiold and Major Nolan's own residence, and had arrested Miss McMahon and kept her confined under guard for some time, mistaking her for Mrs. Nolan. Upon discovering their mistake, however, they released Miss McMahon. They also arrested Miss Savoy, mistaking her for a Miss Mullen, a sister of a soldier in the Confederate army. Several of the male citizens were also arrested and kept confined the day of the skirmish, but were released when the enemy departed. Several citizens of the town—H. W. Berry, Christian Anderson, Thomas Finney, and others—who had joined the Union army, and were, therefore, called renegades by their neighbors, were seen with the enemy, and were under arms.

On March 19, 1864, about two hundred Americans and Mexicans under Colonel E. J. Davis, of the First Texas (Union) Regiment, marching up the Rio Grande from Brownsville, attacked the town of Laredo. Their advent was unknown to the citizens until they were within a very short distance. Colonel Santos Benavides, a brave, trusty, gallant, and loyal Mexican citizen of Texas, was in command of the Confederate forces at Laredo. The advancing enemy avoided all roads, having been piloted through the *chaparral* by Mexican spies well acquainted with the country, and hence were unobserved by Colonel Benavides's pickets until in close proximity to the town. As soon as their approach was known, Colonel Benavides assembled his small force, consisting of about forty-two men of Captains Refugio and Cristoval Benavides's companies and about thirty men of Captain Chapman's company and a few American volunteers. The citizens rallied gallantly to the assistance of Colonel Benavides, and aided in erecting barricades on the plaza. After posting Captain Chapman's company and the citizens for the defence of the interior of the town, Colonel Benavides proceeded to the outskirts with the forty-two men of his regiment, divided them into squads, and placed them in the adjacent houses to await the approach of the enemy. When within about half a mile from the town the enemy halted, formed several assaulting parties of about forty men each, and charged upon the houses occupied by Colonel Benavides and his men. The brave Benavides says: "As soon as they came in reach of our guns my men gave the Texas yell, commenced firing on them, and compelled them to retreat to their main force." The enemy then advanced on foot, keeping up a rapid fire, which was returned with splendid effect by the Confederates, as they were "full of fight," as described by their commander. The fight was kept up until dark, when the enemy retreated about three miles below town and encamped. The Confederates maintained their position all night, expecting a renewal of the attack at any moment. About two o'clock that night reinforcements arrived for the Confederates from Lapata, about twenty-five miles north of Laredo, where Colonel Benavides had encamped the larger part of his regiment on account of the abundance of grass for his horses, and for whom he had sent a courier as soon as the advance of the enemy was discovered. The arrival of reinforcements caused

such general rejoicing that it was manifested by the ringing of church bells and the blowing of trumpets, which doubtless gave the enemy sufficient warning for them to make their escape. Early the next morning Captain Refugio Benavides, with sixty men, was sent to flank the enemy and get into their rear, but upon reaching their camp, he found that they had retreated in great disorder, leaving five horses branded U. S. and a large quantity of camp equipage. Lieutenant-Colonel George H. Giddings, who was in command of the Confederate forces at Eagle Pass, consisting of about one hundred and fifty men, was also sent for by Colonel Benavides at the time of the attack, but he did not arrive until the enemy had made their escape.

On March 21, 1864, the blockading steamship off Velasco passed to the eastward, some three miles from the Confederate forts, and opened fire on the steamship *Matagorda*, which was aground on the bar. She fired four shots, which passed over the vessel and exploded some distance beyond her. The blockader then passed to the eastward again, and the second time came down within range of both the land batteries, when the Confederates opened fire on her, and a spirited engagement took place. One shot struck the blockader, when she retired to sea, and came to anchor about three miles off.

Under date of March 23, 1864, Major-General John A. McClernand, commanding the United States army in Texas, reports from Matagorda Island that a number of colored refugees had escaped from Port Lavaca and brought within the Union lines the Confederate schooner *Fanny Fern*. No mention by Confederate reports is made of this affair.

On April 3, 1864, one Bingham, a companion of T. P. McManus, and who held a commission in the Union army, crossed the Rio Grande near Eagle Pass and robbed the stage running between that place and San Antonio and several freight wagons, carrying off the stage horses and a number of mule teams into Mexico. They carried away a negro boy, a slave, who escaped from them and returned to Texas. He reported to Captain J. B. Weyman, commanding the post at Eagle Pass, that Bingham's band was encamped near Monclova Viejo, where they had accumulated a large quantity of stolen plunder and many horses and mules. Captain Weyman at once demanded of the commandant of Piedras Negras that these robbers be arrested and delivered to the Texas authorities, to receive the punishment justly due to their crimes, and that the stolen property be returned. Captain Weyman also offered to go with the Mexican soldiers to point out the camp of the robbers and assist in their capture. A halting reply was given by the Mexican commandant, promising to return the stolen property if it could be found, but refusing to surrender the robbers and declining the services of Captain Weyman and his company in arresting them. He enacted the farce of sending out fifteen Mexicans under the pretence of hunting for the stolen property. In his report of this affair, Captain Weyman says that if the course so far pursued by the Mexican authorities is continued the whole Rio Grande frontier will be broken up. That renegades from all portions of Texas are continually arriving on Mexican territory in that vicinity, animated with the strongest personal hatred to all Confederates and the Confederate cause, and are tolerated, if not protected, by the Mexican authorities. That it was a matter of general notoriety that officers of the United

States army had their well-known recruiting officers and agents in the town of Piedras Negras, as well as commissary and quartermasters' stores from which they were publicly supplied. He sums the whole matter up, so far as the Mexican authorities are concerned, when he says: "When we have a strong force they are civil and obliging, and grow insolent when our force is weakened."

On April 12, 1864, two of the Union boats, the *Zephyr* and the *Estrella*, each with a company of infantry on board, left Pass Cavallo for the purpose of reconnoitring up Matagorda Bay and gaining information respecting the movements of two vessels inside the peninsula. At the Matagorda reef they met the Confederate gunboat *Carr* and the armed schooner *Buckhart*, when an interchange of shots took place, the Confederate boats retiring before the superior guns of the enemy's vessels. The same evening the *Zephyr* captured a small sloop on her way from Matagorda City to Lavaca, but the crew escaped by jumping overboard in the shallow water and wading to the shore. The next day the *Zephyr* and the *Estrella* sailed to Indianola, and thence to Oliver's Point, in Trespalacios Bay, where they captured another small sloop and burned still another.

On May 6, 1864, Lieutenant-Colonel William H. Griffin, Twenty-first Texas Infantry (A. W. Spaight's regiment), in command at Sabine Pass, captured the gunboats *Granite City* and *Wave*, at Calcasieu Pass, Louisiana, with one hundred and seventy-four prisoners. He reports a loss of eight killed and twelve wounded, and claims that the enemy's loss was twenty killed and nineteen wounded.

Major J. Simpson, of the Union army, reports that he arrived at Calcasieu on Sunday, the 8th of May, at seven A.M., on the steamer *Ella Morse*, Captain Pepper. She crossed the bar and entered the river, and when within about five hundred yards of the two gunboats, things looking a little suspicious, he stopped the boat. Then the *Granite City* fired a broadside at her. She then ran down the river with the *Granite City* following and firing at her for about half a mile, when she was attacked by sharp-shooters from both banks of the river. The pilot was wounded, and Captain Pepper took the wheel and ran the boat out and escaped to New Orleans.

On May 22, 1864, the blockader at the mouth of the Brazos River gave chase to the schooner *Stingaree*, which appeared in the offing southwest of Velasco. After passing out of sight from Velasco the schooner was captured and placed in charge of a prize crew, consisting of an ensign and six men, Captain McClosky, of the *Stingaree*, and his crew remaining prisoners on board the schooner. The steamer then sailed back towards her anchorage, the *Stingaree* following in her wake. Captain McClosky then produced some liquor, and in a short time succeeded in getting the prize crew drunk, and at the proper moment, with the aid of his own crew, secured their arms, made prisoners of the prize crew, and resumed command of his vessel. Captain McClosky continued in the wake of the steamer until within about four miles of Velasco, when he changed his course and made all sail for the beach. The steamer immediately gave chase, firing several shots at her, but without effect, and the *Stingaree* was beached about two miles west from Velasco. In the mean time, Lieutenant-Colonel H. P. Cayce, of the Thirteenth Texas Infantry, commanding the port at Velasco, seeing the movements of the schooner, sent to her assistance a company of cavalry and twenty-five infantry.

During the contest on board the schooner two of the prize crew escaped in small boats and one of Captain McClosky's crew was lost overboard. The other five of the prize crew were made prisoners.

On June 19, 1864, a body of Union men, aided by a considerable number of Mexican bandits, made a very serious attack on Eagle Pass with the intention of capturing the government property, including several hundred bales of cotton which had been accumulated there. The post was commanded by Captain James A. Ware with thirty-four men. Captain Ware had received intimations that some hostile movement was contemplated, and made the best preparations for defence which were possible with the small force at his command. The attacking party was under the command of one T. P. McManus, who had been sent to Piedras Negras for the purpose of organizing this expedition. About ten o'clock in the morning the attacking party attempted to cross the river at a point three miles above the town, but finding the ford impracticable, they subsequently effected a crossing about five miles higher up, and immediately commenced to march against the town. Receiving a check from the Confederate pickets they retired about six miles from town, unfurled the United States flag, and waited for reinforcements from the Mexican side of the river. During the day they received a considerable augmentation to their numbers, consisting of Union men who had sought refuge in Mexico and Mexican robbers, who were always awake to any enterprise which promised an opportunity for plunder and pillage. Captain Stone's company of home-guards under Lieutenant Burke and Captain Pickerell's company of twenty-five men were called out by Captain Ware, and, although only about half of them were armed, they were as advantageously posted as the small force and want of arms would allow. About one o'clock on the morning of the 20th the attack was made by about one hundred men, and Captain Pickerell and his company, after a gallant defence, were driven from the hospital building, with a loss of five men severely wounded, nine of their guns, and all of their horses. After having posted the home-guard company behind temporary barricades in the streets of the town, Captain Ware with four men started to the relief of Captain Pickerell, not knowing that he had been driven from the building occupied by him, and was captured by a guard which the enemy had left there. In the mean time the enemy marched into the town, and met with a handsome repulse from the home-guards under Lieutenant Burke from behind the barricades. In the confusion incident to the repulse and retreat of the enemy Captain Ware made his escape. About daylight the enemy retired across the river without having effected their purpose or doing any injury to the property. The loss of the enemy was one man killed and six wounded.

After the first attack the enemy received large accessions to their numbers, and evidently intended to make another. The better class of citizens on both sides of the river promptly responded to the call of Captain Ware, and on the night of the 22d the second attack was easily defeated. The Mexican authorities of Piedras Negras threw every obstacle in the way of the citizens of that town crossing over to the defence of Eagle Pass, even prohibiting them from crossing the river at the public ferry; but many of them found other means of passage. The conduct of the Mexican authorities towards the reinforcements for the McManus party was in strange contrast with that displayed towards those who wished to cross the river

to aid in the protection of life and property. These were given every facility for crossing the river, and no effort whatever was made to prevent or stop the organization or movements of the lawless band whose object was known to be plunder.

In their official correspondence Generals Dana and Herron both approve the doings of McManus, and speak of him as having been sent by them to pillage and plunder a defenceless frontier.

In the latter part of 1863 Colonel John S. Ford organized at San Antonio an expeditionary force for the recapture of Brownsville, and during that winter and the following spring was actively engaged in its organization. Early in June Colonel Ford, with four companies of his own regiment and two of Colonel Santos Benavides's regiment and one section of artillery from Captain H. H. Christmas's light battery, under Lieutenant C. B. Gardiner, formed a junction at Como se Llamo Ranch with Colonel Baird's regiment of Arizona troops, under Lieutenant-Colonel Showalter, and with all the best mounted men proceeded to march on Las Rucias Ranch, twenty-four miles from Brownsville, where Captain Temple, of the Union army, was stationed with two companies one hundred and fifty strong. Colonel Ford succeeded in capturing two Mexicans at Carricitos Ranch, who were forced to guide the Confederates through the *chaparral* to Las Rucias. On June 25, 1864, the advance arrived within a few hundred yards of the enemy without being discovered, and Captain James Dunn was ordered by Colonel Ford to take his company and feel of the enemy lightly, so as to compel them to develop their strength. Instead of doing so he charged boldly into the midst of the enemy and was killed at the head of his company. Colonel Ford, seeing that Captain Dunn had brought on the engagement, although contrary to orders, with that prescient judgment characteristic of the born soldier determined to take advantage of the mistake, and promptly ordered Lieutenant-Colonel Showalter into action, who was immediately followed by the companies of Captain Tom Cater and Captain Cristoval Benavides. The enemy were dislodged from all their covers behind the *jacals* about the ranch, and fell back behind the bank of a *laguna*, whence they maintained a heavy fire. At this point Lieutenant Gardiner brought his two guns into action, and did fine work in dislodging the enemy from behind the bank, where they could not be reached by the cavalry on account of the water and boggy ground in the *laguna*. Finally, those who had not made their escape across the Rio Grande, or been killed or wounded, surrendered. The Confederates captured two wagons and teams complete and a quantity of much needed stores, and took thirty-six prisoners. Their loss was three men killed and four wounded. The loss of the Federals was twenty killed, twelve wounded, among them Captain Temple, and thirty-six prisoners.

Captain James Dunn, who was killed in the first charge, was an old frontiersman, one of Jack Hays's rangers; and after having served the State of Texas long and faithfully, fell at the post of honor and of danger while gallantly leading his men in a headlong charge. The victorious shouts of his comrades was sweet music to his dying ears.

In the official reports of Major-General Herron, commanding the United States troops at Brownsville, the name of the ranch at which this affair took place is called Las Renas; but it is wrong; the correct name is Las Rucias.

After the affair at Las Rucias, Colonel Ford withdrew his command to Carricitos Ranch to rest and recuperate his men and horses, with a view to the final struggle for the reoccupation of Brownsville. During the four weeks that the command lay at Carricitos almost daily skirmishes occurred with the enemy's pickets in the dense *chaparral*, but they were usually bloodless. On July 25, Colonel Ford moved on to Brownsville and formed his line of investment in Dead Man's Hollow, on the outskirts of the town, and the enemy retired within their intrenchments. The Confederates were placed at great disadvantage in not having any artillery, Lieutenant Gardiner having returned to San Antonio pursuant to orders, on account of not having sufficient men to handle the guns ; the men of the cavalry companies having refused to either volunteer or be assigned to duty in the artillery, even temporarily. The enemy declined to come out of their works to fight, and Colonel Ford was too prudent to risk an assault in the face of superior numbers and several pieces of artillery. Colonel Ford pressed up close to the enemy's works several times with the purpose of drawing them out upon the open field, but without success. In one of these affairs fifteen of the enemy were wounded, but the Confederates did not have a man hurt.

There were a number of Texans in Matamoras at the time, and several of them came over to the Texas side and joined Ford's forces in the effort to recapture Brownsville. Among them were Colonel John M. Swisher, an old citizen of Austin and a veteran of the battle of San Jacinto, and Dr. Charles B. Combe. Colonel Swisher was riding one of Dr. Combe's horses, and in the midst of one of the heaviest skirmishes, when the bullets were flying thick and fast, and Colonel Swisher was exposing himself and horse rather recklessly, as Dr. Combe thought, the latter called out to the former : "Take care, there, Swisher ; you'll get my horse killed !" The old man blazed up at once, and stammered back at the doctor : "Da-da-damn your old horse ; yo-yo-you don't care if I get killed !" Those who knew Colonel Swisher and remember how badly he stuttered will appreciate the joke.

In a few days the Federals evacuated the city, and on July 30, 1864, the advance of Colonel Ford's command under Lieutenant-Colonel Showalter re-entered and occupied it. Giddings's battalion pursued the retreating enemy on the road to Brazos Santiago, and about fifteen miles from Brownsville Captain Robinson of that command came up with their rear-guard, and after a spirited brush drove it upon the main body, killing two men and capturing two prisoners. When the Confederates entered Brownsville they found Major E. W. Cave, of Houston, in command of a company of citizens and business men, temporarily organized for the protection of life and property against the depredations of the lawless element which predominated that section in the absence of a sufficient military force to overawe them and keep them in subjection.

On August 9, 1864, a party of about seventy-five negroes, from the Union Corps d'Afrique Engineers, was sent to Point Isabel from Brazos Santiago, for the purpose of tearing down the houses and removing the lumber to the latter place for the construction of quarters for the troops. While engaged in tearing down the houses they were attacked by Lieutenant Colonel George H. Giddings with a small force of cavalry and driven to the steamer which brought them over, after killing two of them and wounding several others.

The next day the colored troops were sent back on the same errand, under the protection of a strong infantry force from the Ninety-first Illinois and the Nineteenth Iowa Regiments, and, as they were too strong to be attacked by the Confederates, they tore down every house in the town and shipped the lumber to Brazos Santiago.

In August, 1864, Lieutenant-Colonel Showalter succeeded by a bold and adroit movement in capturing the United States steamboat *Ark* in the Rio Grande River, a short distance above its mouth. The boat was carried to Brownsville, and a session of the Confederate States court convened with Hon. Thos. J. Devine presiding, and by regular proceedings it was condemned as a prize of war, and sold for thirteen thousand dollars.

On September 6, 1864, a strong body of Union cavalry, with one piece of artillery, were crossed over to the mainland from Brazos Island, and advanced up the Rio Grande for the purpose of attempting the capture of a herd of cattle which was being held in the bend of the river just above the White Ranch. The advance-guard of the enemy was met at the Palmito Ranch by a small detachment of Confederate cavalry under Captain Richard Taylor, of the Thirty-third Texas Cavalry, and a brisk skirmish ensued; but the main body of the raiders with artillery soon arrived upon the ground, and the Confederates were forced to retire, and the enemy succeeded in driving off the cattle.

Captain Taylor fell back with his company upon the main body of Baird's regiment under Lieutenant-Colonel Showalter at Palmito Ranch, and preparations were there made to resist the advance of the Federals. A detachment of the French army, in support of Maximilian's pretensions in Mexico, had landed at the mouth of the Rio Grande the latter part of August, and driven Colonel Juan N. Cortina, who commanded the Republican troops of Mexico, back from the coast, and when the United States troops advanced up the river on the Texas side, Colonel Cortina opened fire with artillery on the Confederates at Palmito Ranch. They returned the fire with small-arms, killing several of the Mexican cannoneers, and then retreated to Brownsville. The enemy, however, did not follow, and Colonel Cortina sent a small part of his command across the river to reinforce the Federals. He, however, did not cross in person, as it was said that he was afraid of the adverse influence of his rival, Colonel Canales, being used for his overthrow during his absence. He was very friendly towards the Federals, and it was then said by those most intimate with him that he was scheming for a commission as brigadier-general in the United States army.

At all events, a very cordial feeling existed between Colonel Cortina and the officers of the United States army, which was doubtless prompted on Cortina's part by his great ambition, and his sagacity enabled him to see that the United States government was the stronger, and would ultimately succeed. The evidence is pretty clear, however, that the United States officers only intended from the first to use him for their own purposes; encouraging him to make raids across the Rio Grande River into Texas, under the implied promise of a commission in the United States army.

The terms of intimacy and the friendship existing between the two is abundantly shown by the fact that Brigadier-General William A. Pile, commanding United States forces at Brazos Santiago, reports, under date of November 14, 1864,

that he then had on hand belonging to the Mexican government, and which had been loaned to him by that government, the following property, viz.: two hundred and twenty-one muskets, twenty-four rifles, one hundred and fifty-seven bayonets, two hundred and twelve cartridge-boxes, four drums, five trumpets, three six-pounder rifled brass cannon, with carriages and limber-chests, fifteen horses, and ten mules.

Upon the arrival of the French army at the mouth of the Rio Grande River, Colonel John S. Ford at once placed himself in communication with its commander, and through his untiring efforts a very friendly feeling was at once established between their officers and the Confederate States authorities. Repeated efforts made by the latter failed to embroil the United States authorities in a conflict with the French, and several indignities which the French offered the United States government were unresented and unnoticed.

By a preconcerted arrangement between the Union commander at Brazos Santiago and Colonel Cortina, it was provided that the latter should cross the Rio Grande above Brownsville and attack that city at the time of a simultaneous attack from below by the Union forces, but its miscarriage resulted in a signal defeat of the latter. On the morning of September 10, 1864, a small body of Confederate cavalry on picket duty at San Martin Ranch under Captain W. H. D. Carrington, of Giddings's battalion, observed a force of about two hundred and fifty of the enemy approaching. Captain Carrington withdrew his small force and sent to Colonel Giddings for reinforcements. About half-past two o'clock Lieutenant-Colonel George H. Giddings, with the companies of Captains Carr, Saunders, and Benavides, met Captain Carrington, who had drawn the enemy along slowly, and, after placing about one hundred of his command under cover in the *resaca*, sent the other thirty out to meet the enemy and drew them into an ambuscade. The ruse succeeded so well that when the whole Federal force charged the decoy party, the latter retreated precipitately and the former fell into the trap.

When the Federals charged up to the *resaca*, the Confederates, who were dismounted under the bank, poured a deadly fire into their ranks, before which they turned and fled. The Confederates then mounted their horses and pursued them several miles. The Federal commander, Major Noyes, was so closely pressed that he threw away his clothing and private papers, which fell into the hands of the pursuers. The Federal force engaged was two hundred and fifty men, and they lost eighty-six killed, wounded, and missing, and one stand of colors. The Confederate force engaged was one hundred and thirty men, and they lost one man killed, one wounded, and four horses killed.

The intended co-operation of Colonel Cortina failed principally because some of the leading officers under his command disapproved of his plans, and when his force reached the river above Brownsville these officers made a pretext of the slightly swollen waters for not crossing and returned to Matamoras. But so confident were the Federal authorities of the fruition of the plan of capture that a detailed account of the recapture of Brownsville was published in the New Orleans papers.

Twenty Mexicans belonging to Cortina's command, who had gone to Brazos Santiago to join the Union forces, were captured on the 12th of September by the

Confederates and turned over to General Tomas Mejia, the commander of the Imperial Mexican army at Matamoras, who enrolled them in his army. Although not within the scope of this history, it may be mentioned as an interesting fact that when the Imperial army of Mexico under General Mejia occupied Matamoras, Colonel Cortina was not untrue to his instincts as a traitor, but joined the enemy himself and attempted to betray the entire garrison. In this, however, he was partially foiled by the watchfulness and patriotism of his subordinate, Colonel Canales, who escaped to the Texas side of the river with a large number of the Republican Mexican troops. Upon their arrival they stacked their arms and asked refuge of Colonel Ford, the Confederate commander. This was granted, and their arms purchased and paid for.

A few words concerning General Mejia may also be pardoned. He was a full-blooded Cerro Gordo Indian, very dark, of the pure Aztec type, and was rugged, honest, candid, and fearless. He received his education at the Mexican military academy at Chapultepec, and was a trained, educated soldier. He was one of the prominent men of the nation who had joined in the invitation to Prince Maximilian to assume the imperial crown of Mexico, in which he was actuated by the purest motives of patriotism. Warned by the frequent revolutions which had disturbed the peace of his native country, he believed that this was the only way to assure it a stable government capable of protecting the lives and property of its citizens. He surrendered with the Emperor Maximilian at Querétaro, and the commander of the victorious Liberal army was his former friend, General Escobedo, whose life Mejia had saved on one occasion. At a late hour the night before Maximilian, Mejia, and Miramon were to be shot, Escobedo entered the prison cell of Mejia and told him that at a certain hour he would find a man on guard who knew him and who had orders to let him pass. He gave him directions how to reach an indicated point, and said: "There you will find a saddled horse; mount him and leave; save your life, and permit me to repay the debt of gratitude which I owe you." His calm reply was: "I thank you, general, but I will stay and die with the emperor;" and he died as he had lived, a true patriot, unawed by fear, and met death with the stoical fortitude of his race.

At this place it may not be inappropriate to refer, for the purpose of correction, to a glaring misstatement in Bancroft's "History of Texas." He prints a letter, without disclosing the name of the writer, but he is evidently a Mexican, which represents the French army, five thousand strong, as moving against Matamoras, when General Cortina, with three thousand Mexicans, attacks the invaders; Colonel John S. Ford crosses the Rio Grande, takes a large number of cattle to the French, and attacks Cortina in the rear. That hero whips both his assailants and drives the French back to Bagdad and Ford across the Rio Grande; he crosses over with his whole force, including artillery, and drives the Texans from Brownsville. He hoists the United States flag and informs the Federal commander at Brazos Santiago of the event, and places the city at his disposal. The pseudo-historian evidently fixes this Quixotic achievement on the 9th of September, 1864. It is well known to hundreds of reliable men now living that no such an event ever took place, and Colonel Ford himself denounces the narrative as the falsehood of a calumniator, and not the mistake of a historian. If any proof was needed to dis-

prove the statement, the testimony of the hero of the episode himself is not wanting. In 1891, Colonel Ford was in the City of Mexico, saw General Cortina, and obtained from him the following repudiation :—

"ALZEAPOZULCO, October 17, 1891.

"SIR,—At your request, I will state that the accounts in Mr. Bancroft's 'History of Texas,' on page 408 and other pages, contain mistakes. The account of my having burned Roma is without foundation. No such thing ever occurred. The statement in Mr. Bancroft's 'History of Texas' that Colonel John S. Ford passed the Rio Grande in 1864 and carried beef to the French invaders of Mexico, and afterwards joined the French forces in an attack on the Juarez troops commanded by myself, in which the French and Confederates were defeated by me and forced to retreat, is an error. No such thing ever occurred.

"The same author states that I, subsequent to the engagement,—an untruthful account of which he publishes,—passed the Rio Grande and captured the city of Brownsville in 1864. Mr. Bancroft must have been imposed upon by some man who was in the habit of stating falsehoods. The reputed capture of Brownsville in 1864 never took place. Mr. Bancroft could have learned this had he applied to me for the facts.

"This letter will, I hope, convince the public that Mr. Bancroft's utterances in respect to these affairs are utterly unreliable.

"I am, sir, your obedient servant,

"J. N. CORTINA."

"TO COLONEL JOHN S. FORD, of San Antonio, Texas."

On the 11th day of March, 1865, Brigadier-General James E. Slaughter, who was then in command of the Confederate forces on the lower Rio Grande, received, through Mr. Charles Worthington, an invitation from Major-General Lew Wallace, of the United States army, to meet him in consultation at Point Isabel, for the purpose of a friendly talk. Accompanied by several members of his staff and Colonel John S. Ford, General Slaughter repaired to the designated point, about twenty miles from Brownsville. The parties held a conference which lasted twenty-four hours, and terminated in the submission by General Wallace of the following written communication, a true copy of which has been furnished by Colonel Ford for this work :—

"At your instance, I beg leave to submit the following points upon which it is possible, in my judgment, to secure immediate peace.

"For the sake of a perfect understanding permit me to say :—

"*First.* The proper authorities of my government have not authorized me to present terms or make overtures of any kind to anybody.

"*Second.* As you will observe, the propositions are drawn with special reference to the trans-Mississippi region, and to what, I think, is a certainty that they will prove acceptable to my government. It should be understood, therefore, that they are by no means in the nature of finalities. It would be presumptuous in me to undertake to announce in my name what may be the result of negotiations sincerely concluded by parties properly empowered.

"*Third.* I will venture to suggest that, considering the present situation in the region alluded to, your highest present obligations are to your army, your civil authorities, and your citizens. A voluntary settlement on your part cannot, in my opinion, be hoped for unless the honor, happiness, and security of these classes are guaranteed. To this end my propositions are drawn.

"*Propositions.—First.* That the Confederate military authorities of the trans-Mississippi States and Territories agree, voluntarily, to cease opposition, armed and otherwise, to the re-establishment of the authority of the United States government over all the region above designated.

"*Second.* That the proper authorities of the United States, on their part, guarantee as follows :—

"1. That the officers and soldiers at present actually comprising the Confederate army proper, including its *bona fide* attachés and employés, shall have and receive full release from and against all actions, presentations, liabilities, and legal proceedings of every kind, so far as the government of the United States is concerned, upon the simple condition that, if they choose to remain within the limits of that government, they shall first take an oath of allegiance to the same ; if, however, they, or any of them, choose to go abroad for residence in a foreign country, all such shall be at liberty to do so, without obligating themselves by such oath, taking with them their families and property, with liberty of preparation for such departure.

"2. That such of said officers and soldiers as shall determine to remain in the United States shall be regarded as citizens of the United States government, invested as such with all the rights, privileges, and immunities now enjoyed by the most favored people thereof.

"3. That the above guarantees shall be extended to all persons now serving as civil officers under the National and State Confederate governments at present existing in the region above particularized upon their complying with one or the other of the conditions mentioned, viz.: residence abroad or taking the oath of allegiance.

"4. That persons now private citizens of the region named shall be included in and receive the same guarantees upon their complying with the same conditions.

"5. As respects rights of property, it is further guaranteed that there shall be no interference with existing titles, liens, etc., of whatever nature, except those derived from seizures, occupancies, and proceedings of confiscation under and by virtue of Confederate laws, orders, proclamations, and decrees, all of which shall be considered and treated as void from the beginning.

"Lastly, it is further expressly stipulated that the rights of property in slaves shall be referred to the Congress of the United States.

"The above, as it seems to me, offers a sufficient basis for a definite settlement. If it could be accepted in the spirit it is offered, I believe we would be a reunited and happy people.

"I am very truly your friend and obedient servant,

"LEW WALLACE,
"*Maj.-Gen. Vols., U. S. Army.*

"TO BRIG.-GEN. J. E. SLAUGHTER and
COL. JOHN S. FORD, C. S. Army."

During the interview General Slaughter and Colonel Ford disclaimed any authority to act upon any proposition which General Wallace might submit, but could only report the matter fully to their superior military authorities. They had agreed between themselves to talk as little as possible, but hear all that General Wallace had to say. General Wallace, also, upon his part, disclaimed any authority to act for his government, but distinctly stated that General Grant would endorse whatever he might do in the premises. "And," said he, "whatever General Grant recommends Mr. Lincoln will do. I suppose it is now the same with the government at Richmond in regard to General Lee." Said he : "Mr. Lincoln declined to meet the Confederate commissioners, but General Grant wrote suggesting he

should do so, and Mr. Lincoln obeyed with as much promptness as if the suggestion had been a military order and he a soldier."

He said that he proposed to treat directly with the military authorities of the Trans-Mississippi Department, remarking frequently during the interview: "The armies must make peace; they alone have the power to enforce treaty stipulations; politicians must have nothing to do with the matter. What is the use of treating with the civil authorities? they are powerless."

He also assigned as a reason for making these propositions to the military authorities of the Trans-Mississippi Department, "that the Confederate government had abandoned that department; that the people thereof had a perfect right to take care of themselves, and it was their bounden duty to adopt such measures as they found necessary for their self-preservation." He insisted that they might now return to the Union without the imputation of coercion, as the territory composing it was not being formidably invaded, or even threatened with immediate invasion, nor would it be until the termination of the demonstration against Mobile, which was then being made. He said it would be a matter of no consequence to the Southern people whether their slaves were emancipated by their own voluntary act, by the action of Congress, the amendment of the Constitution, or by an invading army; that wherever an army of the United States went the slaves were freed, and hence the futility of Mr. Lincoln's proclamation.

To these suggestions the Confederate officers replied that the Trans-Mississippi Department could not honorably entertain any propositions on the line suggested, unless they were also submitted to the other States of the Confederacy; that the Confederate government alone had the power to treat. General Wallace asked: "Did not the States go out of the Union by separate State action?" The Confederate officers replied: "They did; and they have a right to secede from the Confederacy for just cause; but we feel bound to our brethren on the other side of the Mississippi by a stronger tie than our Constitution,—our plighted faith to stand by them. Honor forbids us to deliberately desert them."

During the conversation General Wallace acknowledged that the negro presented himself in every phase of the question as a stumbling-block; neither the North nor the South knew what to do with him. The Confederate officers told him there was an inconsistency, an injustice, in asking Texas and the other States to go back into the Union by sacrificing many millions of dollars without compensation; that Mr. Lincoln's proclamation declared the negroes free, and the proposed amendment to the Constitution emancipated them.

He replied: "Let me tell you confidentially, we regard Mr. Lincoln's proclamation as a great mistake. It is looked upon by the most intelligent men of the North, outside of the radical abolition party, as a nullity, and will be treated accordingly. The amendment to the Constitution will probably not be ratified by a sufficient number of States to give it validity for years; indeed, it may never be. Slavery in the returning States would be governed by the action on that amendment."

During this protracted interview General Wallace also referred to the struggle then going on in Mexico between the adherents of the Emperor Maximilian and the Republicans led by President Juarez. He asserted unequivocally that the

government of the United States intended to enforce the "Monroe doctrine," and refuse to recognize any empire in Mexico, but would aid the Juarez party, and in the end place Mexico under the protection of the United States.

He descanted upon the glory of such an undertaking, appealed to the prejudices of Americans to enlist their sympathies in a cause which proposed to establish upon this continent a policy peculiarly American, and invited the Trans-Mississippi Department to assist in the consummation of the work. He suggested the probability of his government sending a navy of three hundred armed vessels into the Mediterranean Sea as a demonstration of strength. Colonel Ford asked him if he did not consider it probable that the execution of these plans would involve a war with France, England, and their allies. He replied, unhesitatingly, that he did; but made no secret of his confidence in the ability of the reunited Americans to hold their own, even against such formidable European powers.

In pursuance of General Wallace's suggestion, it was then decided not to fight any more on the Rio Grande; that a desperate encounter in that out-of-the-way place, if all of both sides were killed, could have no effect whatever on the final result.

It was also agreed that the adherents of President Juarez, who presented themselves, should have facilities afforded them of passing over the intervening space between Brownsville and Brazos Santiago; that a Confederate general would escort them to the Union lines and there turn them over, and many distinguished Mexicans were thus passed away from Mexico.

The above propositions of General Wallace, with the reports of General Slaughter and Colonel Ford as to the details of the interview, were immediately forwarded under the seal of secrecy to Major-General John G. Walker at Houston by a special messenger, Lieutenant-Colonel Fairfax Gray. Instead of forwarding them on to Lieutenant-General E. Kirby Smith, commanding the Trans-Mississippi Department, General Walker had them published in the Houston newspapers; his reason for doing so, as he afterwards explained to Colonel Ford, being that the character of the reports made by General Slaughter and Colonel Ford had been so greatly misrepresented that he thought it best to have everything connected with the interview published, in order to allay undue excitement.

These documents have not yet been published in the records of the War of the Rebellion, but will in all probability be published in due time.

During the spring of 1865 every thoughtful man felt that the downfall of the Southern Confederacy was a matter of a very short time. The little army of Texans on the lower Rio Grande, very much depleted by many leaves of absence and some desertions, had been lying idle for two months; seeming to be waiting for something unusual to turn up. Some occurrence out of the ordinary of passing events seemed to be expected; it might be the end of the war, or it might be the end of the world, which many would equally have welcomed, for they felt sure that the war would not otherwise terminate than with disaster to the Southern cause.

On the 12th of May the garrison at Brownsville was electrified by the news that Giddings's battalion at Palmito Ranch, twelve miles below Brownsville, had been attacked by the enemy, capturing their camp, rations, clothing, and two sick soldiers. Preparations were at once made to reinforce Captain W. N. Robinson, commanding Giddings's battalion, and give the enemy battle; and all the available

force was hurried to the front. The cavalry and artillery horses were in a most pitiable plight, the former scarcely able to bear their riders, and the latter could with difficulty draw the gun-carriages at a moderate trot. Arriving in the vicinity of Palmito Ranch on the morning of the 13th, it was learned that Captain Robinson had attacked the enemy the evening before and driven them back from Palmito Ranch to the White House, about four miles, but that they had been reinforced and were then advancing.

Colonel Ford, who was in immediate command of the Confederates, by three o'clock P.M. had made such preparations as were possible with his inadequate force to meet the enemy. Anderson's battalion of cavalry, commanded by Captain D. M. Wilson, was placed on the right, and Giddings's battalion on the left, and one section of Captain O. G. Jones's battery of light artillery placed in the road, one on the left, and the other held in reserve. In a short time the skirmishers became engaged, and then the artillery opened with quite a rapid fire. The shot and shell did considerable execution, and seemed to throw the enemy into confusion. It was evident that they were not aware that the Confederates had any artillery until the guns opened, and this was afterwards confirmed by the prisoners captured. The artillery fire checked the advance of the main body of the enemy, thus leaving their skirmish line unprotected; and as soon as Colonel Ford discovered this, he ordered the cavalry to charge. This they did with impetuosity, and captured the whole of the skirmish line. By this time the main body was in full retreat, and a simultaneous advance was made along the whole Confederate line. The artillery moved forward at a gallop, amid the shouts of excited men, now and then taking positions on the elevated points adjacent to the road and firing at the routed and retreating enemy; and the cavalry harassed their flank and rear with repeated charges, in which great gallantry was displayed. Thus the fight continued for seven miles, the enemy now and then endeavoring to make a stand and check the pursuit, but as fast as they did so they were driven from their positions before they had time to recover from their demoralization. Many of the Union soldiers jumped into the Rio Grande, some swam over to the Mexican shore, and many were drowned in the muddy waters of the river. The strength of the Union force engaged was about eight hundred infantry, and they lost thirty killed and wounded who were found upon the field, besides those who were lost in the river, one hundred and thirteen prisoners, and two stands of colors, one of which belonged to the Thirty-fourth Indiana Regiment; and a great quantity of guns, accoutrements, and clothing were scattered along the whole line of retreat. The Confederate forces engaged consisted of Giddings's and Anderson's battalions of cavalry, the former commanded by Captain W. N. Robinson and the latter by Captain D. M. Wilson, their combined strength being about three hundred men, and Captain O. G. Jones's battery of light artillery of six guns, with Lieutenants C. H. Williams, Charles I. Evans, J. M. Smith, and S. Gregory and about seventy men. Their loss was five men wounded, but none of them dangerously.

It was learned for the first time, from the prisoners who were captured, that the Confederacy had fallen, that its armies east of the Mississippi River had surrendered; and the Union officers, thinking that the Confederates had also heard of the termination of the war, had marched up from Brazos Santiago to take possession of

Brownsville, not expecting any resistance. This was the last blow struck for State rights. The first clash of arms at Bull Run had ushered in the great Civil War amid the exultations of the victorious Southern soldiers, and the curtain now fell upon the last scene of the dark and bloody drama amid the victorious shouts of the Texans at Palmito Ranch,—THE LAST BATTLE OF THE WAR.

INDIAN AFFAIRS DURING THE WAR.

In August, 1861, Lieutenant Mays, of Company D, Second Regiment of Mounted Rifles, with a party of fourteen men from Fort Davis, went in pursuit of a large body of marauding Apache Indians, and attacked their village. After a most desperate fight all the Texans were killed, except a Mexican, who came in with the intelligence. A detachment was sent out to ascertain the truth of the Mexican's statement, and when it arrived at the scene of conflict, the dead bodies of several men were found who were recognized as belonging to Lieutenant May's command, as well as the hats and boots of others, and a number of horses that had been killed.

On October 14, Sergeant W. Barrett overtook a large party of Lipan Indians from Mexico, on the Nueces River near Fort Inge, and had a desperate hand-to-hand engagement with them. It had rained on the Texans that day, and their guns having got wet, very few of them would fire. Those whose guns were thus rendered useless drew their sabres and attacked the Indians with great fierceness. The casualties were ten Indians killed, and three of the Texans were killed and one man and one horse wounded.

On the 1st day of November following, Captain James B. Barry, of Colonel H. E. McCulloch's First Regiment of Mounted Rifles, had a lively running fight of several miles with a party of Comanche Indians, on Pease River, a tributary of Red River, in which twelve of the red-skins were killed, while the Texans had only two men wounded.

The State militia of the Twentieth Brigade, under Brigadier-General Nathaniel Terry, met at Robinson's Mills, in Tarrant County, in August, 1863, for the purpose of organizing for protection against raids by the Indians. Their depredations upon the frontier had created such intense excitement among the militiamen from Parker and Johnson Counties that it was almost impossible to retain them in camp long enough to organize, as their families were in immediate danger. In one family the mother was killed and four children carried off; in another family the mother and two children were killed and two children seriously, if not mortally, wounded. Several men had been recently killed and many herds of horses driven off. Prowling bands of Indians had been seen in so many neighborhoods that the settlers were satisfied that there was great and immediate danger from their incursions, and called aloud for supplies of ammunition, of which there was a great scarcity. One band of the savages had been seen within twenty-five miles of Fort Worth, and had stolen a number of horses. In August of that year, near Robinson's Mills in that county, a Mrs. Brown, whose husband was absent in the army, was murdered by them at her own house in broad daylight, and two young men and a young lady seriously, if not dangerously, wounded.

In December, 1863, they made a raid into Cooke County, and murdered nine

citizens and three soldiers and wounded three soldiers and four citizens and burned ten houses and a quantity of grain. A number of citizens left their homes and moved farther east, some of them in a very destitute condition, without bedding or a change of clothing. The Indians drove off a large number of horses on this raid, and the route along which they left was strewn with horses killed by them. All the houses in Gainesville were crowded with refugees from the northern and western portions of the county, and great excitement prevailed all over the country. A man who was engaged in a fight with these Indians reported to General McCulloch that they were well armed, fought gallantly, and that several of them wore heavy whiskers and spoke good English.

The country west of San Antonio and along the Pecos River became the rendezvous not only of Union men on their way to Mexico, but of deserters from the Confederate army and renegades whose chief occupation was plunder and pillage, and murder also if necessary in order to accomplish their purposes. In May, 1864, the companies of the Frontier Regiment, Colonel J. E. McCord commanding, which had been stationed in that section, were withdrawn and the inhabitants left in an entirely defenceless condition, subject to the depredations of the Indians as well as the worse foe, renegade white men and Mexicans. In May, 1864, Captain William Wallace, an old Texan and one of the most skilful Indian-fighters on the frontier, was killed by Indians from Mexico, not more than twenty miles west of San Antonio, and all of his stock driven off. About a week previous to this a party of Indians appeared on the Hondo River, thirty miles west of San Antonio, killed one citizen, and drove off a large number of horses.

The citizens had no confidence in the partially organized troops of the frontier as a means of protection. Most of them were believed to be men who had fled from the interior of the State to avoid conscription, were Union men, and friends of and sympathizers with the deserters and renegades who infested that region. A perfect reign of terror prevailed in the country near Camp Verde, and many of the settlers were forced to remove back from the frontier for safety.

In October, 1864, a large party of Indians, numbering some three hundred or four hundred, made a raid into the settlements adjacent to Fort Belknap, in Young County, murdered several families, and drove off a large number of horses. Lieutenant N. Carson, of Company D, Colonel James Bourland's regiment, with fourteen men, attacked them on Elm Creek, but the Indians showing up from the brush in such large numbers, Lieutenant Carson ordered his men to fall back, which they did in good order and fighting from one position to another. After retreating a short distance the Texans reached the house of Mr. McCoy, where they found two women, and they were taken up behind two of the men and the retreat continued, the Indians following in hot pursuit. They destroyed McCoy's house and carried off everything in it, and destroyed all the clothing and camp equipage of the soldiers in their abandoned camp. The Texans had five men killed and several wounded, among the latter being Lieutenant Carson; and several of the Indians are known to have been killed and wounded, but they were carried off.

After killing eleven citizens and burning as many houses they left in a northwesterly direction, carrying off seven women and children.

UNION SENTIMENT IN TEXAS.

A great many of the men who voted against secession afterwards gave in their adhesion and support to the Southern cause; they opposed secession on grounds of policy alone. But many others refused to do so to the last. Some were very outspoken in the expression of their Union sentiments, and in the heat of political excitement much crimination and recrimination were indulged on both sides, which not infrequently resulted in bloodshed. Sometimes the political sentiments of men furnished a pretext for persecution and the seeking of vengeance engendered by long-standing feuds or personal grievances. The sentiment in favor of the Southern Confederacy was well-nigh unanimous; the opposition, though quite respectable in numbers, was unorganized and without a leader. It is true that several men who had been quite prominent in public affairs espoused the Union cause, but none of them possessed to any considerable degree the faculties of organization, and they were lacking in many of the essential qualifications necessary to fit them for great leaders in great emergencies. Among the more prominent men who espoused the Union cause with strong convictions were ex-Governor E. M. Pease, Hon. A. J. Hamilton, and Hon. John Hancock, of the city of Austin, and Judge E. J. Davis, of Nueces County. Along the Rio Grande, in and around the towns of San Antonio, Austin, and Fredericksburg, and in the counties of Austin, Fayette, and Colorado, the Union sentiment was very strong. For some time after hostilities had begun the minority seemed content with a sullen silence; but few of them left the State for the purpose of joining the Union army. They mostly contented themselves with expressing their pleasure and satisfaction with the success of the Union arms, or were correspondingly depressed by the successes of the Confederates. Their refusal to take Confederate money in trade was regarded as disloyalty to the Confederate States, and brought upon them the denunciations of their neighbors who sympathized with the Southern cause. These and other acts brought about such a persecution as to cause many Union men to leave the State and seek refuge in Mexico, where they hoped to receive assistance in getting to the United States. These repaired to the consuls of the United States at Matamoras and Monterey, and were by them taken care of until they could be sent to New Orleans. They generally found a refuge on board the ships of the blockading squadron at the mouth of the Rio Grande; and on June 16, 1862, Captain Charles Hunter, commanding the United States steamer *Montgomery* at that place, informed the State Department at Washington that he then had forty of such refugees on board his vessel, and that between seventy and eighty others had been sent to New Orleans on the *Kensington*. He also says that he had on board his vessel three Union gentlemen from Texas, men of influence; that one was a judge, another a celebrated lawyer, and the other an influential politician; and their mission was to go to Washington City to see President Lincoln and suggest the immediate occupation of Texas by United States troops. Under date of October 30, 1862, General Butler wrote from New Orleans to the United States consul at Matamoras to notify all Union refugees within his reach to come to Matamoras for the purpose of being transported to New Orleans; that within thirty days he would send a boat to bring away such Union Texan refugees as would like to enlist in a Texas regiment which

he was then organizing, and intended sending them to Galveston in a short time. This regiment doubtless was the one afterwards known as the First Texas (Union) Cavalry, and commanded by Colonel E. J. Davis. Again he wrote the consul, under date of November 12, that he proposed to send down the First Regiment Texas Volunteers, with some other troops, to Galveston ; and that he would arrange with Colonel Davis of that command, and with Rear-Admiral Farragut, that refugees who desire may be sent to Galveston from Texas and Mexico for the purpose of having them enlist in the army. The Confederate officers along the Rio Grande boldly charged that recruits for this regiment were openly recruited and enlisted in Mexico, and that this violation of neutrality was connived at by the Mexican authorities. In a protest by General H. P. Bee addressed to Don Albino Lopez, governor of the state of Tamaulipas, Mexico, under date of February 3, 1863, he says that on December 26, 1862, an armed party of Mexican citizens crossed into Texas, attacked a train of government wagons, murdered three of the teamsters, and, after plundering the train of all its contents, recrossed the Rio Grande and found shelter and protection on the soil of Mexico. And on the same day another party crossed the Rio Grande at Ro Clareño and murdered an estimable patriot and citizen, the chief justice of Zapata County, Don Isidro Vila. This party was followed across the river by Captain Refugio Benavides of the Confederate army, and punished as their crimes and atrocities merited. He says : "If these outrages had been committed by the disorderly population which had notoriously existed on the frontier, an excuse might be sought in the unsettled state of the country and that concomitant lawlessness which is incident to so demoralized state of society, and might have been classed with the many other instances of irregularity which have occasionally and unfortunately marked the history of the two countries. But these outrages present other and graver characteristics. They were committed by the First Regiment of Union troops, commanded by Antonio Zapata, composed of Mexicans, carrying with them the flag of the United States and claiming to be the representatives of that nation, with whom the Confederate States were at war." That "the authorities of Mexico have been repeatedly warned of these frequent violations of neutrality, but these warnings have been without effect, and the soil of Texas has been desecrated and the blood of her people been shed by those who sheltered themselves under the neutrality of the flag of Mexico ; and so far from being restrained from future evil, or punished for past offences, were then preparing for a repetition of those outrages."

He says that "he has proof that Mr. L. Pierce, the United States consul at Matamoras, whose exit from Texas, where he resided for many years, was marked by improprieties of conduct which render him a fit representative of the United States, has originated and, with specious promises of the plunder of Texas ranches, has organized and put in the field this band of outlaws in Mexico."

Replying to this communication, Governor Lopez says : "There is a floating population on the Rio Grande frontier, consisting of individuals who alternately claim citizenship in Mexico or Texas, as suits their purposes, and who change their residence whenever obliged to do so by the prosecution which always follows them, thus evading the laws and securing immunity. The inhabitants of Mexico have suffered from these men every species of outrage, which went unpunished because

the facility for crossing the river rendered abortive the efforts of the authorities, who, though powerless, were not ignorant of the names of the perpetrators. Availing themselves of the domestic disturbances in Tamaulipas, they raised the banner of party as a cloak for their cover of crime. These men, who have committed so many outrages upon the peaceful inhabitants of the frontier, are precisely the same who call themselves the 'First Regiment of the Union.' "

On March 6, 1863, Colonel E. J. Davis arrived at the mouth of the Rio Grande on board the United States steamer *Honduras* with a party of about one hundred and eighty soldiers. He and five others landed on the Mexican side and proceeded to Matamoras, where Colonel Davis's family had been sent by the Confederate authorities to meet him, and awaited him. For a week he remained in Matamoras, actively engaged in enlisting men for his regiment. About four o'clock on the morning of March 15, 1863, while waiting with a number of companions at the mouth of the river to go on board the *Honduras*, about one hundred men, "consisting," as General Bee says, "of citizens and soldiers off duty," crossed the river to the Mexican shore, and, after a serious conflict, captured Colonel E. J. Davis, Captain W. W. Montgomery, of General A. J. Hamilton's staff, and four others, and brought them over to the Texas shore. The Davis party made a vigorous resistance and wounded two of the attacking party, and several of the Davis party were killed and wounded. Governor Lopez immediately demanded of General Bee, in courteous terms, the release of the prisoners and their return to Mexican soil, and General Bee promptly repudiated the act as not having been authorized by him, and promised to return the prisoners if they could be found. After diligent search by General Bee, Colonel Davis was found and set across the river with all of his companions, except Captain Montgomery, who had been hanged. General Bee disclaimed all knowledge of the names of the parties engaged in this affair, but Governor Lopez informed him, for the purpose of enabling him to arrest and punish them, that Colonel George W. Chilton, Captain Brewin, and Dr. McKnight were of the party, but it is not known whether his information was correct. In December following, after the arrival at Brownsville of Hon. A. J. Hamilton, military governor of Texas, one Dick Hamilton was accused by the affidavit of Richard Pendergrast, a citizen of Brownsville, made before I. B. McFarland, judge of the Provisional Court, a part of Governor Hamilton's administration, with the murder of Captain Montgomery. He said that there were seven men who participated in the hanging of Captain Montgomery, one of whom was Dick Hamilton, then in Matamoras; that he saw him hanging by the neck to a mesquite-tree four days afterwards. This affidavit was made for the purpose of extraditing Dick Hamilton, but, owing to a disagreement between Governor Hamilton and General Dana as to the mode of proceeding, the extradition was not accomplished.

When the State seceded, Hon. A. J. Hamilton was a representative in the United States Congress from Texas, having been elected over General T. N. Waul at the preceding election. He refused to resign, as the other Representatives and Senators did, and served out his term. He was then appointed a brigadier-general in the Union army, but does not seem to have ever performed any active military service in the field. On November 14, 1862, he was appointed by the President of the United States military governor of Texas, and most of his efforts seem to have

been directed to inducing the United States government to invade Texas. He brought to bear, through his efforts, the powerful influence of the governors of several Northern States, and succeeded in his efforts. One of these communications from Governor John A. Andrew, of Massachusetts, to the authorities at Washington, under date of November 27, 1861, is interesting after the lapse of more than thirty years. He says: "I wish to call your special attention to a subject which has been pressed upon my notice by some of our most practical, experienced, and influential business men, and which I cannot but regard with much favor. It is that the Federal government should make its next demonstration upon the coast of Texas, the State easiest to take and hold, with larger public consequences dependent upon such action than any other. Texas we virtually bought; her rebellion makes her a dependency for treatment under the war power and through Congress. The force when landed should proclaim martial law, with reference to the future action of Congress, when the proper time arrives to free all the slaves, compensating loyal owners if necessary."

Among the results which he points out to be accomplished by such an expedition are the following:—

"*First.* We flank the whole rebellion.

"*Second.* We open a way out for cotton.

"*Third.* We cut off future annexations in the interest of the rebels, and demonstrate to foreign powers that this war is to stop the spread of slavery.

"*Fourth.* Instead of loyal men leaving Texas, as they are now doing, for California and elsewhere, they will remain, and in a few years will fill Texas with a European immigration, which will demonstrate, as the Germans of Texas are now doing, that cotton can now be raised without slaves, though hired negroes may also be used.

"*Fifth.* Galveston is but six hundred miles from Lawrence and St. Joseph, and a railroad will run through Texas and Arkansas to those places, and the question of conflict of systems of labor and political power will be settled forever, leaving the question of slavery in the cotton States for philosophical treatment, unless it becomes necessary to settle it under the war power before the present war is ended.

"These points are urged, not in the interests of abolitionists, but by leading commercial men and capitalists, as fairly coming under the necessities and rules of war. Martial law proclaimed, events will no doubt educate the people and the next Congress to a wise solution of all questions which may afterwards arise in connection with slaves and slavery in an exceptional State or dependency like Texas.

"By such seizure and treatment of Texas as is briefly indicated above it is urged that we shall have at the end of the war material guarantees that will prevent any such compromise or settlement as to make a renewal of the struggle for seceding or another rebellion possible."

When General Banks's expedition to the South started its destination was unknown, but thought to be Texas, and General Hamilton with a large retinue of followers accompanied it. When they found it was to stop at New Orleans, they were very much disappointed and grew quite wrathy. General Banks's opinion of them is not very flattering, and shows that he was irritated by their importunities and disgusted with their unblushing effrontery. In a communication to Secretary Stanton, dated January 7, 1863, he says:—

"I desire to call your attention to the position of General Hamilton, not for the purpose of troubling you with responsibilities connected therewith, which I am willing to assume myself, but to protect my administration from infamous calumniations propagated by men on his staff. My intercourse with the general has been pleasant. He is not a bad man, but lacks decision and force of character. I have treated him with profound respect up to the line of my duty. I did not, however, proclaim to him nor to those associated with him my destination. They ascertained that for the first time when we were in New Orleans. . . . His impatience and the violence of those about him led me sooner to send a detachment of troops to Galveston than I should otherwise have done, and is immediately the cause of the small loss the army has sustained there. This was, however, upon consultation with Admiral Farragut and General Butler and the fullest confidence that our troops would be safe under the protection of the fleet.

"General Hamilton is surrounded by men who are here for the basest mercenary purposes. Disappointed in their objects, they have been unsparing in their denunciations of the government, and especially of myself. They came on board the government transport *Illinois* without my knowledge and against my orders, and, as General Hamilton has said to me, have influence over him in consequence of pecuniary advances made to him while in the North. I desire it to be understood by the government that any representations made by them to the government or the people will be at least only a partial statement of the truth, if they be not entirely false. The strongest government in the world would break down under such a system of plunder as they desire to organize. If the whole State were for the Union, it would turn against the government if the purposes of such men were tolerated.

"I know the difficulties of my situation, which are very numerous and very great, and intend to do my duty faithfully while here, a duty from which I would, in the failing condition of my health, most gladly be relieved; but I cannot suffer the indecency, falsehood, and corruption of these men to go without check. You need not be surprised, therefore, if they are ordered to leave the department."

Halleck to Banks, January 8, 1863, says he is directed by the Secretary of War to reply that General Hamilton's commission as governor of Texas will be revoked.

While there was a profound sentiment of opposition to the Southern cause in many localities, no definite expression was given to it. It was almost as much as a man's life was worth to publicly declare such sentiments, and as a general rule those who entertained them wisely refrained from giving expression to them; but the enforcement of the Confederate States conscript law was the occasion of strong resistance in some instances to State and Confederate authority. Many Union men sought to escape service in the Confederate army by flight into Mexico, and others went thither for the purpose of making their way into the Union lines at New Orleans and other points with the intention of enlisting in that army. Often squads of such men were intercepted by Confederate soldiers and arrested, and in many instances were forced into the army, but they usually deserted the first opportunity which offered of making their escape. In the summer of 1862 a company of about seventy Unionists started from Travis County to make their way to Mexico to join the Union army, and Lieutenant C. D. McRae, of the Second Regiment of Mounted Riflemen, who was on a scout with ninety-four men, struck their trail on the south fork of the Guadalupe River. He pursued them four days, and at daylight on August 11 overtook them on the Nueces River, about twenty miles from Fort Clark. He attacked them with great vigor in their camp, killed thirty-two of them, captured

eighty-three head of horses, thirty-three guns, thirteen revolvers, and all their camp equipage and enough provisions for one hundred men for ten days; and the survivors of the band sought safety in the adjacent cedar-brakes. Lieutenant McRae had two men killed and eighteen wounded. The party of Unionists were composed of sixty-three Germans, one Mexican, and five Americans, and all except the Americans are said to have fought with great fury and desperation; these fled at the first fire. They were commanded by a German by the name of Fritz Tegener, who lived in the city of Austin.

In the counties of Austin, Fayette, and Colorado there was much opposition manifested among the Germans to the enforcement of the conscript law; but this does not seem to have been prompted by any devoted attachment to the American Union, but to have been a decided indisposition to serve in the Confederate or any other army. They were mostly small farmers, and they were decidedly opposed to leaving their families and farms for any considerable length of time; and their views and sentiments are expressed in a communication to William G. Webb, Brigadier-General, Second Brigade Texas State Troops, signed by several German citizens of Fayette County, dated January 4, 1863, as follows:—

"At a public meeting held by the citizens in Beigel Settlement, Fayette County, Texas, on January 4, 1863, the following declaration was adopted as an expression of the sentiments of said meeting:—

"The measures taken by the government to protect this State against invasion are so far-reaching and serious in their consequences that they fill our minds with dread and apprehension.

"The past has already taught us how regardlessly the government and the county authorities have treated the families of those who have taken the field. We have been told that they would be cared for, and what, up to this time, has been done? They were furnished with small sums of paper money, which is almost worthless, and which has been refused by men for whose sake this war and its calamities were originated.

"Last year we made tolerably good crops; the prospect for the next is not very encouraging, and we cannot look forward with indifference upon starvation, which we apprehend for our wives and children. Although it has been said that we will not be needed for more than three months, the time for planting will then be over and our children may go begging, for the small pay which we are to receive for our services is insufficient to purchase bread for our families. We and our families are almost destitute of clothing, and have no means for getting enough to protect us, even imperfectly, against the cold, from which cause sickness and epidemics result, as has been experienced in the army, where more men have fallen victims of disease than by the sword of the enemy.

"Last autumn we applied to procure cloth from the penitentiary, but up to this time we have not been able to obtain any, whereas negro-holders, whom we could name, can get such things and fetch them home. For these reasons we sympathize with all the unfortunate who have to provide for their own maintenance, and hope that our authorities will look upon us as men and not as chattels. With what spirit and what courage can we so fight, and that, moreover, for principles so far removed from us?

"Besides the duty of defending one's country, there is a higher and more sacred one,—the duty of maintaining the families. What benefit is there in preserving the country while the families and inhabitants of the same, nay, even in the army, are bound to perish in misery and starvation?

"In view of the foregoing, we take the liberty hereby jointly to declare that unless the army, and we, obtain a guarantee that our families will be protected, not only against misery and starvation, but also against vexations from itinerant bands, we shall not be able to answer the call, and the consequences must be attributed to those who caused them.

"Furthermore, we decline taking the army oath (as prescribed) to the Confederate States, as we know of no law which compels Texas troops, who are designed for this State, to take the same."

In other portions of the State the spirit of disloyalty to the Southern cause took even a bolder turn. In Medina County a committee of German citizens who were loyal to the Confederate States appealed to the military authorities for protection against the aggressiveness of the Unionists. This committee, consisting of Frank Reicherger, Charles de Montel, Thomas P. Wycale, and G. S. Haas, represented that a majority of the citizens of that county were disaffected towards the government of the Confederate States; that most, if not all, of the county officers elected in August, 1863, were of conscript age, known to be disloyal, and in no way qualified for the offices to which they were elected; while their opponents were men of tried loyalty, above the conscript age, and known to be well qualified for the respective offices for which they offered; that the result of the election was that every secession candidate was defeated by a majority of five to one, while men just released from prison, where they had been incarcerated on charges of disloyalty, were triumphantly elected.

They further represented that the sum of thirteen hundred dollars, which had been appropriated by the legislature for the support of families who were dependent on soldiers in the army, was distributed by the Commissioners' Court to the families of deserters and traitors, while the indigent families of soldiers of known loyalty who had been secessionists from the beginning of the war did not receive any part of it. They invoke the protection of the military, inasmuch as the civil authorities cannot and will not protect them; and ask that the local authorities be prevented from further injuring loyal citizens and their families, and from rewarding treason and disloyalty.

The rigid enforcement of the conscript law caused many appeals to the courts to test its validity, but it was held by the Supreme Court not to be unconstitutional, in opinions delivered by Chief Justice Royall T. Wheeler and Associate Justice George F. Moore, but in which Associate Justice James H. Bell dissented.

In 1863, Dr. R. R. Peebles, D. J. Baldwin, and —— Zinke were arrested on the charges of treason and plotting to release the Union prisoners confined at Hempstead, and, on application to the Supreme Court for discharge under the writ of habeas corpus, they were released.

A number of Mexicans, residents of Zapata County, refused to bear allegiance to the Confederacy, and openly declared their intention of supporting no government except the United States, and, rather than take the oath of allegiance to the Confederate States, retired into Mexico. In October, 1862, they made a raid into Texas near Carizo, and drove off a large number of stock, but were intercepted in their raid by Captain Mat Nolan, of the Second Regiment Mounted Rifles, and a number of them killed.

In May, 1864, Captain William B. Pace, commanding the local company of State troops at Lampasas, reported that a short time previously William E. Willis and Gideon Willis came into that country from Mexico, for the purpose, as they stated, of recruiting for the Union army, and were reported to have enlisted a company of about one hundred men. They passed over the country in small parties, threatening the destruction of the property of all secessionists, and for a time caused almost a reign of terror among those peaceful hamlets ; but the appearance of Lieutenant-Colonel Jackson, with several companies of State troops, in the community, had the effect of allaying the apprehensions of the inhabitants and causing the Willises and their comrades to keep quiet.

In Wise and Denton Counties there was a very strong Union sentiment, and many deserters from the Confederate army congregated there in such large numbers that in the early part of the year 1864 grave fears were entertained that an insurrection would occur. For a time there was intense excitement for fear that those citizens who were supporting the Southern cause would be murdered and robbed by a gang of outlaws commanded by a noted character named Fox, associated with the hostile Indians on the frontier. The people appealed to the military authorities for protection, and Colonel James Bourland sent a detachment from his regiment under Lieutenant Hamilton to investigate the state of affairs, and to arrest deserters and conscripts. He found that a large body of men who were defying the authorities were encamped in a thicket some twelve miles southeast from the town of Denton, in Elm Creek bottom, and had been engaged in stealing supplies of every description from the citizens living in the neighborhood, and had "pressed," as they called it, shot-guns and six-shooters, by going into the houses of citizens and taking them without leave, and had taken horses from citizens on the highways.

One William Parnell, a former resident of Denton County, who had gone to the North and joined the Union army at the outbreak of the war, returned in the latter part of the year 1863, and was at the head of this disaffected element, about one hundred and fifty strong, and publicly proclaimed his intention of leading them through to the North as soon as the grass would do to travel on. These men received information of the preparations being made by Colonel Bourland to attack them, and left the country, going in a westerly direction to join another party composed principally of deserters and conscripts who had assembled on the Concho, and thence made their way to New Mexico.

The sentiment of dissatisfaction and disloyalty to the Southern cause seems to have pervaded different commands of the State troops to a considerable extent. One J. M. Luckey, captain of the State troops in Parker County, was arrested and sent to Houston in May, 1864, charged with attempting to incite the soldiers to desert.

CHAPTER II.

THE SERVICE OF TEXAN TROOPS IN THE ARMIES OF THE SOUTHERN CONFEDERACY.

THE number of troops furnished by the State of Texas to the Confederate army is a matter of great surprise when the smallness of the entire population is taken into consideration. By the census of 1860 the State had a population of six hundred and four thousand two hundred and fifteen, which at the usual ratio would give the State a population above the age of twenty-one years of about one hundred and twenty thousand, and to say that seventy-five per cent. of this number were in the army would not be an unreasonable statement. The State furnished forty-five regiments of cavalry, twenty-three regiments of infantry, twelve battalions of cavalry, four battalions of infantry, one regiment of heavy artillery, and thirty batteries of light artillery to the Confederate army, which passed beyond the control of the State authorities; and besides these, the State maintained at its own expense five regiments and four battalions of cavalry and four regiments and one battalion of infantry. The usual allotment of one thousand men to each regiment, five hundred to each battalion, and one hundred to each battery of light artillery, would give a total of eighty-nine thousand five hundred soldiers furnished out of an adult population of one hundred and twenty thousand. It would thus seem that Texas was, indeed, a nation of soldiers.

The following list only includes those organizations which were mustered into the Confederate army. Besides these there were five regiments and four battalions of cavalry and four regiments and one battalion of infantry maintained by the State at its own expense, but as these did service in the State exclusively, and were not engaged in any active campaigns, their history would be a dull detail of dreary camp life, and is therefore omitted.

Besides the troops furnished the Confederate army by Texas, the Union sentiment in the State was so intense that many left their homes and joined the Union army. One full regiment and another partially recruited, with two or three independent companies, are all the regularly organized commands of Texans that were in the Union army; but it is believed that half as many more left the State and joined organized commands from other States. The most conservative estimates place the whole number of Texans who served in the Union army at two thousand.

LIST OF ORGANIZATIONS OF TEXAS TROOPS IN THE CONFEDERATE ARMY.

First Lancers. (See Twenty-first Cavalry Regiment.)

First (Speight's) Infantry Battalion. (Merged into Fifteenth Regiment.)—Lieutenant-colonel, J. W. Speight; major, James E. Harrison.

First Battalion, Sharp-shooters.—Major, James Burnet; Company A, captain, B. D. Martin; Company B, captain, —— Bridges; Company C, captain, Wirt Smith; Company D, captain, J. M. Hurt; Company E, captain, Jesse Kuykendall.

This command was raised in Grayson and adjoining counties early in 1862, saw some hard service, and did some effective fighting in Louisiana, around Baton Rouge, and in Mississippi at Jackson, Raymond, and other places, under General J. E. Johnston.

First Texas Rangers. (See Eighth Texas Cavalry, or Terry's Rangers.)

First Cavalry Regiment, Arizona Brigade.—Colonel, William P. Hardeman; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, Peter Hardeman; major, Michael Looscan; lieutenant-colonel, Edward Riordan; major, Alexander W. Terrell. (See history of Green's brigade.)

First Indian Texas Regiment. (See Twenty-second Texas Cavalry.)

First Regiment Partisan Rangers.—Colonel, Walter P. Lane; lieutenant-colonel, R. P. Crump; major, A. D. Burns.

This regiment took a conspicuous part in repulsing General Banks's Red River expedition in the spring of 1864.

First Cavalry Battalion. (Merged into Thirty-second Cavalry.)—Major; lieutenant-colonel, R. P. Crump.

First Cavalry Battalion, Arizona Brigade. (Also called Fourth Battalion.)—Major; lieutenant-colonel, A. H. Davidson; major, Michael Looscan.

Served in New Mexico, Arizona, and Louisiana.

The First Regiment Heavy Artillery was raised during the summer and fall of 1861 for the purposes of coast defence. Its field officers were: colonel, Joseph J. Cook; lieutenant-colonel, John H. Manley; major, Edward Von Harten.

Colonel Cook being a graduate of the United States Naval Academy at Annapolis, and having served several years in the navy, gave to his regiment the full benefit of his knowledge, skill, and experience, and the command soon rose to the highest degree of proficiency. Several companies of this regiment manned the siege-guns on Galveston Island, and the other companies were stationed at different points along the coast between Sabine Pass and Velasco, where they frequently tried the mettle of their guns on the blockading fleet. A portion of the regiment, commanded by Colonel Cook in person, took a prominent and creditable part in the recapture of the city of Galveston, January 1, 1863, for which they received the highest commendations by General Magruder in general orders.

Company F of this regiment, of which F. H. Odlum was captain, was stationed at Sabine Pass, and on the 8th of September, 1863, during the temporary absence of Captain Odlum, General Franklin, of the Union army, attacked the place with a large fleet, with the intention of landing his corps of fifteen thousand men for the invasion of Texas. The company was at the time commanded by First Lieutenant Dick Dowling, who drove back the invaders, captured two gunboats and three hundred and fifty prisoners, which, having been accomplished with only forty-two men, has passed into history as one of the most wonderful achievements of the Civil War. For the details of this brilliant affair the reader is referred to the account given of it under the head of Military Operations in Texas, in a former chapter.

The regiment served with constancy and unflinching devotion to duty to the end of hostilities, and only surrendered its guns when the great conflict ended.

First Regiment Texas Mounted Riflemen.—Among the first, if not the first, military commission issued by Jefferson Davis as President of the Confederate States was one issued by him to Ben McCulloch, a distinguished citizen of Texas, authorizing him to raise and command a regiment of mounted riflemen for twelve months' enlistment for the protection of the Texas frontier. This commission was transmitted to Ben McCulloch by Mr. Davis without consultation and with authority, if he did not accept it, to transfer it to whoever he might select, with the assurance that his selection would meet the approval of the War Department. As Henry E. McCulloch had, by the authority of the secession convention, just captured the United States military stores at Camp Colorado, Fort Chadbourne, Camp Cooper, and Fort Belknap, had taken possession of these posts in the name of the State of Texas, and had volunteers then stationed at these places defending the frontier of Texas, Ben McCulloch transferred this commission to him, with the request that he accept it and raise and command the regiment. This he did, at once authorizing each of the following-named gentlemen to raise a company for the regiment, viz.: William G. Tobin, of Bexar County; Governeur H. Nelson, of Bexar County; William A. Pitts, of Travis County; Travis H. Ashby, of Gonzales County; Green Davidson, of Bell County; Thomas C. Frost, of Comanche County; James B. Barry, of Bosque County; Milton M. Boggess, of Rusk County; Sam Richardson, of Harrison County; James H. Fry, of Burleson County. Messrs. Tobin, Nelson, Fry, Pitts, Boggess, and Richardson were instructed to report at San Antonio with their respective companies by the 15th of April, while Messrs. Frost, Davidson, and Barry were ordered to report at Camp Colorado, Fort Chadbourne, and Camp Cooper, where they were already on duty by authority of the secession convention. All of these gentlemen raised and organized their companies and reported promptly except Mr. Richardson, who failed, and a company raised in Lamar County, commanded by Captain Milton Webb, was accepted in his stead. The regiment being thus organized, Colonel McCulloch not having been furnished any money to equip and maintain it, and being the first and only military officer in Texas at that time, proceeded at once to organize the Military Department of Texas, with Major Macklin chief commissary, Major Joseph F. Minter chief quartermaster and ordnance officer, and Captain W. T. Meckling assistant adjutant-general, with head-quarters at San Antonio. He also appointed Captain Wash. L. Hill, of Travis County, quartermaster of this regiment; Major John R. King, of Wilson County, commissary; William O. Yeager, of Guadalupe County, adjutant; and Dr. Henry P. Howard, of Bexar County, surgeon and temporary medical purveyor of the post of San Antonio. Colonel McCulloch then prevailed upon Governor Edward Clark and the military commission, composed of Hon. Samuel A. Maverick, Dr. Philip

GENERAL HENRY E. MCCULLOCH.

N. Luckett, and Hon. Thomas J. Devine, who had been appointed by the convention to receive the military stores at San Antonio when captured by Colonel Ben McCulloch, to turn them over to him as the only representative of the Confederate States in Texas. This gave him the means not only to equip and maintain his own regiment, but also such other Confederate troops as might be enrolled and organized in the State. These proceedings were duly reported to and approved by the War Department of the Confederate States, and Colonel Earl Van Dorn was sent to relieve Colonel McCulloch of the command of the Department of Texas. As soon as the companies were mustered in, Colonel McCulloch ordered an election for field officers of the regiment, and, although he had been appointed colonel and was then acting under the appointment, he was unwilling to command volunteers without their consent, so he submitted his name to them for their approval. Although he had some opposition, he was elected colonel of the regiment by a handsome majority, and Captain Thomas C. Frost was elected lieutenant-colonel and Edward Burleson major. Before the term of service expired Major Burleson resigned, and Captain James B. Barry was elected major. The regiment occupied all the old United States posts on the northwestern frontier, and other strategical points from the mouth of the Big Wichita on Red River to Fort McKavitt. The services rendered by this regiment during its organization were of inestimable value in protecting the settlers on the frontier against Indian raids, and with unflinching gallantry they held back the horde of ruthless savages who sought to take advantage of the absence of so many men in the army to plunder the settlements and murder or carry into barbarous captivity the helpless women and children. Many were the fierce encounters with these savage tribes of which no record was kept, and for long years many traditions prevailed on the border of the daring courage of many men of this regiment in such conflicts. Among them may be mentioned the running fight on Pease River between a detachment of this regiment under Major Barry and a party of Indians, in which many of the latter were killed. Another bloody affair was the attack by fifteen men of Company A, under Sergeant W. Barrett, upon a camp of Lipan Indians, October 15, 1861, near Fort Inge, in which ten Indians were killed and several wounded, with a loss on the part of the Texans of three killed and one wounded. Upon the expiration of its term of service six companies of the regiment disbanded and joined other regiments in different fields of action, and the other four were organized into a battalion, of which Dr. Joseph Taylor was elected major, and it was called the Eighth Texas Cavalry Battalion. Robert A. Myers afterwards became major of this battalion, and it, with William O. Yager's battalion of six companies, was merged into Colonel Buchel's regiment, which took the name of the First Texas Cavalry Regiment, made vacant by the expiration of the First Regiment of Mounted Rifles. At the expiration of the term of service of this regiment it was succeeded in frontier defence by the "Frontier Regiment," commanded successively by Colonels James M. Norris and W. E. McCord, which was subsequently designated as the Fourth Texas Cavalry Regiment.

First Texas Cavalry Regiment (Buchel's).—This regiment was organized in 1862 by the consolidation of Taylor's Eighth Battalion and Yager's Third Battalion. The former was the remnant of McCulloch's First Regiment of Mounted

Rifles, and was formed at the time of the expiration of the enlistment of McCulloch's regiment. The following were the field officers of the First Texas Cavalry at its organization: colonel, Augustus Buchel (promoted from lieutenant-colonel of Third Infantry Regiment); lieutenant-colonel, William O. Yager; major, Robert A. Myers.

Until the spring of 1864 this regiment served in the State entirely, doing garrison and picket duty at different points along the coast. Portions of the regiment engaged in some unimportant skirmishes with the Union troops on Matagorda and other islands at the time of the attempted invasion of the State by General Banks. When the Union army under Major-General Banks started on the celebrated Red River expedition this regiment was among those which marched from Texas to reinforce the Confederate army which was opposing him in Louisiana. It arrived at Mansfield on April 5, 1864, just in time to take a prominent part in that bloody battle, in which its gallant conduct largely contributed to the Confederate victory and won unfading laurels. Its losses in that engagement and in the battle of Pleasant Hill the next day were heavy, including among the killed its brave colonel, whose conspicuous gallantry attracted the attention and favorable notice of the commanding general. Colonel Buchel was a German by birth, and received his military education and training in the Prussian army, and the high degree of efficiency to which he brought his regiment was largely attributable to this cause. Since the close of the war the State of Texas has honored his memory by naming a county for him. The regiment also participated in the subsequent engagements at Pleasant Hill and Yellow Bayou, and maintained the high reputation which it had won at Mansfield and Pleasant Hill.

The Second Texas Infantry.[1]—In the early summer of 1861, Captain John C. Moore, of the regular Confederate army, who was in command of the defences at Galveston, upon the recommendation of General Earl Van Dorn, who was then commanding in Texas, received authority from the Confederate War Department to organize a regiment of infantry for service in the war between the States which was then believed to be impending. As soon as this was known steps were at once taken to raise troops.

During the months of July and August, 1861, several companies of this regiment were mustered into service, and the organization was completed by the enrolment of the others during the first week in September. The completion of the regiment was then reported to the War Department, and it was accepted as the First Texas Infantry Regiment, and the commission then issued to Colonel Moore by President Davis so designated it. But a few days afterwards intelligence was received that the number of the regiment had been changed to the Second; the explanation given being that several independent companies from Texas having reached Virginia had been organized into first a battalion and then a regiment, of which Senator Wigfall was made colonel, and claimed the right to be called the First Texas. This was thought at the time to be the result of political influences at the Confederate capital, but it was acquiesced in, and the name of the Second Texas

[1] By Charles I. Evans.

Infantry accepted, with some feeling of disappointment. Although it was the first infantry regiment organized in the State, and justly entitled to that designation, the determination was universal that it could be of as much service to the Southern cause, and achieve as much fame, under the designation of the Second. At the completion of its organization the regiment was composed of the following companies and officers, viz. :—

Company A was raised in Harris County, and its officers were : captain, Hal G. Runnels ; first lieutenant, Dan Gallagher ; second lieutenant, John Roach ; junior second lieutenant, Joe Smith.

Company B was raised in Harris County, chiefly in the city of Houston, and its officers were : captain, William C. Timmins ; first lieutenant, James W. Mangum ; second lieutenant, James D. McCleary ; junior second lieutenant, Andrew S. Mair.

Company C was raised in Harris County, on Cedar Bayou, and its officers were : captain, Dr. Ashbel Smith ; first lieutenant, J. P. Harrell ; second lieutenant, M. A. Lea ; junior second lieutenant, P. M. Woodall.

Company D was raised in Harris County, and its officers were : captain, E. F. Williams ; first lieutenant, Ed Daly ; second lieutenant, Andrew Gammel ; junior second lieutenant, James E. Foster.

Company E was raised in Robertson and Brazos Counties, and its officers were : captain, Dr. Belvidere Brooks ; first lieutenant, J. H. Feeney ; second lieutenant, George Green ; junior second lieutenant, J. L. Arnett.

Company F was raised in the city of Galveston, was composed almost entirely of Germans, and its officers were : captain, John Mueller ; first lieutenant, Jackson McMahan ; second lieutenant, —— Dittmar ; junior second lieutenant, Ferdinand Halley.

Company G was raised in Burleson County, and its officers were : captain, John W. Hood ; first lieutenant, C. C. McGinnis ; second lieutenant, E. J. Chance; junior second lieutenant, Joseph C. Rowland.

Company H was raised in the western part of Burleson, in what is now Lee County, and its officers were : captain, N. L. McGinnis ; first lieutenant, Thomas S. Douglas ; second lieutenant, Jerome I. McGinnis ; junior second lieutenant, George Harris.

Company I was raised in Gonzales County, and its officers were : captain, G. W. L. Fly ; first lieutenant, W. D. Goff ; second lieutenant, Reuben de Borde ; junior second lieutenant, George Weakley.

Company K was raised in Jackson County, and its officers were : captain, Clark L. Owen ; first lieutenant, Dr. A. B. Dodd ; second lieutenant, Maurice K. Simons ; junior second lieutenant, Joseph M. B. Haynie.

The regimental officers were, by appointment of the War Department, as follows : colonel, John C. Moore ; lieutenant-colonel, William P. Rogers ; major, X. B. de Bray.

Staff.—Adjutant, J. H. Feeney, first lieutenant, Company E ; regimental quartermaster and commissary, J. M. B. Haynie, second lieutenant, Company K ; surgeon, Dr. —— Howard.

A short time after organization, Major de Bray was promoted to be colonel of a cavalry regiment, and Captain Hal G. Runnels, of Company A, was promoted to

be major. The lieutenants of Company A declined promotion without an election of the company, and in truth they preferred another man for captain. They waived their rights, and an election was held, which resulted in the unanimous choice of Sergeant William Christian, of Company B, and they cheerfully acquiesced in it, and rendered to him, as captain, faithful and patriotic obedience.

During the first four months, the regiment was quartered in cotton compresses and warehouses in the city of Galveston, and six hours every day, except Sunday, were spent in the most arduous drilling. Both officers and men worked and studied hard to become as proficient as the drill-master told them they ought to be; but there was much complaint at the strict discipline and hard drilling, and much chafing at the delay which retarded the advance of the regiment to the front, where active service was to be seen. The men were anxious to go forward to the scenes of conflict and participate in the glorious achievements which they confidently believed awaited them; and much fear was expressed that the war would be over, the Yankees whipped, and the independence of the Southern Confederacy established before they could have an opportunity of firing a gun in the glorious cause. But whatever chafing and impatience may have been felt at the time, it was afterwards acknowledged that during this period, by reason of the rigid discipline and hard drilling to which the regiment was subjected, was laid the foundation of its subsequent achievements, among which was the proud distinction of being the best-drilled regiment in the Confederate army.

While stationed at Galveston, Lieutenant M. A. Lea, of Company C, resigned, and Lieutenant P. M. Woodall was promoted to second lieutenant and R. D. Haden to junior second lieutenant.

In December, 1861, the regiment was moved from Galveston to quarters near Houston, called Camp Lubbock, and sometimes Camp Bee. While at this place the venerable and majestic form of General Sam Houston was frequently to be seen moving among the men. He had a kind and encouraging word for every one, and claimed to be a private in Company C, commanded by his friend Dr. Ashbel Smith. To the inquiry if he was not too feeble for the service, he would reply, "I can at least stand on the right of the line and be counted."

At last orders came for the regiment to report to General Van Dorn in Arkansas. The day before its departure the ladies presented the regiment with a beautiful silk battle-flag, which was received with the usual flow of oratory. At the same time General Houston addressed the regiment in a fatherly talk. He said, among other things, that while he had disagreed with the masses of his countrymen as to the policy of secession, he had no doubt as to the legal right of the State to secede; that he believed it would have been the best policy to have remained in the Union and to have fought for our rights under its flag; he portrayed the strength and advantages which the North possessed, the ease with which the Confederacy could be cut in two on the Mississippi River, and suggested a policy of concentration west of that river, which, had it been adopted, might have prolonged the struggle until the recognition of its independence by some of the great European powers would have made the Southern Confederacy a possible success. He did not speak of these things, he said, to discourage; he hoped that they would not prove true; but "to be forewarned was to be forearmed." He further said that he was not ashamed

to have his name linked with that of the regiment; that he saw in the men composing it the material that would reflect credit upon the State and add lustre to any name that might be connected with it; and he knew that he would hear only good reports of it. He gave it his parting blessing in most pathetic terms, and bade it be strong and valiant, remembering that his eyes and prayers should follow it, and he committed his beloved son to its fate.

When marching orders were received, Lieutenant Feeney requested to be relieved from duty as adjutant and allowed to rejoin his company, which was granted, and Lieutenant James W. Mangum, of Company B, was appointed adjutant in his place. Lieutenant J. C. Rowland, of Company G, resigned about this time to enter the cavalry service, and Dr. Dodd, first lieutenant of Company K, resigned, and Second Lieutenant M. K. Simons was promoted to be first lieutenant, J. M. B. Haynie advanced to second lieutenant, and W. H. Kirk was promoted to junior second lieutenant.

On March 12, 1862, the regiment went by rail to Beaumont, on the Neches River, thence by steamboat to Weiss's Bluff, and from there overland to Alexandria, Louisiana. Here the whole regiment embarked on a large river steamboat down Red River to its mouth, and thence up the Mississippi to Helena, Arkansas. At this place orders were received to proceed to Corinth, Mississippi, by way of Memphis, and Corinth was reached on the evening of the 1st of April, 1862, the regiment being about thirteen hundred strong.

On the 3d of April, the line of march was taken towards the little hamlet of Monterey, in Tennessee; many of the men having worn out their shoes on the trip from Texas were barefooted, but no murmur of complaint was heard. The immense columns of moving troops were something new, and were looked upon with wonder and admiration. After the entire day was spent in waiting, camp was pitched not more than two miles from where the regiment had started in the morning.

The next day it reached Monterey, and bivouacked near there that night. The regiment having been assigned to the Third Brigade, commanded by Brigadier-General John K. Jackson, Withers's division, Second Corps, was placed on the right of the Confederate line, next to Chalmers's brigade. The brigade was composed of the Second Texas, Colonel John C. Moore; Nineteenth Alabama, Colonel Joseph Wheeler; Eighteenth Alabama, Colonel Eli S. Shorter; Seventeenth Alabama, Colonel Robert C. Ferris; and Captain I. P. Girardey's battery of light artillery. On Friday night the regiment bivouacked within three or four hundred yards of the enemy's camps, and could distinctly hear their roll-call and occasional conversations. Orders were received not to speak above a whisper, and the night was a silent but anxious one. At daylight the next morning the regiment moved forward in column of companies as a part of the reserve, and it was not long before General Gladden's brigade in its front became hotly engaged, and at this time the regiment had one man killed, Private James Forney, of Company B (the first casualty in the regiment), and two or three wounded before it had ever fired a gun. However, about eight or nine o'clock it moved to the right, and took position on the right of Gladden's and the left of Chalmers's brigades, on Lick Creek. Soon after taking position its skirmish line met the enemy's and drove it back; but in

the first engagement, among other casualties, Captain Brooks, of Company B, was mortally wounded. Following the enemy some two or three hundred yards to the brow of a hill, on the opposite side of a ravine, the regiment opened fire and advanced to the hill, when the clear, ringing tones of Colonel Moore's voice was heard from one end of the regiment to the other in the command, "Double-quick!" The regiment sprang forward as one man up to the brow of the opposite hill and halted. The breathing spell here was a short one, as the enemy a short distance in front were firing on the regiment from their camps and from behind houses with deadly precision. After a momentary survey of the situation the colonel gave the order, "Charge!" which was obeyed with such impetuosity as to drive the enemy from the camp with considerable loss on their side, for the killed and wounded were scattered all through the camp. Thus was kept up the engagement for a mile and a half, charging line after line in the enemy's camps, they sometimes giving way slowly and stubbornly, and at other times breaking and running in a confused rout. At one time during the day the regiment met a Union battery of light artillery going through the woods to take a position, not knowing that the Union line had been driven back and that it was outside of it. The drivers mounted on their horses and the gunners sitting on the ammunition-chests, with the battery fully equipped, were all captured without the firing of a gun. Among other casualties, Captain Ashbel Smith, of Company C, was wounded in the arm. Shortly after this, when the regiment had advanced near half a mile farther, a large body of the enemy was discovered on the left in the interval between the Second Texas and Gladden's brigade, and the regiment fell back about one hundred yards for the purpose of charging them at a left half-wheel But just as the line had been dressed for executing the movement, the cry of "White flag!" was heard, and an officer rode up and said that his brigade wished to surrender to the Texas regiment. Captain John W. Hood, of Company G, was sent to the front to receive the surrender, and soon returned laden with the swords of the officers. This proved to be Prentiss's brigade, about three thousand strong, and they were turned over to a regiment of cavalry, who escorted them to the rear. The regiment advanced over a broken country, and as it approached several camps of the enemy and threw forward lines of battle, they fled as soon as the Texas yell was raised. At last the right of the regiment rested on the south bank of the Tennessee River, between the mouth of Lick Creek and Pittsburg Landing. After proceeding down the river some distance it halted in front of a high hill, which was crowned with artillery, and anxiously awaited the order to charge. Word was passed along the line that it was waiting for other troops to come up and take position on its left and join in the assault.

Several times the forward movement was ordered and then countermanded, but the enforced delay was fatal to the golden opportunity for complete victory, and, darkness now coming on, the regiment was withdrawn a short distance, where it bivouacked for the night. All night long the whooping and yelling of men, the rumbling of wagons and artillery, told all too plainly of the arrival of reinforcements for the enemy. The men had had nothing to eat all day, except such as they were able to snatch from the well-spread tables in the enemy's camps and from the cooking-vessels on the fire as they hurriedly passed through in pursuit of the fleeing

enemy. The rain fell steadily all night, and the men huddled around in groups, seeking what rest they could, with their arms in their hands.

Before daylight next morning it was discovered that the regiment was between the enemy's new line of battle and the Tennessee River, and silently it retraced its steps up the river to the mouth of Lick Creek and then turned off to the south, and in a little while met with some other remnants of the late victorious army in front of the enemy's line. About this time Colonel Moore was placed in command of a temporary brigade, consisting of the Second Texas and the Nineteenth and Twenty-first Alabama Regiments, and Lieutenant-Colonel Rogers took command of the Second Texas. Shortly afterwards the regiment was ordered forward, as was said, to support General Breckinridge, but as it advanced, unsuspecting the enemy in its immediate front, the supposed line of General Breckinridge proved to be the enemy's, and opened a murderous fire upon the front and flanks of the regiment, so that it wavered and fell back beyond the range of the enemy's guns. Lieutenant-Colonel Rogers here reformed the alignment, made a short talk of encouragement, and ordered the regiment to advance. When in sight of the enemy's line, he commanded "Charge!" the men sprang forward with a yell, and the regiment pursued the flying enemy nearly half a mile. Following up the pursuit, the regiment arrived at the edge of a ploughed field, which was quite green with wheat just coming up, and it was here halted and reformed.

In endeavoring to drive the enemy farther the regiment was repulsed. In this contest with General Buell's fresh troops the loss in the regiment amounted to more than the entire loss of the preceding day. The fire of the enemy was at close range, and the number of the killed largely exceeded the wounded. The regiment slowly fell back with saddened hearts, and was among those troops which covered the retreat of the army to Corinth. The loss in the regiment during both days amounted to about thirty-three and one-third per cent. in killed, wounded, and missing, and of those known to be killed about ten per cent.

Thus ended the battle of Shiloh, one of the most memorable engagements in modern warfare. The retreat was a sad and weary march for the exhausted men, along a muddy road, obstructed by mired and broken-down vehicles, under a drenching downpour of rain.

In a few days an order by General Beauregard was read on dress parade commending the regiment for its gallantry in the recent battle, and in commemoration thereof directing that the name "Shiloh" be inscribed upon its battle-flag. After the battle, Lieutenant J. M. B. Haynie asked to be relieved from service as regimental quartermaster, and he returned to the line and took command of his company, K, and Lieutenant Maurice K. Simons, of the same company, was thereupon made regimental quartermaster. Colonel Moore was promoted to brigadier-general a short time after, and some who were among the missing, but whose fate was unknown, were promoted for distinguished gallantry in action, and the offices were reserved for them many months awaiting their return, a daily reminder of their sad fate. But few of the brave fellows ever appeared to claim the reward of their gallantry and patriotism; the others rest in unmarked graves upon the field made famous by their heroic deaths.

Upon the promotion of Colonel Moore to brigadier-general, Lieutenant Maurice

K. Simons, regimental quartermaster, was promoted to brigade quartermaster with the rank of major, and Lieutenant James W. Mangum was promoted to assistant adjutant-general on General Moore's staff with the rank of captain; Lieutenant Arthur K. Leigh, transferred from the artillery, was made adjutant of the regiment, and Lieutenant J. I. McGinnis, of Company H, was assigned to duty as regimental quartermaster. Sergeant G. F. Johnson, of Company G, was promoted to second lieutenant of that company, *vice* J. C. Rowland, resigned. He was among the missing, and was promoted for gallantry in battle.

General John C. Moore.

In Company E an unusual fatality occurred; the captain and first lieutenant were both killed in battle, and both the second lieutenants died of disease within ten days afterwards, and Sergeant William Holder was promoted to captain, *vice* Brooks, killed; Sergeant William Allen was promoted to first lieutenant, *vice* J. H. Feeney, killed; Sergeant John Lloyd was promoted to second lieutenant, *vice* George Green, deceased; and Sergeant —— Gillis was promoted to junior second lieutenant, *vice* J. L. Arnett, deceased.

Camp duties, almost constant picket duty, with an occasional skirmish with the enemy's pickets, and the general routine of a soldier's life passed with recurring regularity for about a month. There was much sickness among the men during this time, and many deaths occurred. About this period, but the exact time cannot be ascertained, the following changes took place in the officers of Company C, viz.: Lieutenant Harrell resigned on account of ill health, and Second Lieutenant P. M. Woodall was promoted to first lieutenant and B. W. Le Compte and O. J. Conklin, the latter from Company B, were made second lieutenants.

Among the killed at the battle of Shiloh was Captain Clark L. Owen, of Company K, who had served in the Mexican War with distinguished gallantry as colonel.

Major Maurice K. Simons, who entered the service as second lieutenant of Captain Owen's company and had been promoted to brigade quartermaster, had also served with distinction in the Mexican War, where he had lost one leg, and prior to his promotion presented the most unusual spectacle of a man on a crutch serving in the infantry. But he was always found where duty called, and all the survivors of the regiment have abundant cause to remember him for his watchful care of their interests after his promotion.

On the evening of the 8th of May the regiment was ordered out, and took a southerly direction from Corinth. All were wondering what was its destination, when the line of march was suddenly changed to the left, in an easterly direction. All night long the march was kept up at a quick step over hills, through bogs and quagmires, the men floundering in the mud. Just before day a halt was called and a little rest taken. While sprawled upon the ground, seeking what repose was possible under the circumstances, the startling sound of cannon was heard not more than half a mile to the left, followed by a brisk rattle of musketry. Instantly every

man was upon his feet and the order to fall in promptly obeyed. The regiment had been resting on a hill near Seven Mile Creek, a short distance south of the road leading from Corinth to Farmington, and at the sound of battle advanced at double-quick up the creek towards the bridge. General Ruggles's division had attacked General Pope's advance-guard lightly, so as to draw him out away from the creek, and the Second Texas was sent around to take the enemy in the rear, burn the bridge, and cut off their retreat. When it reached the road at the bridge but one brigade of the enemy was on the west side of the creek. A part of it was confronting General Patton Anderson's brigade, and two regiments of it were ensconced in a cut in the road, and as the Second Texas charged up the hill across an old field they fled, and made their escape through the bog and water almost waist-deep with several parting volleys sent after them. Among other plunder were captured all the well-filled knapsacks of this brigade, and they contained many treasures of which the Texans stood in great need. About a thousand stand of small-arms and forty or fifty prisoners were also captured. This was the battle of Farmington, which furnished General Pope the occasion for one of his boastful despatches.

On the return to camp picket duty was resumed; the enemy approached nearer and nearer, day after day, and light skirmishes became more frequent, indeed of almost daily occurrence. On the evening of May 29, 1862, the regiment broke camp about dark and took up the line of march to the southward. After marching a few miles at quick-step the march was diversified by the double-quick, and was kept up all night, with alternations from one to the other. A little before daylight next morning a lurid glare lit up the horizon in front, indicating that a mysterious fire was raging. A short time after this discovery terrific explosions were heard, as if a spirited engagement of artillery was in progress. These unknown but exciting phenomena added to the celerity of the march; but before the regiment reached the scene of conflagration the dépôt at Booneville, warehouses, and long trains of cars filled with ordnance and commissary stores were a smouldering mass of ruins. The only persons in sight were several hundred sick Confederate soldiers and a few dead and wounded of both armies. Then it was found out that the regiment had been running a race all night with Sheridan's cavalry, trying to beat him to Booneville to save the stores at that place.

About June 5, 1862, Major Runnels resigned, and the following promotions were made to fill the vacancies caused thereby, and by the promotion of Colonel Moore to be brigadier-general, viz.: Lieutenant-Colonel William P. Rogers to be colonel, *vice* Moore, promoted; Captain Ashbel Smith, of Company C, to be lieutenant-colonel, *vice* Rogers, promoted; Captain W. C. Timmins, of Company B, to be major, *vice* H. G. Runnels, resigned. The promotion of Captain Smith to be lieutenant-colonel over the head of Captain Timmins, who was his senior, may seem to military critics to have been irregular, and to imply a slur upon the military character of the latter; but the truth will reveal one of those cases of unselfish patriotism and deference to his senior in years which was peculiarly characteristic of the noble and chivalric Timmins, and which was manifested on more than one occasion by the officers and men of this regiment. Living witnesses can attest that this was done at the voluntary request of Captain Timmins, made without the

knowledge of Captain Smith; and that when Captain Mangum, his former first lieutenant, and the then assistant adjutant-general, endeavored to persuade him not to waive his seniority, he calmly replied that he had fully determined to do so, because, as he expressed it, "Captain Smith is an old man, who has long been in public life, and has served the republic and State of Texas in various civil capacities, and I am a young man and can afford to wait." And in compliance with his unwavering determination, he was promoted to be major of the regiment and Captain Smith to be lieutenant-colonel.

The regiment arrived at Tupelo about June 5, where it remained in camp with the whole army about three months. During this summer the drilling, which had been neglected for some time, was again resumed. The first colonel was now the brigade commander, and he thought that his old regiment was the best-drilled regiment in the army. The first colonel of the Third Louisiana Infantry, Louis Hebert, had also been made a brigadier-general, and he took issue with General Moore, and claimed the palm for his old regiment. The result was that the two regiments had to march out twice a week to test the matter in competitive drills and reviews before some general officer as umpire. In these contests the Second Texas always carried off the honors; but the Third Louisiana was a splendid regiment, and was well drilled. Shortly after arriving at Tupelo, Lieutenant-Colonel Ashbel Smith returned to Texas to enlist recruits for the decimated ranks of the regiment.

During the time the regiment remained at Tupelo many promotions were made to fill vacancies in the different companies. In Company B, First Lieutenant Jas. D. McCleary was promoted to captain, *vice* W. C. Timmins, promoted to major; Second Lieutenant A. S. Mair was promoted to first lieutenant, and Sergeant Ambrose J. Hurley was promoted to second lieutenant. In Company C, First Lieutenant P. M. Woodall was promoted to be captain, *vice* Captain Ashbel Smith, promoted to be lieutenant-colonel; Second Lieutenant B. W. LeCompte was promoted to first lieutenant and Lieutenant O. J. Conklin to second lieutenant. In Company D, First Lieutenant Ed. Daly was promoted to captain, *vice* E. F. Williams, who had been missing since the battle of Shiloh, and the other lieutenants were advanced to the higher grades, but the promotion from the ranks to fill the junior second lieutenant's place cannot be recalled. In Company G, First Lieutenant C. C. McGinnis was promoted to captain, *vice* John W. Hood, resigned on account of ill health, and Lieutenant E. J. Chance having also resigned for the same reason, Sergeant George W. Parker was promoted to first lieutenant and Thos. N. Persons to second lieutenant. In Company I, Second Lieutenant Reuben de Borde became first lieutenant, *vice* W. D. Goff, promoted to captain of Company K, and Lieutenant Geo. Weakley having died, L. J. Duren was promoted to second lieutenant in his stead. In Company K, W. D. Goff, first lieutenant of Company I, was made captain, *vice* Clark L. Owen, killed at Shiloh; Second Lieutenant J. M. B. Haynie was promoted to first lieutenant, *vice* Maurice K. Simons, promoted to brigade quartermaster; and Sergeant John Tucker, of Company A, was promoted to junior second lieutenant.

About July 25, 1862, General Bragg departed for Tennessee with a portion of the army, and General Sterling Price took command of the balance. On the 12th of September, General Price's army moved to Guntown and Saltillo, and a few days

afterwards advanced in a northeasterly direction towards Iuka. During the day of the 15th the Second Texas was deployed as skirmishers, advancing all day through the woods, and struck the enemy's skirmish line in the afternoon. After exchanging a few shots the enemy retreated, and the Confederates followed cautiously.

As the vicinity of Iuka was approached it was observed that most of the farmhouses, including all improvements, had been burned, but some few had been left uninjured. The explanation given was that the burned houses were the homes of the sympathizers with the Southern cause, and that those unburned were the homes of Unionists. The groups of women and children, thinly clad and barefooted, gathered around the ashes of their beloved homes, was doubtless sufficient to arouse feelings of retaliation, but the Southern soldier scorned to make war upon the weak and helpless. As the Confederate army advanced upon Iuka the enemy retired, leaving a large quantity of stores in possession of the Confederates, which was quite acceptable to that army. The same evening that Iuka was reached the Second Texas was ordered out on skirmish line to the west of the town, just south of the Memphis and Charleston Railroad, to feel the strength of the enemy, with the other regiments of Moore's brigades and Bledsoe's battery in reserve. It soon came in contact with their skirmish line, and a spirited exchange of leaden compliments took place. The field was open and well suited to a practical application of the tactics of the skirmish line, in which the regiment had become most proficient upon the drill-ground, and Colonel Rogers put it through some manœuvres never before attempted in the face of the enemy.

For three days and nights the regiment was kept on the skirmish line, with a constant exchange of shots with the enemy all day, and rallied by fours and sleeping on their arms at night, with haversacks pretty well filled with bread, crackers, cheese, and canned goods taken from the stores left at Iuka by "our friends the enemy."

While the Second Texas, supported by the other regiments of Moore's brigade, was manœuvring in front of the enemy, they were detaining and holding in check General Ord, with about six thousand men, who had been sent by General Grant from Burnsville to form a junction with General Rosecrans, who was marching from Corinth to attack General Price at Iuka; and on the evening of the 19th of September, while General Ord was being thus entertained, a bloody battle was going on, about three miles south of him, between two brigades of General Little's division of Price's army, about three thousand strong, and General Rosecrans's army, numbering over ten thousand.

General Ord did not know anything about it until after the battle was over, and says in his report that he did not hear a gun of the conflict, because a strong wind was blowing in the direction from his position towards the battle-field. In the engagement that day between Little's division and General Rosecrans's army, the latter was driven back about half a mile, with heavy losses on both sides. Very late that evening the Second Texas was called in, formed in line with the brigade, and the whole command double-quicked about three miles south, and took position between the late contending armies to cover the retreat of General Price. Only one little brush took place between Moore's brigade and the enemy under General Rosecrans, which occurred about dark. The enemy did not push forward that

night, and after standing on picket all night, the Second Texas moved into Iuka about daylight next morning. It being impossible to prevent General Rosecrans and General Ord from forming a junction next morning, General Price determined to evacuate Iuka rather than risk an engagement with their superior combined forces; and while the enemy were awaiting a renewal of the battle, General Price moved southward, carrying with him the great quantity of stores which he had captured.

The Second Texas and Bledsoe's battery formed the rear-guard on this retreat, as usual, and the enemy were marching into Iuka before the rear-guard left, but did not fire a gun. About seven or eight miles from Iuka the enemy's cavalry overtook the rear-guard, and the regiment formed across the road behind a dense thicket, with the battery in position in the centre of the line; and when the enemy approached to within about fifty yards, the command was given to fire, and a deadly volley of artillery and musketry was poured into their ranks with telling effect. The enemy's loss must have been very heavy, for the woods were full of riderless horses and staggering men, and the little squadron of Confederate cavalry charged among them and captured some prisoners. This ambuscade taught the enemy a severe lesson, and they gave no further trouble.

The regiment reached Baldwin, Mississippi, on the 22d of September, where it remained only a few days, and then took up the march towards Pocahontas, which place it reached on the 1st day of October, 1862, after having formed a junction with General Van Dorn's army at Ripley. The entire army, composed of Maury's, Hebert's, and Lovell's divisions, then marched northward as if to threaten Bolivar, Tennessee. It bivouacked near Chewalla, a station on the Memphis and Charleston Railroad, ten miles west from Corinth, on the night of the 2d, and at four o'clock next morning the march was resumed, but the direction was suddenly changed eastward. About ten o'clock in the morning the order to advance was received, and the command moved forward cautiously with its skirmish line deployed in front. In a short time the skirmishers of the Second Texas became engaged with those of the enemy, and the other regiments of the brigade coming up during the engagement, one of them mistook the skirmishers of the Second Texas for the enemy, fired upon them and killed Lieutenant J. M. B. Haynie, of Company K, and six privates. During this fight on the skirmish line Major William C. Timmins, commanding the skirmishers of the Second Texas, was severely wounded in the arm, and Captain John Mueller, of Company F, took his place as acting major. The main column coming up, the skirmish line was withdrawn and the engagement soon became general. The enemy, however, retreated at the first charge, and fell back behind the old Confederate breastworks. After a short halt at this place the advance was cautiously resumed, and it was soon discovered that the enemy had made a stand at an intrenched camp which was strongly fortified. A stubborn resistance was here made and some very hard fighting was done, but an impetuous charge with a yell drove the enemy from their position. At a short distance to the rear they made another stand, seemingly with greatly increased numbers, and they returned the attack with a gallant charge upon the Second Texas, but the regiment met it with a furious counter-charge, cutting the enemy's line in two and capturing some three hundred prisoners. At this juncture several Union batteries opened a tremendous fire upon the right of the Texans, from an elevated position on the

south side of the Memphis and Charleston Railroad, and the Second Texas was ordered to capture and silence them. Upon arriving at the foot of the elevation occupied by the batteries, Colonel Rogers discovered that they were supported by a brigade of infantry, and sent to General Moore for reinforcements. After waiting about an hour Johnson's and Dockery's Arkansas regiments of Cabell's brigade arrived, and the three made a most impetuous charge, driving the enemy from their position in confusion and capturing two batteries of light artillery. The Second Texas soon afterwards recrossed the railroad and hastened on to the front, where the brisk fire indicated that the enemy were making another stubborn resistance. For some time the fight went on in the open woods, the enemy yielding stubbornly and contesting every inch of ground, and then returning with a desperate but unsuccessful charge. The foe slowly retired to an intrenched camp situated upon an elevation between two prongs of a creek, where fresh troops had already been massed. Here was presented the most determined stand which the enemy had made during the day, but after some hard fighting, with heavy losses on both sides, the Union troops were finally driven from their camp and intrenchments at the point of the bayonet. The Union officers tried gallantly to stem the tide, Brigadier-Generals Richard J. Oglesby and Pleasant A. Hackleman both being desperately wounded in vain efforts to rally their beaten soldiers. In this camp the Texans found bread, butter, cheese, crackers, and other food in abundance, and while enjoying a short rest partook of the enemy's hospitality during their absence, the first food they had tasted that day. When driven from this position the enemy fled precipitately to the protection of their inner fortifications at Corinth, and the tired Texans followed them slowly. About sunset the exhausted Confederates, with empty cartridge-boxes, halted within about half a mile from Corinth, and very near the inner fortifications. The Second Texas lay on its arms that night, with pickets up to within one hundred yards of the breastworks and forts. The loss of the regiment was very heavy, the hard day's work had been a severe strain upon the physical endurance of those who were still in line, and that night they slept soundly in the face of the enemy, without anything to eat. Among the wounded that day were Lieutenant Arthur K. Leigh, adjutant of the regiment, and J. Halbert Rogers, the youthful son of the colonel.

Before daylight on the morning of October 4 the Confederate artillery opened a vigorous fire upon the enemy's works, which was promptly returned in a spirited manner, and a lively duel continued until some time after daylight. During the early morning there was some sharp fighting on the skirmish line in front of the Second Texas, in which the enemy's skirmishers were driven in and their commander, Colonel Joseph A. Mower, of the Eleventh Missouri Regiment, was severely wounded and taken prisoner, but again fell into the hands of his friends that evening upon the retreat of the Confederate army. This is the same gentleman who was afterwards a distinguished major-general in the Union army, and became celebrated under the sobriquet of "Fighting Joe Mower."

After the enemy's skirmishers had been driven in, preparations were made for the assault upon the works. Directly in front of the Second Texas, a short distance north of the Memphis and Charleston Railroad, was Battery Robinett, with three twenty-pounder siege-guns, and in Battery Williams, just on the south side of the

railroad and about two hundred yards in the rear of Robinett, there were four twenty-four pounders and two eight-inch howitzers. On the eminence between Battery Williams and the railroad were the six guns of Battery F, Second United States Light Artillery, and on the south side of the same fort were two guns of the Second Illinois Light Artillery, all commanding the field to the westward and sweeping the hill-side in front of Robinett. In addition to these, a section of two guns of the Eighth Wisconsin Light Artillery occupied a position just north of and close to Battery Robinett, between it and the Chewalla wagon road, sweeping the top and side of the hill in its immediate front. These were the positions of the Union artillery, seventeen guns in all, bearing on the field in front of the Second Texas, over which it was about to make one of the most daring and desperate assaults of the war. The infantry of the Union army was also placed in the most favorable positions for dealing destruction to the assaulting column. The Forty-seventh Illinois Regiment lay behind the railroad just in front of Battery Williams, about opposite Battery Robinett, fronting north and sweeping the hill-side in front of the latter with their deadly Springfield rifles. The Forty-third Ohio occupied the breastworks to the south of Robinett, extending from the fort to the railroad, and the Sixty-third Ohio occupied the breastworks on the north side, with its left near the fort. The Eleventh Missouri was lying down under the hill, about fifty yards in the rear of Robinett, with its right and left wings extending opposite the Forty-third and Sixty-third Ohio respectively. The Twenty-seventh Ohio occupied the trenches on the right of the Sixty-third, and the Thirty-ninth Ohio was still farther to the north, on the right of the Twenty-seventh, with its right wing facing north, at right angles with the line of its left wing and of the Twenty-seventh and Sixty-third. The order to charge had been expected every moment since daylight, but, owing to the sudden illness of General Louis Hebert, commanding the left division of Price's corps, the initial attack had been delayed until about ten o'clock. During the interval of waiting the men were subjected to the most intense mental strain, as all old soldiers know that the suspense of waiting just on the eve of battle is more trying on the nerves than the actual conflict, in which men seem to lose the power of reflection amid the excitement and dangers of the combat. When the order to advance came the men obeyed it with wonderful alacrity, the different regiments being massed in columns of five lines of two companies each. When they encountered the abatis of trees, which had been felled with their tops outward and the limbs interlocked, with smaller branches carefully interwoven, the formation was considerably broken under the terrific fire of the enemy's artillery, but each man picked his way through, and all advanced as rapidly as possible towards the common point, Battery Robinett. As soon as the abatis was passed, a slight reformation, under a heavy fire, was made, and the lines sprang forward with the regular Texas yell. When they reached the brow of the hill they were staggered by a murderous fire from both artillery and infantry, the infantry regiment behind the railroad cut pouring a deadly enfilading fire into the right flank of the Texans, while the thunder of the artillery was deafening and its awful showers of grape and canister most destructive. Under this galling fire the front lines recoiled upon the rear ones, and the whole seemed to resistlessly float back down the hill upon the flaming crest of a rolling billow of fire. With words of encouragement from the colonel a hurried

but partial realignment was effected, and the order to charge again given. The men responded with redoubled fury, but human strength seemed unable to withstand that besom of destruction. The slaughter was fearful, and the assaulting column was again blown back down the hill. As they yielded the second time to that overpowering force, the fourth man fell with the colors in his hand, and Colonel Rogers seized them and rode back in the midst of his heroic band. Once more forming them in a ragged line, he asked if they were willing to follow him, and they responded with a yell of approval. The order to advance was again given, and the colonel rode straight up the hill directly towards Battery Robinett, with the colors in his hand. He kept his eye on the fort and graduated the pace of his horse to the pace of the men, and the column moved forward at double-quick, with heads bowed to receive the deadly missiles like men do when facing a blowing rain. Their ranks are literally ploughed through and through, but the living close up the open ranks left by their fallen comrades and press forward directly to the fort. Colonel Rogers rides into the ditch around the fort, followed by the head of the column, and as the others come up they scatter around either side of the fort. The right wing of the Second Texas is met by the determined front of the Forty-third Ohio on the south of Robinett and a hand-to-hand conflict ensues; but the onset of the Texans is made with such reckless desperation that the Ohioans are put to flight, leaving one-half of their number upon the ground either killed or wounded, its brave colonel, J. L. Kirby Smith, being among the slain. On the north side of Robinett the left wing of the Second Texas comes in contact with the Sixty-third Ohio, and, after a bloody contest at close quarters, the Ohioans are driven back at the point of the bayonet, leaving fifty-three per cent. of their number upon the ground, and the section of light artillery at that point makes its escape to the rear.

While these bloody conflicts are taking place on both flanks of the fort, Colonel Rogers climbs upon the parapet and plants the flag of his regiment in triumph upon its top; and the men who follow him leap fearlessly down inside the fort, and, with others who have in the mean time crawled through the embrasures, engage the cannoneers in a desperate hand-to-hand conflict. It is short but fierce, and thirteen out of the thirty-six men of the First United States Infantry who man the siege-guns are either slain or wounded, their gallant commander, Lieutenant Robinett, being among the latter. Battery Robinett is captured and silenced, but Battery Williams continues to pour its deadly fire of shot and shell into it upon the struggling mingled mass of friend and foe, while the Forty-seventh Illinois, from its elevated position along the railroad in front of Battery Williams, sweeps the parapets of Robinett with long-range rifles as the Texans clamber up them and do fearful execution. In the mean time a dreadful hand-to-hand conflict has been raging in the very heart of the town. The other regiments of Moore's brigade, led by General Moore in person, passing on the north side of Robinett, have penetrated to the centre of the town; and around the railroad dépôt, the Tishomingo Hotel, and the Corinth House the unequal contest was waged; and even in the yard around General Rosecrans's head-quarters the fighting was furious. But the heavy reserves of troops which the Union commander had massed in the centre and southeast portions of the town met the shattered columns of the Confederates

and literally "plucked the rose, victory, from the thistle, defeat." The ammunition of the Confederates having become exhausted, they were driven back by sheer force of numbers. Some of them mounted horses which were hitched in the streets and in the yard of General Rosecrans's head-quarters and made their escape amid showers of bullets. The victorious reserves of the enemy march upon Robinett from the town, and General David S. Stanley advances from the south with the reformed Forty-third Ohio and two fresh regiments. The little band of Texans in and upon Robinett see that the day is lost. When Colonel Rogers saw the overwhelming forces of the enemy approaching after the repulse of the Confederates in the centre of the town, his first thought was to save the lives of as many of his men as possible, and he waved his handkerchief from the top of the parapet in token of surrender; but the enemy either did not see it, or, seeing it, refused to recognize it, for the firing continued from both advancing columns. He told the men around him that "the enemy refuse to accept our surrender; we will sell our lives as dearly as possible." With the utmost calmness he ordered his men to fall back into the ditch on the outside of the fort, and there gave orders for the retreat; and climbing out of the ditch with the flag in one hand and his pistol in the other, the remnant of the regiment clustering around him as the central figure, the little band retreats backwards as it returns the fire of the advancing enemy. During all this time the Eleventh Missouri Regiment had not fired a shot; but about the time that the retreat was commenced it rose from its cumbent position, rushed upon and around the fort, and poured a murderous fire into the retreating band of Texans, and their intrepid leader falls, pierced with eleven wounds. The flag falls across his body, and those heroic men, recalling the vows made at Houston when that banner was presented to the regiment by the ladies of Texas, seize and bear it away amid the deadly storm. The whole Confederate army is already in retreat; General Villepigue's brigade of Lovell's division marches by the left flank across the Memphis and Charleston Railroad and interposes between the shattered ranks of Maurey's division and the expected pursuit. But no pursuit is made; the conquerors stand aghast at the combination of fortuitous circumstances which has rescued them from annihilation. They are enchanted with their own prowess, seem satisfied with their narrow escape, and make no effort to follow up the victory. The smoke of battle clears away and the ground is seen to be strewn with the dead and wounded. It is a veritable field of carnage. There lay the lifeless forms of the knightly Rogers, the gallant Mueller, and the intrepid Daly, surrounded by a host of heroic companions. Mississippi's soil is sanctified by the blood of Texan heroes. The whole country was electrified by the news of this fearless assault; illustrated papers in the North contained pictures of the heroic sacrifice, and it was characterized by many as the most gallant deed of the war.

The next day General Van Dorn sent Colonel W. S. Barry, of the Thirty-fifth Mississippi, into Corinth under a flag of truce, with a detail to bury the Confederate dead, but General Rosecrans sent him back with the following note: "Major-General Rosecrans's compliments to Major-General Van Dorn, commanding officer Confederate forces, and states that provision has been made for the burial of the dead, and a soldier's tribute will be paid those who fell fighting bravely, as did many in Maurey's division."

In his report of this battle General Sterling Price, whose corps was the only one engaged, says: "The history of this war contains no bloodier page, perhaps, than that which will record this fiercely-contested battle. The strongest expressions fall short of my admiration of the gallant conduct of the officers and men under my command. Words cannot add lustre to the fame they have acquired through deeds of noble daring, which, living through future time, will shed about every man, officer, and soldier, who stood to his arms through this struggle, a halo of glory as imperishable as it is brilliant."

The loss of the Second Texas during these two days' fighting was about fifty per cent. in killed and wounded. This was a very heavy loss, but when the terrible odds are considered, even this is not so much a surprise as that any escaped at all from the fearful *cul-de-sac* on the second day.

But the fire of the Texans must have been more deadly than that of the enemy, for the commanders of the two regiments which they encountered, the Forty-third and Sixty-third Ohio, officially reported that their regiments lost fifty and fifty-three per cent. respectively on the second day alone.

The remnant of the Second Texas, with the balance of General Price's corps, bivouacked the night of this bloody day on the Pocahontas Road, about six miles from Corinth, where the nearest water was accessible. Captain N. L. McGinnis, of Company H, being the senior officer present, took command of the regiment. It is but a matter of justice that history should record the name of private Ben Weed, of Company I, as the man who bore the flag of the regiment from the field when it fell from the nerveless grasp of the gallant Rogers. This young man was but eighteen years old at the time, and died about three weeks afterwards in the Texas hospital at Quitman, Mississippi, of disease contracted in the Corinth campaign.

The next morning the Confederate army began its retreat towards Ripley, Mississippi, but in the afternoon was intercepted at Davis's Bridge, on the Hatchie River, by a large Union force from Bolivar, Tennessee, under Generals Ord and Hurlbut; and Moore's brigade, being in front, first came in contact with the enemy.

When within two or three miles of the bridge the order to double-quick was given, and it was obeyed with wonderful alacrity, considering that the men were so much exhausted by hunger and hard service. The Second Texas was in the rear of the brigade, and as the bridge was reached the front regiments were thrown across and rapidly formed in line of battle. The whole brigade at this time did not have more than three hundred men in ranks, and all of them had not crossed over the bridge when the enemy's batteries opened on it and knocked it to pieces beneath the feet of the men, some of them going down with it. When the Second Texas reached the bridge it was gone, and so it formed a line facing the river. The few men who had crossed the river made a gallant resistance, but were eventually driven back to the bank of the river by the greatly superior forces of the enemy, and swam or waded across.

When the Confederates retreated under the bank of the river, the enemy came charging after them, and the Second Texas received them with such a hot fire that the pursuit was speedily checked, and nearly all of the Confederates succeeded in getting across. The enemy were held in check by the close and accurate fire of the Second Texas for more than an hour, when it was reinforced by Phifer's and Cabell's

brigades, and then they were held at bay by these combined forces until the Confederate army moved down the river about six miles, built a bridge on the dam at Crum's Mill, and crossed over in safety, the Second Texas being the last to cross.

The march was resumed to Ripley, and on to Holly Springs, where the army tarried but a few days, and then moved south twelve miles to Lumpkin's Mill, where it arrived about the 10th day of October, and expected to go into winter quarters. The men had no tents and very little bedding, and they suffered greatly from the extreme cold. The snow-fall was the heaviest ever seen by many of the men; but by digging caves in the hill-sides and the banks of a deep gulch, covering them over with puncheons and dirt and building great fires at the openings, they were moderately comfortable and kept from freezing. While here, the army was sustained entirely by the voluntary contributions of the citizens of the surrounding country; foraging parties were sent out almost daily, and they never returned empty-handed. The good, patriotic people seemed glad to divide what little they had with the soldiers, and the quantities of sweet potatoes, pumpkins, cashaws, cornmeal, some fresh meat and a little bacon, constituted a welcome feast for the hungry men. But such a good thing was not destined to last long, and about the middle of November the army took up the march for Abbeville, still farther south. The weather still continued very cold, and the men constructed winter huts at this place, eight by ten feet in size, by leaning slabs together so as to form a steep roof, and covering them with a layer of grass and cornstalks, and throwing dirt upon this. The inside was then dug out a foot or two in depth, and it made a very acceptable protection against the cold. The men, however, enjoyed the protection of their winter quarters but a short time, as the regiment was soon ordered back across the Tallahatchee River on picket duty. Most of the time the army remained in Abbeville the Second Texas was on this kind of duty, and during the time had two or three lively skirmishes with the enemy. It rained almost incessantly, the river was very high, and the water spread over the bottom from knee- to breast-deep, and every time the men went to or returned from the picket line they had to wade or swim it.

On the 2d day of December the army continued the retreat to Oxford, and, as usual, the Second Texas formed the rear-guard. A detail from the regiment burned the bridge, and when it left Abbeville the branches of the trees were stiff with ice, the ground was frozen hard, and many of the men were barefooted; but their movements were accelerated by occasionally hearing the noise made by the army of the enemy, off to the right, as it moved along the railroad parallel with the road on which the Confederate army was retreating. With the exception of a little brush with the enemy's advance-guard at Water Valley, and another at Coffeeville, there was no fighting on this retreat. The weather was very severe, and the men were badly prepared to withstand it. They had scarcely anything else to eat during the time than sweet potatoes; and if one wants to die with heartburn, just let him try that diet exclusively for a week. The citizens along the route were kind and hospitable, seeming anxious to share their last crust with the soldiers. At one place where the regiment stopped to camp for the night, the old gentleman who lived near by came into camp and said: "Boys, it's awful cold; just pitch into that fence there and burn all the rails you can to-night." It was generally thought that he knew

the boys were going to do that anyhow, and he intended to put a good face on the matter by inviting them. But all doubt of the genuineness of his hospitality was removed when he further told them that there was a house full of sweet potatoes up in the yard, and for them to come up and get all they wanted.

At Oxford and Coffeeville, the latter place particularly, the ladies showed their love for the soldier boys. These noble women lined the streets as the regiment passed through, accompanied by servants bearing great hampers of cakes, chicken, ham, pies, sandwiches, salads, and steaming hot coffee, and the regiment was halted long enough to partake of their bountiful hospitality. No women ever appeared to man so like ministering angels as did those lovely Mississippi ladies to that lot of ragged Texans.

The regiment arrived at Grenada the 5th day of December, and after a much-needed rest resumed the duties of camp life, with plenty of drilling. During the sojourn here President Davis visited the West and reviewed the army. During that review, as the general officers and their staffs passed along the line, following in the wake of the President and his staff, not a word was uttered until General Price approached, and then the cheering and hurrahing for "Old Pap" marked his course along the line of the army.

While at this place Lieutenant-Colonel Ashbel Smith was made colonel, *vice* Rogers, killed at Corinth; Major William C. Timmins was made lieutenant-colonel, *vice* Smith, promoted; Captain N. L. McGinnis, of Company H, was made major, *vice* Timmins, promoted; and Lieutenant B. W. LeCompte, of Company C, was made adjutant. A number of promotions were also made in several of the companies. Among those now remembered were, in Company B, Sergeants Sterling Fisher and Dan C. Smith, who were made second lieutenants; in Company C, Second Lieutenant B. W. LeCompte was made first lieutenant, *vice* R. D. Haden, resigned; the other officers were promoted one grade, and T. S. Reeves was promoted to junior second lieutenant; in Company D, Lieutenant Andrew Gammel was promoted to captain, *vice* Ed Daly, killed at Corinth; in Company F, Lieutenant Jackson McMahan was promoted to captain, *vice* John Mueller, killed at Corinth; in Company H, Lieutenant Thomas S. Douglas was promoted to captain, *vice* N. L. McGinnis, promoted to major; Second Lieutenant J. I. McGinnis was promoted to first lieutenant; Junior Second Lieutenant George Harris was made second lieutenant; and Sergeant W. A. Parks was made junior second lieutenant.

Christmas dinner was eaten here, and two days afterwards the regiment started to Vicksburg by rail. The boys enjoyed that railroad ride immensely, as it was the first they had had since the preceding March, when they rode from Houston to Beaumont.

Upon arriving at Vicksburg, about eleven o'clock in the night of December 29, the regiment immediately took up the march to reinforce General Stephen D. Lee, who was confronting a large army of the enemy under General William T. Sherman at Chickasaw Bluffs, seven miles from Vicksburg. The march was accelerated by tidings that fighting had been going on all day. After floundering along in the rain and mud all night, the advance of the regiment reached the Bluffs about sunup, wet, bedraggled, and completely covered with mud. There were then only about eighty men in line, but these took position in the rifle-pits, and the balance,

singly and in squads, came straggling in during the day, and by noon they were all in their places, about two hundred and fifty or three hundred strong.

When the regiment arrived a heavy cannonading was going on between the Confederate artillery, planted on the hills and bluffs in rear of and overlooking the rifle-pits, and the Union artillery, located down in the swamp across Chickasaw Bayou; and the sloping field in front of the rifle-pits was thickly strewn with the enemy's dead and wounded. The enemy had made five desperate assaults on the works the day before, and, although many reached to within a few feet of the rifle-pits, as was evidenced by their dead bodies still lying there, the assaults were repulsed every time with tremendous slaughter. Two or three days were spent lying in the trenches, drying clothes and practising at long-range sharp-shooting. In his report General Sherman says that this rifle practice cost his army the lives of several valuable officers and men and many wounded. About eleven o'clock on the 2d day of January, 1865, a member of the Second Texas came to the conclusion that the enemy had evacuated their works across the bayou and ventured upon the field on a tour of discovery, and, as he was not fired at, the conclusion immediately became general that there was no enemy in front, and the field soon became covered with Confederate soldiers. In a few minutes General Stephen D. Lee came galloping up, and ordered a company of the Second Texas to deploy as skirmishers and advance upon the enemy's works. This was done in a few minutes, and the bayou and works were soon cleared and not a Union soldier was in sight. The skirmish line continued to advance, and when a large field was reached the whole regiment was deployed as skirmishers and advanced towards the enemy's landing on the Yazoo River. Near the centre of the field a corporal and five or six men, who were guarding a large pile of commissary stores, were captured, together with the stores. As the river was approached a line of battle could be seen drawn up on the bank, and a large number of steamboats crowded with blue uniforms and about a dozen gunboats were in the river. When within about one hundred yards of them the command was given to "Commence firing!" Until then not a shot had been fired by the enemy, but they all looked on at the advancing skirmish line as if it were drilling for their entertainment. After firing a few shots the two regiments of infantry on the bank marched off by the right flank down the river at double-quick, and the decks of the steamboats were cleared with great rapidity. The gunboats began pouring their broadsides across the field, and for better protection against their fire the Texans rushed forward and took position behind the levee just on the river bank and behind a very large and tall pile of bales of hay. From these positions they poured a deadly fire into the immense crowds upon the steamboats as they hurriedly cut their cables and passed out of range around the bend of the river. A great many men were seen to jump into the water from the top decks of the boats, as they could not get down the narrow stairways fast enough. When the steamboats were out of sight the Texans turned their attention to the gunboats, and soon became so proficient at shooting into the port-holes that they could not fire a shot as they passed up and down the river. During the engagement the fire of the guns ignited the hay behind which many of the Texans were standing, and in a short time the whole pile was ablaze, and a shot from a gunboat struck the burning pile and made a fine display of fire-

works, when the men abandoned it and sought refuge under the low bank of the bayou just to the right, which forms a confluence with the river at this point. Finding the exchange of shots with the gunboats to be unprofitable, the regiment was withdrawn; but this experience taught the men an important lesson by which they profited,—that gunboats were not near so dangerous as they appeared to be. The only loss in this engagement was the gallant commander of the regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel William C. Timmins, whose ankle was shattered by a rifle-ball. This necessitated amputation, and he died under the operation. He had scarcely recovered from the wound received at Corinth, and his system was too feeble to withstand the shock. His loss was deeply lamented, for he possessed many of the elements of a fine soldier, and was one of the bravest, most patriotic, and unselfish men who ever died in his country's cause. One man was struck on the breast by a Minié-ball, which knocked him breathless for a short time, but he soon recovered without any other inconvenience than a severe bruise.

The enemy under General Sherman having completely failed to reach Vicksburg by this route abandoned the attempt and retired up the Mississippi River, and succeeded in capturing Arkansas Post a few days afterwards. A short time after this affair the regiment went into camp a short distance from where it occurred, in a beautiful walnut grove, which was called, in honor of its lamented lieutenant-colonel, "Camp Timmins." It remained here about two months, and during the time Colonel Ashbel Smith returned from Texas with about one hundred and fifty recruits. These were apportioned among the companies in proportion to the strength of each one, so as to make them nearly equal in numbers. They proved to be good men, worthy of the State, and fit comrades of the brave men who made the reputation of the gallant Second Texas.

About the same time Major N. L. McGinnis was promoted to lieutenant-colonel, *vice* W. C. Timmins, killed, and Captain G. W. L. Fly, of Company I, was promoted to major, *vice* N. L. McGinnis, promoted. Lieutenant James McFarland, transferred from General Moore's staff, was promoted to captain of Company I, *vice* Fly, promoted to major. In Company G, Sergeant John S. Atchison was promoted to second lieutenant, *vice* Frank Johnson, deceased; and Lieutenant J. R. Henry, having been transferred to the Second Texas from another regiment at his own request, was assigned to duty temporarily with Company G to fill the place of Lieutenant Persons, who was disabled from a wound received at Corinth. In Company K, H. McDonnell and E. A. Mathews were promoted to second lieutenants, *vice* J. M. B. Haynie, killed at Corinth, and John Tucker, transferred to the artillery.

Early in March the regiment was ordered to Fort Pemberton, at the junction of the Yalabusha and Tallahatchee Rivers, forming the Yazoo, which was being defended by General W. W. Loring with a few troops against the attempt of General Washburn to descend to the rear of Vicksburg by those streams. The whole regiment embarked on an immense Mississippi steamboat, and the trip was a pleasing recreation. The waters were very high, the whole face of the country seeming to be inundated, except an occasional high bluff. Upon arrival at Fort Pemberton, the whole Confederate force confronting General Washburn's entire army was Waul's Texas Legion and a few artillerymen. The old steamship *Star*

of the West was sunk in the Tallahatchee opposite the Confederate fortifications, and chain-cables stretched across the channel prevented the enemy's boats from descending the stream. With the exception of one or two cannonades there was very little fighting here. A scouting party of fifteen men under a lieutenant from the Second Texas was kept constantly on watch up the river to observe and report the movements of the enemy to General Loring; and they occasionally let their valor—or more correctly speaking their love of fun—get the better of their discretion and prompt them to fire upon the enemy's boats. This always resulted in a return of the fire in heavy broadsides, which cut wagon roads through the cane-brakes, but fortunately no damage was ever done the Texans. At this place the regiment had its first serious experience in making breastworks. It was thought that the enemy might cross the river above and come in on the rear of the fortifications, and very suddenly one afternoon a good long line of rifle-pits was ordered to be constructed. The regiment worked at it by details the whole night long, and next morning the rifle-pits were there where there had been none the day before. At one time the enemy came down on the opposite side of the river from the Second Texas, and some very fine and spirited rifle practice was indulged, but they went back to their boats in a few days. The water began to recede, and, for fear he might get caught high and dry on the little stream, General Washburn retraced his steps up the Tallahatchee and through the bayou, which in time of high water connects it with the Mississippi River a short distance below Memphis. The Second Texas returned to its old quarters at Camp Timmins about the middle of April and enjoyed a short rest and recreation, which was much needed. About the 1st day of May it was ordered down to Warrenton, on the Mississippi River, twelve miles below Vicksburg, to guard the road leading from Grand Gulf to that place. The regiment remained on this duty about two weeks, during which time rations were very scarce; but the men did not suffer greatly on this account. There was plenty of cornmeal in the country, and bread was plentiful. Occasionally the men could buy some butter, eggs, and poultry, and some of the good people furnished a small quantity of milk; but these were not the staples upon which the men subsisted. It was soon discovered that the ditches in and around the town of Warrenton were full of crawfish and that they were palatable. Then it was an everyday occurrence to see forty or fifty men coming into camp with gunnysacks filled with the fish swung on a rail or pole carried on the shoulders of two men. Nor were they difficult to catch. The water being shallow, they were scooped up by the hands in large quantities. It was generally conceded that they were as fine fish as ever were eaten. Honey was also to be had in abundance. Some enterprising scout discovered one day that almost every cypress-tree in the swamp near by was a bee tree; and the first honey obtained was from the top of a large tree that had been cut off by a shell from a Federal gunboat lying in the river. When it fell to the ground, it was examined and found to contain about a barrel of honey. There was not an axe in camp, and the problem as to how the honey was to be obtained became a puzzling one. At last some prying eyes discovered a cross-cut saw in a gin-house near by and the great problem was solved. That saw went to the swamp at once with a crowd of men and the work began in earnest. Many giant cypress-trees succumbed to its teeth, and the result was the whole camp

soon had an abundant supply of honey as well as crawfish, and it became known as "Camp Crawfish and Honey." This camp was a beautiful location in a magnificent grove of magnolia-trees, which the men were loath to abandon. The broad creamy-white leaves of the flowers are very sensitive to the delicate scratch of a pin, which makes a lasting impression, and many letters were written upon them to loved ones at home and many love sonnets were traced upon them by those who possessed the divine gift of poetry.

One beautiful sun-bright Sabbath morning, while divine services were being held, and in the midst of the chaplain's prayer, the boom of a cannon was plainly heard off to the east, and the prayers of all at once became more ardent and earnest. Even those who had just suspended an interesting game of "old sledge," and hid their cards beneath the corner of a blanket spread upon the ground, became quite serious, and forgot to resume the game when the service was ended. These were the guns at the battle of Baker's Creek or Big Black, and was the signal that the Union army was making the circuit successfully, and was approaching Vicksburg from the rear. After services were concluded the bugle sounded the "rally," the pickets were called in, and the regiment took up the march to Vicksburg, where it arrived that evening, May 17, 1863, and took position in the fort on the Baldwin's Ferry Road and the trenches adjacent to it.

As the regiment passed along the streets, many ladies thronged the sidewalks and encouraged the men by words of praise and declarations of undying devotion to the cause. As they read "Shiloh," "Farmington," "Iuka," and "Corinth" on the regimental flag, many were heard to exclaim: "Thank God, there's the Second Texas! They'll never desert us!" Could anything on earth appeal more strongly to the pride and courage of brave men?

The fort occupied by the regiment was the most advanced position on the whole line, and was on a hill just to the right of the Baldwin's Ferry Road, which circled around the left side of it through a deep cut; and a disconnected rifle-pit led off from its right in the direction of the Jackson Railroad, there being a space of ten or twelve feet between the two which was entirely unprotected. This fort and rifle-pit were occupied by the six right companies of the regiment, under the immediate command of Colonel Ashbel Smith, with Major G. W. L. Fly second in command. The other four companies, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel N. L. McGinnis, occupied a rifle-pit on the opposite side of the road and about a hundred yards in the rear of the fort on the crest of a lower hill. The fortifications were found to be very poorly constructed and afforded very little protection to the men behind them; therefore the first night and the next day were spent in working on them, making the ditches deeper and raising the breastworks. The remaining trees in front were cut away and the houses burned. As the gray dawn of morning began to break on the 18th, the columns of dust rising above the hills to the east foretold the approach of cavalry upon the hill-tops, and the appearance of an occasional battery of light artillery as it "unlimbered to the front" announced that Vicksburg was invested. Soon the puffs of white smoke and the occasional rattle of musketry told that the skirmish lines of the two armies had met. As the enemy's infantry advanced in strong force the Confederate skirmishers fell back, while the shriek of shells passed above their heads. In a short time the artillery

firing on both sides became rapid and fierce, the enemy throwing battery after battery into position with great rapidity, until every hill and mound seemed to be crowned with engines of destruction. At occasional intervals their infantry would appear and approach near enough to attract the fire of the Confederate infantry, but would hastily retire as the well-aimed shots from the trenches warned them of the danger of approaching too near. The Confederate sharp-shooters had a fine opportunity for displaying their marksmanship, and they made good use of it on the enemy's artillerists. Thus wore the day away, and as darkness covered the beleaguering and the beleaguered armies as with a mantle, both seemed eager for the approaching carnage. All night long the rumble of artillery and the noise of moving troops could be heard as the enemy went into position, and when the dawn of another day rose over the hills, it revealed to the eyes of the beleaguered immense siege-guns crowning almost every hill-top, and long lines of bayonets glistening in the morning sun. By sunrise the cannonading had commenced, and as the day advanced it became louder and more terrific. Nor was the enemy's infantry idle, but it kept up a continuous fire from every available position where the men could find shelter, and seemed bent on wasting as much lead as possible. By the middle of the afternoon the whole line was one continuous blaze of fire. The Texans, who had ever been uncovered in the thickest of former battles, could not fully realize that this was a battle. They stood in small groups, here and there, where the best outlook could be had, picking out their targets, and with unerring aim pouring a deadly fire into the enemy's columns and batteries. They were cool and deliberate, and, as ordered, were not disposed to waste any ammunition, but made every shot tell. They were eager for the fray, and seemed anxious to find out how it felt to engage the enemy from behind breastworks, as they had always previously been on the other side of them. A few weak efforts were made to advance upon the works, the enemy boldly presenting themselves to view, as if the mere appearance of such a formidable army flushed with recent victories was sufficient to frighten the Confederates; but upon being met with a determined fire, they soon became satisfied there was no efficacy in the charm of their appearance, and retired behind the hills. As night approached the smoke of battle enshrouded hill and valley in a seeming attempt to shut out each of the contending armies from the view of the other. About sunset, the new guns and fresh troops which had been brought into positions during the day seemed anxious to add their voices to the roaring tumult, and the whole line burst out afresh in maddened fury with smoke and flame and shot and shell, and with a spirit of defiance the Confederate batteries answer back the angry challenge. Tons upon tons of iron and lead are poured into the beleaguered city, and go screaming, howling, and mewing through the air above the fortifications. Houses are fired in the suburbs of the city, and as the lurid flames light up the awful scene, the sun hides his face behind the western horizon, as if to shut out the sight of the dreadful spectacle. As darkness approaches thousands of screaming shells course through space, leaving behind a comet-like train of blaze and spark, crossing and recrossing each other, sometimes meeting in mid-air like angry demons. Great quantities of incendiary shells, charged with Greek fire, are seen to explode in the air and spread out immense sheets of liquid fire in red, blue, and green, and fill the air with a stifling stench. Few eyes could close in sleep

amid such novel and exciting scenes. Pickets were thrown out to guard against surprise, and food, water, and ammunition distributed along the trenches. Repairs were made in the earthworks where needed, so far as it was possible to do so, and five or six smooth-bore muskets, with plenty of buck-and-ball cartridges, were distributed to each man. The next day passed with the same exciting scenes, and with preparations for the expected assault. At peep of day on the morning of the 21st a signal-gun is heard from the hill near General Grant's head-quarters, and in a moment the whole line of the enemy, seven miles long, bursts forth in one continuous blaze with a tremendous roar. The earth quakes and the hills tremble for an hour or more beneath this fearful cannonading. After daylight, the infantry join the infernal chorus, and lend their rattle, and whiz, and whir to the tumult. The day wears away with some terrific artillery duels, and many guns are dismounted; but the Texans have become accustomed to the fearful din, and, grown tired of long-range rifle practice, so they occupy their time with games, and with chopping into slugs the Minié-balls shot into the breastworks by the enemy, with which to load their smooth-bore muskets and return them to their owners. Late in the evening the morning's revelry of cannonading is repeated, and after an hour or two the din dies gradually away and leaves the night's entertainment to the sullen roar of the mortar batteries on the river-side and the random firing of the siege-guns on the land-side.

The morning of the 22d dawned bright and clear, and the Texans having become more accustomed to the unwonted noise, rose refreshed by the night's rest in the trenches, ready and anxious for the fray. An ominous silence pervaded the entire lines. The curling smoke from the enemy's camp-fires could be seen rising far and near in a semicircle around the beleaguered city, and just as the sun rises upon the peaceful scene the signal-gun again wakes the echoes of battle, and the whole line of the enemy, from the Mississippi River on its left to the bluffs of the Yazoo on its right, is instantly one continuous semicircle of fire. The awful roar from this blazing crescent is deafening, and the fearful concussion throws many men off their feet. The din and roar cease as suddenly as it had begun, and an ominous and death-like stillness pervades the scene of the late tumult. Many eyes are peering over the breastworks to see what it means. Every man stands to his place with one gun in his hand and five others leaning against the breastworks within easy reach. Every eye is strained to catch the first view of the advancing hosts, and every muscle is set with the rigidity of steel. Presently the cry is heard from many lips, "There they are! here they come!" and, as if by magic, a line of blue bursts into view over the brow of the hill not over a hundred yards away; and as it advances at double-quick with bayonets at the charge it is quickly followed by four others in double ranks. It was certainly the most superb spectacle that the eye of a soldier ever beheld. Their step is firm, their bearing erect and confident; their faces beam with determination, and their eyes glisten with the anticipation of certain victory.

When the front line was within fifty yards of the trenches, and while the cry of "Vicksburg or hell!" was upon their lips, the order, "Fire!" ran down the trenches, and the report of the answering volley was as of one gun. Without looking to see what execution had been done, each man drops his empty piece and

takes the loaded guns nearest him, one after another, and fires as rapidly as nimble fingers and experienced hands can bring them to bear, and the firing thus continues for several seconds. There is no wavering in the front line of the enemy; it is absolutely mowed down as with a scythe,—utterly annihilated. Those following stagger and reel under the deadly fire of the Texans; then they break and run from the top of the hill, some to the rear and some to the right and left, staggering and falling as they run, seeking protection in the gullies on either side. A shout of victory, a regular Texas yell, makes the welkin ring, and runs around the entire line. One lone man is seen approaching the trenches in a run, with the United States flag in his hand. Not less than a hundred men take deliberate aim at him, some of them firing two or three times, but he does not falter. A shout is heard from many lips, "Don't shoot him! he is too brave! don't kill him; let's capture him alive!" and the firing ceases; the color-bearer mounts the breastworks to the right of the fort, and the colors of the Ninety-ninth Illinois Regiment are taken from his hand by a member of the Second Texas and waved in triumph at the enemy.[1]

The field being now cleared in front of the Texans, it could be seen that the enemy had made a lodgement on the outside of a fort some four hundred yards to the right, just on the Jackson Railroad, and had planted three stands of colors on it. The Texans in the fort and rifle-pits now turned their attention to some very effective rifle practice at the enemy there, and as their advanced position enabled them to cover the entire front and left of the captured fort, it was not long until those of the enemy who were exposed to the unerring aim of the Texans moved around to the right of the fort or tumbled into the ditch below. It was not more than an hour, however, until a portion of Waul's Texas Legion advanced from the reserve and recaptured the fort, with a number of prisoners, throwing ropes over the flag-staffs in regular Texas cow-boy style and drawing in the colors which the enemy had planted on the parapets.

A view of the field in front of the Texans revealed a saddening sight. Upon the ground occupied by the foremost line of the enemy when the first volley of the Texans was fired lay two rows of dead and desperately wounded men, almost as perfect in alignment as in life, but a short while before, as they gallantly advanced to the assault; and from there on back to the brow of the hill the ground was literally covered with dead and disabled men.

Most of this carnage was committed with the rifles and muskets of the Texans, for but one cannon in the fort was used against the assaulting columns, the other having been dismounted before the assault was made. The losses among the Texans were not great, but several were killed and wounded in the fort during the bombardment before the assault, and, as there was no opportunity for removing them, the men in many places stood astride of their dead and wounded comrades in the narrow ditch while defending against the assault.

A small body of the enemy had got into the ditch outside the fort occupied by a portion of the Second Texas, and tried to scale the parapet, but every one of them who attempted it was killed, and they soon abandoned the effort and began to

[1] The name of the color-bearer of the Ninety-ninth Illinois Regiment was Thomas J. Higgins, and Charles I. Evans, corporal of Company G, Second Texas Regiment, took the flag from his hand as he mounted the breastworks.

throw hand-grenades into the fort. The Texans immediately caught on to this game, and threw them back before they exploded, and the explosion usually took place about the time they fell back into the ditch, with very disastrous effect among those who had set them in motion. They very soon became tired of the game, and sadly repented having suggested it, for as soon as they quit it, the Texans, having a quantity of six-pounder shells in the fort, began preparing them with very short fuses and throwing them over in the ditch with deadly effect. The men in the ditch soon called for quarter and begged piteously for their lives, when the slaughter was suspended. But they could not get out of the ditch, so they remained prisoners there until night, when the living, dead, and wounded were all brought out.

Until about five o'clock that evening the rifle practice at long range was spirited, and the artillery kept up a desultory firing. At that hour the enemy were seen to be again massed in large numbers for an assault. The advancing line was soon discovered at different points, but the assault was not general like the one in the morning. It seemed as if the enemy had picked out several different places as weak points, one of which was the fort occupied by the Second Texas, to hurl themselves against these. This time there was only a slight demonstration in front and on the right of the fort occupied by the Texans, but on its left, and on the rifle-pits occupied by the left companies of the regiment, the assault was most persistent and determined. Immediately following the charging lines of infantry, one field-gun of the Chicago Mercantile Battery was run by hand up the ravine to the left of the fort, and, when within about fifty yards of it, commenced a rapid fire at the top of the parapet and into the embrasures. The gun was most skilfully handled, and did the fastest firing ever known. The embrasures had been filled up with cotton-bales, and they were knocked out almost as fast as they could be rolled back. At the same time a perfect shower of Minié-balls was skimming the top of the parapet so closely as to prevent a head from appearing above it; and as they glanced upon the cotton-bales each one picked off a small piece, and the fort was so thickly filled with cotton floating on the air as to obscure the vision for any considerable distance. Quantities of this cotton caught fire, and it required the greatest care to prevent its communicating to the ammunition-chests. The enemy were repulsed in front of the rifle-pits in gallant style and with fearful slaughter, but this seemed to drive the survivors back into the head of the gully, or ravine, on the left of the fort, and from this cover they made their way into the cut in the road which wound around the left side of the fort. Here they soon massed in large numbers and threatened the rear of the fort. At this juncture, just at twilight, a portion of Company B in the rifle-pit on the right of the fort was ordered into the fort to reinforce it, and Colonel Smith called out from the fort for some of the men on the extreme right to run to the deep cut in the road at the rear of the fort. Immediately some fifteen or twenty men from Company G rushed over the hill and around the rear of the fort into the cut, where they poured an unerring fire from behind some cotton-bales into the confused, struggling mass of the enemy. Those of the enemy in front were falling and crying for quarter, while their comrades were pushing them on from the rear in a vain endeavor to get into the rear of the fort. While this handful of Texans in the road, assisted by their comrades in the fort,

were pouring a deadly fire into this body of the enemy, General Martin Green with a brigade marched out between the road and the rifle-pits of the left companies of the Second Texas, attacked the enemy on the right flank with great vigor, and they surrendered just after dark. This closed the carnage of the day.

The guns of the Texans had set fire to the cotton-bales in the road, from behind which they fired on the enemy, and by the time the attack by General Green was made, the whole scene was lighted up by the bright flames of the burning cotton, and the fierce conflict between the enemy and those Missourians and Louisianans under General Green presented a grand and brilliant spectacle from the elevated position of the Texans. The Second Texas lost seventeen men, killed in the fort, and several wounded, but the loss in the trenches was very small.

The night was spent in repairing the works, replenishing ammunition, and cleaning up arms. Another large cannon was brought into the fort to replace the one which had been disabled in the morning, and all necessary preparations were made for a renewal of the conflict the next day. The enemy were remarkably quiet all night; the only reminders of their presence were the regular periodic roar of the mortars on the river-side and the rising shell as seen by the lighted fuse as it poised in the air and exploded with terrific sound above the city, or crashed through houses as it descended to the earth, and the moans of the brave men who lay dying but a few feet away.

No further attempt was made by the enemy to carry the works by assault, but they sat down to a regular siege. Morning and evening there was a regular serenade of all arms. Throughout each day the crack of the sharp-shooter's rifle, with an occasional volley of musketry, was heard; and all night long, as regular as a clock could tick the minutes, the roar of the mortars sent forth their immense shells, and the rising and falling of the twinkling fuses and the terrific explosions in the air lighted up the midnight gloom. But the incidents of each day were exciting and kept the nerves strung to the highest tension, and each to-morrow was looked forward to for a renewal of the assault.

As each day passed, the moans of the enemy's wounded became more distressing, but they also became fewer in numbers, because, from lack of attention, most of the wounded had died. Every day the Texans would call out to the Union soldiers to come and carry off their wounded comrades and give them proper attention, assuring them that they would not be fired on, but they heeded not the appeal. They even offered to go out on the field and bring them inside themselves, if assured that they would not be fired on, but this was refused; and they fired at the Texans whenever they discovered them on the field at night, trying to relieve the sufferings of the Union wounded. Two days after the assault, the groans of a wounded man lying in the head of a ravine about forty yards in front of the trenches became so loud and piteous as he begged for water, that a young man in the Second Texas proposed to go out to him with food and water, if his captain would permit him. With the acquiescence of his captain, he mounted the breastworks with a canteen of water and a haversack in one hand, and waved his handkerchief to the enemy. They cried, "Come on!" and the Texan advanced to the ravine where the wounded man lay, and handed him the food and water, for which he was very grateful. He talked with him a few minutes, and ascertained that he

was a lieutenant in the Eighth Indiana Regiment, and that his thigh was broken. The Texan bade him good-by and started to return to the trenches, when nearly every Union soldier who could see him fired at him. His clothes were cut in many places, but not a shot broke the skin.

As the days passed, the scene in front became more ghastly. The bodies of the dead swelled to an enormous size, and their skins turned black as they lay in the hot sun. The stench from the decomposing bodies became so intolerable as to make many of the living sick. Every day it was expected that General Grant would ask for a truce to bury his dead, but the request never came. At last, on the morning of the 25th, General Pemberton tendered to General Grant a cessation of hostilities long enough for him to bury his dead and carry off the wounded. By this time there were but few of the latter. The offer was accepted, and at six o'clock that evening the enemy's details appeared upon the field for this purpose. The soldiers of the two contending armies mixed freely for about two hours, and those of the Northern army were unstinted in their abuse of "Grant the Butcher," as they termed their commander, for his inhumanity. They were anxious to find out how many men the Confederates had in Vicksburg, and in reply to the oft-repeated question some of the Texans would answer, "A million;" another, "A thousand;" and one man put the question at rest by assuring his interlocutor that he had taken the trouble to count them all that morning, and that there were exactly nineteen hundred and twenty.

The next day the enemy were quiet, but after this the same routine was gone through every day: a bombardment of all arms in the early morning and late in the evening, regular and spirited rifle practice all day, and the roar and whiz and bursting of the mortar-shells all night. The enemy, however, were not idle. They had details at work day and night digging tunnels under the hills so as to reach a point directly underneath the Texans, at which to plant a mine and blow them up. On account of the peculiarity of the soil the strokes of their picks could be plainly heard and their location fixed pretty accurately, and the Texans went to work countermining. By digging the ditch around their fort about fifteen or twenty feet deep they were enabled to capture the enemy's miners when they emerged from their tunnels into the ditch. In this manner the fort was amply protected. One diversion was furnished by the enemy rolling large bundles of green poles, ten or twelve feet long, five feet high, and bound together with wire, up the hill in front of the Texans, with sharp-shooters behind them, to pick off every man who showed his head above the breastworks, and others to dig a trench behind the roller as they pushed it along. These furnished occasion for some spirited and deadly rifle practice; but at night a small body of Texans would make a sortie on the enemy, destroy their rollers, and sometimes capture the men behind them. Another diversion was furnished by the enemy placing a field battery of light artillery about two or three hundred yards from the rifle-pits to the right of the fort, the guns of which, after about an hour's practice, were so trained with small charges of powder as to throw six-pounder shells against the hill-side in front of the breastworks in such a manner as to make them *ricochet* and fall into the trenches. They were immediately picked up by the Texans and thrown back over the breastworks, but it required very rapid handling to get them out before they exploded. After one man had been killed and

one or two wounded, the Texans provided buckets of water at regular intervals, and as soon as a shell struck the ground it was seized by the nearest man and soused into the water. This effectually prevented any more explosions, and no other damage was done by these shells; but it was amusing to see how much the men were entertained with watching and catching these dangerous missiles.

In a short time provisions began to grow scarce. The Texans were put upon half rations, and after a while their rations were reduced to bread made of cornmeal mixed with meal of ground peas. This was varied with bread made of ground rice mixed with wheat flour.

The beef soon gave out, and their only dependence for fresh meat was the tough, stringy flesh of the traditional army mule. Sugar and tobacco were the only things of which they had an abundance, and in these they fairly revelled. There was at no time any absolute suffering for the want of food, but the rations were greatly reduced, and of very inferior quality. It may be that the short rations were better for the health of the men, cramped up in the ditches as they were, with very little exercise. Day after day the bombardment continued, and almost every day some of the Texans were killed or wounded. Every day the rifle practice was spirited, and if a man's head was raised above the breastworks but a second, a dozen or more Minié-balls would come whizzing at it. Many devices were resorted to for drawing the enemy's fire, to find out his exact location, and then to fire on him while his gun was empty. One of these was for a man to place his hat on the end of his ramrod and raise it slowly and cautiously above the works, while several others at various points wide apart would be on the lookout with their guns ready, and pour a terrific and accurate fire into the enemy as soon as their hiding-places were discovered by firing at the hat.

Before the city was invested, a number of the residents left to escape the horrors of the expected siege, but a great many remained. Of these, quite a number left their comfortable homes and moved into caves dug in the hill-sides for greater safety against the shot and shells of the besieging army. Much has been published concerning the trials and hardships of these "cave-dwellers," and it is not likely that they have been exaggerated. Many buildings, public and private, were destroyed, and a number of non-combatants were killed and wounded. The hospitals seem to have been a favorite target for the heavy artillery of the besiegers, and the City Hospital, situated on the outskirts, suffered severely. A number of wounded men and several attendants were killed.

A surgeon, his assistant, and a wounded soldier were all killed one day by the same shell, while the former two were engaged in amputating the latter's limb, and two nurses were wounded at the same time. One night a mortar-shell from the river batteries penetrated the building from roof to basement, and exploded in the ground underneath with such terrific force as to hurl some dozen or more men from their cots to the floor; and many of the wounded were removed by their friends from this hospital into tents in other parts of the city. The courage, devotion, and patriotism displayed by the noble ladies of Vicksburg during the siege have never been surpassed by anything in history. At all hours of the day and night they were constant visitors at the hospitals, serving as volunteer nurses, administering soothing potions, or with their delicate hands washing and dressing the ugly wounds

of the heroes who had stood between them and a desolating foe in defence of a cause for which both were willing to sacrifice their lives and all save sacred honor. They never entered without bringing such delicacies as they could command; and cheering smiles and words of hope and encouragement radiated from their very presence. When they departed, they carried with them many blessings and the devotion of many chivalric hearts. They would walk the streets on their errands of mercy, with shells from the land batteries screaming in every direction and the fearful roar of the mortar-shells overhead, with as much unconcern as if on a shopping expedition. When a man heard the dreadful roar of a mortar-shell overhead, he was sure to look up to see if it was going to descend upon him, and try to dodge it; but a woman was always observed to quietly make her way, without seeming to notice the threatening presence of the dreaded monster.

At last the day for the surrender of the garrison arrived. For forty-seven days and nights these heroic men had been exposed to burning suns, drenching rains, damp fogs, and heavy dews, and during all this period they never had, by day or night, the slightest relief. They were on duty all the time, confined to the narrow limits of a trench, with their limbs cramped and swollen, without exercise, constantly exposed to a murderous fire of shot and shell, while the enemy's unerring sharp-shooters stood ready to pick off every one whose head appeared above the breastworks.

Many had met death with a smile upon their lips, all had cheerfully encountered danger, and without a murmur had been borne privations and hardships well calculated to test their manhood. They had made a heroic defence. They had held the place for seven weeks against an enemy five times their number, who were admirably clothed and fed and abundantly supplied with all the appliances of war.

Whenever the foe attempted an assault, they drove him back discomfited, covering the ground with his killed and wounded. There was no prospect of relief, nothing was to be gained by further resistance, and the Confederate commander wisely concluded to capitulate.

At ten o'clock on the morning of July 4, 1863, the Confederate army marched out of the trenches, stacked arms, then returned to the rear, and bivouacked in the valleys and upon the hill-sides, while detachments of the victorious army marched in. The Confederates remained prisoners here until the 11th, when the ceremony of paroling them was completed and they were permitted to depart. During this time General Grant ordered rations to be issued to them from his own stores, and they were not stinted in the supply.

Nearly all of the regiment made their way back to Texas with their paroles in their pockets; but a few went with the balance of the army into parole camp at Demopolis, Alabama. The regimental flag was not surrendered, but a member of Company B secreted it on his person and carried it out. He gave it for safe-keeping to a lady near Snyder's Bluff, who is said to have buried it. What finally became of it is wrapped in mystery; but some of the men claim that the same old flag was with the regiment after its exchange and reorganization in Texas. If so, it must have been dug up and brought to Texas by some one, but by whom is unknown. In the fall of 1863, after the Vicksburg prisoners had been exchanged, the regiment was reorganized at Houston, and served on the coast in Texas until

the close of the war. The summer of 1864 it was on duty at Galveston, and suffered considerable loss from yellow fever, but it fought no more battles.

At the reorganization of the regiment the following promotions were made in the different companies: In Company B, Lieutenant A. J. Hurley was made captain, *vice* James D. McCleary, resigned; and Lieutenant Dan C. Smith having resigned, Second Lieutenant Sterling Fisher was made first lieutenant, and Samuel W. Allen and James T. Bell were made second lieutenants. In Company G, Second Lieutenant George W. Parker was made first lieutenant, *vice* Thomas N. Persons, who had died of wounds received at Corinth, and Henry Martin was promoted to second lieutenant. In Company H, Sergeant W. A. Knox was promoted to second lieutenant, *vice* J. I. McGinnis, resigned. In Company I, First Lieutenant Reuben de Borde was promoted to captain, *vice* James McFarland, resigned; and Captain de Borde having died of yellow fever in 1864, Lieutenant L. J. Duren was made captain, and John M. Bell, W. C. Billings, and J. D. Harper were made lieutenants, ranking in the order named. In Company K, Second Lieutenant H. McDonnell was promoted to first lieutenant, *vice* Kirk, killed at Vicksburg; Junior Second Lieutenant F. A. Mathews was promoted to second lieutenant, and S. D. Robb was promoted to junior second lieutenant.

In May, 1865, at the close of the war, the Second Texas stacked arms for the last time, gazed with sad hearts upon the furling of the banner of the "Lost Cause," and returned to their homes to resume the peaceful pursuits of life.

The history of this gallant regiment would be incomplete without personal notices of its first two commanders, to whom it was so much indebted for its discipline and proficiency, who participated with it in the trying ordeals through which it passed, and who are entitled to share in the glory and renown which it has achieved. Brigadier-General John C. Moore, the first colonel of the Second Regiment of Texas Infantry, was born in Hawkins County, East Tennessee, in 1824. He worked on his father's farm during the busy seasons and attended one of the neighboring schools during the winter months until he was sixteen years old. At that age he entered Emory and Henry College, Virginia, where he remained for four years. In the year 1845 he received an appointment as cadet at the West Point Military Academy, and graduated in 1849 seventeenth in a class of forty-three members. Upon his graduation he was assigned to duty in the artillery corps of the army, and resigned in 1855, holding the rank of first lieutenant in the Second Regiment of Artillery. In 1856 he entered upon the profession of civil engineering, and ran the locating line of the railroad from Morristown to Cumberland Gap, East Tennessee, on the road which at present crosses the road from Knoxville to Bristol at the former place.

After a year of service in this business, and only receiving about two months' salary, the company becoming bankrupt, he quit the profession in disgust and turned his attention to teaching, to which he has devoted twenty-eight years of his life.

In January, 1861, he resigned a professorship in Shelby College, Kentucky, accepted a captaincy in the service of the State of Louisiana, and was assigned to duty in the artillery at Fort Jackson, below New Orleans. In April, 1861, he was notified of his appointment as a captain in the regular army of the Confederate

States and ordered to proceed at once to Galveston, Texas, and to take such measures for the defence of that city as he might find necessary and as were possible. Here he laid the foundation for those defensive works which were afterwards carried forward by others. While in command at Galveston he received authority from the War Department of the Confederate States to raise a regiment of infantry in Texas for the Confederate army, and the regiment was raised and organized as related in the foregoing history of the Second Texas.

The first engagement in which Colonel Moore participated was the battle of Shiloh, where his conduct was distinguished for coolness and courage. He commanded the regiment during the first day of the battle and was assigned to the command of a temporary brigade the second. The soldierly qualities there displayed by him so attracted the attention of General Jones M. Withers, commanding the division, and of General Braxton Bragg, commanding the corps, that they immediately recommended him for promotion. His promotion to brigadier-general followed soon after the battle, and he commanded a brigade composed of his old regiment and four others, with a battery of light artillery, at the battles of Farmington and Corinth and the siege of Vicksburg. At all of these places he was ever found at the post of duty and of danger, and he handled his brigade with the skill of a thoroughly-trained soldier.

At the assault upon the enemy's inner-works at Corinth, October 4, 1862, he was conspicuous for his gallantry. He led the left wing of his brigade over the intrenchments of the enemy and forced them back into the heart of the town, where a hand-to-hand conflict ensued, until compelled to retire before the overwhelming reserves of the enemy, which had been thrown into the town the previous night.

On the retreat of the Confederate army from Corinth, General Moore commanded the advance-guard, and when intercepted and attacked at Hatchie Bridge by a heavy force of the enemy under Generals Ord and Hurlbut, consisting of twelve regiments of infantry, one of cavalry, and four batteries of artillery, amounting to a force of six thousand, he made such a vigorous defence with his own brigade, which was not exceeding three hundred strong, and one battery of light artillery, as to induce those doughty warriors to believe that they had encountered the whole of Price's and Van Dorn's armies, estimated by them at twelve thousand men, as they say in their reports of the affair. After the fall of Vicksburg he was transferred to another field of service, and commanded a brigade with great skill and sagacity at the battles of Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge.

After the Confederate army fell back to Dalton, Georgia, General Moore was transferred to the ordnance department, and was in charge of the Selma Arsenal when the Federal General Wilson on a cavalry raid captured that city and destroyed the works. Having received notice of the enemy's approach about twelve hours before they reached the city, General Moore loaded two steamboats with ordnance stores and the most valuable machinery from the arsenal and proceeded with them to Mobile. A few days after his arrival at Mobile that city was evacuated by the Confederates, and in attempting to reship and save all the property under his control he tarried a little too long, and was captured before leaving the city.

After the close of the war he returned to Texas, and has since been engaged in teaching in that State.

Colonel William P. Rogers, the second colonel of the Second Texas Infantry, was born in the State of Georgia in the year 1818, the second of seven children. In early boyhood his father removed to North Mississippi and settled in Monroe County, where he was raised. He inherited the military talent from his father, who had served as captain with distinction in the Indian wars under General Andrew Jackson. He was given a good medical education, and before he was twenty-one his father set him up as a full-fledged M.D., with the then usual supply of drugs, books, etc., in Lowndes County. But his career as a doctor was short-lived, for as soon as he reached his majority he showed that he had inherited from his father at least one characteristic for which the latter was conspicuous. He broke loose from the paternal restraint, abandoned the profession which was so distasteful to him, and commenced the study of law. During his youthful struggles in acquiring a legal education he supported himself part of the time by editing a Whig newspaper at Aberdeen. He married in 1840, in his twenty-second year, and his newspaper venture not proving a success, his struggles with poverty for a time were very severe.

On the call for troops to take part in the war between the United States and Mexico, young Rogers enlisted at Columbus, Mississippi, and was elected first lieutenant of the company of which Colonel A. K. McClung, the noted duellist, was captain. On the organization of the regiment at Vicksburg, before departing for Mexico, Jefferson Davis was elected colonel, McClung lieutenant-colonel, and to fill the vacancy occasioned by McClung's promotion young Rogers became captain of Company K, First Regiment Mississippi Rifles.

During the war with Mexico he contributed as much as any other one man to the glory and renown which made this regiment so famous, and at the battles of Monterey and Buena Vista his courage and reckless daring were most conspicuous.

Under the Whig administration of President Taylor, after the close of the war with Mexico, Captain Rogers was appointed United States consul at Vera Cruz, Mexico, where he remained about four years in the discharge of his official duties. He removed to Texas in 1851, settling in Washington County, and made his second start in his chosen profession at the old town of Washington, on the Brazos. His success is well known to the older members of the bar, and is well attested by the number of important cases in the reports of the decisions of the Supreme Court in which his name appears as counsel. In 1859 he removed to Houston, Texas, and continued the practice of law at that place until the Civil War commenced.

In politics he had always been an ardent Whig, and adhered to the fortunes of that party until it went down in defeat, and then he supported the American or "Know-Nothing" party during its short but stormy life. During his residence in Texas he was a zealous supporter and warm personal friend of General Sam Houston, and stumped the State in advocacy of his election in the memorable campaign for governor in 1859.

At the beginning of the agitation he was opposed to secession, principally upon the grounds of policy, but when he saw that the Southern people were determined upon that course, he cast his fortunes with them, and was elected a delegate to the secession convention which assembled in January, 1861. In that body he voted in favor of the secession ordinance and signed it. When it became evident that war

would be the result of the secession of the Southern States, he tendered his services to the Confederate War Department, which were accepted, and he was first assigned to duty in the training and drilling of a battalion of troops near Houston. Upon the organization of the Second Texas Infantry Regiment he was appointed its first lieutenant-colonel, and during much of the time that it was stationed at Galveston and Houston he commanded the regiment, Colonel Moore being on post duty. When the regiment was ordered to the scene of hostilities he was on a sick-bed, but followed soon after its departure, and arrived in time to participate with it in the battle of Shiloh. In this engagement he acquitted himself with credit on the first day as second officer of the regiment, and on the second day, during the temporary absence of Colonel Moore, who had been assigned to the command of a brigade, Lieutenant-Colonel Rogers commanded the regiment, and led it in two of the most desperate charges upon the lines of General Nelson's fresh troops that were made upon that sanguinary field. Soon after the battle of Shiloh he was promoted to the colonelcy of the regiment, *vice* Colonel John C. Moore, promoted to brigadier-general, and he continued to command it in all its arduous services until his heroic death.

During the whole of this period of six months the life of Colonel Rogers is so intimately interwoven with the life and services of the Second Texas Regiment that the history of one is necessarily the history of the other, and much that has been written in detailing the services of the latter need not be repeated here.

During the first day's fighting at the battle of Corinth he handled the regiment with the most consummate skill, and was with it in every position of danger. In the several assaults upon the enemy that day he was in the midst of the foremost, and among the first to enter their intrenched camps. All that day, from about ten o'clock in the morning until near sunset, he was almost constantly under fire, directing the movements of the skirmishers, driving the enemy back as they resisted stubbornly, and assaulting and capturing two intrenched camps. His figure on horseback was so conspicuous that his men constantly expected to see him fall, but he seemed to bear a charmed life; and his noble bearing, encouraging words, and conspicuous gallantry seemed to inspire his men to deeds of the most reckless daring.

Next day, October 4, 1862, was made the ever-memorable assault upon the enemy's inner and strongest fortifications. In that he led his regiment directly to the attack on Battery Robinett, and twice did the heroic band stagger and recoil before the deadly fire of the enemy's siege-guns, light artillery, and infantry, but as often was it rallied by its noble commander and again led to the assault, and at last made a lodgement in the ditch around Battery Robinett. This time Colonel Rogers rode into the ditch with his men following him, and with own hand planted the battle-flag of the Second Texas upon the parapet of the fort. When he saw the overwhelming forces of the enemy approaching, after the repulse of the Confederates in the centre of the town, his first thought was to save the lives of as many of his men as possible, and, with this object in view, he waved his handkerchief from the top of the parapet in token of surrender, but the enemy continued to fire upon him. Then, ordering his men to retire to the ditch outside the fort, he prepared to retreat. With the colors in one hand and his revolver in the other, firing at the

advancing enemy as he slowly retired with the remnant of his regiment around him, he began the retreat. Here he fell, about twenty paces from the fort, pierced by eleven wounds, surrounded by scores of heroic dead. The generous commander of the Union army ordered his body interred with military honors upon the field where he fell, and caused the grave to be enclosed with wooden pickets, and to this day a few of these decaying palings are all there is to mark the sacred spot where Rogers and his Texans put on immortality. His fame is national; his heroic death one of the most brilliant illustrations of American chivalry.

In closing his report of this battle, General Van Dorn says: "I cannot refrain, however, from mentioning here the conspicuous gallantry of a noble Texan, whose deeds at Corinth are the constant theme of both friends and foes. As long as courage, manliness, fortitude, patriotism, and honor exists the name of Rogers will be revered and honored among men. He fell in the front of battle, and died beneath the colors of his regiment in the very centre of the enemy's stronghold. He sleeps, and glory is his sentinel."

The Second Texas Cavalry Regiment.—The convention which passed the ordinance of secession, seeing the great importance of raising troops for the protection of the Texas frontiers against Indian depredations and Mexican banditti, authorized the enlistment of two mounted regiments in the State service to take the places on the frontiers of the United States troops, some of whom had already surrendered and all of whom were expected to soon leave the posts. The first regiment was supplied by authority of the Confederate States War Department, as has already been described in the history of the First Regiment Mounted Riflemen under Colonel Henry E. McCulloch, and the second regiment was authorized by the State government to be raised by Colonel John S. Ford. As soon as it was raised it was mustered into the State service, May 17, 1861, as the Second Regiment Mounted Rifles, for one year. The State government being badly prepared for the equipment and maintenance of troops in the field, and it being the general opinion that the Confederate States ought to protect the Texas frontiers the same as the United States had done prior to the secession of the State, strong influences were brought to bear upon the former to accept this second regiment, as it had authorized the raising of the first; and, finally through the influence of General Ben McCulloch and his brother, Colonel Henry E. McCulloch, the War Department of the Confederate States was induced to do so, and on the 23d of May, 1861, this second regiment was mustered into the Confederate army for one year as the Second Texas Mounted Rifles. Its officers at the organization and at the date of its muster into the Confederate army were as follows: colonel, John S. Ford; lieutenant-colonel, John R. Baylor; major, Edwin Waller. The commanding officers of the companies were as follows: Company A, captain, Peter Hardeman; Company B, captain, Charles L. Pyron; Company C, captain, William Adams; Company D, captain, James Walker; Company E, captain, Isaac C. Stafford; Company F, captain, D. F. Richardson; Company G, captain, John Donaldson; Company H, captain, H. A. Hamner; Company I, captain, John Middleton; Company K, captain, Mat Nolan.

About the 1st of June, 1861, Companies A, B, C, D, E, and H, under command of Major Edwin Waller, left Camp Leon, near San Antonio, *en route* to New

Mexico and Arizona, for the purpose of opening up the route to Southern California, and to watch the movements of Union troops in that country and guard against an invasion from the west. Company C was left at Fort Davis and Company H at Fort Clark; Company F was stationed farther north, on the waters of the Llaño River, to protect the frontier settlers against Indian depredations. The other companies of the regiment were held by Colonel John S. Ford on the lower Rio Grande to protect that section against Mexican marauders and to keep open communication between San Antonio and Matamoras.

Upon the arrival of the battalion under Major Waller near the head of Devil's River, he received intelligence that the government military stores which had been abandoned by the Federal troops at Fort Bliss were in danger of being retaken by the Federals stationed at Fort Fillmore, some fifty miles above there; and to prevent such recapture Major Waller sent a special detail of one hundred men from his command to proceed by forced marches to Fort Bliss. After an arduous march of nearly five hundred miles this detail arrived at Fort Bliss, July 4, 1861, and to their inexpressible delight saw the Confederate flag flying from the flag-staff. It seems that Major McGoffin, a citizen of El Paso and an ardent sympathizer with the Confederate cause, was, single-handed, holding the fort against all-comers.

In a short time the remainder of the battalion arrived, and with it came Lieutenant-Colonel John R. Baylor, who at once took charge of all the abandoned government property in that section. He also strengthened his forces by organizing one or two volunteer companies, and conceived the idea of capturing Fort Fillmore, then garrisoned by about seven hundred regulars under Major Isaac Lynde, of the Seventh Infantry. Accordingly, on the 25th of July, Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor with about two hundred men, after a forced march, arrived near Fort Fillmore just before daylight, with the intention of surprising the sleeping garrison. But a deserter from his command gave information of his presence, and the beating of the long roll announced the readiness of the Union troops to receive the Texans upon hostile terms. For this reason Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor did not deem it prudent to make an attack at that time, and he passed around the post, through the village of San Tomas, and went into camp just above the town of Mesilla. He captured seven of the Union soldiers in San Tomas, and after extracting all the information he could respecting the location and movement of the Federal troops in New Mexico, released them, and permitted them to return to Fort Fillmore. At the same place the Texans also captured a quantity of clothing, shoes, blankets, arms, and ammunition.

On the evening of July 25 the Union troops marched out towards Mesilla for the purpose of attacking the Confederates; and Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor posted his men in positions behind the adobe houses and corrals, and awaited the attack. About five o'clock their cavalry was discovered approaching the town by the main road, and soon afterwards the infantry came in sight, bringing with them three howitzers. They formed within about three hundred yards, and a flag was sent in to demand the "unconditional and immediate surrender of the Texas forces." To this demand Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor returned answer that "we will fight first, and surrender afterwards;" and as soon as it was received the enemy opened on the Texans with the howitzers. After four or five rounds of shell, grape, and canister,

the cavalry formed and advanced up within two hundred and fifty yards, preparatory to making a charge. A few well-directed shots from the Texans, killing four and wounding seven of the enemy, threw them into confusion, and they retreated hastily, running over the infantry. In a few minutes the enemy retreated towards the fort, and Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor, fearing it was a feint to draw him into a trap, did not pursue. All the next day the enemy seemed to be intrenching and preparing for a vigorous defence; and Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor sent a courier to Fort Bliss for reinforcements with artillery.

However, it seems that Major Lynde did not intend to attempt to hold the fort, for early on the morning of the 27th the columns of dust seen rising on the Fort Stanton Road, in the direction of the Organ Mountains, some fifteen miles distant, told of his retreat. The fort had been fired, but this the Texans soon extinguished, and started in pursuit, with the intention of intercepting the enemy at San Augustine Pass. Upon reaching the foot of the mountain, the rear of the retreating column, composed chiefly of famished stragglers endeavoring to reach water, was overtaken. These were disarmed, given water, and carried on to the spring. Upon arrival there, twenty-four soldiers were found fast asleep upon the ground around a spring, so great was their exhaustion. As soon as the men and horses were refreshed, the pursuit was resumed, and in a short time the enemy's cavalry were found drawn up to cover the retreat of the infantry through the pass. These were charged by Captain Peter Hardeman with his company, and the enemy retreated in haste, leaving all their wagons, artillery, and supplies in the hands of the Texans. Upon gaining the summit of the pass, a plain view of the road leading to the San Augustine springs was presented, showing the fainting, famished soldiers straggling along. These threw down their arms as the Texans passed and begged for water. At the main springs the enemy were drawn up in line, but did not further resist, and surrendered unconditionally, after having burned the regimental colors.

The Union forces consisted of eight companies of infantry, four of cavalry, and four pieces of artillery, the whole numbering about seven hundred men. The Texans at the surrender were less than two hundred men.

The prisoners were marched to Las Cruces in a few days and all paroled. The news of the fall of Fort Fillmore and the capture of Major Lynde's command created consternation among the Union troops at Fort Stanton, and that post was abandoned after the destruction of a considerable portion of the supplies and government property; and all would have been destroyed but for a rain-storm, which extinguished the fires.

On receipt of the news of the evacuation of Fort Stanton, Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor sent Company D, under Captain James Walker, to that post for the purpose of taking possession of and preserving the government property. Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor then took a strong position near the village of Picacho, to intercept Captain I. N. Moore, of the Second United States Dragoons, who, it was learned, was *en route* to reinforce Fort Fillmore with two hundred and fifty men; but before reaching that point Captain Moore received intelligence of the fall of the fort and capture of its garrison, and immediately burned up his transportation and supplies and made his escape to Fort Craig.

While at the village of Picacho the Confederates were joined by General Albert

Sidney Johnston, who had resigned his commission in the United States army and was on his way from California to tender his services to the Confederate States government. Numerous frays with the hostile Indians and small detachments of Union troops occupied the attention of those companies of the regiment under Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor during the fall, in all of which the Texans displayed the gallantry which usually characterized them. Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor, in pursuance of instructions from the Confederate States War Department, having assumed the functions of governor of the Territory of Arizona, most of the operations of this regiment in the field were under the immediate command of Major Edwin Waller.

In August, 1861, Lieutenant Mays, of Company C, which had been left at Fort Davis, in command of fourteen men of that company, went in pursuit of a party of Indians who were making a raid through the country; and coming upon a large village of Apaches, attacked it with intrepidity, and in the desperate fight which ensued all the Texans were killed, only one Mexican escaping, who returned to the fort with the sad intelligence.

In December, 1861, Brigadier-General H. H. Sibley arrived in New Mexico with reinforcements, took command of the Department of New Mexico and Arizona, and with a brigade of Texans drove the Union forces from the Territories after several bloody engagements, the principal of which were at Val Verde and Glorietta; but the country being almost entirely destitute of supplies, the disadvantages of attempting to hold the country became so apparent that those Territories were evacuated by the Confederates, and they fell back to San Antonio, Texas. When the Second Texas Cavalry returned to San Antonio its twelve months' enlistment had expired some three months before, but the regiment remained together in its original organization.

In the fall of 1862 all the original companies except F, which had joined another regiment, rendezvoused at San Antonio, and reorganized by re-enlisting "for three years or during the war." Captain William G. Tobin raised a company which took the place of Company F in the original organization, and the following field officers were elected, to wit: colonel, Captain Charles L. Pyron; lieutenant-colonel, Captain James Walker; major, Captain John Donaldson. John A. Wallace was appointed adjutant; W. M. Milby, quartermaster; Dr. G. H. Doran, surgeon; and Rev. W. J. Joice, chaplain. The captains of the different companies upon the reorganization were as follows: Company A, John T. Aycock; Company B, D. M. Poor; Company C, James Read; Company D, George L. Patrick; Company E, William Edwards; Company F, William G. Tobin; Company G, Cole McRea; Company H, James Roark; Company I, W. A. Spencer; Company K, Mat Nolan.

The entire regiment was then furloughed for sixty days, and the men revisited their homes, and upon their return, well mounted and tolerably well equipped, the regiment marched to Houston. This regiment was one of those selected by General Magruder for the recapture of Galveston City, and in that brilliant achievement six companies supported the battery of heavy artillery at Fort Point, and the other four were in the attack on the Forty-second Massachusetts Regiment on Kuhn's wharf. A short time afterwards two hundred picked men from this regiment were chosen for the attack on the blockading squadron off Sabine Pass, and participated in that

brilliant affair, January 21, 1863, under Major O. M. Watkins and Captain Charles Fowler, which resulted in the capture of the *Morning Light* and *Velocity*, two of the enemy's vessels, thirty miles from shore. The regiment remained in Galveston until about May 1, 1863, when it was ordered to Louisiana. It marched on foot from Niblett's Bluff to Washington, it having been dismounted since the battle of Galveston, where it was attached to Major's brigade of cavalry. By forced marches the brigade eluded the Federals and reached the Mississippi River opposite Port Hudson while that place was being besieged by General Banks. The object of the movement seems to have been to attempt to devise some means for the relief of the garrison, but after a consultation with General Frank Gardiner, the commander, by General Major, who crossed the Mississippi River by night in a skiff for that purpose, it was determined that nothing could be done with the inadequate forces at command.

The brigade then proceeded down the Mississippi River, and one day the mounted regiments captured a large number of horses, ponies, and mules, and the Second Texas Cavalry Regiment was remounted on them. Mounted upon these, without bridles or saddles, the regiment presented a motley cavalcade next morning when the march was resumed. The brigade cut the Morgan Railroad between New Orleans and Berwick's Bay, and on June 23 the Second Texas Cavalry attacked a large force of Federal troops at La Fourche Crossing, supposed to number about three thousand. Colonel Pyron led the regiment in an impetuous charge against the enemy in sight and drove them back; but just as victory seemed to be within his grasp a large reinforcement of the enemy rolled in on the cars, attacked the Texans in flank, and drove them back with a loss of one hundred and thirty-six men, killed, wounded, and missing. Colonel Pyron was wounded three times, having his horse killed under him; and Lieutenant-Colonel Walker was shot down and severely wounded inside the enemy's breastworks and captured, but in a little while made his escape in the darkness, and returned to his command. Next morning, under a flag of truce, the dead were removed from the field and buried in a Catholic cemetery at Thibodeauxville. Twenty-nine brave men were laid in one long trench, with no winding-sheets save a few well-worn army blankets. The chaplain being busily engaged at the hospital ministering to the wounded, in his absence a Catholic priest performed the burial service.

The brigade then pushed on towards Brashear City, tearing up the railroad as they went, but did not arrive at that place until after its capture by General Tom Green. However, the attack of General Major on the railroad and tearing it up cut off the garrison from New Orleans, prevented reinforcements from reaching them, and thus materially aided in the capture.

The Second Texas Cavalry was again dismounted, its captured animals turned over to a newly-recruited creole regiment, and then it was placed in a brigade commanded by Brigadier-General J. W. Speight. This act of injustice so incensed the men that many of them became very much discouraged. This brigade moved to Vermilionville, and all of the men who could obtain certificates of sickness or disability did so, and returned to Texas on furloughs. The regiment soon became so decimated from this cause that its efficiency was almost destroyed. Those of the regiment who had been furloughed reported in a few months to Colonel Pyron

at San Antonio, a number of recruits joined, and the remnant of the regiment that had been left in Louisiana were ordered to Texas, and until the end of the struggle it did duty within the State at Galveston and other points.

Second Cavalry Battalion, Arizona Brigade. (Merged into Second Cavalry Regiment.)—Lieutenant-colonel, George W. Baylor.

Second Cavalry Regiment, Arizona Brigade.—Colonel, George W. Baylor; lieutenant-colonel, John W. Mullen; major, Sherod Hunter.

This regiment was in the Arizona campaign under General Sibley, and did some very effective service in Louisiana the latter part of the war.

Second Lancers. (See Twenty-fourth Cavalry Regiment.)

Second Texas Partisan Rangers.—Colonel, B. Warren Stone; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, Isham Chisum; lieutenant-colonel, Crill Miller; major, James G. Vance.

This regiment performed meritorious service in New Mexico and Arizona, and was also an active participant in repulsing General Banks's Red River campaign in the spring of 1864.

Second Infantry Battalion.—Major, —— Martin.

Third Artillery Battalion.—Major; lieutenant-colonel, Joseph J. Cook; major, Augustin S. Labuzan.

This battalion was consolidated with the First Regiment Heavy Artillery.

Third Lancers. (See Twenty-fifth Cavalry Regiment.)

Third Infantry Battalion.—Major, J. E. Kirby.

This command was organized, in 1861, for six months' service, and was stationed at Virginia Point. After the expiration of its term of enlistment in 1862, its members nearly all re-enlisted in Waul's Legion, and served in that command till the end of the war.

Third Cavalry Battalion, Arizona Brigade. (Merged into Third Regiment.)—Lieutenant-colonel, George T. Madison.

Third Cavalry Regiment, Arizona Brigade.—Colonel, Joseph Phillips; lieutenant-colonel, George T. Madison; major, Alonzo Ridley.

This command was in the ill-fated Arizona campaign, and in the Louisiana campaign the latter part of the war.

The Third Texas Infantry Regiment.—This regiment was mustered into the Confederate States army in the fall of 1861 by special order of the War Department authorizing Colonel Earl Van Dorn, then commanding the Confederate forces in Texas, to accept six regiments of infantry enrolled in Texas. Its first officers were: colonel, Philip N. Luckett; lieutenant-colonel, Augustus Buchel; major, Edward F. Gray.

Shortly after the organization of the regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Buchel was commissioned colonel of the First Texas Cavalry Regiment, and Major Gray was promoted to lieutenant-colonel, and Captain John H. Kampman was promoted to major, and these continued to be the field officers to the end of the war. Its services were confined to the limits of the State, principally doing guard duty at Galveston and other points on the coast, and there is no obtainable information of its having participated in a single engagement. It was composed of a fine body of men, and in the early days of its organization was well drilled and in a fine state of

discipline; but, as is usually the case with troops not in active service, discipline was relaxed and its *morale* deteriorated to a very great extent.

Third Texas Cavalry Regiment.—This regiment was organized and mustered into the Confederate army at Dallas, June 13, 1861, with the following field officers: colonel, Elkanah Greer; lieutenant-colonel, Walter P. Lane; major, George W. Chilton; adjutant, M. D. Ector.

At various periods during its service, Hinchie P. Mabry became lieutenant-colonel and colonel; Robert H. Cumby, colonel; Giles S. Boggess, major and lieutenant-colonel; J. J. A. Barker, major; and Absalom B. Stone, major.

The ten companies composing the regiment were from the following counties, and were commanded by the following-named officers, viz.: Company A, Harrison County, captain, T. W. Winston; Company B, Rusk County, captain, R. H. Cumby; Company C, Cherokee County, captain, Frank Taylor; Company D, Hunt County, captain, Joseph R. Hall; Company E, Shelby County, captain, D. M. Short; Company F, Kaufman County, captain, Isham Chisum; Company G, Marion County, captain, H. P. Mabry; Company H, Wood County, captain, Jonathan Russell; Company I, Cass County, captain, William Bryan; Company K, Smith County, captain, David Gaines. When organized the regiment was about twelve hundred strong.

This regiment was also called the South Kansas-Texas Regiment. As soon as it was mustered in the regiment departed to join General Ben McCulloch in Missouri, arriving at Fort Smith, Arkansas, about July 20, 1861, and on August 31 is reported in the monthly return of McCulloch's division with an effective strength of ten hundred and twenty-six men. From July 25 to August 11 it took part in the operations on Crane Creek, Missouri, and at the battle of Wilson's Creek, August 10, attracted the attention of both Generals Price and McCulloch for its distinguished gallantry. It is especially mentioned as having captured Totten's Union battery in a desperate charge. Lieutenant-Colonel Walter P. Lane had his horse shot under him in this charge, and he continued to fight on foot until he mounted another whose rider had been killed. Adjutant M. D. Ector and Captains Winston, Cumby, Taylor, Short, Hall, and others are honorably mentioned as having acted with great gallantry during the battle.

In the winter of 1861–62 the regiment was sent to the Indian Territory to reinforce the Confederate troops under Brigadier-General D. H. Cooper, and took a prominent part and distinguished itself in the engagement at Round Mountain, November 19, 1861, Chusto-Talasah, December 9, and Chustenalah, December 26. Of the last-named engagement Colonel James McIntosh says in his report that this regiment, "led by those gallant officers, Colonel Lane and Major Chilton, breasted itself for the highest point of the hill, and rushed over the rugged side with the irresistible force of a tornado and swept everything before it. The brave Major Chilton, while approaching the summit of the hill, received a severe wound in the head, but with unabated vigor continued the fight." The regiment was also in the memorable pursuit of the noted Creek chief Hopoiethleyohola with his band, who had espoused the Union cause in the early part of January, 1862, which was prolific in the most exciting incidents of Indian warfare. It also participated in the battle of Pea Ridge, or Elkhorn Tavern, March 7, 1862, where the

gallant Texan, General Ben McCulloch, was killed, and acquitted itself with great credit.

When the army in Arkansas and Missouri under Generals Van Dorn and Price was ordered to Corinth, Mississippi, to reinforce the army under General Beauregard, soon after the battle of Shiloh, this regiment was dismounted and accompanied it. At the battle of Iuka, Mississippi, September 19, 1862, it maintained its reputation as a fighting regiment.

General Ben McCulloch.

In his official report of that engagement General Sterling Price says: "The brunt of the battle of Iuka fell upon Hebert's brigade, and nobly did it sustain it, and worthily of its accomplished commander and of the brigade, which numbers among its forces the ever-glorious Third Louisiana, the Third Texas (dismounted) Cavalry, and Whitfield's Texas Legion. The Third Louisiana and Third Texas had already fought under my eyes at the Oak Hills and at Elkhorn. No men have ever fought more bravely or more victoriously than they, and he who can say hereafter, 'I belonged to the Third Louisiana or the Third Texas,' need never blush in my presence. In this the hardest-fought fight which I have ever witnessed they well sustained their bloodily-won reputation."

Its commander, Colonel H. P. Mabry, was severely wounded, and never served with the regiment again.

At the battle of Corinth, October 3 and 4, 1862, this regiment was again under fire as a part of the Second (Colbert's) Brigade of Hebert's division. On the first day it steadily drove the stubborn enemy before it and forced them to retire behind their strongholds; and on the second day it bore a conspicuous part in that gallant but unfortunate assault, which, on account of its daring and intrepidity, electrified the whole country. Its position on that day was on the north side of the town, and it charged the enemy's works some distance northeast of the famous Battery Robinett.

In November following, this regiment, with the Sixth, Ninth, and Twenty-seventh Cavalry (dismounted), was remounted, and afterwards served with distinction as a part of Ross's cavalry brigade.

Sixth Texas Cavalry Regiment. (Also called Second Texas Cavalry in the early part of the war.)—This regiment was organized at Dallas, Texas, September 6, 1861, with the following field officers, viz.: colonel, B. Warren Stone; lieutenant-colonel, John S. Griffith; major, L. S. Ross; adjutant, Lieutenant D. R. Gurley.

The ten companies composing the regiment were from the following counties, and were commanded by the following-named officers, viz.: Company A, Kaufman County, captain, A. J. Hardin; Company B, Kaufman County, captain, John S. Griffith; Company C, Dallas County, captain, Fayette Smith; Company D, Grayson County, captain, —— Bowen; Company E, Van Zandt County, captain, Jack

Wharton ; Company F, Dallas County, captain, Robert Guy ; Company G, McLennan County, captain, Peter F. Ross ; Company H, Bell County, captain, Robert M. White ; Company I, Henderson County, captain, H. W. Burgess ; Company K, Collin County, captain, J. W. Throckmorton.

The regiment at its organization was about eleven hundred and fifty strong. Soon after organization this regiment marched to the support of General Ben McCulloch in Missouri, and on December 21, 1861, is reported in his command with an aggregate strength of nine hundred and thirty-five, and eight hundred and sixty-five present for duty. It took an active part in the stirring and bloody scenes there in the latter part of 1861 and the early part of 1862. At the battle of Chustenalah, December 26, 1861, against the Creek Indian chief Hopoiethleyohola it was distinguished for conspicuous gallantry. It also distinguished itself at the battle of Pea Ridge, or Elkhorn Tavern, March 7, capturing a Union battery of light artillery, which was inflicting severe injury on the Confederates, in a brilliant charge. After the battle, and on the retreat of the Confederates, it performed most valuable service as rear-guard to the army, and to its untiring energy, watchfulness, and courage is due the praise of saving the wagon-trains of the Confederate army. Shortly after this affair it was dismounted and went to the east of the Mississippi River to reinforce the Confederate army at Corinth, and while it was with that army acquired new laurels for its intrepid courage at the battle of Corinth, October 3 and 4, 1862, where it was in Phifer's brigade of Maury's division in the assault upon the enemy's works a short distance north of Battery Robinett, where the greatest slaughter of the Confederates took place. In November following the regiment was remounted, and thereafter became a part of Ross's brigade.

COLONEL PETER F. ROSS.

Ninth Texas Cavalry Regiment. (Also called Fourth in the early part of the war.)—This regiment was organized in Grayson County, October 2, 1861, with the following field officers, viz.: colonel, William B. Sims ; lieutenant-colonel, William Quayle ; major, Nathan W. Townes ; adjutant, Dud W. Jones.

The companies composing the regiment were from the following counties, and were commanded by the following-named officers, to wit: Company A, Tarrant County, captain, T. G. Berry ; Company B, Fannin County, captain, Gid Smith ; Company C, Grayson County, captain, J. E McCool ; Company D, Tarrant County, captain, M. J. Brinson ; Company E, Red River County, captain, J. C. Hart ; Company F, Cass County, captain, W. E. Duncan ; Company G, Hopkins County, captain, L. D. King ; Company H, Lamar County, captain, J. D. Wright ; Company I, Titus County, captain, Charles S. Stewart ; Company K, Hopkins County, captain, J. P. Williams. The regiment numbered about ten hundred and fifty men at its organization.

As soon as it was mustered in, it marched to reinforce General Ben McCulloch in Missouri. As it passed through the Indian Territory, it reached the Cherokee Nation about the time of the Indian troubles around Fort Gibson, and rendered valuable service to Colonel Douglas H. Cooper, commanding the Indian Department for the Confederate States. Four companies of the regiment, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel William Quayle, participated in the battle of Round Mountain, November 19, 1861, fought between the regularly constituted authorities of the Creek Nation, who had espoused the cause of the Confederate States, on the one side, and a disaffected element of the Creeks led by the Chief Hopoiethleyohola, who had espoused the side of the Federal government. This regiment, commanded by Colonel Sims, also took an active and gallant part in the battle of Chusto-Talasah, December 9, but does not seem to have been with Colonel James McIntosh when he fought the battle of Chustenalah, December 26, 1861. The report of Colonel Cooper shows that this regiment was at that time with him on the Verdigris River, in his attempt to get in the rear of Hopoiethleyohola, and upon the retreat of that chief pursued him to the Kansas line.

The regiment then marched to reinforce General Van Dorn in Arkansas, and at the battle of Pea Ridge, or Elkhorn Tavern, March 7 and 8, 1862, constituted part of General Ben McCulloch's division, and bore a gallant and conspicuous part in that bloody engagement.

Shortly after this the whole of General Van Dorn's army was ordered across the Mississippi River to reinforce General Beauregard's army at Corinth, and this regiment was dismounted and accompanied it. While in Mississippi, as a part of Phifer's brigade of Maury's division, it participated in the ill-fated attack on Corinth, October 3 and 4, 1862. In this engagement the regiment made the assault upon the enemy's works a short distance north of Battery Robinett, and it was distinguished for its gallantry, its loss being very heavy.

The officers of the Twenty-seventh Ohio Infantry Regiment claim that the colors of the Ninth Texas Cavalry (dismounted) were captured in the assault on Corinth, October 4, 1862, but survivors of that regiment are very positive in their statement that it was not the flag of their regiment which was captured, and bring to bear on the controversy very strong testimony that they did not lose any flag.

In a recent letter, Lieutenant-Colonel Simpson, of the Twenty-seventh Ohio, says, that "whatever regiment bore the flag which was captured by our regiment, it was as gallant a set of boys as any foe could care to meet."

In November, 1862, this regiment was remounted, and thereafter became a part of the cavalry command known as Ross's brigade, and for a further account of it the reader is referred to the history of that command.

Whitfield's Legion. (Afterwards called the Twenty-seventh Regiment Texas Cavalry.)—Early in 1861, Captain John W. Whitfield, of Lavaca County, raised a company of cavalry in that county, and marched post-haste to Missouri to join General Ben McCulloch. Upon his arrival there he was joined by Captain E. R. Hawkins with a company from Hunt County, Captain —— Murphy with a company from Arkansas, Captain J. H. Broocks with a company from San Augustine County, Texas, and Captain B. H. Norsworthy with a company from Jasper County. These five companies were at first organized into a battalion with John W. Whitfield

commanding, with the rank of major. In January, 1862, General Ben McCulloch ordered Captain E. R. Hawkins to return to Texas for the purpose of recruiting for this battalion, in order to raise it to a regiment. He succeeded so well that in a short time he returned with eight full companies, which with the others were organized into Whitfield's First Legion in April, 1862. Captain Murphy's Arkansas company having been transferred to a battalion from that State, left the legion composed of twelve companies with the following-named captains, viz.: J. N. Zachary, from Hunt County; James Ingraham, from San Augustine County; J. T. Whitfield, from Lavaca County; B. H. Norsworthy, from Jasper County; J. West, from Red River; Ed. O. Williams, from Lamar; —— Bivins, who died, and was succeeded by J. W. Boyzer, from Red River; J. M. Cook, from Titus County; Dave Snodgrass, from Arkansas; R. W. Billups, from Hopkins County; O. P. Preston, from Lavaca and Jackson Counties; and Henry M. Barnhart, from Titus and adjoining counties.

Of the legion thus formed John W. Whitfield was colonel, E. R. Hawkins was lieutenant-colonel, and J. H. Broocks was major.

The original battalion participated in the battle of Elkhorn Tavern, in Arkansas; and soon after the organization of the legion it was dismounted and sent with the other troops of General Van Dorn's army to reinforce General Beauregard at Corinth, Mississippi. While in this part of the army this command took part in the battle of Iuka, September 19, 1862, and added new lustre to Texas arms by its courageous conduct. In a desperate charge upon a battery of artillery one hundred and six officers and men were killed and wounded, but the battery was taken, and double that number of the enemy were killed. The legion was also at the battle of Corinth, October 3 and 4, 1862, but did not participate in the bloody assault.

The next day, October 5, the legion, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel E. R. Hawkins, performed valuable and gallant service at Davis's Bridge, on the Hatchie River, in foiling the attack of the enemy upon the retreating Confederate army.

Shortly after this the legion was remounted, its colonel, John W. Whitfield, was promoted to brigadier-general, and with the Third, Sixth, and Ninth Texas Cavalry Regiments was organized into a cavalry brigade under his command. General Whitfield's failing health soon forced his retirement from active service, and Brigadier-General L. S. Ross succeeded to the command, and the further history of the legion will be found in the history of Ross's brigade.

Upon the promotion of Colonel John W. Whitfield to brigadier-general, Lieutenant-Colonel E. R. Hawkins was promoted to colonel, Major Broocks to lieutenant-colonel, and Captain John T. Whitfield was promoted to major.

Ross's Cavalry Brigade.—The command known as Ross's brigade was organized at Granada, Mississippi, in November, 1862. It was composed of the Third Texas Cavalry, Sixth Texas Cavalry, Ninth Texas Cavalry, and Twenty-seventh Texas Cavalry (also called Whitfield's Legion). Each one of these was composed of ten companies, except the Twenty-seventh, which contained twelve. They were enlisted early in the war and had seen hard service prior to the formation of this brigade. They had been dismounted when sent from the Trans-Mississippi Department to Mississippi, and had there served as dismounted cavalry; but in No-

vember, 1862, their horses arrived from Texas, and they realized their long-deferred hope of being remounted and serving as cavalry, for which they had enlisted.

When first organized the brigade was commanded for a time by Colonel J. W. Whitfield, of the Twenty-seventh, and upon his numerous absences on account of ill health it was commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel John S. Griffith, of the Sixth, and for a time by Colonel H. P. Mabry, of the Third. It was placed in the same command with W. H. Jackson's brigade of Tennessee and Mississippi cavalry and McCulloch's brigade of Missouri cavalry, all under the command of General Earl Van Dorn, and known as Van Dorn's cavalry corps. The first expedition of this corps was in December, 1862, when it recaptured Holly Springs from General U. S. Grant, with a large number of prisoners and the destruction of several millions of dollars' worth of stores, munitions, etc., which had been accumulated there for a descent on the rear of Vicksburg. This so discomfited General Grant as to cause him to retreat to Memphis and abandon this route to Vicksburg. Soon afterwards the brigade attacked and destroyed a Federal stockade at Davis's Mill, on the Hatchie River, after a hard fight, pushed on into Tennessee, and made a bold attack on Bolivar. But the enemy having concentrated a strong force at Grand Junction, the Confederates were forced to retire to Central Mississippi. On this raid as many prisoners were captured and paroled as there were Confederates in the corps, a large number of horses and mules were captured and brought off, and an immense quantity of stores destroyed. The Texas brigade bore its full share of the burden in this daring raid, and added new laurels to its already well-earned fame. The winter was spent in Mississippi between Aberdeen and Vicksburg, and on the 8th of February, 1863, the command took up the line of march for Tennessee by the way of Bainbridge Ferry, on the Tennessee River. The weather was intensely cold, with almost constant rain and sleet, the streams all swollen and often frozen over.

General L. S. Ross.

On March 5 they attacked a large force of Federals at Thompson's Station, and after a fierce contest, in which the Confederates were twice repulsed, they at last carried the day after a desperate charge, and captured the entire Federal force of some two thousand three hundred men. In this assault the Texas brigade, led by Colonel J. W. Whitfield, dismounted and charged on foot with six-shooters in hand, which, after discharging, they used as clubs.

They then threatened Nashville, caused serious apprehensions among the Federal commanders, engaged in almost daily skirmishes, some of which resulted in fierce and hotly-contested battles. On April 10 the Texas brigade, in conjunction with Jackson's brigade, made a charge upon the Union garrison at Franklin, but the enemy were too strong and the Confederates were repulsed. On the 7th of May, General Van Dorn was assassinated at Spring Hill by a citizen residing near that place, and the death of the daring commander put an end for a time to the brilliant career of the cavalry corps. On May 19, Brigadier-General W. H. Jack-

son, in command of the division composed of his old brigade and the Texas brigade, with King's Missouri battery, was ordered to join General Joseph E. Johnston in Mississippi. They reached Johnston's army at Canton, Mississippi, June 4, and were at once put to work harassing the rear of General Grant's army, then besieging Vicksburg. Constant skirmishing was the almost daily life of the soldier at this time. On the 4th of July the enemy moved out from Vicksburg towards Jackson in heavy force, driving everything before them. The Texas brigade, under General Whitfield, who had been promoted to brigadier-general, opposed this strong force day and night. Before the enemy reached Jackson, General Whitfield led the brigade around their flank, pressed to the rear, and captured a large pioneer train, with its wagons and cavalry escort, and carried the latter, with the mule teams, into General Johnston's lines.

For the next three months the brigade hovered around the army of the enemy, allowing no small bodies to get far from their stronghold without a fight, and in some instances a capture; many hard skirmishes and some bold dashes were indulged, with plenty of hard fighting. During this time, in October, General Whitfield's health failed, and he was granted leave of absence and returned to Texas. Colonel H. P. Mabry, of the Third Regiment, then took command of the brigade. December 16, 1863, Colonel L. S. Ross, of the Sixth Regiment, having been promoted to brigadier-general, assumed command of the brigade and promised to give the boys something to occupy their minds. On the 22d the brigade moved towards the Mississipi River, but the destination was unknown. It proved to be a trip to the vicinity of Greenville, Mississippi, to put a large quantity of arms and Confederate money across the river for the use of the Trans-Mississippi Department. Several attempts had been made, but so far unsuccessful. The weather was fearful; the rain and cold made the roads almost impassable, and the progress was necessarily slow and tedious. One night a sudden freeze encased the entire train in the mud, and it was impossible to turn a wheel. The brigade was about eight miles in the advance, and the Ninth Regiment was dismounted, returned to the wagons on foot, and each man took two extra guns besides his own and each officer took three and carried them to their horses, and late that evening the guns were safely deposited on the river bank amid a blinding storm of sleet. That night one boatload was carried over, and the whole was accomplished in three days. During the time the boys could not resist the temptation to exchange shots with some gunboats, which resulted in a terrific shelling of the woods.

The latter part of January the brigade returned to the Yazoo, and on the 28th of that month had a sharp engagement with a transport convoyed by a gunboat. Again, on February 3, they engaged in quite a severe battle with a gunboat and a transport near Liverpool, in which a force landed from the transport was driven back to the boat after a hand-to-hand conflict. On the 5th of February the brigade attacked a large number of vessels lying in the Yazoo River at Yazoo City, in which the Eight battery attached to the brigade did some splendid work, driving the fleet from the front of the city. The enemy landed a considerable force a short distance below the city, and the Confederates attacked it and drove it back to the boats after quite a severe engagement. February 8 a large force of Federals moved out of Vicksburg across the State of Mississippi, and the brigade followed and

harassed its rear all the way to Meridian. While in the vicinity of Meridian a battalion of negro troops in Federal uniforms stumbled upon the brigade one day while resting for dinner, and the Confederates pursued them nearly to Yazoo City, killing quite a number of them in a running fight. On the 5th of March the brigade attacked the Union troops stationed at Yazoo City and drove the whole garrison to the gunboats for protection. About three hundred of the enemy were killed and captured, and one piece of artillery fell into the hands of the Texans. During the months of March and April, 1864, the brigade was engaged in scouting and skirmishing with the enemy and in routing a band of bushwhackers in North Alabama. May 14, 1864, the brigade joined General Joseph E. Johnston's army at Rome, Georgia, where it was at once dismounted and sent in front "to feel the enemy." Here a stubborn battle was fought, and the brigade maintained its reputation as hard fighters. During this campaign a series of skirmishes ensued, often merging into hard-fought battles. At New Hope Church the Texas brigade held an army corps of the enemy in check for several hours in a stubborn hand-to-hand fight with its advance columns, one of the most noted instances of pluck and audacity. The latter part of July General McCook attempted with a large force of cavalry to destroy General Johnston's communications with the rear, and the Texas brigade followed him, and after several days' hard fighting captured his command near Newman, Georgia, after killing one hundred and fifty, wounding two hundred and fifty, and capturing twelve hundred prisoners, a battery of artillery, thirteen ambulances, and one thousand head of horses and mules. About the middle of August General Kilpatrick, with a force of five thousand cavalry, made another attempt to accomplish what General McCook had failed to do; and the Texas brigade followed him, hung on his rear and flanks, and assailed him so vigorously that he gave it up and sought the railroad at Lovejoy Station, where he found a large force of Confederate infantry, when he turned back, and after a bold dash he cut his way through with large losses. The Texans turned upon him and drove him back into the Federal lines. The months of September and October were spent in watching the enemy's pickets, looking after their scouting and foraging parties, and keeping close watch of every movement. From the time when the brigade reached Rome to the fall of Atlanta was one hundred and nine days, and the campaign averaged a fight for every day, and many of them were hard-fought battles.

On October 24, 1864, in compliance with orders, the Texas brigade withdrew from its position near Cave Springs, Georgia, crossed the Coosa River at Gadsden the following day, and by rapid marches arrived in front of Decatur, Alabama, the evening of the 29th. It was here halted to observe the movement of the enemy while the Confederate army rested at Tuscumbia.

On the morning of November 8 a strong reconnoitring party of the enemy, consisting of three regiments of infantry and one of cavalry, came out from Decatur on the Courtland Road, and it was promptly met by the Texans, and after a sharp skirmish was driven back with some loss.

On the 21st of November, all things being ready for the advance of the Confederate army into Tennessee, the Texas brigade was ordered forward, following in the rear of Armstrong's brigade. The effective fighting strength of the brigade at that time was as follows: Third Texas Cavalry Regiment, two hundred and

eighteen ; Sixth Texas Cavalry Regiment, two hundred and eighteen ; Ninth Texas Cavalry Regiment, one hundred and ten ; Twenty-seventh Texas Cavalry Regiment (Whitfield's Legion), one hundred and forty ; making a total of six hundred and eighty-six. With this small force they joined the advance into Tennessee, strong in heart and resolved to make up in zeal and courage what was lacking in numbers. The day after crossing Shoal Creek, General Armstrong, still in advance, came up with the Federal cavalry at Lawrenceburg. The fighting was chiefly with artillery, the battery with the Texas brigade participating freely and to good effect. About sunset the enemy withdrew in the direction of Pulaski, and early next morning the Texas brigade was ordered to take the advance and move out on the Pulaski Road. About twelve miles from Lawrenceburg it met the Federal pickets and drove them in. The Third Texas dismounted and, with two squadrons from the Twenty-seventh Texas, moved forward and attacked the enemy, forcing them from several successive positions, and following so closely and vigorously as to compel the precipitate abandonment of their camp with a large quantity of forage.

The next day, within five miles of Pulaski, the brigade changed direction to the left, following the route taken by the enemy on their retreat the evening before, and arrived about noon in sight of the village of Campbellsville. Here they found a large force of the enemy's cavalry, which proved to be Hatch's division, drawn up and ready to resist the advance of the Confederates.

Lieutenant-Colonel J. S. Boggess, in command of the Third Texas, was ordered to dismount his regiment and move it to the front. Young's Columbus, Georgia, battery, attached to Ross's brigade, was hurried up from the rear, placed in position, supported by the Sixth Texas, Colonel Jack Wharton commanding, and commenced shelling the enemy's lines. In the mean while the Ninth and Twenty-seventh Texas were drawn up in column on a field to the right of the road, to be used as circumstances might require. After a very severe shelling by the Georgia battery the enemy showed by their movements a disposition to withdraw, and Brigadier-General Ross, believing this to be a proper moment to press them, ordered the whole brigade forward. The Ninth and Twenty-seventh Texas Regiments, led by their respective commanders, Colonel Dudley W. Jones and Lieutenant-Colonel J. T. Whitfield, rushed forward at a gallop and, passing through the village, fell upon the enemy's moving squadrons with such irresistible force as to scatter them in every direction, pursuing and capturing numbers of prisoners, horses, equipments, small-arms, accoutrements, and four stands of colors. The enemy made no effort to regain the field from which they had been driven by the Texans, but while endeavoring to withdraw their shattered squadrons their rout was made complete by a vigorous attack in flank by General Armstrong's brigade, and about sunset the last of them disappeared, in full flight, towards Lynnville.

The loss of the Texas brigade in this affair was only five men wounded, while they captured eighty-four prisoners and all their horses, equipments, and arms, sixty-five beef cattle, and four stands of colors. Without any further opposition they arrived next day in front of Columbia, and took position on the Chapel Hill Pike.

November 26 was spent in front of the enemy's works, skirmishing freely and keeping up a lively demonstration. Being relieved by the infantry on the morning

of the 27th, the brigade moved over to the Shelbyville Pike, and next morning crossed Duck River at the mill nine miles above Columbia. Here it was directed to the right, on the Shelbyville Road, and when near the Lewisville and Franklin Pike again encountered the Federal cavalry. The Third Texas was sent forward to attack a train of wagons which was moving in the direction of Franklin. The regiment succeeded in reaching the pike, but was there met by a superior force of the enemy and driven back after a spirited engagement. Seeing this, General Ross directed Colonel E. R. Hawkins to hurry up with the Twenty-seventh Regiment to the assistance of the Third, and ordered a charge. It was made in gallant style, and resulted in forcing the enemy from the field in confusion, with the loss of several prisoners and the colors of the Seventh Ohio Cavalry. In the mean while Colonel Jack Wharton with the Sixth Texas charged onto the pike to the right of where the Third and Twenty-seventh Regiments were engaged, and captured an entire company of the Seventh Ohio Cavalry, three stands of colors, several wagons loaded with ordnance, and a considerable number of horses with their equipments. The Ninth Texas, under Colonel Dudley W. Jones, having been detached early in the day to guard the road leading to the right, was not otherwise engaged during the evening than a slight skirmish with the enemy's pickets, in which several prisoners were taken. It was then after night and very dark. The enemy had disappeared in the front and retreated in the direction of Franklin, but General Ross thought prudent before establishing camp to ascertain if any force of the enemy had been cut off and yet remained between his command and the river. For this purpose Colonel E. R. Hawkins was ordered up the pike with his regiment (the Twenty-seventh Texas), and had proceeded but a short distance when he was met by a brigade of the enemy's cavalry. An exciting fight in the dark ensued, lasting about half an hour, when the enemy, having much the larger force, succeeded in passing by the Texans, receiving as they did so a severe fire into their flanks.

The next day at Hurt's Cross-Roads, where the other commands of cavalry took the left towards Spring Hill, Ross's brigade advanced up the road towards Franklin. After advancing some distance it turned towards Thompson's Station in search of the enemy, who had disappeared in the direction of Franklin after being completely whipped. When near the station a few wagons were discovered moving on the pike, and General Ross sent Colonel Jones with the Ninth and Twenty-seventh Regiments to intercept and capture them. At the same time the Third and Sixth Regiments were drawn up in line, and a squadron from the Third despatched to destroy the dépôt. Colonel Jones was partially successful, capturing and destroying one wagon and securing the team. He then charged a train of cars which had come up from the direction of Franklin, when the engineer becoming frightened cut the engine loose and ran off to the south. The train thus freed ran down grade, and, in spite of obstructions thrown on the track, rolled back under the guns of a block-house and was saved. The guard, however, and all the men on the train were forced to jump off, and were taken prisoners. In the mean time the enemy at the dépôt, having observed the approach of the squadron from the Third Texas, applied the torch to all valuables, including a train of cars loaded with ordnance, and evacuated the place. Having accomplished all that could be done there, General Ross fell back to a point near Spring Hill, to await orders from the division

commander, General W. H. Jackson. About midnight orders came to again strike the pike and attack the enemy's train, then in full retreat towards Franklin. Guided by an officer of General Forrest's staff, who knew the country, the pike was soon reached, and, when distant about half a mile from it, three regiments were dismounted, the Ninth remaining mounted to guard the horses, and the advance was made cautiously on foot. The Texans got within about one hundred yards of the enemy's train without being discovered, when the Twenty-seventh Regiment, being in advance, fronted into line, fired a well-directed volley, killing several men, a number of mules, and rushing forward with a yell produced a perfect stampede among the teamsters and guards. They captured thirty-nine wagons with teams and a number of prisoners. After remaining in possession of the pike for a short time the brigade silently withdrew upon the approach of several bodies of the enemy's infantry, which, coming up from opposite directions, by mistake commenced firing into each other, and exchanged several volleys before discovering their error. Occupying a position upon the neighboring hills overlooking the pike, the Texans viewed the Federal army in full retreat. While this was passing, a regiment of the enemy's cavalry appeared in an open field in front of the Texans, as if to challenge them to the combat. The Sixth Texas attacked it in an impetuous charge, completely routed it, and drove it behind the infantry column. Keeping along parallel with the advancing columns of General Hood, the Texas brigade crossed the Harpeth River three miles above Franklin that evening, where only a small body of the enemy appeared to dispute the passage. Half a mile farther on, however, a regiment was found drawn up in line. The Ninth Texas at once advanced to the charge and routed them, but in the pursuit was met by a larger force, and was, in turn, compelled to give back, the enemy following in close pursuit. The Third Texas then rushed forward, checked the advancing squadrons of the enemy and hurled them back broken and disorganized, capturing several prisoners and driving the others back to the main line. The infantry of both armies coming up at this time engaged in a terrific combat, and the cavalry retired and took position on the flank, after having thus opened the bloody battle of Franklin. The gallant bearing of the men and officers of these two regiments on this occasion is referred to by General Ross as deserving of special commendation, and he says in his report: "It affords me much gratification to record to the honor of these noble regiments that the charges made by them at Harpeth River have never been and cannot be surpassed by cavalry of any nation." By this charge the Texans gained possession of an eminence overlooking the enemy's position, which they held until late that afternoon, when, discovering an intention on the part of the Federal commander to advance his entire force, they withdrew to the south side of the river. Very soon the whole line of the enemy advanced, but, upon finding that the Texans had fallen back across the river, retired, and during the night withdrew towards Nashville. The next day the brigade moved forward, arrived in front of Nashville on December 3, and took possession of the Nolansville Pike, three miles from the city. Just in front was a line of works, and General Ross, wishing to ascertain what force occupied it, had two squadrons of the Sixth Texas to dismount, deploy as skirmishers, and advance. It was then discovered that the line was only occupied by the enemy's skirmishers, who withdrew upon the approach of the Texans. Having

been relieved by the infantry soon after this, the cavalry retired to the rear, and were ordered to cook up rations.

On the morning of December 5 the brigade marched to La Vergne and found a small force of the enemy's infantry there, which took refuge inside the fort, but they surrendered after a feeble resistance. Moving thence to Murfreesboro', when within a few miles of the city the enemy's pickets were encountered, and, after a stubborn resistance, driven back by the Third and Sixth Texas, dismounted. A few days afterwards Major-General Forrest invested Murfreesboro' with his cavalry corps and one division of infantry. The duty assigned to the Texas brigade was to guard all the approaches to the city from the Salem to the Woodbury Pikes, in which it was engaged in skirmishes almost daily.

On December 15 the brigade captured a train of cars from Stevenson, heavily loaded with supplies for the garrison at Murfreesboro', about seven miles south of that city, which was guarded by a regiment of infantry. The guard fought desperately for about an hour, having a strong position in a cut in the railroad, but was finally routed by a most gallant charge by the Sixth Texas, supported by the Third, and one hundred and fifty prisoners captured; the others escaped to a block-house near by. The train contained fully two hundred thousand rations of sugar, coffee, hard-bread, and bacon, and the Texans regretted they were unable to carry it all with them, and were compelled to burn it.

The next day, in consequence of the reverse to the Confederate arms at Nashville, the brigade was withdrawn from the front at Murfreesboro', was ordered across to Triune, and thence to Columbia, crossing Duck River on the evening of the 18th. On the 24th of December, while bringing up the rear of the army, the enemy charged the rear-guard of the brigade at Lynnsville with a heavy force, and threatened to carry all opposition before them. The Sixth Texas, forming hastily, met and hurled them back, administering a severe lesson and giving a most wholesome check to their ardor. Again, when the Confederate army was crossing Richland Creek, near Pulaski, its rear pressed hard by the pursuing enemy, the Texas brigade held them in check by a bold front until all had crossed over. The next day, as rear-guard, the brigade was constantly engaged with the enemy's advance; and nine miles from Pulaski, when the Confederate infantry halted and formed, the enemy made a determined effort to turn its right flank. General Ross discovered the movement in time to defeat it, and drove the flanking column back in confusion. At the same time the infantry charged and captured the enemy's artillery, administering such an effectual check that they did not again show themselves that day. Early the following morning, the enemy, still not satisfied, made their appearance, and the infantry again made dispositions to receive them. Reynolds's and Ector's brigades took position, and the Ninth and Twenty-seventh Texas were drawn up in column of fours immediately in their rear. The fog was dense, and the enemy advanced very cautiously. When near enough to be seen, the infantry fired a volley and charged. At the same time the two Texas regiments sprang forward, and, passing through the infantry, crossed Sugar Creek in the face of a terrific fire, overcame all opposition in a gallant charge, and pursued the thoroughly routed foe quite a mile, capturing twelve prisoners with their horses, besides killing numbers of others. From the prisoners captured it was learned that the attacking enemy

were Hammond's brigade of cavalry. After this the enemy did not again show themselves on this retreat, and without further interruption the brigade recrossed the Tennessee River at Bainbridge on the evening of December 27, 1864, and went into camp at Corinth, Mississippi.

The losses in the brigade during this campaign into Tennessee, lasting thirty-nine days of almost constant fighting, were as follows: Third Texas, two men killed, three officers and twenty-two men wounded, one officer and two men captured, total thirty; Sixth Texas, six men killed, three officers and nineteen men wounded, one man captured, total twenty-nine; Ninth Texas, four men killed, seventeen men wounded, one man captured, total twenty-two; Twenty-seventh Texas, six men wounded; making an aggregate loss of eight-seven. They captured in the campaign and brought off five hundred and fifty prisoners, nine stands of colors, several hundred horses with equipments, and overcoats and blankets sufficient to supply the whole brigade. Besides these, they destroyed two trains of loaded cars, one with ordnance and the other with commissary stores, and much other valuable property belonging to the Federal government.

In his report of this campaign, General Ross, the brigade commander, says: "Before closing my report I desire to record an acknowledgment of grateful obligations to the gallant officers and brave men whom I have the honor to command. Entering upon the campaign poorly clad and ill prepared for undergoing its hardships, these worthy votaries of freedom, nevertheless, bore themselves bravely; and I did not hear a murmur nor witness the least reluctance in the discharge of duty, however unpleasant. All did well, and to this I attribute, in a great measure, the unparalleled success which attended all our efforts during the campaign." He also particularly mentioned, as having acquitted themselves with zeal and efficient co-operation on trying occasions, Colonel D. W. Jones, Colonel E. R. Hawkins, Colonel Jack Wharton, and Lieutenant-Colonel J. S. Boggess, who commanded their respective regiments, as well as Lieutenant-Colonel P. F. Ross and Major S. B. Wilson, of the Sixth Texas; Lieutenant-Colonel J. T. Whitfield and Major B. H. Norsworthy, of the Twenty-seventh; Major A. B. Stone, of the Third; Major H. C. Dial, of the Ninth, and the members of his staff.

From Corinth the brigade moved down to Central Mississippi the latter part of January, 1865, and there engaged in picket duty in front of Vicksburg, covering a front of about one hundred miles. Small skirmishes with foraging parties of the enemy were of almost daily occurrence, but they had no severe fighting.

After the fall of the Confederacy the brigade surrendered at Jackson, Mississippi, Colonel D. W. Jones commanding.

Fourth Cavalry Regiment, Arizona Brigade.—Colonel, Spruce M. Baird; lieutenant-colonel, Daniel Showalter; major, Edward Riordan.

Was in the Arizona campaign, and after the evacuation of that Territory by the Confederates this regiment served the balance of the war in Texas, on the lower Rio Grande, and was at Brownsville when the war closed.

Fourth Infantry Battalion. (German Battalion, six months' organization.)—Major, Theodore Oswald.

Fifth Regiment Partisan Rangers.—Colonel, Leonidas M. Martin; lieutenant-colonel, William N. Weaver; major, William N. Mayrant.

Served in Arkansas and the Indian Territory.

Fifth (Hubbard's) Infantry Battalion. (Merged into Twenty-second Regiment.)—Lieutenant-Colonel, Richard Bennett Hubbard; major, Elias Everett Lott.

Sixth Cavalry Battalion.—Major; lieutenant-colonel, Robert S. Gould; major, William W. Veser.

Served in Texas and Louisiana.

Sixth Infantry Regiment.—Colonel, Robert R. Garland; lieutenant-colonel, Thomas Scott Anderson; major, Rhoads Fisher; major, Alexander M. Haskell; major, Alexander H. Phillips, Jr.

Was organized in 1861, went to Arkansas in 1862, and was surrendered at Arkansas Post in January, 1863. After its exchange it was consolidated with the Tenth Texas Infantry, and served east of the Mississippi River, in Ector's brigade.

Seventh Infantry Regiment.—Officers: Colonel, John Gregg; lieutenant-colonel, Jeremiah M. Clough; major; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, Hiram Brinson Granbury; major; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, William Lewis Moody; major, Kleber Miller Van Zandt.

This regiment was enlisted early in 1861 and repaired immediately to Kentucky, where it took an active part in those stirring scenes which resulted in the withdrawal of the Confederate army under General Albert Sidney Johnston from that State. It was at Fort Donelson and conducted itself with distinguished bravery, and its lieutenant-colonel, J. M. Clough, with twenty others, was killed in a gallant charge upon the enemy. Upon the surrender of that place the regiment was confined as prisoners of war at Camp Douglas for nine months, during which time the suffering of the men was almost incredible. After their exchange the regiment immediately took the field again, and was with the Confederate army which General Grant drove before him with such brute force of superior numbers from Grand Gulf to Jackson, Mississippi, in his victorious march to the investment of Vicksburg. It participated in the battles of Port Gibson, Raymond, Jackson, and Baker's Creek, during which its losses were heavy. It was afterwards engaged in the Tennessee campaigns as a part of Gregg's brigade, and kept up its well-earned reputation as a fighting regiment. It gave two general officers to the Confederate army, in the persons of Brigadier-Generals John Gregg and H. B. Granbury, both of whom Texas feels proud to claim as her sons.

GENERAL JOHN GREGG.

Seventh Infantry Battalion.—Major, Samuel Boyer Davis.

Eighth Infantry Battalion. (Merged into Eighth Regiment.)—Major, Alfred M. Hobby.

Eighth (Hobby's) Infantry Regiment. (Formed from Eighth Battalion.)—Colonel, A. M. Hobby; lieutenant-colonel, Daniel D. Shea; major; lieutenant-colonel, John Ireland; major, John A. Vernon.

This regiment served in Texas during the whole time of the war, until General Banks's Red River campaign, when it went to Louisiana and took part in the battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill.

Ninth Battalion Partisan Rangers.—Major, John L. Randolph.

Ninth (Nichols's) Infantry Regiment. (Also called Fifth, six months' organization).—This regiment was raised in the summer of the year 1862, chiefly for the purposes of guard duty in the city of Galveston. Its field officers were: colonel, E. B. Nichols; lieutenant-colonel, Josiah C. Massie; major, Fred Tate.

COLONEL A. M. HOBBY.

It was enlisted for only six months, and during that period its service was confined to patrol and guard duty at Galveston and contiguous points. It is not known to have ever met the enemy, but at the expiration of its term of enlistment many of its members enlisted in other commands, and rendered efficient service to the Southern cause. Nearly all of the companies reenlisted *en masse* in Waul's Legion, and formed the basis of that celebrated command.

Ninth (Maxey's) Infantry Regiment. (Also called Eighth.)—Colonel, Samuel B. Maxey; colonel, William H. Young; lieutenant-colonel, William E. Beeson; lieutenant-colonel, Miles A. Dillard; major; colonel, Wright A. Stanley; major, James Burnet; major, William M. Harrison; major, James M. McReynolds.

This regiment was one of the earliest to enlist, and immediately went to Tennessee to report to General Albert Sidney Johnston. It was at the battle of Shiloh, and distinguished for its bravery. It also went through the Tennessee and Kentucky campaigns under General Bragg, and was with the ill-fated expedition of General Hood into Tennessee in 1864. It gave one major-general, S. B. Maxey, and one brigadier-general, William H. Young, to the Confederate army. It was one of the regiments in Ector's brigade.

Tenth Cavalry Battalion. (Merged into Fifth Partisan Rangers.)—Major, Leonidas M. Martin.

Tenth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, Matt F. Locke; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, C. R. Earp; lieutenant-colonel, James M. Barton; major; lieutenant-colonel, Washington de Lafayette Craig; major, Wiley B. Ector; major, Hulum D. E. Redwine.

This regiment served in Texas, Louisiana, and Arkansas the earlier part of the war, but was ordered east of the Mississippi River, where it was consolidated with the Fourteenth Texas Cavalry, and dismounted. It was in Ector's brigade in the Tennessee campaigns.

Tenth Infantry Regiment.—Colonel, Allison Nelson; lieutenant-colonel; colonel; Roger Q. Mills; major; lieutenant-colonel, Robert B. Young; major, John R. Kennard; major, Seymour C. Brasher.

This regiment served in Texas and Arkansas until January 1863, when it was captured at Arkansas Post. After its exchange it was consolidated with the Sixth and Fifteenth Texas Infantry, and became a part of Deshler's brigade in Cleburne's division in the Tennessee campaigns.

Eleventh Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, John C. Burks; colonel, George R. Reeves; colonel, William C. Young; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, Joseph Murphy Bounds; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, James J. Diamond; lieutenant-colonel, Robert W. Hooks; lieutenant-colonel, Andrew J. Nicholson; major; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, Otis M. Messick; major, Henry F. Bone; major, John W. Mayrant; major, John B. Puryear.

This regiment served in Arkansas for a time in the early part of the war, but in 1863 was sent east of the Mississippi River, where, with the Eighth Texas Cavalry, it formed a part of General Joseph Wheeler's celebrated cavalry corps.

Eleventh (Spaight's) Cavalry and Infantry Battalion. (Formerly Sixth (Liken's) Battalion.)—Lieutenant-colonel, Ashley W. Spaight; major, J. S. Irvine.

Eleventh Infantry Regiment.—Colonel, Oran M. Roberts; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, James H. Jones; lieutenant-colonel, A. J. Coupland; major, Nathaniel Jackson Caraway; major, Thomas H. Rountree.

This regiment saw much active service in Louisiana, and gained distinction as a part of Walker's division during General Banks's Red River campaign.

Twelfth Cavalry Battalion. (Merged into Brown's Thirty-fifth Cavalry.)—Lieutenant-colonel, Reuben R. Brown; major, Samuel William Perkins.

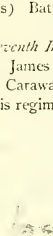
Served on the coast in the State altogether.

Twelfth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, William H. Parsons; lieutenant-colonel, Andrew Bell Burleson; lieutenant-colonel, John W. Mullen; major, Locklin Johnson Farrar; major, E. W. Rogers.

This regiment served in Louisiana and Arkansas.

Twelfth Infantry Regiment. (Also called Eighth.)—Colonel, Overton Young; lieutenant-colonel, Benjamin A. Philpott; major; lieutenant-colonel, William Clark; major; lieutenant-colonel, James W. Raine; major; lieutenant-colonel, Erastus Smith.

This regiment served in Louisiana and Arkansas.



COLONEL REUBEN R. BROWN.

Thirteenth Infantry Regiment.—This regiment was organized in the fall of 1861, with Joseph Bates as colonel, and he continued to hold that position until the close of the war. Reuben R. Brown and Henry P. Cayce were lieutenant-colonels at different times, and Robert L. Foard, Stephen S. Perry, and Lee C. Rountree were majors. Its services were exclusively confined to guard duty along the coast between Galveston and Matagorda; and while the regiment participated in no general engagements, detachments from it frequently met marauding parties from the Union troops on Matagorda Island and from the blockading vessels, and invariably drove them from the mainland.

This regiment was ordered to Louisiana in May, 1863, and arrived at Brashear City the day after its capture by the Confederates, where it remained about seven weeks, and then returned to Texas and resumed its former service on the coast. Here it remained until disbanded at the close of hostilities.

COLONEL OVERTON YOUNG.

Thirteenth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, John H. Burnett; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, Anderson S. Crawford; major; lieutenant-colonel, Charles Roambrose Beaty; major, Elias T. Seale.

Fourteenth Cavalry Battalion. (Merged into Thirty-third Cavalry Regiment.)—Major; lieutenant-colonel, James Duff; major, James R. Sweet.

Fourteenth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, John L. Camp; colonel, Matthew Duncan Ector; colonel, Middleton Tait Johnson; lieutenant-colonel, Abram Harris; lieutenant-colonel, Samuel F. Mains; major, Thompson Camp; major, Fleming H. Garrison; major, Lem Purdy.

This regiment saw some service in Louisiana and Arkansas, but its principal service was in Tennessee, where, consolidated with the Tenth Texas Cavalry, and dismounted, it formed a part of Ector's brigade.

Fourteenth Infantry Regiment.—Colonel, Edward Clark; lieutenant-colonel, William Byrd; major, Augustus H. Rogers.

COLONEL J. L. CAMP.

The principal service of this regiment was with Walker's division in Louisiana.

Fifteenth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, George H. Sweet; lieutenant-colonel, William K. Masten; major; lieutenant-colonel, George B. Pickett; major, William H. Cathey; major, Valerius B. Sanders.

This regiment, consolidated with the Thirty-second Texas Cavalry, and dismounted, formed a part of Ector's brigade in the Tennessee campaigns.

Fifteenth Infantry Regiment. (Formed from First (Speight's) Infantry Battalion.)—Colonel, J. W. Speight; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, James E. Harrison; major; lieutenant-colonel, John W. Daniel.

This regiment saw some service in Louisiana and Arkansas, but its chief service was in the Tennessee campaigns, where it was consolidated with the Sixth and Tenth Texas Infantry, and formed a part of Deshler's brigade in Cleburne's division.

Sixteenth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, William Fitzhugh ; lieutenant-colonel ; colonel, Edward Pearsall Gregg ; major ; lieutenant-colonel, William W. Diamond.

The principal service of this regiment was as a part of Walker's division in resisting General Banks's Red River campaign in Louisiana.

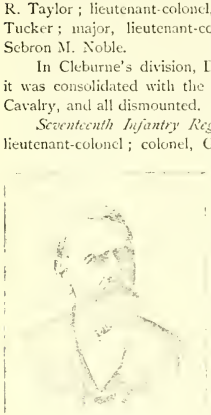
Sixteenth Infantry Regiment. (Also called Seventh.)—Colonel, George Flournoy ; lieutenant-colonel, James E. Shepard ; major ; lieutenant-colonel, William H. Redwood ; major, Xenophon B. Saunders.

This regiment was a part of Walker's division in Louisiana, and participated in all the engagements during Banks's Red River campaign.

Seventeenth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, George F. Moore ; colonel, James R. Taylor ; lieutenant-colonel, Sterling B. Hendricks ; major ; colonel, Thomas F. Tucker ; major, lieutenant-colonel, John McClarty ; major ; lieutenant-colonel, Sebron M. Noble.

In Cleburne's division, Deshler's brigade, in the Tennessee campaigns, where it was consolidated with the Eighteenth, Twenty-fourth, and Twenty-fifth Texas Cavalry, and all dismounted.

Seventeenth Infantry Regiment.—Colonel, Robert Thomas Pritchard Allen ; lieutenant-colonel ; colonel, George W. Jones ; major ; lieutenant-colonel, Joseph Zachariah Miller ; major, Robert Dickinson Allen ; major, John W. Tabor.



COLONEL NATHANIEL M. BURFORD.

In Walker's division in Louisiana.

Eighteenth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, Nicholas H. Darnell ; lieutenant-colonel, John T. Coit ; major, Chas. C. Morgan ; major, William A. Ryan.

This regiment saw some service in Louisiana and Arkansas, but is chiefly distinguished as a part of Deshler's brigade, Cleburne's division, in the Tennessee campaigns, where it was consolidated with the Seventeenth, Twenty-fourth, and Twenty-fifth Texas Cavalry, and all were dismounted.

Eighteenth Infantry Regiment.—Colonel, William B. Ochiltree ; lieutenant-colonel ; colonel, David B. Culbertson ; major ; lieutenant-colonel ; colonel, Thomas Reuben Bonner ; major ; lieutenant-colonel ; colonel, Wilburn Henry King ; major ; lieutenant-colonel ; colonel, John R. Watson ; major ; lieutenant-colonel ; colonel, Joseph G. W. Wood ; major, Matthew A. Gaston.

Was in Walker's division in the Louisiana campaigns of 1863 and 1864.

Nineteenth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, Nathaniel M. Burford ; lieutenant-colonel, Benj. W. Watson ; major, Joel T. Davis.

Was in the Louisiana campaigns of 1863 and 1864.

Nineteenth Infantry Regiment.—Colonel, Richard Waterhouse, Jr. ; lieutenant-colonel, Robert H. Graham ; major ; lieutenant-colonel ; colonel, Ennis Ward Taylor ; major ; lieutenant-colonel, William L. Crawford ; major, Augustus C. Allen.

Was in Walker's division in the Louisiana campaigns.

Twentieth Infantry Regiment.—This regiment was organized in the spring of 1862, with the following field officers, who continued to fill the same throughout the war, viz.: colonel, Henry M. Elmore; lieutenant-colonel, Leonard A. Abercrombie; major, Robert E. Bell.

The rank and file were, for the most part, composed of middle-aged men; heads of families and many prominent citizens were among them. It never saw any service outside the State, but was mostly engaged in guard duty at Galveston, Sabine Pass, Beaumont, and Niblett's Bluff, on the Sabine River. It was stationed at Virginia Point in December, 1862, and was honored by being selected by General Magruder as one of the regiments to participate in the recapture of the city of Galveston on the morning of January 1, 1863. During the previous night the entire regiment crossed over to Galveston Island, hauling several large siege-guns by hand, which they carried by a circuitous route and planted in advantageous positions before the attack was made. Two companies of the regiment, being better armed than the others, were among the attacking party, which captured several companies of a Massachusetts regiment on Kuhn's wharf, and lost several men from severe wounds. The regiment remained in or near Galveston until the close of the war.

COLONEL HENRY M. ELMORE.

Twentieth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, Thomas Coke Bass; lieutenant-colonel, Andrew J. Fowler; lieutenant-colonel, T. D. Taliaferro; major, Dempsey W. Broughton; major, John R. Johnson.

Served in Texas, Indian Territory, and Arkansas.

Twenty-first Cavalry Regiment. (First Lancers.)—Colonel, George Washington Carter; lieutenant-colonel, De Witt Clinton Giddings; lieutenant-colonel, Robert Neyland; major, Benjamin D. Chenoweth.

Served in the Louisiana campaigns.

Twenty-first Texas Infantry. (A. W. Spaight's regiment.)—Spaight's regiment, Texas Volunteer Infantry, was organized November 20, 1864, by the consolidation of six companies of Spaight's battalion with four companies of Griffin's battalion. The two battalions thus merged were organized in May and June, 1862, respectively, and the service rendered by them becomes a necessary part of the history of the regiment.

Field and staff officers of the regiment: A. W. Spaight, who entered the service as a private, rose to captain and afterwards to lieutenant-colonel, was promoted to colonel; W. H. Griffin, major and afterwards lieutenant-colonel of Griffin's battalion, was retained as lieutenant-colonel; F. C. McReynolds, who had served as captain and been promoted to major of Griffin's battalion, was made the major; John T. Johnson, adjutant of Spaight's battalion, was retained as adjutant; and A. B. Trovel was promoted from the ranks in Waul's Legion to ensign.

Officers retired and assigned to other commands: J. S. Irvine, who had been private, captain, and was major of Spaight's battalion, resigned on surgeon's cer-

tificate of disability; Captain B. W. Brown, assistant quartermaster, was retired on the same grounds, the effects of a severe wound; and Assistant Surgeon J. A. Blanchard, of Spaight's battalion, was assigned to duty in the Twentieth Regiment, Texas Volunteer Infantry.

Companies: Captain O. N. Marsh's Company A, Captain George W. O'Bryan's Company B, Captain Samuel Evans's Company C, Captain J. H. Deegan's Company D, Captain W. C. Gibbs's Company E, Captain W. B. Duncan's Company F, Captain I. M. Givens's Company G, Captain B. E. Gentry's Company H, Captain W. J. Carson's Company I, and Captain Thomas Leonard's Company K.

The three companies, K. D. Keith's, of Spaight's battalion, and Cook's and Bickley's, of Griffin's, were attached to Bates's regiment, Texas Volunteer Infantry.

At the battle of Galveston, on the 1st of January, 1863, four companies of the regiment under Lieutenant-Colonel Griffin were engaged,—namely, Evans's, Deegan's, Givens's, and Carson's, and formed a part of the attacking forces in the assault on the Federal troops barricaded on Kuhn's wharf.

In August, 1862, yellow fever breaking out at Sabine Pass, Spaight's battalion was withdrawn to Beaumont, and the post and fort abandoned by orders from the commanding general; thereupon the harbor was entered and occupied by two armed vessels, *Morning Light* and *Velocity*. In the expedition, composed of about three hundred artillery, infantry, and cavalry, volunteers from Pyron's and Cook's regiments and Spaight's battalion, fitted out to capture or drive out these vessels, one hundred and eighty men and twelve officers of Spaight's battalion were engaged in the sea fight on the 24th of January, 1863. When it is considered that the attack and capture of these vessels, carrying thirteen heavy guns, was made twenty-seven miles off-shore by two light-draught river craft, the *Josiah Bell* and *Uncle Ben*, with an armament of one heavy rifled gun and one twelve-pounder and about three hundred Enfield rifles, the annals of war may be searched in vain for a more hazardous undertaking so successfully accomplished. To Captain Charles Fowler the honor is justly awarded of fitting out and conducting this perilous expedition to its fortunate issue.

COLONEL A. W. SPAIGHT.

In the night attack and capture of the garrison at Brashear City, Louisiana, now Morgan's City, in 1863, Spaight's battalion participated, and after the battle was assigned to the duty of rear-guard on the retreat made necessary by the arrival of a largely superior force from New Orleans. Here it was supplied for the first time with a full complement of Enfield rifles and fixed ammunition and much-needed clothing as a part of the spoils of victory.

On the 7th of September, 1863, Captain K. D. Keith's company of Spaight's battalion, with Captain Odum's company of Cook's regiment, composed the garrison at Sabine Pass, and participated in the memorable defence of that post, in which two Federal gunboats *Sachem* and *Clifton* were disabled and captured and a

force of six thousand troops was driven off, and the initial movement for the invasion of Texas defeated.

In the battle of Fordoche, Louisiana, September 28, 1863, Spaight's battalion formed a part of the Texas brigade which bore the brunt of the fight against the Federal infantry force protected by a high levee surrounding the Sterling plantation. Its loss in killed and wounded was one in seven of the men it brought into the engagement. General Tom Green, in a letter to his wife, written the day after the battle, says: "It was one of the most desperate fights on record, and one in which there was more dauntless courage displayed than any other, perhaps, in the war. Nothing can be imagined more terrible on the same scale." And in his official report, after bestowing warm praise on the Texas troops "for their persistent courage and valor," thus refers to the field and company officers: "To Lieutenant-Colonel Harrison, commanding Spaight's brigade, and Lieutenant-Colonels A. W. Spaight and Clack and Major Daniels, who led their commands to the attack, all honor is due, and also to the officers of their several commands, who displayed great coolness in the action. The heavy loss of Spaight's brigade shows the desperate nature of the conflict." He concludes with a high tribute to the gallantry of Lieutenant John B. Jones, acting assistant adjutant-general of the brigade.

On the 8th of May, 1864, Marsh's, O'Bryan's, Gibbs's, and Gentry's companies of Spaight's battalion, and Evans's, Deegan's, and Givens's, of Griffin's, with Hughes's light battery and Howard's company of Daly's battalion, in command of Lieutenant-Colonel Griffin, attacked and captured two Federal vessels, *Granite City* and *Wave*, at Calcasieu Pass, Louisiana. These vessels, feeling secure from attack by reason of their heavy armament, ventured inside the harbor, and were moored within rifle range of the shore. Although surprised by the boldness and vigor of the attack delivered at sunrise, they made a stubborn and persistent defence, the *Wave* keeping up the fight and pouring a broadside into the ranks of the Confederates after the *Granite City* had displayed the white flag. Two hundred prisoners, a large quantity of arms and ammunition and ship-stores were the fruits of the capture. Coincident in time and in co-operation with this movement, Colonel Spaight, with the remainder of his command, made a forced march on Lake Charles, Louisiana, from his post at Beaumont, Texas, in order to head off and defeat a detachment of three hundred troops reported by scouts to be on their way from the vessels below to Lake Charles for the purpose of seizing and bringing out or destroying several boats laden with Confederate cotton and lying at that point. Balked in their purpose by the opportune occupation of Lake Charles by the small Confederate force, and apprised of the attack on the vessels at Calcasieu Pass by the heavy firing, which could be distinctly heard at Lake Charles, the detachment of raiders, it is thought, retreated by way of the river, and, finding their vessels captured, made their way overland to Brashear City, the nearest Federal post. In the absence of cavalry, it was not practicable to ascertain their movements, much less to make successful pursuit.

Twenty-second Cavalry Regiment. (Also called First Indian-Texas Regiment.) Colonel, Robert H. Taylor; lieutenant-colonel, William H. Johnson; lieutenant-colonel, Thomas Lewelling; major; colonel, James G. Stevens; major; lieutenant-

colonel, John A. Buck; major; lieutenant-colonel, George W. Merrick; major; lieutenant-colonel, Robert D. Stone.

Twenty-second Infantry Regiment. (Formed from Hubbard's Fifth Battalion.)

COLONEL N. C. GOULD.

COLONEL C. C. GILLESPIE.

—Colonel, Richard B. Hubbard; lieutenant-colonel, Elias Everett Lott; major; lieutenant-colonel, John Job Canon; major, Benjamin F. Parkes.

Was a part of Walker's division, and participated in the Louisiana campaigns.

Twenty-third Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, Nicholas C. Gould; lieutenant-colonel, Isaac A. Grant; major; lieutenant-colonel, John A. Corley; major, William B. Caton.

Was in service in Texas and the Indian Territory until the spring of 1864, when it went to Louisiana to meet General Banks's Red River expedition, and then it took an active part in all the engagements of that campaign.

Twenty-fourth Cavalry Regiment. (Second Lancers.)—Colonel, Francis Collett Wilkes; lieutenant-colonel, Robert Reese Neyland; major; colonel, William A. Taylor; major; lieutenant-colonel, Patrick H. Swearingen.

COLONEL F. C. WILKES.

This regiment first saw service in Louisiana and Arkansas, and was captured at Arkansas Post in January, 1863. After its exchange it served in the Tennessee campaigns, where it was consolidated with the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and Twenty-fifth Texas Cavalry Regiments, and was in Deshler's brigade, Cleburne's division.

Twenty-fifth Cavalry Regiment. (Third Lancers.)—Colonel, Clayton Crawford Gillespie; lieutenant-colonel, William Madison Neyland; lieutenant-colonel (declined), Francis J. Boggs; major, Joseph N. Dark; major, Edward Bradford Pickett.

This regiment was in service in Louisiana and Arkansas until the spring of 1864, when it was captured at Arkansas Post. After it was exchanged it was consolidated with the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and

Twenty-fourth Texas Cavalry Regiments, and took part in the Tennessee campaigns, in Deshler's brigade, Cleburne's division.

Twenty-sixth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, Xavier Blanchard de Bray; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, John J. Myers; major; lieutenant-colonel, Medard Menard; major, George W. Owens.

This regiment was raised in 1862, and was in Texas till the spring of 1864, when it went to Louisiana to meet General Banks's Red River expedition, where it participated in all the engagements of that campaign, including the battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill. Its colonel, X. B. de Bray, was promoted to be brigadier-general.

Twenty-seventh Cavalry Regiment. (See Whitfield's Legion, history of Ross's brigade.)

Twenty-eighth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, Horace Randal; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, Eli H. Baxter, Jr.; major; lieutenant-colonel, Henry G. Hall; major, Patrick Henry.

This regiment saw active service in Arkansas and Louisiana, taking a prominent part in repulsing General Banks's Red River campaign in the spring of 1864.

Twenty-ninth Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, Charles de Morse; lieutenant-colonel, Otis G. Welch; major, Joseph A. Carroll.

This regiment was in the Indian Territory, where it performed valuable services during two years.

Thirtieth Cavalry Regiment. (Also called First Partisan Rangers.)—Colonel, Edward Jeremiah Gurley; lieutenant-colonel, Nicholas William Battle; major, John H. Davenport.

This regiment served in the Indian Territory.

Thirty-first Texas Cavalry.—This regiment was organized in April, 1862, and the term of enlistment was "for the war," be it long or short. Its field officers were: colonel, Trezevant C. Hawpe; lieutenant-colonel, George W. Guess; major, Frederick J. Malone.

Company A was raised in Dallas County, and its commissioned officers were: captain, W. W. Peak; first lieutenant, Thomas Flynn; second lieutenant, William Smith; third lieutenant, M. I. Moore.

Company B was raised in Bosque County, and the names of only two of its commissioned officers have been ascertained, viz.: captain, —— Anderson; first lieutenant, Milton Jack.

Company C was raised in Bexar County, and its commissioned officers were: captain, John Duncan; first lieutenant, James Tivey; second lieutenant, C. I. Church; third lieutenant, —— Hale.

Company D was raised in Erath County, and its captain was John R. Waller, but the names of the other commissioned officers are unknown.

Company E was raised in Wise County; Edward A. Blythe was its captain, but the names of the lieutenants are unknown.

Company F was from Travis County, and its commissioned officers were: captain, William Thompson; first lieutenant, —— Robertson; second lieutenant, S. M. Cain; third lieutenant, J. T. Gregg.

Company G was from Dallas County, and its commissioned officers were:

captain, George W. Barton; first lieutenant, Z. E. Coombes; second lieutenant, W. H. F. Nichols; third lieutenant, D. H. Russell.

Company H was from Hunt County, and its commissioned officers, so far as ascertained, were: captain, A. J. Marshall; first lieutenant, A. Cameron; second lieutenant, —— Spencer.

Company I was also from Hunt County, and the only commissioned officer ascertained was: captain, A. J. Bumpas.

Immediately upon its organization the regiment marched to Little Rock, Arkansas, and reported to General Hindman. It was by him ordered to Southwestern Missouri, and reached Fayetteville, Arkansas, in July, 1862. It marched into Newton County, Missouri, in August, and was the first Confederate force to meet Colonels Shelby and Cockrell when they came out of Missouri with recruits for the Confederate army. It went through the campaign in Southwest Missouri and the Indian Territory in the fall of 1862, participating in the battles at Newtonia, September 30, 1862, Prairie Grove, and Old Fort Wayne.

The regiment was dismounted in November, 1862, and was placed in a brigade with the Twentieth and Thirty-fourth Texas Cavalry Regiments, which was commanded by Colonel W. R. Bradfute at the battle of Prairie Grove. A short time prior to the fall of Arkansas Post this brigade was ordered from Fort Smith, where it was then camped, to Little Rock; but upon arriving at Clarksville, Arkansas, the order was countermanded, and the Fifteenth Texas Infantry Regiment was added to the brigade, and its colonel, J. W. Speight, was placed in command, and the Twenty-second Texas Cavalry, under Colonel James G. Stevens, was also added to it. The brigade as thus organized then returned to Fort Smith. Brigadier-General William Steele says in his report that he found this brigade, commanded by Colonel Speight, at Fort Smith, when he arrived there, January 8, 1863, badly disorganized, without discipline, and almost destitute of clothing and supplies. The weather was bitter cold, the men suffered great hardships, and many of them were unarmed. At Charleston, Arkansas, in January, 1862, a detachment of this brigade, which was marching in the rear without arms, was surprised and captured by a company in the Union army commanded by Martin D. Hart, of Hunt County, a brother of Hardin Hart, who was district judge of the Dallas district during reconstruction days. At the same time the brigade transportation was destroyed. Some six or eight days afterwards Captain Hart was captured by Colonel Phil Crump, was court-martialed and shot; but the charges and specifications against him are unknown.

In May, 1863, the brigade, with the exception of the Twentieth Texas Cavalry, which was left at Fort Smith, marched to Shreveport, Louisiana, and was by General E. Kirby Smith ordered towards the Mississippi River to guard that section against invasion. At the time of the fall of Vicksburg and Port Hudson this brigade was at Iberville, forty miles from New Orleans, and participated in the campaigns in that section of the country in the fall of 1863. In the winter of this year Brigadier-General C. J. Polignac, a distinguished Frenchman who had volunteered his services to the Confederate States, was placed in command of this brigade; and under his leadership it took part in the Louisiana campaign of the spring of 1864, during General Banks's expedition up Red River. At the battles of Mansfield,

Pleasant Hill, and Yellow Bayou the brigade acquitted itself with great credit, was distinguished for its gallant conduct, and achieved renown for itself as well as its brave commander, who led it in the thickest of the fight. During the time that General Polignac commanded the brigade its drill and discipline were very much improved and its general efficiency raised to a high degree. After the death of General A. Mouton, at Mansfield, May 8, 1864, General Polignac was promoted to the command of the division, and Colonel James E. Harrison, of the Fifteenth Texas Infantry, was promoted to brigadier-general and assigned to the command of this brigade, and continued to command it to the close of the war.

Colonel Hawpe resigned while the regiment was at Fort Smith, and Major Frederick J. Malone was promoted to colonel, and Captain W. W. Peak, of Company A, was promoted to major. First Lieutenant Thomas Flynn was promoted to captain of Company A. In Company B, Captain Anderson resigned in December, 1862, and First Lieutenant Milton Jack was promoted to captain and W. M. Park to first lieutenant. In Company C, Captain John Duncan was severely wounded at the battle of Prairie Grove, September 30, 1862, and lost a leg, in consequence of which he resigned, and the other officers of the company were, *pari passu*, promoted to fill the vacancies caused thereby. In Company D, Captain John R. Waller resigned, and W. E. Carter was promoted to fill the vacancy. In Company F, Captain Thompson resigned, and First Lieutenant J. T. Gregg was promoted to captain. In Company G, Captain George W. Barton resigned, and First Lieutenant Z. E. Coombes was made captain. Lieutenant Nichols having died of wounds received at the battle of Mansfield, and Lieutenant Russell having resigned, E. D. Bennett was promoted to first lieutenant.

Thirty-second Cavalry Regiment. (Also called Fifteenth.)—Colonel, Julius A. Andrews; lieutenant-colonel, James A. Weaver; major, William E. Estes.

This regiment saw some service in Louisiana and Arkansas, when it was sent to Tennessee, where it saw hard service and acquitted itself with credit. It was there consolidated with the Fifteenth Texas Cavalry, and dismounted, forming a part of Ector's brigade.

Thirty-third Cavalry Regiment. (Formed from Fourteenth Cavalry Battalion.)—Colonel, James Duff; lieutenant-colonel, James R. Sweet; major, John H. Robinson; major, Santos Benavides; major, John T. Brackinridge.

This regiment never left the State, but performed active and valuable services on the Rio Grande frontier from Laredo to the mouth of the river. Different companies of it had numerous encounters with marauding parties from Mexico, and several were at the battle of Palmito Ranch, May 13, 1865, the last engagement of the war.

Thirty-fourth (Alexander's) Texas Cavalry Regiment.—The Thirty-fourth Texas Cavalry (dismounted) was organized in the Indian Territory, February, 1862, and was composed of ten full companies of about one hundred men each, raised in North Texas the latter part of 1861 and the early part of 1862, and the officers of the regiment from first to last were as follows: Colonel, A. M. Alexander; lieutenant-colonel; colonel, John H. Caudle; lieutenant-colonel, George H. Wooten; major; lieutenant-colonel, William M. Bush; major; lieutenant-colonel, John R. Russel; major, M. W. Davenport; major, Sevier Tackett; major, Thomas J. Dove.

Company A of the regiment was from Tarrant County, and its captains from first to last were M. W. Davenport, —— Crowley, and —— Baldwin. Company B was from Grayson and Cook Counties, and its captains were H. K. Hodges and E. T. Morris. Company C was from Lamar County, and its captains were George A. Provine and Stephen D. Ross. Company D was from Red River County, and its captains were J. H. Caudle and —— Bryant. Company E was from Fannin County, and its captains were —— Myrick and A. J. Duckworth. Company F was from Palo Pinto and Erath Counties, and its captains were —— Scanlan, Thomas Hunter, and William Metcalf. Company G was from Collin County, and its captains were J. O. Straughn, W. M. Bush, and W. N. Bush. Company H was from Grayson County, and its captains were —— Wallace and Thomas J. Dove. Company I was from Fannin, and its captains were —— —— and J. H. Roderick. Company K was from Red River County, and its captains were —— Flemming and Edward Titus.

Colonel A. M. Alexander.

The regiment served in the Indian Territory, Arkansas, Missouri, and Louisiana, and was engaged in the battles of Spring River and Newtonia, Missouri, as cavalry. The regiment was then dismounted and so remained during the war. The regiment fought the battle of Prairie Grove, Arkansas, under General Roan. It was then transferred to Louisiana with the brigade under the command of Colonel Speight, where it was placed in camp of instruction and thoroughly drilled in infantry tactics by Colonel Will H. Trader. After which General C. J. Polignac was placed in command of the brigade until he was promoted to a major-generalship on the battle-field at Mansfield, when Colonel James Taylor was placed in command of the brigade and was killed the same evening. Colonel R. D. Stone was then placed in command of the brigade until he was killed at Yellow Bayou, more commonly known in history as the battle of Norwood's Plantation. General W. H. King was then placed in command of the brigade, and commanded it until the close of the war, when the brigade was disbanded at Hempstead, Texas. The regiment was in the battles fought in Louisiana, to wit: Trinity, Harrisonburg, Vidalia, Mansfield, Pleasant Hill, Mansura, and Yellow Bayou, or Norwood's Plantation.

At the battle of Mansfield the regiment, under the command of Major W. M. Bush, was left to support the St. Mary's battery. After the Confederate line had advanced across the field to the edge of the timber, where they were held in check by a most destructive fire from the enemy, the Thirty-fourth Texas was ordered to their support, and with the regular Texas yell made one of the most successful charges ever made by any regiment, before which the enemy gave way, and the regiment captured the Nim's battery, broke the centre of the enemy's lines, and by a flank fire on that part of the Federal line engaged with Mouton's old brigade, caused them to surrender to that brigade and to the Thirty-fourth Texas. Here

the regiment threw away their old muskets and equipped themselves with the splendid Enfield rifles captured from the enemy. At Pleasant Hill, Polignac's brigade having suffered severely at Mansfield the day before, and the men being weary, were held in reserve until the engagement became general, with some wavering of the Confederate line, when the brigade was ordered to the front, and as they passed General Dick Taylor he encouraged the brigade by telling them they had won the day at Mansfield, and he looked to them on that occasion. The brigade, including the Thirty-fourth Texas, went gallantly to the front, sustaining heavy loss, and succeeded in routing the enemy in their front just at nightfall. In the Louisiana campaign there were twenty-six officers of the line belonging to the Thirty-fourth Texas engaged, of which the regiment lost in killed and wounded nineteen, and the non-commissioned officers and privates suffered in about the same proportion.

COLONEL P. C. WOODS.

Thirty-fifth (Brown's) Cavalry Regiment. (Formed from Twelfth Battalion.)—Colonel, Reuben R. Brown; lieutenant-colonel, Samuel W. Perkins; major, Lee C. Rountree.

This regiment was stationed in Texas until the spring of 1864, when it went to Louisiana to meet General Banks's Red River campaign. There it saw active service for the only time.

Thirty-fifth (Likens's) Cavalry Regiment. (Formed from Likens's and Burns's Cavalry Battalions.)—Colonel, James B. Likens; lieutenant-colonel, James Randolph Burns; major, William A. Wortham.

Was stationed in Texas until the spring of 1864, when it went to Louisiana with other Texas troops to meet General Banks's Red River expedition.

Thirty-sixth (Woods's) Cavalry Regiment. (Also called Thirty-second Regiment.)—Colonel, Peter C. Woods; lieutenant-colonel, Nat Benton; major; lieutenant-colonel, William O. Hutchison; major, Stokely M. Holmes.

Took an active and conspicuous part in defeating General Banks's Red River campaign in the spring of 1864, but was not engaged in any other active service.

Anderson's Cavalry Regiment. (Formed from Border's and Fulerod's Cavalry Battalions.)—Colonel, Thomas Scott Anderson; lieutenant-colonel, John P. Border; major, Jules A. Randle.

Border's Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, John P. Border; lieutenant-colonel, Philip Fulerod; major, Daniel Egbert.

Bourland's Cavalry Regiment. (Frontier Regiment.)—Colonel, James Bourland; lieutenant-colonel, John R. Diamond; major, Charles L. Roff.

Bradford Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, Charles M. Bradford; lieutenant-colonel, Walter L. Mann; major, Thomas R. Hoxey.

Burns's Cavalry Battalion. (Merged into Likens's Thirty-fifth Cavalry.)—Lieutenant-colonel, James R. Burns.

Daly's Cavalry Battalion.—Lieutenant-colonel, Andrew Daly; major, Samuel G. Ragsdale.

Was in active service in Louisiana.

De Bray's Battalion Texas Cavalry. (Merged into Twenty-sixth Cavalry.)—Lieutenant-colonel, Xavier Blanchard de Bray; major, Samuel Boyer Davis; major, John J. Myers.

COLONEL JOHN P. BORDER.

Fulcrod's Cadets, Battalion Cavalry. (Merged into Anderson's Cavalry Regiment.)—Lieutenant-colonel, Philip Fulcrod.

Gano's Cavalry Battalion. (Merged into Seventh Kentucky Cavalry, September, 1862.)—Lieutenant-colonel, Richard M. Gano.

Giddings's Cavalry Battalion.—Lieutenant-colonel, George H. Giddings.

Was in active service along the Rio Grande, having numerous skirmishes with marauding parties from Mexico, and was at the last battle of the war at Palmito Ranch, May 13, 1865.

Herbert's Battalion, Arizona Brigade.—Lieutenant-colonel, P. T. Herbert; major, George M. Frazer.

Was in New Mexico and Arizona and the Louisiana campaign of 1864.

Mann's Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, Walter L. Mann; lieutenant-colonel, William F. Upton; major, John E. Oliver.

Morgan's Cavalry Battalion.—Major, C. L. Morgan.

Served as independent scouts in Missouri and Arkansas.

Mullen's Cavalry Battalion, Arizona Brigade. (Merged into Second Regiment.)—Lieutenant-colonel, John W. Mullen.

Ragsdale's Cavalry Battalion.—Major, Samuel G. Ragsdale.

Was in active service in Louisiana.

Saufley's Scouting Battalion.—Major, W. P. Saufley.

Terrell's Cavalry Regiment. (Also called Thirty-fourth.)—Colonel, Alexander W. Terrell; lieutenant-colonel, John C. Robertson; major, Hiram S. Morgan; major, George W. Owens.

Was actively engaged in the Louisiana campaign of 1864.

Terry's Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, D. S Terry; lieutenant-colonel, S. H. Brooks; major, J. M. Evans.

Wells's Cavalry Battalion. (Merged into Wells's Cavalry Regiment.)—Lieutenant-colonel, John W. Wells.

Wells's Cavalry Regiment. (Also called Thirty-fourth.)—Colonel, John W. Wells; lieutenant-colonel, Chaplin Good; major, L. E. Gillette.

Waul's Legion.—This command was organized at Brenham, Texas, in the summer of 1862, with a battalion of infantry, a battalion of cavalry, and a battery of light artillery. It was recruited principally from Nichols's six-months' regiment and J. E. Kirby's battalion, whose term of enlistment had just expired; but many new recruits also joined. The field officers at the organization were: colonel,

Thomas N. Waul; lieutenant-colonel of infantry, B. Timmons; lieutenant-colonel of cavalry, Leonidas Willis; major of infantry, Allen Cameron; captain of artillery, William Edgar. The staff consisted of: quartermaster, H. B. Andrews; ordnance officer, —— Broadnax; surgeon, Dr. Edward Randall; adjutant, Lieutenant Oliver Steele.

The command consisted of twelve companies of infantry, six of cavalry, and one battery of light artillery. The names of all the commanders of companies cannot be ascertained, but the following have been furnished by Lieutenant-Colonel Oliver Steele as a partial list: captains of infantry, L. D. Bradley, C. S. Bolling, James Wrigley, Otto Nathusius, —— Voigt, Samuel Carter, H. Wickeland, and —— Hicks. Captains of cavalry, —— Harwood is the only one remembered.

The battery of artillery, under Captain Edgar, left the camp of organization first, marched to Arkansas, and did good service in that State and Louisiana, until its capture with the Second Louisiana Cavalry while on picket duty, a few days prior to the battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill. The cavalry battalion left soon afterwards and proceeded to Mississippi.

On August 18, 1862, the twelve companies of infantry took up the line of march for Clarksville, Texas; but while *en route* the direction was changed for Monroe, Louisiana, with the intention of joining General Van Dorn in Mississippi. The command crossed the Mississippi River at Vicksburg, October 1, 1862, and was joined by the cavalry battalion under Lieutenant-Colonel Willis. Soon after this the infantry was moved to Holly Springs, where it arrived a few days after the battle of Corinth; and the cavalry battalion was detached from it and never served with it afterwards, but formed a part of Brigadier-General J. R. Chalmers's cavalry brigade. At Holly Springs the infantry was reorganized by being divided into two battalions of six companies each, with B. Timmons lieutenant-colonel and Allen Cameron major of the first, and James Wrigley lieutenant-colonel and Oliver Steele major of the second.

During the latter part of the year 1862 and the early part of the year 1863 the legion served as a separate brigade, under command of Colonel Waul, in Lovell's division. In February, 1863, it was sent to Fort Pemberton, at the head of the Yazoo River, where it performed gallant service in the repulse of General Washburn's expedition down the Tallahatchee River, in the ill-starred attempt to take Vicksburg in the rear. After General Washburn's repulse, the legion, except Captain Voigt's company, was sent to Vicksburg. That company was left to guard Fort Pemberton, and, when *en route* to join the legion after the investment of Vicksburg, was captured at Yazoo City and sent to the North to prison. The other eleven companies took a prominent and gallant part in the defence of the city of Vicksburg. It occupied a position in reserve in the rear of Brigadier-General Stephen D. Lee's brigade, at the point where the railroad from Vicksburg to Jackson runs through the fortifications. When the grand assault was made on May 22, 1863, a lodgement was made by about sixty of the enemy in the ditch around the fort on the railroad, and the Twentieth Alabama Regiment was driven from it. Upon the call for volunteers from Waul's Legion to retake the fort, Captain L. D. Bradley and Lieutenant James Hogue responded with their companies, and, led by Major Oliver Steele, the fort was recaptured in gallant style, taking sixty prisoners

and capturing two stands of colors. Major-General Carter L. Stevenson, commanding the division, says in his report: "A more gallant feat than this has not illustrated our annals during the war. The preparations were quickly and quietly made, but the enemy seemed at once to divine our purpose, and opened upon the angle a terrific fire of shot, and shell, and musketry. Undaunted, this little band, its chivalrous commander at its head, rushed upon the work, and in less time than it requires to describe it it and the flags were in our possession. Preparations were then quickly made for the use of hand-grenades, when the enemy in the ditch, being informed of our purpose, immediately surrendered."

After the long and tedious defence, during which many gallant feats were performed and many brave men killed, among them Major Allen Cameron, the legion surrendered with the balance of the Confederate army, were paroled, and returned to Texas. After the exchange the legion reassembled at Houston; and Colonel Waul having been promoted to brigadier-general, Lieutenant-Colonel Timmons was promoted to colonel, Major Oliver Steele was promoted to lieutenant-colonel, and Major Allen Cameron having been killed at the siege of Vicksburg, Captain Otto Nathusius was promoted to major. After its reorganization the legion served to the end of the war, at Galveston and other points on the Texas coast.

The Frontier Regiment, Texas Cavalry. (Afterwards designated as the Forty-sixth Texas Cavalry.)—This regiment was organized in February, 1862, in pursuance of an act of the Texas Legislature passed in January, 1862, to take the place of McCulloch's First Regiment Mounted Riflemen, whose term of enlistment was about to expire. The first field officers appointed by Governor Lubbock were: colonel, James M. Norris; lieutenant-colonel, Alfred T. Obenchain; major, James E. McCord. The captains of the ten companies were: C. C. Callan, succeeded by Thos. C. Wright, M. B. Lloyd, W. G. O'Brien, H. T. Edgar, John W. Lawhorn, R. M. Whitesides, Joseph Ward, —— Rowland, William Bauty, succeeded by Alonzo Rees, —— White.

Colonel James E. McCord.

The strength of the regiment was about twelve hundred and forty men, and was kept up to near that figure during the term of its service, and the men were superbly mounted at their own expense. The companies were so disposed as to occupy twenty camps along the line of the frontier, from the mouth of Big Washita on Red River to Fort McKavett; the space between the camps was patroled twice daily, and in addition a detachment of scouts from each company was kept constantly in the field. The service rendered by this regiment is said to have been the most efficient ever given the frontier, and that during the two years of its service more stolen property was recaptured and more marauding Indians killed than were recaptured and killed by the United States troops from annexation to 1861.

During the first year's service of the regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Obenchain

was killed in an altercation with two privates of the regiment, at a point near where the town of Breckinridge, Stephens County, now stands, and his body was interred on the prairie.

After serving with the regiment about one year, Colonel J. M. Norris resigned, and Major J. E. McCord was promoted to colonel, J. B. Barry to lieutenant-colonel, and W. J. Alexander to major. W. W. Reynolds was quartermaster, W. R. Chase commissary, Dr. I. R. W. Warrell surgeon, Dr. J. G. Barbee assistant surgeon, and Lieutenant Abram H. Lee was adjutant.

The legislature intended that this regiment, when organized, should be transferred to the Confederate States service; but in making the tender Governor Lubbock coupled the condition with it that the regiment should not be removed from the frontier, and it was rejected by the Confederate War Department, and the regiment remained in the State service until the election of Governor Pendleton Murrah. Upon his succession to office Governor Murrah unconditionally transferred the regiment to the Confederate States, and it was then designated as the Forty-sixth Texas Cavalry Regiment, C.S.A.; and in the spring of 1864 it was ordered to Harrisburg, Texas, where it was attached to Bankhead's brigade, and remained there till the close of hostilities.

After this time the frontier was left entirely unprotected, and became the general rendezvous of deserters, renegades, hostile Indians, and lawless plunderers generally. The frontier receded upon the settlements as far as San Saba, Hamilton, Lampasas, and Coryell Counties on the northwest; and even several years after the close of the war Indian depredations were frequent in those counties.

The members of this regiment shared few of the honors of the war, but the dangers which they encountered were exceeded by few others; and the numerous unmarked graves which excite the curiosity of the settlers in the section of country covered by them, attest many a bloody encounter with hostile savages. No flowers are strewn upon their graves on Decoration Day, no monuments are erected to their memory, but the vast extent of country then depending upon them solely for protection suffered none of the horrors and few of the privations of war; and its brave defenders are still held in grateful remembrance by the early settlers upon the Texas frontier.

LIGHT ARTILLERY.

The Good-Douglas Battery.—This battery was organized at Dallas, Texas, in the early summer of 1861, and was composed of fifty men from Dallas County under Captain J. J. Good, and fifty men from Smith County under First Lieutenant J. P. Douglas. At its organization the following were elected commissioned officers: captain, J. J. Good; first lieutenant, J. P. Douglas; second lieutenant, Alf. Davis; third lieutenant, J. N. Boren; fourth lieutenant, W. Harris; and the following non-commissioned officers: orderly sergeant, Ben Hardin; first sergeant, Thomas H. Floyd; second sergeant, W. J. Sanders; third sergeant, Mitch Gray; fourth sergeant, J. B. Long; fifth sergeant, Thomas A. Hord; sixth sergeant, James Howard.

The company, having been provided with six guns, took up the line of march for Fort Smith, Arkansas, to join General Ben McCulloch in Missouri. It reached the neighborhood of the Confederate army in time to hear the guns of the battle of

Oak Hill, but did not arrive there in time to participate in that engagement. It, however, received its baptism of fire the following spring at the battle of Elkhorn, where it acquitted itself with great gallantry. It accompanied the army of General Van Dorn to Corinth, Mississippi, and while there, the terms of enlistment having expired, the men all re-enlisted, the company reorganized as a four-gun battery, and the following officers were elected : captain, J. P. Douglas ; senior first lieutenant, J. N. Boren ; junior first lieutenant, John H. Bingham ; second lieutenant, Ben Hardin.

While at Corinth the battery took part from a distance in the battle of Farmington, but the enemy retreated so precipitately that it was mostly a running fight. When the Confederate army retreated to Tupelo this battery went with it, and from there it went with General Bragg on his movement into Tennessee and Kentucky. At Chattanooga it was attached to Brigadier-General P. R. Cleburne's brigade, and followed its fortunes closely. At the battle of Rogersville it bore a conspicuous part, in which the gallant Lieutenant Boren was killed by a cannon-shot. Lieutenant Hardin having been severely wounded, and Captain Douglas assigned to the command of all the artillery on the field, the command of the battery devolved upon Lieutenant Bingham, with Sergeants Mitch Gray and W. J. Sanders each in command of a section. The action resulted in a victory of the Confederates over a greatly superior force of the enemy, to which the Texas battery largely contributed.

At Richmond, Kentucky, the battery bore an active and gallant part in the defeat of General Nelson's fine army. After this battle two more guns were added to the battery, and two new lieutenants were necessary. To fill these vacancies W. J. Sanders and M. L. Fleishl were elected. The battery then pushed on to Covington, but fell back in time to participate in the battle of Perryville, and took an active part in all the battles of that campaign. At Chickamauga, that fierce and bloody contest, the Texans fought their guns with unusual gallantry, pushing them forward by hand in the very face of the enemy. This was doubtless the most sanguinary battle in which this battery took part, and the reports of the officers show that its brave members well maintained the reputation of Texans for gallantry. At Missionary Ridge it also bore a conspicuous part, and maintained its well-earned reputation.

It then fell back with the army to Dalton, and in the following spring participated in what is called the Georgia campaign, from Stony Face to Resaca. During this campaign there were but few days when the guns of the Texans were not heard reverberating among the Georgia hills.

It was also with General Hood's campaign into Tennessee, and participated in all the engagements during that unfortunate expedition. During the retreat of General Hood's army, this battery, being with the rear-guard, was one day surrounded by the Fourth United States Regular Cavalry, and the guns wrested from the unarmed artillerymen ; but the men made their escape, and managed to reach Columbus, Mississippi, with the Confederate army. From this place the company was sent to Mobile, Alabama, to man the siege-guns in the fortifications at that city. After the evacuation of Mobile the company was again equipped with a complete outfit for field service, but never got an opportunity to use it, as it was soon afterwards surrendered near Meridian, Mississippi.

This is the only Texas battery of artillery which served east of the Mississippi River, and its record for gallantry and efficient service is as much a matter of pride to Texans as the enviable record of many Texas regiments of infantry and cavalry. It participated in battles and skirmishes the enumeration of which will give a correct idea of its activity. The following is a list of the engagements in which its guns were heard :—

1, Elkhorn, March 7 and 8, 1862 ; 2, Farmington, Mississippi, May 9, 1862 ; 3, Richmond, Kentucky, August 20, 1862 ; 4, Murfreesboro', Tennessee, December 30 and 31, 1862 ; 5, Liberty Gap, Tennessee, June 30, 1863 ; 6, Elk River, Tennessee, July 3, 1863 ; 7, Chickamauga, Georgia, September 18 and 19, 1863 ; 8, Missionary Ridge, Tennessee, November 25, 1863 ; 9, Resaca, Georgia, May 14 and 15, 1864 ; 10, New Hope Church, Georgia, May 20, 1864 ; 11, Lost Mountain, Georgia, June 15 to 17, 1864 ; 12, Mount Zion Church, Georgia, June 22, 1864 ; 13, Kenesaw Mountain, Georgia, June 23 to July 3, 1864 ; 14, Beech-Tree Creek, Georgia, July 20, 1864 ; 15, Atlanta, Georgia, July 22, 1864 ; 16, four miles west of Atlanta, August 6, 1864 ; 17, Baugh House, August 12, 1864 ; 18, Jonesboro', Georgia, August 31, 1864 ; 19, Florence, Alabama, October 30, 1864 ; 20, Shoal Creek, Alabama, November 5, 1864 ; 21, Columbia, Tennessee, November 29, 1864 ; 22, Franklin, Tennessee, November 30, 1864 ; 23, Nashville, Tennessee, December 15 and 16, 1864 ; 24, West Harpeth, Tennessee, December 17, 1864 ; 25, siege of Mobile, Alabama, February and March, 1865.

Christmas's Battery. (Consolidated with Jones's Battery.)—Captain, H. H. Christmas ; first lieutenant, Walter W. Blow ; second lieutenant, Charles I. Evans ; second lieutenant, C. B. Gardiner.

This battery was organized as a four-gun battery in the fall of 1863, was stationed several months at San Antonio, and, after failing to raise enough men to fully man it, it was consolidated with O. G. Jones's battery, Lieutenant Evans taking one section into that battery, Lieutenant Gardiner going into Nichols's battery, and Lieutenant Blow and Captain Christmas taking staff positions. While stationed at San Antonio, one section of this battery under Lieutenant Gardiner was engaged at the battle of Las Rucias Ranch and did effective service.

Jones's Battery.—Captain, O. G. Jones ; first lieutenant, C. H. Williams ; first lieutenant, Charles I. Evans ; second lieutenant, S. Gregory ; second lieutenant, J. M. Smith.

This battery was organized early in 1863 as a four-gun battery, and served at Galveston part of the time, and was also in Louisiana at the capture of Brashear City. In the fall of 1864 it was made a six-gun battery by the addition of another section from H. H. Christmas's battery, under Lieutenant Charles I. Evans, and sent to Brownsville, where it remained till the close of hostilities. This battery has the distinguished honor of firing the last gun of the war at the battle of Palmito Ranch, May 13, 1865.

Greer's Rocket Battery.—Captain John S. Greer.

Was in service at Galveston and Houston, Texas, and in Louisiana.

Degé's Battery. (Formerly Fox's.)—Captain, A. E. Degé ; lieutenant, —— Goodfellow ; lieutenant, —— McConnell ; lieutenant, —— Hopkins.

Was in service on the Gulf coast, part of the time as heavy artillery.

Dashiell's Battery. (Formerly Abat's.)—Captain, George R. Dashiell.

Was in the State most of the time, but served a short while in the Indian Territory.

Teel's Battery.—Captain, Trevanion T. Teel.

There seem to have been two batteries of light artillery from Texas called by this name. It is well known that the one commanded by Captain T. T. Teel was in the Arizona campaign, and at the same time another Teel's battery is mentioned as being among the Texas troops in Missouri, and Arkansas, and as going to Corinth, Mississippi, with General Van Dorn's army.

Valverde Battery.—Captain, Joseph D. Sayers; lieutenant; captain, T. D. Nettles; lieutenant, John Reily.

This battery was captured from the Union army at the battle of Valverde by Sibley's brigade, and was manned by volunteers from different Texas regiments in Arizona. It performed valiant service in that campaign, and afterwards distinguished itself in Louisiana. (See the history of Green's brigade.)

Pratt's Battery. (Afterwards Hynson's Battery.)—Captain, J. H. Pratt; lieutenant; captain, H. C. Hynson.

This battery served in the Indian Territory, Arkansas, and Missouri.

Howell's Battery.—Captain, Sylvanus Howell; first lieutenant, W. A. Routh; first lieutenant, B. F. Fuller; second lieutenant, C. H. Stith; second lieutenant, William Green.

Served in the Indian Territory and Arkansas.

Creuzbaur's Battery. (Afterwards Welhausen's.)—Captain, E. Creuzbaur.

Served in Texas and Louisiana during the whole war, part of the time as heavy artillery on the coast. May 6, 1864, with six field-guns, it took part in the capture of Calcasieu, Louisiana, and did efficient service in that State.

Fox's Battery Light Artillery. (Afterwards Degé's.)—Captain, P. Fox. (See Degé's Battery, *ante.*)

Lee's Battery.—Captain, Roswell W. Lee; lieutenant, Henry Forrester.

This battery served with distinction in the Indian Territory and Arkansas.

Gonzales's Texas Battery. (Also called Hughes's Battery.)—Captain, Thomas Gonzales; lieutenant, Henry Angel.

Was on duty along the coast during the war.

Neal's Battery.—Captain, B. F. Neal.

This battery was on duty along the coast, most of the time at Corpus Christi and Saluria.

Daniels's Battery.—Captain, James M. Daniels; lieutenant, S. M. Hamilton; lieutenant, J. J. Wilson.

Served in Arkansas and Louisiana.

Wilson's Battery.—Captain, —— Wilson.

Was in service at Houston, Galveston, and Sabine Pass.

Gibson's Battery.—Captain, William E. Gibson.

Served in the State, along the coast during the war.

Krumbhaar's Battery. (Afterwards Stafford's.)—Captain, W. Butler Krumbhaar.

Was in service in the Indian Territory and Arkansas.

Nichols's Battery.—Captain, William H. Nichols; lieutenant, Charles B. Gardiner; lieutenant, Antonio Robira.

Was stationed at Galveston until the spring of 1864, when it was sent to Louisiana to meet General Banks's Red River expedition.

Shea's Battery.—Captain, D. D. Shea.

Was in the State, doing service along the coast.

Hughes's Battery. (Also called Gonzales's Battery.)—Captain, Robert J. Hughes. (See Gonzales's Battery.)

Moseley's Battery.—Captain, William G. Moseley.

Was in the service in Arkansas and Louisiana, taking an active part in the repulse of General Banks's Red River expedition in the spring of 1864.

Haldeman's Battery.—Captain Horace Haldeman; first lieutenant, A. R. Graves; first lieutenant, G. P. Bass; second lieutenant, Charles Spann; second lieutenant, W. P. Allen.

Was in the service in Arkansas and Louisiana, taking a conspicuous part in the repulse of General Banks's Red River expedition in the spring of 1864.

McMahan's Battery.—Captain, M. V. McMahan; first lieutenant; captain, Henry B. Fontaine; second lieutenant, James Nolan; second lieutenant, Sam Houston.

Was stationed at Galveston until the spring of 1864, when it went to Louisiana and assisted in the repulse of General Banks's Red River campaign. At the battle of Mansfield its officers and men were particularly distinguished for gallantry.

Hynson's Battery. (Formerly Pratt's.)—Captain, H. C. Hynson. (See Pratt's Battery.)

Willke's Battery.—Captain, H. Willke.

Was in the service along the Gulf coast all the time, sometimes manning the siege-guns at the different coast fortifications, and at other times serving as light artillery.

Stafford's Battery. (Formerly Krumbhaar's.)—Captain, William M. Stafford. (See Krumbhaar's Battery.)

Welhausen's Battery. (Formerly Creuzbaur's.)—Captain, Charles Welhausen. (See Creuzbaur's Battery.)

Maclin's Battery.—Captain, Sackfield Maclin.

Served altogether within the State.

Abat's Battery. (Afterwards Dashiell's.)—Captain, E. Abat. (See Dashiell's Battery.)

Ruess's Battery.—Captain, J. M. Ruess.

This battery did service at Pass Cavallo and other points along the coast, sometimes as heavy artillery.

Marmion's Battery.—Captain, —— Marmion.

Served in the State.

Mechling's Battery.—Captain, W. T. Mechling.

Served in the State.

Howe's Battery.—Captain, M. G. Howe.

Served on the coast as heavy artillery.

Edgar's Battery.—Captain, William Edgar; first lieutenant, John B. Grumbles; first lieutenant, J. M. Ransom; second lieutenant, N. R. Gomey; second lieutenant, H. Hall.

This battery was raised as a part of Waul's Legion, but went to Arkansas in 1862, and was actively engaged in that State and in Louisiana. It was particularly distinguished in the campaign in the latter State in the spring of 1864, fighting General Banks during his celebrated Red River expedition. During the retreat of General Taylor before General Banks, this battery, with a portion of the Second Louisiana Cavalry, was the rear-guard of his army, and at Henderson's Hill, the night of March 21, 1864, they were both surprised and captured by Brigadier-General Joseph A. Mower, of the Union army.

TEXAS TROOPS IN THE UNION ARMY.

First Texas Cavalry Regiment.—Colonel, Edmund J. Davis; lieutenant-colonel, John L. Haynes; lieutenant-colonel, Jesse Stancel; major, Alfred L. Holt; major, Edward J. Noyes.

This regiment served along the coast of Texas whenever the Union army was in possession, and whenever they left Texas it returned to New Orleans and served in Louisiana.

Second Texas Cavalry Regiment. (Never fully organized.)—Colonel, John L. Haynes; lieutenant-colonel, George W. Paschal.

Vidal's Company Partisan Rangers.—Adrian I. Vidal was the captain of this company, composed entirely of Mexicans, raised for the Confederate army, and, after serving several months in that army, deserted in a body to the Union army.

July 14, 1864, by order of Major-General E. R. S. Canby, at New Orleans, the Second Regiment was consolidated with the First under the name of the First Texas Volunteer Cavalry.

Hart's Cavalry Company.—Martin D. Hart, of Hunt County, raised this company in the early part of the war, and engaged in active partisan service as an independent company in Missouri and Arkansas. Hart was captured by the Confederates, court-martialed, and shot.

CHAPTER III.

HOOD'S TEXAS BRIGADE.

BY MRS. A. V. WINKLER.

EARLY in the spring of 1861 a number of companies were formed in different portions of Texas with the purpose of joining the army in Virginia, as the men were impressed with the belief that the fiercest fighting would be done on the soil of the Old Dominion. The men forming these companies were among the best in the State,—young, strong, vigorous, brave, from all trades and professions, determined to conquer and willing to die for the cause. These volunteers for the Virginia battle-fields were formed into about thirty companies, averaging over a hundred men each, and were placed in camps of instruction at scattered points.

Colonel John Marshall, editor of the *State Gazette*, Austin, went to Richmond, Virginia, and upon his return brought the information that these troops would be received into the Virginia army with company officers, but would not be organized into regiments until they reached Richmond, as the President reserved to himself the authority of appointing regimental officers.

This was discouraging to those who had counted upon going off with flying colors, fully prepared to enter the arena at once. Many gave up the idea of going to Virginia and joined other branches of the service operating in Texas and the Trans-Mississippi Department. A sufficient number, however, to form three regiments adhered to their purpose of going to Virginia.

They were ordered to rendezvous at Harrisburg. Brigadier-General Earl Van Dorn was then in command of the Department of Texas. He was ordered to send on these volunteers at once, but kept them in camp of instruction until he could send a messenger to Richmond to remonstrate against the order. When the messenger returned, "General Van Dorn was to obey orders." This weary waiting was trying to the men so anxious to reach the seat of war. Several companies left without orders, and reached Richmond just after the battle of Manassas. These afterwards composed the First Texas Regiment.

The first instalment sent off by authority reached Richmond on September 12, 1861, after many difficulties in obtaining transportation. They were stationed below Rocketts, on the York River Railroad, near the city, in what was styled "Camp Texas," in honor of the "Lone Star."

As soon as their camp was arranged President Davis rode out and made them a speech, giving them a hearty welcome to the Confederate service in Virginia, using this language: "Texans! The troops from other States have their reputations to gain, but the sons of the defenders of the Alamo have theirs to maintain.

I am sure you will be faithful to the trust." How faithful they proved, their record shows.

The Fifth Regiment organized with J. J. Archer, colonel; J. B. Robertson, lieutenant-colonel; Q. T. Quattlebaum, major; Colonel Robertson the only Texan. The Fourth Regiment was organized with John B. Hood, colonel; John Marshall, of Austin, lieutenant-colonel; and Bradfute Warwick, of Richmond, Virginia, major. Had President Davis looked with prophetic ken into the future, he could have made no wiser selections.

Colonel Hood was six feet two inches in height, broad, full chest, light hair and beard, blue eyes, commanding in appearance, dignified in demeanor, gentlemanly and courteous to officers and men; a man to hold the love and command the respect of all who came within his influence. He had seen active service on the West Texas frontier, had been severely wounded in an engagement with Indians years before, loved Texas, had tendered his sword to the Confederacy some time before, and was awaiting orders at Richmond. He soon felt himself identified with Texas troops.

General John B. Hood.

The rank and file were composed of very young men. Take the Texas regiments altogether, the privates were the very youngest in the whole Confederate army,—many of them only fifteen years of age. Well was it for them morally that their officers were men of sterling worth and high-toned principles.

The organization being complete, new life became infused into officers and men, and a system of drilling was inaugurated destined to draw forth all the soldierly qualities of the troops.

In November orders were received to send the baggage away and prepare for the march. Every eye brightened, every heart was joyful, but not for several days did they know they would join General Joseph E. Johnston on the Potomac at Dumfries. Part of the way was made by cars, part by marching. They understood the enemy was awaiting them, and went forward at a lively rate, until informed there was no demonstration on this side the river.

When Dumfries was reached and a camping-place selected, the men proceeded to build winter quarters, as the weather became very cold and disagreeable. Here they were joined by the First Texas Regiment, under command of Colonel Louis T. Wigfall. This body of men, as before stated, had gone to Virginia at their own expense, one company at a time, while awaiting orders in Texas, until they numbered six companies, and were organized first as a battalion, with Colonel Wigfall in command. When a sufficient number arrived they were formed into a regiment.

During the reorganization of the army, when regiments from the same State were thrown together to more closely identify their interests, the First Texas was ordered to join the Fourth and Fifth at Dumfries. Louis T. Wigfall was colonel, Hugh McLeod lieutenant-colonel, and A. T. Rainey major.

Colonel Wigfall was United States Senator from Texas. He was intellectual, brilliant, and talented, a fine, forcible speaker, an argumentative reasoner; considered in Texas one of her most gifted sons. He early took a stand with his own people, speaking with vim and energy on the subject so dear to his heart,—State's rights. Lieutenant-Colonel McLeod was a valiant soldier in the Texas Revolution, and had led the Santa Fé expedition in 1841. Major Rainey was a lawyer, practising his profession at Palestine, Texas, previous to the war.

These regiments—First, Fourth, and Fifth—were now organized as the Texas Brigade. Colonel Wigfall was appointed brigadier-general, and, at Colonel McLeod's death, Colonel Rainey was in command of the First Regiment.

The other officers assisted Colonel Hood in all his plans, and nothing but good feeling existed between them all during that first winter, spent in the sleet, snow, and cold of the Dumfries camp.

Details from each regiment were made for officers to return to Texas on recruit-

"Wigfall Mess" at Camp Dumfries.

ing service. The cabinet officers of the government were particularly anxious to get more regiments from Texas and fill up those decimated by sickness. Those appointed to this service succeeded in obtaining new members for regiments already in the field, but no new regiment was ever added to the brigade from their own State. The Eighteenth Georgia, and a portion of Hampton's Legion (South Carolina) for a while, afterwards formed a portion of the Texas Brigade.

Early in March General McClellan determined to advance upon Richmond *via* the peninsula. The Virginia peninsula, running down between the James and York Rivers, had been fortified and batteries placed at various important points, all under command of General J. B. Magruder, who, with a force not exceeding eight thousand, had by skilful manœuvres occupied this territory with Confederate troops.

When General McClellan moved his base of operations, it necessitated also the removal of the Confederates near the Potomac. On March 5 the pleasant relations

at Dumfries were broken by a detail being ordered from the Texas Brigade to report to General Wade Hampton, to act as rear-guard to his command as it moved back *via* Manassas to Fredericksburg. On March 8 the brigade was decamped.

March 11, Colonel Hood received notice of his appointment as brigadier-general, and that he was assigned to the Texas Brigade. While this was gratifying, because of the close intimacy with the men of the brigade while colonel of the Fourth Regiment, yet it gave him some annoyance.

General Wigfall had been elected by the Texas legislature as Confederate Senator, and had, therefore, left the field, but Colonel Archer, of the Fifth Regiment, ranked him by seniority, and it was not customary to promote officers over the head of their superiors. Colonel Archer acted nobly on this occasion, went to General Hood, was one of the first to congratulate him upon the honor conferred, and expressed his earnest approbation of the appointment and entire willingness to serve under him. To a man as proud and sensitive as General Hood this was a pleasing episode, for, had Colonel Archer acted otherwise, it would have been exceedingly disagreeable.

The troops crossed the Rappahannock at Falmouth, and took position near Fredericksburg; from thence marched by Milford Station. Here they took the cars for Ashland, a small village above Richmond, on the Fredericksburg Road. Here they again took up the line of march for Yorktown, where they arrived in good condition, considering the weather, which General Hood pronounced the worst he had ever endured in a march.

At Yorktown they were assigned to the reserve corps, and camped upon the ground occupied by Washington's army during the Revolutionary War. A line of fortifications had been thrown up by General Magruder, and they were daily detailed to act as sharp-shooters,—the Federal pickets advancing within two hundred yards of their works. Not much damage was done, as only a few were even wounded, but they watched one another's movements with sleepless vigilance.

The evacuation of the peninsula became imperatively necessary, from the fact that the troops were confronted by a superior force, and flanked right and left by navigable streams, occupied solely by the enemy's fleet. The Texas Brigade acted again as rear-guard from Yorktown, reaching Williamsburg.

The next morning a fierce onset was made. The Federals were repulsed with heavy loss, amounting to about five thousand, killed, wounded, and missing, the Confederates about twenty-five hundred.

It became evident next day that the Federals were only trying to retard the progress of the evacuation, and were landing troops by gunboats and transports up York River at Eltham's Landing, opposite the village of West Point, the terminus of the York River Railroad, which runs from that place, about forty miles, to Richmond. Here, too, the Pamunkey and Mattapony Rivers unite, forming York River, and the design was to cut the Confederate army in twain right here and intercept them, while McClellan advanced upon Richmond.

General Franklin landed two regiments from his gunboats on York River at Eltham's Landing, near the village of Barhamsville, New Kent County, May 7. The Texas Brigade was marching as rear-guard, and encountered the Federal picket-line which had been thrown out. General Hood immediately ordered his men to

move up, which they did at double-quick, and the line of battle was formed on the brow of the hill. Beyond this hill, which had a precipitous descent, was an open field six or seven hundred yards in width. Beyond this were five or six companies of the enemy, who fell back into the timber, our men firing some random shots. General Hood ordered Company B to act as skirmishers. They advanced across the open field, entered the timber, and commenced a running fight. Another and another company was ordered to the support of the skirmishers, until six were now engaged. The Federals made a stand behind an old mill-dam, and a spirited engagement ensued. The firing became general, and the enemy, many of their guns missing fire, threw them down and fled.

While the Fourth Regiment was thus engaged, Colonel A. T. Rainey, of the First Regiment, ordered his men to attack the left wing. Getting his regiment into position, they received the fire well on an open road, the Federals in the brush. The slaughter was so great that Colonel Rainey ordered his men to fall back into the woods about one hundred yards, where they were halted and commanded to kneel and await the approach of the enemy's force. He was exceedingly nervous about whether his men or himself would stand fire, as they were all raw troops, but was compelled to appear cool and collected to inspire confidence in his men. When the regiment fell back, the Federals, supposing they were retreating, came on with a yell to within thirty steps. The Texans unflinchingly received the fire, pouring volley after volley into their ranks. After fighting about half an hour, and discovering the Federals did not advance, the Texans were ordered to rise and charge. They gave a yell and sprang forward. The Federals, seeing the situation, turned and fled to their gunboats, about four or five hundred yards distant, with the Texans in full pursuit.

General Hood arrived with his staff just then. Perceiving that they were about to run under the fire of the gunboats, a courier was despatched to order Colonel Rainey to halt. They did not obey the order. General Hood himself now came up and ordered, "Colonel Rainey, halt your regiment!" This order was obeyed. In this action the Texans engaged were about seven hundred; Federals, eighteen hundred or two thousand. Lieutenant-Colonel Black, Captain Decatur, and twenty privates were killed and some thirty or forty wounded. The Federal loss was three hundred killed and wounded, and one hundred and twenty-six prisoners, according to General Hood's official report.

This affair was of great importance. President Davis, in conversation with a Texas Senator, said, in speaking of the Texas Brigade: "They saved the rear of the army and the whole of our baggage-train." General Gustave Smith, in a letter to Colonel Horace Randall, said: "The Texans won immortal honor for themselves, their State, and their commander, General Hood, at the battle of Eltham's Landing, opposite West Point."

The Texas Brigade was drawn up in line of battle on May 8 in front of Dr. Tyler's residence, five miles west of New Kent Court-House, but the enemy made no attempt to attack. They moved up the road and formed a new line of defence, until the army could take position near Richmond. The next day they marched to the Chickahominy, a distance of six miles, but the road was blocked with baggage-trains and artillery, the mud fearful, while the rain poured in torrents. After many

vexations the Chickahominy was at last passed, and they were safe on the Richmond side, at a place called "Pine Island," three miles from the city.

On May 26 they received orders to march, and, after going to and fro along the Chickahominy, finally moved down the Nine-Mile Road to within a mile and a half of the enemy, where they halted and waited for the signal of battle.

The Texas Brigade was under fire during the two days' fight at Seven Pines (May 31 to June 1), but not directly engaged, much to the chagrin of the men. After the battle they were thrown to the front. Every day two hundred men and the requisite number of officers were detailed to act as spies and sharp-shooters. These men operated beyond and independent of the regular pickets, and became a terror to the enemy.

On the morning of June 7, a party, under Lieutenant Jemison, of the First Regiment, Lieutenant Barziza, of the Fourth, and Lieutenant Nash, of the Fifth, was ordered by General Hood to drive in the enemy's pickets. They attacked the outposts. The pickets fled pell-mell, but, perceiving that there was only a small force, returned and resisted the advance of the Texans. A regiment of Federals came in sight, and the Texans dropped back under cover of their batteries, having lost six men and the Federals about fifty. General Hood issued an order complimenting officers and men for the brave attack.

General Robert E. Lee was now placed in command, and thenceforward directed the movements of the army in front of Richmond. Just at this juncture of affairs General Lee formed his plan of attack upon General McClellan. As part of the general movement to execute that plan, the Texas Brigade, belonging to Whiting's division, moved by railroad *via* Lynchburg to Charlottesville, and thence to Staunton. The men were astonished at this move, and were instructed when asked where they were going to reply, "I don't know."

When they reached Staunton they joined General Jackson, and orders were issued to return at once to Charlottesville and Hanover Junction. From Ashland the troops were marched in a southeasterly direction on the morning of June 26. Below the city the Confederates attacked the intrenched enemy at Mechanicsville, only three miles from the city. Night brought an end to the fighting, and the Federals retreated to Gaines's Farm, where they were strongly intrenched. Next morning the attack was renewed. As soon as General Lee was advised that General Jackson had arrived and made his connection at Cold Harbor, the attack was made simultaneously along the whole line.

It was on this memorable June 27 that Hood's Texas Brigade made the reputation which one of their number quaintly said "nearly exhausted them to achieve, and nearly finished them to maintain." The battle had waged hot and thick, but no break was made in the intrenchments. The Confederates marched boldly up, but were mowed down by a blinding, continuous shower of shot and shell, and were unable to successfully make any headway against the Federal line.

About four o'clock in the afternoon General Lee came up to General Hood and told him the works must be carried. "Can you break his line?" General Hood replied: "I will try."

The Texas Brigade consisted of the First, Fourth, and Fifth Texas Regiments and the Eighteenth Georgia Regiment. Whiting's division consisted of the Fourth

Alabama, Second and Eleventh Mississippi, Sixth North Carolina, the Texas Brigade, and the Hampton Legion. The division, with the exception of Hood's brigade, had been actively engaged for some time when General Lee spoke to General Hood. The latter says:

"I immediately formed my brigade in line of battle, with Hampton's Legion on the left. My line was established and moved forward, regiment by regiment, when I discovered, as the disposition of the Eighteenth Georgia was completed, an open field on its right. Holding the Fourth Texas in reserve, I ordered the advance and galloped into the open field, from which point I could see at a distance of about eight hundred yards the position of the Federals.

"They were heavily intrenched upon the side of an elevated ridge. At the foot of the slope ran Powhite Creek, which stream, together with the abatis in front of their works, constituted a formidable obstruction to our approach, whilst batteries, supported by masses of infantry, crowned the crest of the hill in the rear, and long-range guns were posted upon the south side of the Chickahominy in readiness to enfilade our advancing column. The ground from which I made these observations was open the entire distance to their intrenchments. I determined to advance from that point, to make a strenuous effort to pierce the enemy's fortifications, and if possible to put him to flight.

"I therefore marched the Fourth Texas by the right flank into this open field, halted and dressed the line while under fire of the long-range guns, and gave positive instructions that no man should fire until I gave the order, for I knew if the men were allowed to fire they would halt to load, break the alignment, and very likely never reach the breastworks. I, moreover, ordered them not only to keep together, but in line,—that I would lead the charge.

"'Forward, march!' was sounded, and we moved at a rapid, but not a double-quick pace. Meantime my regiments on the left had advanced some distance to the front through the wood and swamp.

"Onward we marched under the constantly increasing shower of shot and shell, while to our right could be seen some of our troops making their way to the rear and others lying down under a galling fire.

"Soon we attained the crest of the bold ridge, within about one hundred and fifty yards of the breastworks. Here was concentrated upon us from batteries in front and flank a fire of shell and canister, which ploughed through our ranks with deadly effect. At a quickened pace we continued to advance without firing a shot, down the slope, over a body of our soldiers lying on the ground, to and across Powhite Creek, when, amid the fearful roar of musketry, I gave the order to fix bayonets and charge!

"With a ringing shout we dashed up the steep hill and over the breastworks upon the very heads of the enemy. The Federals, panic-stricken, rushed precipitately to the rear upon infantry in support of the artillery. Suddenly the whole joined in the flight towards the valley beyond. At this juncture some twenty guns in rear of the Federal line on the hill to the left opened fire upon the Fourth Texas Regiment, which changed front and charged in that direction. I despatched every officer of my staff to the main portion of the brigade in the wood to the left, instructing them to bear the glad tidings that the Fourth Texas had pierced the

enemy's rear and to deliver orders to push forward with utmost haste. At the same moment I discovered a Federal brigade marching up the slope from the valley beyond, evidently with the purpose to re-establish the line.

"Meantime the long line of blue and steel to the right and left wavered and finally gave way as the Eighteenth Georgia, First and Fifth Texas, and Hampton Legion (South Carolina) moved forward from right to left, completing a grand left wheel of the brigade into the very heart of the enemy.

"Simultaneously with this movement burst forth a tumultuous shout of victory, which was taken up along the whole Confederate line. I mounted my horse, rode forward, and found the Fourth Texas and Eighteenth Georgia had charge of a Federal regiment which had surrendered to them."

General Jackson says officially: "In this charge, in which upwards of a thousand men fell, killed and wounded, before the fire of the enemy, and in which fourteen pieces of artillery and nearly a regiment were captured, the Fourth Texas, under the lead of General Hood, was the first to pierce these strongholds and seize the guns."

The day was won, but at a terrible sacrifice. Hundreds were killed, hundreds wounded and suffering upon the battle-field. The brave Colonel Marshall, of the Fourth, was killed early in the charge, cheering his men to victory. Lieutenant-Colonel Bradfute Warwick then assumed full command, and with matchless daring led his men through the shower of death; picking up a fallen flag he planted it upon the breastworks in the supreme moment of victory, was stricken down, and fell mortally wounded. The wounded were taken to Richmond to the hospitals on litters and in ambulances; the dead buried on the battle-field.

General McClellan had occupied a semicircular line from the vicinity of Ashland to James River, a distance of about twenty miles, while the Confederates were inside the semicircle.

By the turn of the tide at Gaines's Farm General McClellan was compelled to give up his northern strongholds, including possession of the Fredericksburg and Central Railroad. Thus cut off from his avenues of supply, it was soon known that he was retreating towards the James River. Following up the retreat, General Stuart with his cavalry was doing good service in the direction of White House, each day capturing and destroying property and sending large bodies of prisoners to the rear.

General Hood was ordered to advance on Saturday, but was compelled to wait until a bridge destroyed by the enemy could be repaired.

On Sunday, June 29, occurred the fight at Savage Station, and at the close of the day McClellan was eluding the Confederates in full retreat. On Monday the pursuit was resumed, the troops advancing upon the enemy at Frazier's Farm, on the New Market Road. The Federals made a desperate resistance. All day the men fought, as regiment after regiment was thrown against the Confederate advancing column. Night closed with the battle still raging. The day's work did not end until half-past ten o'clock, when the Federals stopped their advance, "concluding with the achievement of the field, under the most trying circumstances, which the enemy with overwhelming numbers had not succeeded in reclaiming." This was one of the most remarkable long-contested fights that had occurred,—the loss dreadful to contemplate.

On Tuesday, the Federals continued their flight towards their gunboats, and were now in communication with their supplies.

At Malvern Hill they occupied the crest of the hill, fortified and prepared to receive an attack,—commanding an undulating field which fell to the right into a plain or meadow. Here their batteries were massed, strongly supported by infantry,—everything ready for another terrible day's work. General Magruder commenced the attack. About five o'clock, after being engaged all day, the order was given to charge the works and drive the men from their position. The troops sprang to the encounter, rushing into the field at full speed. The enemy's breastworks sent forth a murderous storm of grape and canister. Officers and men went down by hundreds, but still the line dashed on, until two-thirds of the distance across the field was accomplished. The line wavered and fell back to the woods. Twice was the effort made with the same result. The conflict slackened as night came on. The men had not carried the fortifications, but they occupied the field and posted their pickets within one hundred yards of the Federal guns. It was a stubborn assault on the part of the Confederates, and, while not a brilliant victory, as Gaines's Farm, gave the enemy no advantage, and was the last of the "Seven Days' Fights."

Malvern Hill is considered by soldiers and historians the most sanguinary of that series of bloody engagements. The official report places the Confederate loss at three thousand, the Federals fifteen thousand, but there is no doubt the Confederate loss was greater than reported. Strong men shudder when they recall Malvern Hill,—lines rushing on, hurled back, others taking their places, the living sweeping over the dead, and still the battle raging.

The Federal army was not annihilated, but was driven to the cover of their gunboats. The siege of Richmond was raised, a large army had been put to flight, while the Federal government forgot to boast of the speedy termination of the war.

The wounded of the Texas Brigade were taken to the hospitals, and their officers and friends found it difficult to visit them and bestow the little attention they could render.

The brigade was on picket duty for a while after hostilities ceased, and finally were again ordered on the march, and pitched their tents on the same ground from which they had moved on the morning of May 31 to march to the battle-field of Seven Pines.

"Thus they had completed a tour of five hundred miles, passing through several bloody engagements, and at the end of forty days were at the same place they started." Here they rested for a while, and the chaplain and officers proceeded to the city to look after their stricken comrades. Finding it impossible to give any concerted care to their wounded, scattered sometimes three or four miles apart, it was decided to procure a building, and with the help of the ladies, and some assistance from the government, forty-six beds were soon ready for occupancy. Rev. Nicholas Davis was placed in charge, and a Texas hospital became an institution of the city of Richmond. Mrs. President Davis and other friends of the Texans rendered efficient help. The Young Men's Christian Association also took an interest in the enterprise, providing clothing, food, and other supplies.

Here the men met comrades of their own State and were better satisfied, while Mr. Davis attended to their spiritual as well as temporal wants.

During the year this hospital was in operation. Afterwards the surgeon in charge was Dr. Lunday, a Texas physician, who practised his profession after the war in Houston, and died in that city. The members of the brigade will ever cherish his memory with kindliest feelings of regard because of his work in behalf of the sick and wounded of Hood's soldiers at Richmond, Virginia.

The government at Washington issued a call for three hundred thousand more troops, and Major-General Pope was placed in command of the Army of the Potomac, who changed the base of operations back to the Rappahannock River. He issued orders from "head-quarters in the saddle," boasted of his ability to cope with his adversary, until the newspapers North caught the inspiration and believed him the greatest leader of the age.

"Stonewall" Jackson had quietly left the lines below Richmond and made his way rapidly to the Rapidan. On August 8 his command engaged the Federals at the battle of Cedar Mountain,—one of the most severe and rapid engagements of the war, resulting in a decisive victory.

The Texas Brigade was not engaged in this battle. After resting and recruiting, as before stated, Whiting's division had been ordered to move north, but the destination was a mystery. General Jackson was gone, General Longstreet was gone, but under which leader they would fight was unknown. They took up the line of march until they reached the Rappahannock. The weather was hot and many were stricken with sunstroke. Still General Hood moved forward until he reached Freeman's Ford. He found the enemy had crossed in front of General Trimble. The battle was already begun. The artillery had been at work some time, and now the sharp-shooters were marking their objects.

The Texas Brigade took position on General Trimble's right, and Colonel McLaw's brigade on his left. The line of battle was formed, the order "Forward!" was given, the line of the Federals was instantly broken, and they were driven headlong into the river. The rout was complete; many were shot in the back, others while attempting to recross the river, and three hundred killed and wounded in the river and along the shore told the tale of this day's destruction.

The men had only green corn for food, as the wagons did not arrive until the night of the 23d. Soon the camp was busy cooking rations, when the order came to move. Supper was in every stage of preparation, except ready to eat, but military law must be obeyed. The next day they had time to cook, and continuing the march until, on the 28th, they reached Thoroughfare Gap. Jackson had passed through unmolested, but the Federals now occupied the gap, which was a narrow defile in the Bull Run Mountains, with crags and slopes close around, protected by a wall of stone on either side. General Hood had joined General Jones's division, and it was determined to force a passage through this strong position,—the advantage being on the Federal side.

General Jones's advance immediately opened fire, and, pressing vigorously on, he drove them before him from the slope and gap, and led his men to the other side. The whole line quickly followed, passed through, and bivouacked on the field beyond. About one hundred of the enemy were killed and captured in this en-

counter, with but few casualties on the rebel side, while General Jackson's cannon were distinctly heard in the direction of Manassas.

Next day the Texas Brigade was thrown to the front, and Lieutenant-Colonel Upton, of the Fifth Regiment, was placed in command of a picked force of about one hundred and fifty skirmishers, directed to act as advance-guard and drive the enemy before them. This gallant officer and his brave marksmen pushed the Federals so rapidly as to be frequently under the necessity of halting for their own troops to come up. Early in the day they came upon the main body of the Federals upon the plain of Manassas, having pursued the retreating guard eight miles.

Forming line of battle they awaited orders, as General Jackson was engaged upon the left in deadly combat. The division was formed across the pike, Hood's brigade posted on the right and McLaw's on the left. Between Hood's left and Jackson's right, which rested about one mile south of Groveton, there was a gap of several hundred yards. Here were planted the Washington Artillery, of New Orleans, and several other batteries, commanding the ground over which General Pope was advancing. He threw forward a heavy column, making a desperate effort to divide the line. The artillery opened fire, and the advance was repulsed. Again an advance was made, again driven back, the fight becoming general along the entire line of Jackson.

General Lee discovered reinforcements were coming to aid the discomfited Federals. General Hood was ordered by General Longstreet to make a demonstration on the enemy's left. Instantly the order was given, the flash of fire belched forth along the line, the din became horrible,—artillery thundering and infantry firing continuously. The advancing column wavered, fell back, took another position, advanced again, but were again driven back. Thus on and on they retreated until night put an end to the progress of troops and gave shelter to a vanquished army. About nine o'clock it was discovered that the Federals and Confederates were mixed up curiously. General Hood discovered the state of affairs, informed General Lee, and asked permission to call off his men, which was given, and at two o'clock in the morning they were withdrawn from the immediate presence of the enemy.

August 30 found the two armies lying close together. The Federals had moved up and occupied the ground Hood had abandoned for want of support. Picket firing and artillery duelling began at an early hour.

"Our line of battle was an obtuse crescent in shape and five miles long." The Federal line of battle conformed itself to the Confederate, and took also a crescent form.

Hood's brigade belonged to Longstreet's corps, and occupied a place on the extreme left. During the morning the fighting did not amount to more than an artillery duel. At one o'clock the Federals commenced a series of invitations to compel the Confederates to bring on the general fight by advancing both upon the right and left, but were promptly repulsed. Suddenly, at four o'clock, our batteries "belched forth a volley that seemed to shake the earth." A column of infantry had moved out to attack Jackson. A second and third column made their appearance, moving boldly forward until within range of small-arms. These troops were the crack corps of the Federals, under General Sykes and Morell. "As the

fight progressed, General Lee moved his batteries to the left and opened fire, only four hundred yards distant. The column broke, the men fell back to the rear. Jackson's men now went into the charge upon the scattering crowd, left without a leader." In the severe action Jackson's left advanced more rapidly than his right, and the line of battle became changed. Longstreet, who had hitherto not been engaged, took the golden opportunity to attack the left flank of the enemy in his front.

Hood's brigade, being on the left, charged the turnpike. Here occurred another brilliant achievement of these men, crowning Hood's Texans again with the laurels of a just renown for intrepid courage. Sickles's Excelsior Brigade of Zouaves had been for several days anxious to come in contact with the Texans. During the charge, while the men were steadily advancing upon the zouaves, who occupied an eminence with their batteries in the rear upon the brow of the hill, General Longstreet sent rapidly for General Hood. He had instructed Hood not to allow the division temporarily commanded by him to move so far forward as to throw itself beyond the prompt support of the troops he had ordered to the front.

General Hood, on leaving his men to receive his superior's instructions, gave the order to "press the enemy back to the bank, and then halt under the shelter of the hill." The temptation was too strong for them to halt, and they moved right on, up the hill to the battery of five pieces frowning down upon them and scattering destruction in their midst. The Texans advanced, and under the deadly fire succeeded in driving the zouaves beyond their guns.

When General Hood returned he found the brigade was not where he had ordered them to halt, but had run over the battery and were in the valley beyond, "pouring their deadly fire into those splendid troops which McClellan had eulogized so highly before Richmond." When he came up with them he said: "Boys, you don't know how proud I am of you! You have behaved gallantly! You have done nobly! You have fought like heroes!"

The day ended with victory for the Confederates on the plain of Manassas, thus twice baptized in the blood of heroes. The loss on both sides was severe. Lieutenant-Colonel Upton, of the Fifth Texas, was left dead upon the field, and Colonel Robertson, of the Fifth, was wounded while heading his men far out upon the front of the most advanced position.

Rev. Nicholas Davis says of the men engaged: "Colonel Wofford, of the Eighteenth Georgia (Hood's brigade), Lieutenant-Colonel Gary, of Hampton Legion, Lieutenant-Colonel Carter, commanding the Fourth Texas, and Major Townsend particularly distinguished themselves, as also did Captains Hunter, C. M. Winkler, E. A. Cunningham, Barrett, Mertin, Darden, Blanton, Barziza, and others. General Hood said of all engaged with him that day: 'As to their gallantry and unflinching courage, they stand unsurpassed in the history of the world.'"

The Texans captured during this engagement six stands of colors and five pieces of artillery. From all reliable sources it appears that General Lee had from one hundred and thirty-five to one hundred and forty thousand to contend with on this occasion, and according to Dr. Jones (his biographer), the whole Confederate force in Northern Virginia was only sixty-nine thousand five hundred and fifty-nine men able for active duty.

Our loss amounted to six thousand, while that of the Federals approximated thirty thousand. General Lee paroled seven hundred prisoners on the battle-field. When the roll was called in the Texas Brigade after this battle it was found to be reduced fully half its numbers,—killed, wounded, and missing. The wounded and dead Texans were scattered over a distance of two miles. Field hospitals were improvised, and many were taken to neighboring farm-houses and cared for by the ladies, many sent to hospitals at Warrenton, Gordonsville, and Charlottesville. After the dead were buried and the wounded cared for the march was continued, and General Lee manifested his plan of crossing the Potomac into Maryland.

Some time during the second battle of Manassas Hood's brigade captured some Federal ambulances. Major-General Evans, of South Carolina, ordered General Hood to turn them over to his men. This General Hood refused to do, saying he would cheerfully obey if he had been ordered to turn the captured property over to General Lee's quartermaster, but considered his men had a better right to them than troops from another State. General Evans was his superior in command, and ordered General Hood to be placed under arrest. On the march to Maryland he was ordered by General Longstreet to proceed to the rear at Culpeper Court-House and there await the assembly of a court-martial. General Lee became apprised of the matter, and sent instructions that he should remain with his command, but continue under arrest.

General Lee crossed the Potomac into Maryland on September 4. Longstreet's corps, to which was attached Hood's brigade, was finally massed at Hagerstown, after destroying the railroad bridge of the Baltimore and Ohio Road over the Monocacy River, which was effected by the Texans. From thence they moved through Frederick City and Boonsboro' to Hagerstown.

On the morning of the 14th they were ordered back to South Mountain to meet the advance of McClellan, who was endeavoring to "break through Boonsboro' Gap, divide our lines, and defeat our armies in detail, as General Jackson had gone with his troops to Harper's Ferry."

The Texans had grown very indignant at the injustice to General Hood, and were now ordered into line of battle just before reaching the gap. This was obeyed. Next came the command to ford the river. This was not obeyed. General Evans wanted to know the reason. "Give us Hood," they replied. "We will fight under no other!" General Evans became angry and threatened to turn a brigade upon them. This did not frighten them, so he sent to General Lee the message that the Texas Brigade had mutinied.

When the cause was explained, General Lee sent General Hood back to his men. When he was seen approaching, the brigade opened ranks and allowed him to pass through, and as he passed along the line hats flew up and cheer after cheer rent the air, notwithstanding they were in the face of the enemy. After reaching the head of the column the clear sounding "forward!" rang out and the men willingly obeyed.

General Lee said to him, in a voice betraying his emotion: "I will suspend your arrest until the impending battle is decided." He knew well the valuable services rendered by General Hood and his Texans, and could ill afford to sacrifice military etiquette to the danger confronting the army at this critical moment.

General D. H. Hill's division was already in and around Boonsboro' Gap, and the battle began at daylight. Longstreet arrived at four o'clock at the pass, and his men were rapidly sent into the mountains. The fortunes of the day were becoming desperate, when Longstreet's reinforcements arrived. "Evans was assigned to the extreme left, Drayton to the right, and Hood and his ragged Texans occupied the centre."

The Federals advanced over the rugged way, cheering at their success. General Hood was ordered to the right, as the troops on that side were giving away. He ordered the brigades under his command to fix bayonets; then, when the enemy came within one hundred yards, to charge. They obeyed with a genuine Confederate yell, and the Federals were driven back in confusion over and beyond the mountains. The ground lost was regained, and reinforcements were prevented from being sent against General Jackson, who was confronting General Miles at Harper's Ferry.

General Lee evidently had not expected to fight at Boonsboro', as General Hill had only been left there to watch the enemy while General Jackson went to Harper's Ferry and General Longstreet to Hagerstown. General McClellan had only decided to mass his troops after a despatch to General Hill fell into his hands, and by a masterly effort defeat the Confederates by preventing concert of action; hence this engagement.

After a long debate, Generals Lee, Longstreet, and Hill decided to fall back towards Sharpsburg, and accordingly the troops crossed the Antietam to Sharpsburg, where they took position on the morning of September 14. General Jackson, with the remaining divisions of Lee's army, after a forced march, reached the vicinity of Sharpsburg on the morning of September 16.

The Federals crossed the Antietam above the position of the Confederates. Having obtained possession of Compton's Gap on the direct road from Frederick City to Sharpsburg, they were pressing the Confederates and seemed determined upon a decisive battle. On the march to Sharpsburg General Hood's two brigades and Frobel's cavalry acted as rear-guard. The men had received no meat for several days, subsisting principally upon green corn and apples, but they were cheerful and defiant,—eager to meet the Federals again. During the afternoon of the 16th, Hood was ordered to take position in an open field near the Hagerstown Pike. This position of General Hood was intended to meet the advance of Federals who had crossed the Antietam beyond the ranges of the Confederate batteries. General Jackson was on Hood's left. During the same afternoon the enemy made an attack upon Hood, but his men repulsed them gallantly, driving them back some distance. Night put an end to the contest, leaving the two lines in such close quarters that the men were able to hear distinctly the orders of their commanding officers.

General Hood went in search of General Lee to request that his brigade be relieved from the presence of the enemy, as the men were suffering with hunger and fatigue. General Lee sent the brigades of Lawton, Trimble, and Hayes, of Ewell's division, to their relief, but exacted the promise that they should return to their former position at a moment's notice if necessary.

Now commenced a hunt for the supply-wagons. It was nearly morning before

the men had their food cooked,—many only preparing the meal when the message came, "General Lawton presents his compliments, with the request that you come at once to his support," and the brigade was at once ordered back to the relief of Lawton's troops. The Federals had commenced firing along General Lawton's front at three o'clock. As the Texans marched back to their position of the previous evening, a courier brought the tidings that General Lawton was wounded, and General Hood must take command. As they crossed the pike and filed through a gap in the fence, Lawton was borne in a litter past the men. To show the perilous position to which General Hood was now required to take his men we quote from General Jackson's official report :—

"General Lawton, commanding division, General Walker, commanding Lawton's brigade, were severely wounded. More than half of the brigades of Lawton and Hayes were killed or wounded, and more than a third of Trimble's, and all the regimental commanders in those brigades except two were either killed or wounded. Exhausted of their ammunition, thinned in their ranks, Jackson's division and the brigades of Trimble, Lawton, and Hayes retired to the rear, and Hood, of Longstreet's corps, again took the position from which he had been relieved."

The sun had just risen, and in Hood's front were drawn up in battle array heavy columns of Federal infantry, not less than two corps, says General Hood, and to oppose them General Hood had about two thousand effective men. With Lawson in command of one brigade and Wofford, of the Eighteenth Georgia, in command of the other, they marched forward to the assault.

The reader asks why a division and three brigades were removed and only two brigades sent to take their place at this critical moment. General McLaws had been ordered to move forward at the same time as General Hood, but he was behind.

The odds were greatly against them, yet they went gallantly into the fight, driving the enemy from the wood and cornfield upon his reserves, and forcing him to abandon his guns upon the left. General Hood, realizing his terrible position, sent to General Hill for troops to assist in holding the left of his line. Each time the courier returned with the answer, "No troops to spare."

Every man who withstood the carnage that day at Sharpsburg agrees that to Hood's brigade that was the most terrible day of the four years' service. The battle raged along the line for five miles, but the leaders did not realize that in front of Hood's men the enemy had massed his strength, did not know of McLaws's tardiness, and were abashed when they learned how Hood's Texans had withstood the hottest fire of the day. General Hood says in his official report :—

"Here I witnessed the most terrible clash of arms by far that occurred during the war. The two little giant brigades of my command wrestled with the mighty force, and, although they lost hundreds of their officers and men, they drove them from their position and forced them to abandon their guns on our left. One of these brigades numbered only eight hundred and fifty-four men."

The First Texas lost in the cornfield fully two-thirds of their number, and whole ranks of brave men were mowed down like grass. The enemy began an enfilading fire, as the Confederate line was in a right angle, and the division was compelled to move to the left and rear to close up the unoccupied space to Jackson's

right, that general having moved his troops, leaving their left entirely exposed. The most deadly combat waged until every round of ammunition was exhausted. General McLaws arrived at half-past ten A.M., when General Hood, with colors flying, moved to the wood in the rear. The men supplied themselves with ammunition and returned to the wood, which ground was held till a late hour in the afternoon, when they moved to the right and bivouacked for the night.

A correspondent of the New York *Herald* said of this part of the engagement: "That those ragged, filthy wretches, sick, hungry, and in all ways miserable, should prove such heroes in the fight is past explanation. Men never fought better. There was one regiment that stood up before the fire of two or three of our long-range batteries and regiments of infantry, and though the air was vocal with the whistle of bullets and the scream of shells, there they stood and delivered their fire in perfect order."

This regiment was Hood's brigade. They had passed through so many engagements their ranks had been thinned to the proportion of a regiment.

With regard to failure of reinforcements, General Hood remarked that "he was thoroughly of the opinion that the victory of that day would have been as thorough, quick, and complete as on the plains of Manassas if General McLaws had reached the field, even as early as nine o'clock."

Next day the two armies were confronting each other with no disposition to renew the attack. The Federals report that where General Hooker engaged the enemy's left (in front of Hood) there were twelve hundred and fifty wounded. The Confederate loss was heavy,—estimated at from five to nine thousand.

McClellan was in command, and said in his official report: "The next morning I found our loss had been so great and there was so much disorganization, I did not consider it proper to renew the attack, especially as I was sure of the arrival that day of two fresh divisions, amounting to about fourteen thousand men."

During the 18th, General Lee waited for General McClellan's advance, but as none was made, he withdrew his army to the south bank of the Potomac, crossing at Shepherdstown. No attempt was made to prevent the evacuation of Maryland. General McClellan's official report shows that he had in action at Sharpsburg eighty-seven thousand one hundred and sixty-four men. Official reports also show that General Lee's whole strength at Sharpsburg was only thirty-five thousand and fifty-four.

The New York *Tribune* indignantly summed up the situation: "General Lee leaves us the débris of his late camps, two disabled pieces of artillery, a few hundred stragglers, perhaps two thousand of his wounded, and as many of his unburied dead. He takes with him the supplies gathered in Maryland and the rich spoils of Harper's Ferry. The failure of Maryland to rise was the only defeat Lee sustained. His retreat over the Potomac was a masterpiece, and the manner in which he had combined Hill and Jackson for the envelopment of Harper's Ferry, while he checked the Federal column at Hagerstown and the gap, was probably the grandest achievement of the war."

The Texas Brigade marched to a point near Winchester, where they rested after their exhausting labors. General Lee was so much pleased with their record that he wrote to Senator Wigfall on the 21st urging him to secure more regiments from

Texas: "I rely upon those we have in all tight places, and fear I have to call upon them too often. With a few more such regiments as Hood now has, as an example of daring and bravery, I could feel more confident of the campaign."

On September 28, General Hood delivered an address to his men congratulating them upon their success and bravery. His arrest, which General Lee had suspended at Boonsboro' Gap, was never reconsidered; in lieu thereof he soon received the promotion to be major-general. During the reorganization of the army which followed, placing regiments of States together, the Texas Brigade lost the Eighteenth Georgia, which up to this time had stood shoulder to shoulder with them in every conflict. The men regretted the change, but gained the Third Arkansas Regiment, thus throwing all the regiments from the Trans-Mississippi together in the Texas Brigade.

"The loss sustained by the division of two brigades after leaving Richmond was two hundred and fifty-three killed upon the field, sixteen hundred and twenty-one wounded, and one hundred missing, making in all one thousand nine hundred and seventy-four."

While at Winchester, Generals Longstreet and Hood reviewed the troops. Regiment after regiment passed until there came one bearing a flag filled with holes. The ensign who bore it walked with a manly tread, proud of his colors. It was a Lone Star flag and belonged to the Fifth Regiment, had been pierced fifty-seven times, and seven ensigns had fallen under it. Another passed, made by Miss Loula Wigfall and presented to General Hood while commander of the Fourth Regiment. Nine ensigns had fallen under its folds on the field. It had gone through eight battles which had occupied eleven days, and brought off the battle-scars of sixty-seven balls and shot, besides the marks of three shells. This was the flag Colonel Warwick, of the Fourth, planted on the breastworks at Gaines's Farm and still clasped as he fell mortally wounded in the moment of victory.

The First Regiment carried its old flag through every battle until at Sharpsburg, when the ensign was shot down unobserved in the cornfield while changing position to prevent being flanked, and it fell into the hands of the enemy. They mounted it on a band-wagon, proud of their trophy, and carried it in triumph to General McClellan's head-quarters.

About the 26th, Longstreet's corps was again on the march, moving with the rest of the army, greatly improved by rest and discipline. The brigade halted at Culpeper Court-House, and here, November 1, Colonel J. B. Robertson, of the Fifth Regiment, by the recommendation of General Hood, received his appointment as brigadier-general, and entered at once upon his duties.

Here also came the intelligence that McClellan had been sacrificed to popular clamor, and that General Ambrose Burnside, of Rhode Island, was appointed to the command of the Federal army. He concentrated his force on the north bank of the Rappahannock. General Lee crossed to the south bank of the Rapidan, and by the latter part of November the Federal and Confederate armies were confronting each other at Fredericksburg.

When General Robertson was appointed to the command of the Texas Brigade he appointed Major J. H. Littlefield quartermaster. He found that through the

immense demands upon the quartermaster's department there was little prospect for obtaining sufficient clothing to protect the men from suffering through the winter. They were too far from home to find relief from that source. The matter coming to the knowledge of Mr. Davis, chaplain of the Fourth Regiment, he let their wants be known through the papers, and the ladies of Richmond and the Young Men's Christian Association nobly contributed to their necessities in the way of shoes, clothing, etc.

General J. B. Robertson.

When General Burnside was placed in supreme command of the Federal army, he began active preparations for another attempt to capture the Confederate capital. General Lee had moved to the south bank of the Rappahannock, where his line stretched along the river some thirty miles, guarding the different crossings. General Burnside planted upon Stafford Heights, just opposite Fredericksburg, an immense armament of heavy artillery, —fully one hundred guns,—commanding the river-bank opposite and the plain upon which the city stands, and giving shelter to his men while they constructed pontoon bridges for the army to cross.

On the morning of December 11 they opened fire at daylight upon the pickets stationed to resist their advance, and raked every street and lane of the city with a galling fire. This was the beginning of the battle of Fredericksburg.

During that battle Hood's brigade was not actively engaged. They were in line of battle with Longstreet's corps, repelled with ease the feeble attempt made upon their front, and stood as interested spectators and reserves while McLaws's division and the Washington Artillery repulsed the attack made upon Marye's Heights.

After the battle the army became comfortable in winter quarters. Details were sent to different Southern States for recruits, a reasonable number of furloughs were granted, and the Texans who remained in camp were put back to the rigid discipline General Hood always tried to maintain.

Not long was this rest enjoyed, as unexpectedly Hood's and another division of Longstreet's corps were detached for service on the south side of the James River in February and took up the line of march for Suffolk. This movement was never satisfactorily understood by officers or men. It was not explained why one-fourth of the army was sent away when General Lee had reason to expect an advance by General Hooker, who had superseded General Burnside, unless it was that an attack upon Richmond was feared from that quarter. Nothing was ever accomplished by the movement.

Finally, when General Hooker crossed the Rappahannock, General Longstreet was ordered to General Lee's support. A short delay was unavoidable, as the wagons were off in North Carolina in search of forage, but every effort was made to join Lee, and while on a forced march came the intelligence of the victory at Chancellorsville and the mortal wounding of General Jackson.

The division continued the march without resting, and camped on the Rapidan, near Gordonsville. In a letter to General Hood, General Lee said: "I wished for you much in the last battle, and believe, had I had the whole army with me, General Hooker would have been demolished I grieve much over the death of Jackson. I rely much upon you. You must inspire and lead your brave division so that it may accomplish the work of a corps."

The river was again flowing between the two armies. General Lee began to inaugurate measures for freeing Virginia from the invading army by transferring his base of operations to Northern soil. The month of May was spent inspecting the troops and providing transportation for artillery and supplies.

The Texas Brigade, under General Robertson, remained near Gordonsville until the line of march was taken up, on June 3, and it moved to Culpeper Court-House. The Confederates had cleared the valley of Federals when General Ewell reached Winchester, which he captured after a short but stubborn resistance. A portion of Ewell's corps crossed the Potomac soon after at Williamsport.

On June 24 the whole of Hill's corps crossed the river at Shepherdstown, the Texas Brigade, Hood's division, under Longstreet, having previously crossed at Williamsport. The columns reunited at Hagerstown and advanced into Pennsylvania, camping near Chambersburg on June 27.

General Hooker, having failed to prevent General Lee penetrating into Pennsylvania, was removed and General George G. Meade placed in command, who moved at once to meet Lee towards Chambersburg. General Lee had designed attacking Harrisburg (the Confederate cavalry having explored the southern region of Pennsylvania near enough to Harrisburg for their trumpets to be distinctly heard), but news reached him on the night of the 29th that Meade had crossed the Potomac and the head of his column had reached South Mountain, thereby threatening communication with his base of supplies, and compelling him to concentrate his forces on the east side of the mountain. Generals Ewell, Hill, and Longstreet were ordered to proceed to Gettysburg.

The battle-field of Gettysburg was not the choice of either commanding general. "General Lee had not designed to engage in a pitched battle at this time, but, being confronted by the enemy, was compelled to show fight."

The troops advanced slowly, but on July 1 three divisions of Hill's corps met the enemy in front of Gettysburg, driving them back a short distance from the town.

About five miles from Gettysburg the mountain rises abruptly several hundred feet. Upon this height, known as Round Top, General Meade rested his left flank, his right being upon the crest of the range, about a mile and a half from Gettysburg; his line in the shape of a crescent.

Ewell was sent to the right, Longstreet to the left, and Hill to the centre. The commands were brought up as rapidly as possible after the order was issued to concentrate at Gettysburg. Hood's division arrived in front of the heights about daybreak and filed into an open field. General Lee's anxiety increasing, it was decided to begin the fight without waiting for the troops still on the march and advancing as rapidly as possible.

General Hood was ordered to place his division across the Emmettsburg Road and attack. Notwithstanding the seemingly impregnable character of the enemy's

position, Benning's brigade of Hood's division, with the First Texas Regiment, succeeded in gaining temporary possession of the advanced Federal line, capturing three guns. The other Texas regiments, impeded by the boulders and sharp ledges of rock, were unable to keep up and render the necessary support. Never did the Texans fight more desperately against difficulties as General Robertson led them to this unsuccessful assault. He always contended this was the most appalling situation of the war.[1] In the midst of the thundering carnage General Hood was severely wounded in the arm and borne from the field, while hundreds of Texans strewed the field, and their comrades were compelled to retire before reaching the summit. The day closed without decisive result.

Next day General Lee decided to mass his forces and storm Cemetery Hill. At twelve o'clock the battle began and raged with fearful violence until sunset. The storming party, with Pickett's Virginia division in front, made a renowned charge, managed to enter the advanced works of the enemy, and got possession of some of his batteries. Suddenly the Confederate artillery ceased firing, and while the intrepid charge received without wavering great sheets of shot and shell, their foe moved around fresh bodies of soldiers and sought to gain their rear. Instantly the order was given to fall back, contesting every inch of ground, but conscious that no bravery was able to grasp a victory, and that annihilation or capture would be inevitable had they continued. The enemy did not follow below their works, but the day was lost. General Lee rode among his broken troops quiet, placid, uttering cheering words to the men. They answered his appeal, the wounded even taking off their hats and cheering him. Without panic or confusion he conducted them by detachments back to the position from which they had first driven the enemy. "All this has been my fault, and you must help me out of it the best you can," he said.

He began his retreat across the Potomac by way of Hagerstown, which he reached July 7. He issued an inspiring order to his men complimenting them upon their bravery in action and coolness in retreat. No impediment was thrown in his way, and he recrossed the Potomac, through the mountain fastnesses, until he rested quietly once more on the south bank of the Rappahannock. The Texans suffered at Gettysburg more heavily the first day, not being so prominently engaged afterwards. The wounded Hood followed the retreating army in an ambulance, suffering with his disabled arm and chafing at the enforced inactivity.

President Lincoln, when shown the heights held so persistently by Northern soldiers, said: "I am proud to be the countryman of the men who assailed these heights."

During the lull in the storm that followed the Gettysburg campaign Longstreet's corps was detached from the army of Northern Virginia (General Lee consenting to remain on the defensive) and sent to the relief of General Bragg, commanding the Army of Tennessee.

General Rosecrans, the Federal commander, was pressing on through East Tennessee to force his way into the heart of the cotton States. General Bragg had

[1] Spot to be marked by the Federal government as the scene of most desperate resistance, where the Texans lost eighty-three per cent. of their men.

fallen back near Chattanooga. Cumberland Gap had been surrendered. As it was impossible to hold Chattanooga with Rosecrans advancing so rapidly, the Confederate forces took position on the road leading south of Chattanooga, fronting the east slope of Lookout Mountain. Chattanooga is the great gate-way through the mountains to Georgia and Alabama. On one side rises Lookout Mountain, on the other the heights of Missionary Ridge. East of the latter is Chickamauga Valley, following the course of Chickamauga Creek. The Confederates were concentrated along this stream in communication with the railroad at Ringgold, Georgia. To this point General Longstreet's men were hastened by rail through Virginia, North and South Carolina, and Georgia, leaving General Lee about September 5, reaching Ringgold in time to move forward to Chickamauga, reinforcing General Bragg on the afternoon of the 18th in time for the expected conflict, Rosecrans having massed his forces at Chattanooga.

General Hood, who was still under treatment for his wound, with his arm in a sling, determined to follow Longstreet's corps when they passed through Richmond. After reaching Ringgold he was ordered to Reed's Bridge, and to assume command of the column advancing against the enemy. Here he met his men for the first time since Gettysburg, and they gave him a touching welcome.

During the first day he drove the enemy six or seven miles across the creek. Next day General Longstreet assigned to him the direction of the left wing of the army, placing five divisions under his command. General Bragg's plan of attack was to commence the assault on the right and gradually extend it to the left. General Rosecrans massed his forces on the right; the left met with less resistance, and from nine until half-past two o'clock General Hood's men wrestled with the foe, who fought desperately.

On went Hood's division, the Texas Brigade hotly engaged, when a body of Federals rushed upon their flank and rear, and they were suddenly forced to change front. General Hood, always on the alert for his old brigade, galloped down the slope in the midst of his men, who speedily corrected their alignment. At this moment Kershaw's division was brought forth under General Hood's direction, who ordered a change of front, when the men rushed forward all along the line, penetrated into the wood, over and beyond the enemy's breastworks, which gave way along his whole front, crowning the day with success.

Just when victory was certain, General Hood was pierced with a Minié-ball through his right thigh, and fell from his horse into the arms of the men of his old brigade,—a singular coincidence while commanding five divisions. After the battle he was removed on a litter,—his leg amputated at the thigh,—afterwards to Atlanta, and thence to Richmond. On the day he was wounded General Longstreet telegraphed from the battle-field to the Confederate authorities urging his promotion to lieutenant-general. It was January following before he received the promotion and was placed in command of the Army of Tennessee after General Johnston's removal.

The battle-field of Chickamauga was the last time he commanded his old brigade, and to them he paid this tribute: "In almost every battle in Virginia it bore a conspicuous part. It acted as the advanced guard of Jackson when he moved upon McClellan around Richmond; and almost without an exceptional instance it was

among the foremost of Longstreet's corps in the attack and pursuit of the enemy. It was also, as a rule, with the rear-guard of this corps whenever falling back before the adversary. If a ditch was to be leaped or a fortified position to be carried, General Lee knew no better troops upon whom to rely. In truth, its signal achievements in the war of secession have never been surpassed in the history of nations."

Although the battle was a signal success, General Bragg made the appalling confession that he had lost at Chickamauga two-fifths of his troops, including many field officers. Rosecrans's retreat to Chattanooga was disorderly. General Longstreet wanted to intercept his progress, but General Bragg refused; reported his supplies were reduced, and he hoped by cutting off the enemy's communication to force an evacuation of Chattanooga. He advanced up and over Missionary Ridge, where the army halted and remained many weeks. General Bragg was holding the Federal army at the point of starvation when he pursued a strange policy; he detached Longstreet's corps, while confronting the enemy, and sent him off on an expedition against Knoxville, in East Tennessee, to attack Burnside.

While General Longstreet did all possible to sustain himself in an isolated situation, yet it was a season of greater suffering and privation than anything experienced by the Texas Brigade during the struggle. Not only was food scarce and poor, but they suffered for want of clothing,—many were barefooted. General Robertson did what he could for their comfort, and when General Longstreet went into winter quarters got furloughs for them as far as practicable. On one occasion he protested against marching his barefooted men in the snow, when their bleeding feet the day before had left stains along the road, and ignored the order sent from head-quarters. He was relieved of his command for insubordination and court-martialed. General John Gregg, a Texan, who had commanded a brigade in Bragg's army, was appointed to the command of the Texas Brigade, and General Robertson was transferred to the Trans-Mississippi Department. Soon after the brigade moved to the railroad, all jubilant at the prospect of returning to Virginia and General Lee, and reached Cobham, Virginia, seven miles from Gordonsville, on April 28.

On April 29, General Lee reviewed the First Army Corps (Longstreet's) and paid the Texas Brigade a high compliment, speaking of it as the best fighting brigade of the corps. General Lee's army thought they could cope with General Grant, the new commander of the Federal Army of the Potomac, but felt more comfortable to have Longstreet again with them. Congress passed new conscription laws, both for men and animals, and did all possible to provide for the army.

General Grant became the hero of the North after the disaster of Bragg at Missionary Ridge. He was promoted to lieutenant-general, and transferred his influence to the Army of the Potomac. He conceived the crowning plan for crushing the rebellion. One column was to march under Sherman through the centre of the Confederacy, destroying all within reach. Another, under Sheridan, was to lay waste the beautiful valley of Virginia. General Butler was to operate by the Peninsula, while he led in person the grand Army of the Potomac.

General Lee allowed General Grant to cross the Rapidan unmolested, while he thought he was surprising Lee. Grant's object was to pass through the Wilderness to the roads between Lee and Richmond. General Lee resolved to fight him in

those pathless woods, "where artillery would be least available, where massive columns would be most embarrassed, and where Southern individuality would be specially effective."

Hood's brigade marched on May 4 from their camp to Orange Court-House. Next day they proceeded until night, when they learned that Grant had crossed the Rapidan with three corps, under Sedgwick, Warren, and Hancock. At dawn the following day Wilcox's and Heath's divisions of A. P. Hill's corps were retreating, pressed by the enemy, borne back by the advancing wave of overwhelming numbers, after holding the ground the day before.

Dr. Jones says: "It was a crisis in the battle when the head of Longstreet's corps dashed upon the field. General Lee came to meet them, and found the old Texas Brigade, led by the gallant Gregg, in front. As he rode up he said: 'Ah! there are my brave Texans. I know you, and know you can and will keep those people back.' They greeted him with cheers as they hurried to the front, but were horrified to find their beloved chief was going with them into the thickest of the fight. They began to shout: 'Go back, General Lee! Go back! General Lee to the rear!' A ragged veteran stepped from the ranks and seized his bridle, and at last the whole brigade halted and exclaimed with one voice: 'We will not advance unless General Lee goes back; but if he will not expose himself, we pledge ourselves to drive the enemy back.' General Lee saw Longstreet, rode off to give him some order, the gallant Texans rushed forward and redeemed their pledge. The rest of Longstreet's corps hurried to the front, Hill's troops rallied, the enemy was driven back in confusion, and only the wounding of Longstreet prevented the utter rout, if not the crushing, of that wing of General Grant's army."

Next day they lay in their breastworks, and on the 8th marched to Spottsylvania Court-House, where they entered breastworks. There were sharp-shooting and an attack on the 10th. A storming column struck the Fourth Texas, crossed the works, and entered a gap in the fortifications. Those who entered were killed, wounded, or captured. All along the line they were repulsed.

Then followed that series of strategic movements and sanguinary conflicts known as the battles of the "Wilderness," and ending with the siege of Petersburg. The Texans took their full share in the fighting with their accustomed bravery.

The Texas Brigade marched from Cold Harbor to the Chickahominy, through Gaines's Farm, crossed the Chickahominy, the York River Road near Savage Station, and over the battle-field of Seven Pines, passing on pontoon bridge over the James River, and participated in the engagement of June 17, where the enemy had taken possession of Beauregard's advanced line. They charged this position, when the line of skirmishers fled or were taken prisoners. During this affair the brigade was subjected to a most galling fire of shells from the enemy's main line, about one thousand yards distant.

They passed through Petersburg next day, where they were refreshed by coffee distributed by the citizens and ladies, and entered the fortifications surrounding the city, where they relieved the troops occupying the trenches. Here they remained day after day,—literally burrowing in the ground, so close to the enemy's line that it was unsafe to raise their heads above the works, as sharp-shooting was continually going on, varied by shelling. Their food, consisting principally of corn bread and

bacon, was prepared by a cooking detail in the rear, and they watched chances to go after water. Duty in the trenches was very unpleasant. One-third of the officers and men were on the alert at night, and every one was ready at a moment's notice for a surprise; yet the health and spirits of the men were perfect. They tantalized the enemy in every conceivable way, amusing themselves singing religious songs or playing chess. At times it would be six days before they were relieved even for a day, so as to permit them to write letters, change clothing, and hear the news.

On the night of July 27, General Grant threw three corps of his army across the north side of the James, and the impression prevailed that he would try and reach Richmond between the James and the Chickahominy. As developed, this movement was only a feint to compel General Lee to scatter his forces. To be in readiness, General Lee sent Field's and Kershaw's division of Longstreet's corps and Wilcox's and Heath's division of Hill's corps to the north side of the river. The Texas Brigade, part of Field's division, recrossed the James on pontoon bridges as before, and passed near the battle-field of Malvern Hill, where they remained on the alert.

On the morning of July 30 the mine was exploded at the point occupied previously by the Texas Brigade in front of Petersburg, and an opening was made for the enemy to enter. "He did enter, only to be driven back, engulfed by the disaster planned for others,—to die fearful, ghastly deaths!" Prisoners said the Texas Brigade had given them so much trouble, they had hoped to extinguish it at the grand upheaval and collapse, but as General Lee had fortunately sent the brigade, only the day before, north of the James, it did not participate in the great catastrophe.

On August 15, on the north side of the James, on the left of Field's division, temporarily under command of General Gregg, the Federals made an attack which the Texans handsomely repulsed.

General Lee's line on the north side of the James extended from Chaffin's on the river to the New Market Road, on both sides of Four Mile Run. The Texas Brigade occupied the extreme left of the infantry at a place called "Phillips's House," with General Gary's South Carolina cavalry supporting them on the left. The fortifications at this point consisted of earth-works five feet high, with a ten-foot ditch beyond, and an intricate abatis some fifty yards in front.

On September 28, General Gregg, in command of all the forces on the north side of the river, sent word to the officers of the brigade that Grant had been crossing over a heavy force all night, and at daylight he was expecting an attack. Sharp-shooting commenced at dawn of day, and soon the attack on "Phillips's House" was made.

Pollard says of this affair: "The enemy in very heavy force had reached the abatis, thirty or forty yards in front, but were met by a most terrific and galling fire, which mowed them down with terrible slaughter. The white troops fled in great confusion, but the entangled brush greatly impeding their speed, many of them fell under the well-aimed rifles of the Texans. The negroes, who were driven up at the point of the bayonet, lay flat upon the ground, just in rear of the abatis, hoping thereby to shield themselves from the sad havoc in their ranks, but the Texans, mounting the works, shot them like sheep led to the shambles."

The New York *Herald* said: "One hundred and ninety-four negroes were buried on that spot, and counting the wounded at five times that number, which is a low estimate, at least twelve hundred killed and wounded cumbered the ground in front of that little brigade." The Texans lost not one man.

Early on the morning of October 7, General Gary's cavalry and a force of Confederate infantry of Field's division surprised the enemy by an attack between four and five miles below the city. They fled to their intrenchments, a short distance to the rear, where they were followed by our troops and made a desperate resistance. Our men did not dislodge them, as they were reinforced from Fort Harrison, but they were not allowed to regain their former position. A private letter conveyed this news: "We charged the enemy's works between the Darbytown and New Market Roads and suffered heavily. General Gregg among the killed." This was the brief notice of a catastrophe the Texas Brigade had never been called upon to bear,—the loss of a general on the field. It was a dreadful experience, and the circumstances touched the stoutest hearts.

The Texans had driven the enemy into their breastworks, and were advancing steadily under a murderous fire when General Gregg was stricken down. The men recoiled about one hundred yards in the rear of their somewhat disordered line. Captain Kerr, adjutant-general on General Gregg's staff, deserves special notice for his coolness. Coming down the line close to Lieutenant-Colonel Winkler, in command of the Fourth Regiment, he said in a low tone: "Gregg's killed." Walking back a moment later, without relaxing a muscle, he again spoke: "Bass is wounded; you must take command of the brigade." Under the pitiless fire and confusion, Colonel Winkler ordered the color-bearer to a small depression of the ground, gave the order, "Dress to your colors!" when every man was at his place and the line reformed. Lieutenant Shotwell, of General Gregg's staff, asked permission to take three men and a blanket and go out to recover General Gregg's body. This was given, and in that rain of shot and shell, where it seemed nothing could live, they ran out, rolled his body in the blanket, and safely bore it to the rear. The brigade was now withdrawn from the field, and hostilities ceased.

COLONEL C. M. WINKLER.

When Lieutenant Shotwell's brave act was reported to General Lee, by special order he complimented the gallant action, the brigade, and the temporary commander for remaining at the post of duty until all possible was accomplished under the trying circumstances.

The men were deeply grieved at the death of their commander, who had led them so successfully upon so many hard-fought fields, but were gratified that his body had been recovered. His remains were placed in a casket and taken to Richmond, where he lay in state at the capitol in the Hall of Representatives, envel-

oped in the flag he had defended with his life, and covered with floral offerings of a people always proud to honor the brave.

The brigade was permitted to attend the funeral on Sunday,—the only time during the four years' conflict they were able to pay the last tribute of respect to a comrade. Postmaster-General John H. Reagan, Colonel F. R. Lubbock, of President Davis's staff, both Texans, and the members of the Texas delegation in Congress, acted as pall-bearers. President Davis and cabinet attended in a body. The hearse containing the remains was followed by a soldier leading the general's horse, ready caparisoned, and the battle-scarred veterans who had never quailed before the enemy, now with bowed heads and arms reversed, marched behind the body of their beloved commander. At Hollywood the casket was deposited in a private vault to await the wishes of his wife, now impossible to consult.

"General John Gregg was a native of Lawrence County, Alabama. In 1851 he located at Marshall, Texas, where he rapidly rose to eminence as a lawyer, and was elected judge of a judicial district. He belonged to the secession convention, and was a delegate from Texas to the Provisional Congress at Montgomery. On the initiation of the war he returned to Texas and recruited the Seventh Regiment of Infantry and was elected colonel. He participated in the defence of Vicksburg and Port Hudson. He was wounded at Chickamauga, and soon after assigned to the command of the Texas Brigade in Longstreet's corps, then operating in East Tennessee. He participated with this corps in most of the battles afterwards of the Army of Northern Virginia. He fell in the battle of New Market Road. The crowning glory of his military career was his defence of Richmond. General Gregg was a man of good literary and scientific attainments, of extensive reading, of large intellect, and a profound thinker."

On October 13 the brigade participated in an engagement on the Darbytown Road, in which the Confederates were victorious after a fearful day's work. On the 28th they had an engagement on the Williamsburg Road, killed, wounded, and captured a large number of Federals, sustaining little loss. Troops were continually on the move, scouting parties brought in many stragglers and captured many battle-flags. General Longstreet particularly complimented the work of the 28th after looking over the ground.

General Field's forces occupied a line of works a mile and a half beyond the Richmond fortifications, which were three miles from the city. In December the Texas Brigade began to feel secure for the winter, when a slight fall of snow made its appearance. All were rejoiced; but, alas! next day they were ordered to move at daylight with three days' rations. "General Longstreet's reconnoissance out in front of the enemy" was the wording of the order. Twenty-four hours later it developed into only a still-hunt, and the brigade was ordered back to its former position.

Many surmises were made as to the probability of a new brigadier-general and some little anxiety expressed, resulting in petitions of each regiment to have their colonel commanding appointed, but none was ever made. Colonel Winkler continued in command after General Gregg's death until Colonel F. S. Bass, of the First Regiment, recovered from his wound. When Colonel Powell, of the Fifth Regiment, returned from prison late in the winter, he, as ranking officer of the

brigade, assumed command, which he retained to the end. The only generals who commanded the Texas Brigade were Wigfall, Hood, Robertson, and Gregg.

The time passed pleasantly in winter quarters. A large chapel of logs was constructed and services were held every Sabbath, prominent divines from Richmond and other places going down to preach to the soldiers. The Texas delegation in Congress, Postmaster-General Reagan, Colonel Lubbock, ex-governor of Texas, and other distinguished friends, often went out, spent the evening, and sometimes remained all night, contributing their quota to the social life of the camp. The most frequent of these visitors was General John R. Baylor (member of Congress), who had distinguished himself on the frontier of Texas in Indian fights and was afterwards military governor of Arizona. His fund of anecdote was inexhaustible, and, as he discussed congressional and military matters with a freedom of one familiar with all phases of life, he was at all times a valuable acquisition to any crowd. He not only made it pleasant at head-quarters, but mingled with the soldiers on the line, and, if the prospect of a fight presented (there were many orders to be ready for an attack), he shouldered his musket and went to the front.

Provisions became scarce and rations short, yet they managed to extend such hospitality as possible to visitors. Dried peas was a favorite dish, occasionally varied by a little bacon,—one pound shared by eight men,—a few potatoes, etc. When coffee and sugar were issued, there was no meat. The furloughed soldiers went into other States, and on their return brought back many boxes of edibles for their comrades. When one man had two pairs of shoes his needy brother was certain to get one of them. Cheerfully they accepted the hard fare and scanty clothing without a murmur.

Two subjects engrossed their attention. One was the possibility of the whole brigade getting furloughs to Texas and to return in time for the spring campaign; the other, the fear that in the general reorganization of the army their brigade would be consolidated with troops from other States, the regiments having become so decimated as to make this seemingly necessary, thereby losing their identity, there being no other Texas troops in the Army of Northern Virginia.

General Lee declined to allow the furloughs to Texas, saying in his order: "It will be impossible for these brave men to return in time. No brigade has done nobler service or gained more credit for their State. Though I should be gratified at every indulgence shown this brigade, I cannot recommend this." They acquiesced in the inevitable, especially as General Lee was generous in allowing furloughs in other States nearer camp.

When the fear of consolidating the brigade was uppermost, the men held a meeting and appointed Major W. H. Martin ("Old Howdy"), of the Fourth Regiment, to present their protest against such a measure to the President. General Lee was present at the interview, and said: "Mr. President, before you pass on that request, I want to say I never ordered that brigade to hold a position that they didn't hold it." Mr. Davis replied: "Major Martin, as long as there is a man to carry that battle-flag you shall remain a brigade!" The order from General Lee assuring them of the President's decision was enthusiastically received, and served as a balm to the refusal of furloughs to Texas.

General Lee had favored the Hampton Roads conference and was anxious for

honorable terms of peace. After that failure he determined to address a personal letter to General Grant and see what could be done. "When these overtures also failed, there was no man more determined to fight it out to the end, and he went to work to make the best possible disposition of his little army." Congress, in attempting to do something to alleviate the situation, passed a resolution creating General Lee commander-in-chief of the Confederate armies, but he declined the responsibility, as he and President Davis had always entertained the most friendly relations, had always acted in unison, and he did not wish to sever these ties by any act of personal aggrandizement. The Texas Brigade retained its courage and spirits, although the officers were worried to find some of their men were coolly taking "French leave," becoming discouraged by hunger, privation, a poor supply of clothing, and deciding to go home to their necessitous families. President Davis said: "This absence without leave could not be called desertion, as the men did not go over to the enemy."

In spite of the harsh criticism of their own Senator, Wigfall, they still had confidence in the military genius of General Hood, and freely discussed his disasters in the West, affirming, if he had commanded the same material as his old brigade and division, he would not have been unsuccessful. He was still their idol, and they reverently gathered up his faded laurels and crowned him anew as their hero, and the greatest of Confederate generals save Lee and Jackson.

Two events of interest occurred during the stay in winter quarters. One was the presentation of five golden stars sent from Texas by a lady, who stated that they were made of gold too precious for ordinary use, and she wished to bestow them as testimonials to the bravest privates of the Texas Brigade. A committee was appointed to designate who should be entitled to wear these stars. Their presentation was an impressive scene,—the committee declaring among so many valiant men it was the most difficult task of their lives.

The other event of importance was a review of the troops on the north side of the James River by President Davis, Generals Longstreet, Field, and others, which was an imposing military spectacle. Everything was in order, the men with polished guns glistening in the sunshine, clothing neat as possible under the circumstances, gallant officers riding along their front, receiving the salutes of the men, and ever and anon pausing to acknowledge a demonstration of respect, while the bands played their most inspiring airs. It was hard to realize, amid this brilliant pageant, that these men and officers were living upon the scantiest rations possible.

There was an engagement on the south side of the James, when Pegram's division made a gallant resistance to an attack near Hatcher's Run, and drove the enemy from the field. The troops on the north side were ordered to receive an attack on February 4, but no advance was made.

About the early part of March, General Lee held a conference with President Davis with regard to the evacuation of Richmond and Petersburg and retiring towards Danville, where supplies could be collected and a junction made with the army of General Joseph E. Johnston.

On the night of April 1 it became known that the Federal troops had been removed from the north side of the river, but no surmise had yet been entertained by the Texas Brigade, who were occupying the same position to the extreme left of

General Lee's extended line, stretching for twenty miles on both sides of the river.

That day they received the news of the successful repulse by Pickett's Virginia division of the cavalry line contesting for the prize of the South Side Railroad near Petersburg, and supposed all was going well in that direction. As soon, however, as this repulse was reported to General Grant, another army corps was marched rapidly to their relief. On April 1, the combined forces of cavalry and infantry advanced against the Confederates, who were driven from their position at Five Forks in confusion. Matters now looked critical for General Lee, who was compelled to move to his inner line of defence at Petersburg, and the siege of the city seemed inevitable.

The fighting on April 2 began at daylight. General Lee's line was assaulted and pierced in three different directions, the Federals capturing Fort Mahone, one of the largest of the Petersburg defences. Here the Confederates made a desperate struggle, but were unable to cope with overwhelming numbers. Here fell General A. P. Hill,—a severe blow. The events of the day decided General Lee's course, and he sent a telegram to President Davis advocating that Richmond should be evacuated simultaneously with the withdrawal of his troops.

Longstreet's forces on the north side of the James, under command of General Field, had been ordered to move without any knowledge of their destination, and all day Sunday they were passing through the city *en route* to join General Lee at Petersburg. Being on the extreme left of the line, the Texas Brigade was among the last troops to cross the river at Richmond, Sunday night. By the time Petersburg was reached retreat seemed a duty, but to retreat with poor transportation and no supplies seemed at least a forlorn hope, and the troops did not know the straits to which General Lee was reduced, nor did they stop to consider the situation. Still were they determined to follow their great leader.

"General Lee's losses were irretrievable, though in killed and wounded only about two thousand, but he had lost his entire outer line of defence around Petersburg and the South Side Railroad, his important avenue of supply to Richmond." All he could do was to evacuate as quietly as possible during the night, and order supplies to meet him at Amelia Court-House, his objective-point being Danville, as proposed in his conference with the President. What he had considered a strategic movement now assumed the proportions of a dire military necessity. He commenced his retreat from his intrenchments around Petersburg on Sunday night, and got his army safe across the Appomattox River, intending to fall back to Danville. With his transportation in such a dilapidated condition, constantly menaced by the Federal cavalry, and retarded by the state of the roads, he had yet greater cause for alarm. His army, which at that time numbered, from the most reliable sources, scarcely twenty-five thousand men, now began to shrink away in anticipation of defeat, and many lost that spirit that had so long upheld them in hours of disaster as well as of success. The line of retreat was marked by abandoned caissons, strewn with knapsacks, blankets, arms, and accoutrements. Everything was thrown away that hindered the speed of flight, and, without food, the brave remnant of a noble band pressed to that fate so sadly waiting them.

Field's division of Longstreet's corps, to which Hood's brigade was attached,

covered in the rear of the line of retreat, engaged in innumerable skirmishes, burned bridges over which they passed, and with the same spirit of determination followed the fading fortunes of their leader, who, in the midst of all his perplexities, never meditated such a contingency as surrender.

The Texans were too far from home for the temptation of straggling from the ranks to be entertained, and, footsore and weary, they struggled on, believing the union with the Southern army would be effected, and the reverse be changed to victory. They had always fought against such odds, the idea of the abandonment of the cause never was allowed to find lodgement in their most secret thoughts.

The details of that last retreat and of the final surrender at Appomattox are too well known to require repetition here.

When the news of the surrender reached the Texas Brigade, in the rear of Longstreet's corps, details of men were busy throwing up intrenchments. A messenger was despatched to tell them to desist from their work, but they could not understand the order. "General Lee has surrendered!" They could not believe that; but upon being assured there was no alternative, he must surrender or cut his way through the whole Federal army completely surrounding him, one brave fellow threw away his pick, dropped his hands despondently, exclaiming: "I'd rather have died than surrendered; but if Marse Bob thinks that is best, all I've got to say is that Marse Bob is bound to be right as usual."

The next day General Lee delivered to his troops the last order emanating from that peerless soldier, which will go down the ages as a touching memento of that sad day at Appomattox :—

"HEAD-QUARTERS ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA, April 10, 1865.

"After four years of arduous service, marked by unsurpassed courage and fortitude, the Army of Northern Virginia has been compelled to yield to overpowering numbers and resources. I need not tell the survivors of so many hard-fought battles who have remained steadfast to the last that I have consented to this result from no distrust of them; but, feeling that valor and devotion could accomplish nothing that could compensate for the loss that would have attended the continuation of the contest, I have determined to avoid the useless sacrifice of those whose past services have endeared them to their countrymen. By the terms of agreement officers and men can return to their homes and remain there until exchanged.

"You will take with you the satisfaction that proceeds from the consciousness of duty performed; and I earnestly pray that a merciful God will extend to you His blessing and protection. With an unceasing admiration of your constancy and devotion to your country, and a grateful remembrance of your kind and generous consideration of myself, I bid you an affectionate farewell.

"R. E. LEE, *General.*"

After disbanding, the members of "Hood's Texas Brigade" dispersed to their homes, aided in the work of reconstruction after the grand collapse of the Confederacy, and many of them have occupied the most exalted positions of honor and trust in the gift of the people of their appreciative State.

They united together a few years after the surrender as "Hood's Texas Brigade Association." Every year on June 27, the anniversary of the battle of Gaines's Farm, where they first distinguished themselves by turning the tide of

battle in favor of the Confederates, they meet in friendly reunion at some appointed place where they are invited by the citizens. They enjoy the hospitality of the people, who vie with one another in thus honoring the brave, talk over their old battles and war experiences, and socially enjoy the companionship, for a brief period, of those to whom they vowed fraternal fellowship amid the shock of disaster and baptism of sorrow at Appomattox.

"The sons of the defenders of the Alamo" proved themselves worthy descendants of their illustrious sires, and on the bloody battle-fields of Virginia maintained the reputation so grandly made in their immolation upon their country's altar so long ago. Their record will remain as untarnished as that of the Tenth Legion of Cæsar or the Old Guard of Napoleon.

CHAPTER IV.

TERRY'S TEXAS RANGERS.

BY MRS. KATE SCURRY TERRELL.

ON the stage between Austin and Brenham, in March of the fateful year 1861, three delegates returning from the secession convention were discussing the prospect of war. Believing an invasion imminent, and to repel it the duty of every man in the South able to bear arms, they determined to offer themselves to President Davis and to set about raising troops for the field. These men were Frank Terry, a wealthy sugar-planter of Fort Bend County, frank, generous, and courtly, a typical Southerner of ante-bellum times, Tom Lubbock, a commission merchant of Houston, and kinsman of Terry, and John Wharton, planter and lawyer, of Brazoria, a native Texan, with all the ardor of youth and the stimulus of a fighting family behind him. Terry and Lubbock started overland for Montgomery, Alabama, but Wharton, thinking to make the trip more quickly, went by way of the Gulf and was taken prisoner. After a detention of two weeks and some heavy tongue engagements with the enemy, he was released, and, returning home, recruited a company of young planters, the Company B of the "Rangers." In the mean time Terry and Lubbock, catching the enthusiasm east of the Mississippi, rushed on through to Virginia just as "Major-General Scott had his orders got to push on his columns to Richmond." They reported to General Longstreet, and served with distinction on his staff at the battle of Manassas. General Beauregard, in his official report of the engagement, "finds it proper to acknowledge the signal services rendered by Colonels B. F. Terry and T. Lubbock, of Texas. They made valuable reconnoissances of the enemy's position and carried orders to the field. Colonel Terry, with his unerring rifle, severed the halliard, and thus lowered the Federal flag floating over the court-house, and also secured a large Federal garrison flag designed, it is said, to be unfurled over our intrenchments at Manassas." A short time afterwards Terry and Lubbock received their commissions, with orders to "recruit a regiment of skilled horsemen for immediate service." Returning to Texas, they established head-quarters at Houston and issued the following call for volunteers:

COLONEL THOMAS LUBBOCK.

"August 12, 1861.

"Having been authorized by the Secretary of War of the Confederate States of America to raise a regiment of mounted rangers for service in Virginia, we hereby appoint Captain —— to raise and enroll a full company, to consist of one captain, one first lieutenant, two second lieutenants, four corporals, one blacksmith, two musicians, and from sixty-four to one hundred privates, and to report the same to us on or before the 1st day of September next. Each man will be required to furnish equipments for his horse and to arm himself. The company will be transported free. The term of service will be during the war unless sooner discharged.

"B. F. Terry.
T. S. Lubbock."

No Highland torch ever gathered Scottish clan more quickly than did this call muster young planters, professional men, merchants,—the "kid-glove gentry" of the Old South. They came from every direction, with flags flying and bugles blowing, their young hearts aglow with patriotism and pride, eager to set out for fear the war might be over before they could reach Virginia to see the fun and win their spurs. In less than thirty days ten companies of one hundred men each had reported at Houston, been sworn in for "as long as this war shall last," and, without waiting to organize a regiment, started on their way to Virginia amid the waving of handkerchiefs and the tearful "God speed you" of sweethearts and wives. At New Orleans Terry received a letter from General Albert Sydney Johnston, then recruiting an army at Bowling Green, Kentucky, requesting that the "Rangers" report to him, and promising that while under him they should be an independent command. A vote was put to the regiment and the voice was for Kentucky. Colonel Terry made a halt at Nashville to enable the different companies to overtake him. The dare-devil reputation of the "Rangers" had preceded them, and one of the questions asked by coquettish bright eyes was, "Where are your horns?" A flourished sombrero was to prove the bright head underneath incapable of growing 'em! About the middle of November Terry reported to General Johnston at Bowling Green, and though he was a commissioned officer, he proceeded to organize his regiment on the good old democratic plan of election by majority, with the following result: colonel, B. F. Terry; lieutenant-colonel, T. S. Lubbock; major, Thomas Harrison; adjutant, Martin A. Royston; quartermaster, B. A. Botts; commissary, R. H. Simmons; surgeon, J. M. Weston; assistant surgeon, Robert E. Hill; sergeant-major, William B. Sayers; quartermaster-sergeant, M. F. Deballegathy; ordnance-sergeant, James Edmondson; hospital steward, Thomas J. Potts. The regiment was mustered into service as the Eighth Texas Cavalry, but was better known to the army and to fame as "Terry's Texas Rangers." At Bowling Green soldiering began in earnest. Cold, privation, and constant exposure scourged with camp diseases these delicately bred youths, of whom many died and some were discharged and sent home. From Bowling Green Major Thomas Harrison was sent with two companies on a scout to Jamestown, where, discovering a force of five thousand Yankees, he very properly faced about and returned to Bowling Green. This did not suit our young bloods spoiling for a fight, who in derision dubbed him the "Jimtown Major." Afterwards, in leading the regiment into battle, Major Harrison would call out, "Now follow your Jimtown Major," and they would ride fast and far, through storm of shot and shell,

who followed. Another scouting party to Green River had a "little brush" with the Yankees, but without casualties. Early in December Colonel Terry was ordered to the Louisville Pike to join a small force of infantry under General Hindman. At Woodsonville, December 17, 1861, the "Rangers" made their first charge, and gallant Colonel Terry was killed in leading it. The main body of the Federal army was lying at Camp Wood on Green River. Colonel Willich, with a regiment of German troops, had been sent across to test the strength of the Confederates, and had deployed his men behind fences, haystacks, and trees near the river. Colonel Terry had instructions from General Hindman to decoy the enemy up the hill, so that he could use his infantry and artillery with effect. Leaving General Hindman several miles in the rear, Terry came upon the enemy's pickets at half-past nine in the morning. Ordering Captain Ferrell to take half the regiment and move to the right of the enemy, he with the other half marched rapidly to the left. A deep railroad cut divided the two commands until they reached an open field, where, at a given signal, they simultaneously charged. Colonel Terry on the left, at the head of his seventy-five "Rangers," charged upon three hundred of the enemy behind their defences, routed and drove them back, but fell mortally wounded. At the same time Ferrell had made a headlong charge on the right, the "Rangers" discharging their shot-guns within thirty yards of the Federals and their six-shooters in their faces. Retiring and reloading they made a second charge, when Major Royston was seen coming across the railroad bridge in a storm of shot to tell them of Terry's death and that Ferrell was now in command. Hindman's infantry coming up, the "Rangers" moved back to carry their dead colonel and their wounded to the rear. General Hardee, in his official report, says of this charge: "The conduct of the 'Rangers' was marked by impetuous valor. In charging the enemy, Colonel Terry was killed in the moment of victory. His regiment deplores the loss of a beloved and brave commander, the army one of its ablest officers." There is a slight discrepancy between the reports of this fight. General Buell reports, "the rebels ingloriously defeated." Some days after the battle the scouts captured a Federal officer who was in the fight on Terry's side of the railroad. Among his papers was a letter to his sweetheart, in which he says: "The 'Texas Rangers' are as quick as lightning. They ride like Arabs, shoot like archers at a mark, and fight like devils. They rode upon our bayonets as if they were charging a commissary department, are wholly without fear themselves, and no respecters of a wish to surrender." Lieutenant-Colonel Tom Lubbock was seriously ill with typhoid fever at Nashville when Colonel Terry was killed, but he was unanimously elected by the regiment to fill the place. Lubbock died a few days afterwards, and Captain John A. Wharton, of Company B, was elected colonel. In General Johnston's retreat to Corinth the "Rangers" were continually scouting, dashing to the rear for supplies, and through and around the Federal camps for information. Individual acts of daring were of daily occurrence.

The latter part of March, 1862, Judge David S. Terry, of California, and Mr. Clinton Terry, of Brazoria, brothers of Colonel Frank Terry, joined the regiment. The sick and wounded reported for duty, and the opening guns of Shiloh found them in the saddle and ready. Wharton's official report to General Beauregard reads as follows:

"The 'Rangers' were holding the bridge across Owl Creek on Sunday, the 6th. Here I received an order from General Beauregard to cross Owl Creek and co-operate with the left of the army. Reporting to General Hardee, in command of our left, I was ordered to dismount the 'Rangers' and protect a battery then opening on the enemy. The enemy apparently retiring, General Hardee ordered me to pursue them. Mounting the command, I promptly proceeded in the direction I supposed them to be, when the head of the column received a heavy fire from a large force lying in ambush. Having been compelled to cross a boggy ravine in single file, the head of the regiment was full four hundred yards in advance of the rear, when I and twenty or thirty of those in advance came under a heavy fire from the concealed Federals not forty yards distant. Clinton Terry fell mortally wounded at my side. It being impossible from the nature of the ground to form for a charge, I drew off the regiment in good order, with some few wounded, myself among the number. I then dismounted my men and joined the infantry in our rear. After a severe struggle we succeeded in driving the enemy back. I then mounted again, going to the extreme left to a battery that needed support. I threw five dismounted companies forward as skirmishers. My men behaved most gallantly, advancing upon the enemy and driving them through the camp which they were guarding. I encamped for the night on the extreme left, near the battery I had been sustaining. My command lay upon their arms during the night prepared for action. On Monday, April 7, the left flank of the army fell back about daylight. At ten, General Beauregard ordered me to charge the right of the enemy, which was heavily pressing our left. I was compelled to pass through a wood down the sides of a ravine. Again this threw the head of the regiment in advance of the rear. Upon rising a hill, I found it occupied by the reserves of the Federals advancing in line of battle, who opened a disastrous fire upon us, killing and wounding many and disabling my horse. I withdrew the command a short distance. While thus engaged on the left, our army fell back upon Shiloh Church, and I returned to a position in the rear of our infantry to protect the retreat ordered by General Beauregard. On Tuesday morning my wound became so painful—having been in the saddle for two days after it was received—that I decided to report myself at Corinth, turning over my command to Major Harrison. I respectfully refer you to Major Harrison's report of a brilliant charge led by himself on Tuesday afternoon.

"JOHN A. WHARTON."

Of this charge Harrison reports to Colonel Wharton: "We captured forty-three prisoners, leaving forty dead on the ground. My loss was two killed, seven wounded, among them being Captain Gustave Cook, Lieutenants Story and Gordon. Colonel Bedford Forrest, who volunteered into the charge with us, was slightly wounded. The 'Rangers' acted throughout the affair with admirable coolness and courage. I cannot say more than that they fully sustained the ancient fame of the name they bear. They could not do more. I cannot discriminate between them, because each one displayed a heroism worthy the cause we are engaged for."

Near the middle of April a Kentucky regiment under Colonel Adams and the "Rangers" under Wharton were sent to scout in Middle Tennessee, and floundered about without purpose for a month. On May 10, Captain Houston, with the First Kentucky Cavalry and a detachment of the "Rangers," was ordered to cut off the retreat of the enemy on Elk River. They had a sharp fight near the railroad bridge at Bethel. Captain Harris and five "Rangers" were killed. Of the Federals seventeen were killed and forty-nine taken pris-

oners. Captain Houston was given much credit in the reports for this skirmish On June 9, 1862, the "Rangers," under that heaven-born cavalryman, Colonel Bedford Forrest, were brigaded with the Fourth Tennessee under Colonel Baxter Smith, First Georgia under Colonel Crews, and the Second Georgia under Colonel Lawton. Up to this time the "Rangers" had been, as General Johnston promised, an independent command. Bragg was now in command of the Army of Tennessee, and his slogan, "On to Kentucky." Forrest began the forward movement, and made his first raid in the rear of the Federal army. Like "Stonewall" Jackson, he was always an unknown quantity to the enemy, cutting his line of communication to-day, and to-morrow destroying his supplies miles away, dashing into wagon-trains and capturing arms, ammunition, medicines, stores, and prisoners by the score. At McMinnville Forrest reorganized his command. The Fourth Tennessee was now under Captain Paul Anderson, Colonel Baxter Smith having been captured. This Tennessee regiment was known to the army as "Paul's people," not from having "met the Lord in the highway and been converted," but from the affectionate manner Colonel Anderson had of speaking of them as "my people." This dashing young officer had all of Forrest's scorn for tactics. His command were volunteers from "Lebanon in the Cedars," and he had christened it "Cedar-Snags." His morning exercise was: "Fall in, Cedar-Snags! Double up on Jim Britton! Double up ag'in! March!" In battle his commands were: "Attention, Cedar-Snags! Line up on Jim Britton! Charge!" This was all the tactics he knew or needed.

At Murfreesboro' General Buell had a force of two thousand infantry and a battery of artillery guarding his supplies there. Forrest determined to capture them. Late in the afternoon of July 12, 1862, twelve hundred men started on an all-night's ride to Murfreesboro'. At Woodbury, in the middle of the night, women, "like angels in white," came to the windows to cheer them on. One grief-distracted wife caught Colonel Wharton's stirrup and besought him to rescue her husband, who was to be hung as a spy at noon in Murfreesboro'. Wharton assured her that if he lived he would. In the gray light of the summer's dawn the order came down the line, "Halt! Dismount! Tighten girths! Recap guns!" Here Forrest sent a courier to Colonel Wharton for a trusted officer and ten men. Lieutenant Weston and ten men from Company H were sent to him. Forrest said: "Lieutenant Weston, I desire the pickets in our front captured without the firing of a gun." Shortly Weston reported the duty done. Then, like the surge of the sea, was heard the beat of their horses' hoofs as they galloped into Murfreesboro', Forrest and Wharton leading. By some mistake only the "Rangers" followed. Wharton with one hundred and twenty men charged on the infantry at the right of the town, who, notwithstanding their surprise, defended their camp gallantly, pouring a galling fire into the "Rangers," wounding Colonel Wharton and causing him to fall back. Forrest on the left charged on the artillery, but, on looking back, he found only thirty or forty "Rangers" behind him. He rushed back for his Georgians, and, getting lost in the town, rode up to a house and routed out a citizen in his night-clothes, and, mounting the frightened man behind him, made him pilot him to his men. He charged back to the relief of the "Rangers," and with incomparable coolness began his strategy of "bluff." Marching his men in and

out around the court-house, he sent a flag of truce to General Crittenden with this order :—

"MURFREESBORO', July 13, 1862.

"GENERAL,—I must demand an unconditional surrender of your force as prisoners of war, or I will have every man put to the sword. You are aware of the overpowering force at my command, and this demand is to prevent the effusion of blood. I am, general,

"Your very obedient servant,

"N. B. FORREST, C. S. A.

After a short consultation with General Duffield, who had been wounded in Wharton's charge on the infantry, General Crittenden, thinking Bragg's whole army upon him, surrendered at discretion his entire command, eighteen hundred and sixty-four privates, four commissioned officers, a battery of four guns, arms, ammunition, stores, horses, and mules, to the amount of a half-million of dollars. The mortification of the Federals was extreme when they found that Forrest had not enough men to guard his capture. When offered parole, General Crittenden drew himself up and haughtily replied that he did not recognize *guerillas* as soldiers, and refused. Forrest shrugged his shoulders, saying, "Very well," and ordered two big West Texans, in buckskin and armed to the teeth, to guard him. These old campaigners gave each other the wink and the general a most uncomfortable half-hour by telling ferocious yarns about what they were in the habit of doing with prisoners. It was not long before Forrest was petitioned for a parole. A pleasing instance of the amenities of war occurred in Captain Ferrell's charge with Forrest on the artillery. A citizen had volunteered to go with the "Rangers" into the fight. In the charge he was severely wounded and about to fall from his horse, when Private Graber, of Company B, caught him, and, as the command scattered, was left in the field with the wounded man. Coming to a fence, which the "Ranger" could have jumped without difficulty had he been alone, he coolly dismounted, under a rain of bullets, and pulled the fence down. The Federals, seeing the gallant act, ceased firing and cheered him as he carefully bore his man out of danger.

From Murfreesboro' Forrest made his celebrated feint on Nashville, causing panic and wild confusion in that devoted town. In his official report he says: "I hear the enemy was badly scared. I regret exceedingly I had so few men. I might have captured the city without trouble." The Murfreesboro' fight made Forrest a brigadier-general, and he was given command of a division. Wharton was now in command of the brigade and Major Harrison of the "Rangers," and Bragg and Buell were racing towards Louisville, the "Rangers" in front of Buell stubbornly contesting every mile of his march. At Bardstown, Kentucky, Wharton was ordered by General Wheeler to hold a certain position for a given time, to allow Bragg to move away. The brigade was in an open field, men and horses resting. The "Rangers" had been in the saddle forty-eight hours, and most of that time fighting. The scouts sent to reconnoitre came flying in to report that they were surrounded by Buell's army. Captain Jarmon's company, guarding the rear, was seen moving rapidly towards the regiment. Colonel Harrison remarked to Wharton: "There is great danger when Jarmon retreats in a hurry. What had best be

done?" Wharton replied: "Charge them outright. Up, Rangers, and at them!" And as the Fedral cavalry, like a great blue cloud, charged down upon the little band with drawn sabres, gallant Ben Polk wrapped his bridle-reins around the pommel of his saddle, and, holding his six-shooter in his right hand, blew a defiant charge with his left. Jarnion wheeled into position, and the "Rangers" with a wild yell thundered down upon the advancing column. White got to one side with his two small cannon to allow the rear to pass, and, seeing a place to operate, unlimbered and poured shot into the enemy over the heads of the "Rangers." The Federals broke in confusion, throwing arms and accoutrements away as they scattered,—"Texas six-shooter against Yankee sabre, and victorious." Wharton had cut his way through to Wheeler, and was made a brigadier for this charge.

On the morning of the 18th of October, after twenty-three days of hard fighting, hunger, and hardship, they were halted on Harrodsburg Creek, near Perryville, Kentucky. The Federals held a position on a timbered ridge opposite, on which they had posted one hundred and twenty cannon. The Confederate army lay along the bluff of the creek; between the two armies was an open field. While Bragg was awaiting an attack by the enemy's artillery in the morning, Buell sent a detachment to flank his rear. To extricate himself, Bragg ordered his cavalry to attack. Wharton's brigade moved out on the flank of the Federals until it was in line on the right of Hardee. Wheeler's cavalry filed in from the main body and assumed position on Wharton's right. It was soon discovered that the Confederate cavalry was to make one grand charge, and to push on until the Federal army should change its front or repel them. Wharton and his staff took position at the head of the "Rangers," and a charge was ordered. They move like the wind on the batteries belching flame. Whole sections of the brigade are mowed down, but they ride steadily and faster until they reach the cannon's mouth, and the six-shooter does its effective work. Cheer after cheer comes up from the Confederates in the valley, and Hardee and Cheatham ascend the hill in one of the most superb infantry charges of the war. Slowly the Federals give back, and night closes with the Confederates in possession of the field. In the night Bragg falls back towards Cumberland Gap, and the hotly-contested field of Perryville is "without results."

Bragg's retreat from Kentucky was pushed by Buell with energy and decision, the "Rangers" guarding his rear. In Tennessee, the latter part of 1862, the duty of the "Rangers" was relaxed. They were at home among the warm-hearted and hospitable Tennesseans. Warm firesides, "square" meals, and the smiles of pretty girls made an Eden on earth awhile for the war-worn soldiers. From the report on Christmas morning, they had recruited to an effective force of six hundred and ninety men, five hundred and seventy-two in camp and a hundred and eighteen off on special duty. December 27, Rosecrans (now head of the class in "Lincoln's Academy for the graduation of young and sudden field-marshals") confronted Bragg on Stone River, near Murfreesboro'. Wharton was sent with five days' rations to the rear of the Federal army, to cut off communications and supplies. He returned to the front on the morning of the 31st, and was ordered to attack the Federal pickets. Driving them in, his command fell back and stood in line of battle under severe shelling from the enemy's artillery. He heard the cry:

"The enemy is giving way. Bring up the cavalry," but it proved only a fall-back for the reserves to move up. Then the Confederates gave way and a cavalry charge was ordered. This continued all day. At night, the "Rangers" were ordered to the rear of the Federals for information. They found Rosecrans's army hurriedly retreating, leaving its wounded, its wagons, everything behind. The "Rangers" returned to report the wonderful news, and found General Bragg in full retreat. Each army "skedaddling" from the other,—spectacle for gods and men!

Early in 1863 the "Rangers" were again with Forrest, now a major-general in Wheeler's division. In February, Forrest with eight hundred men made a raid to Fort Donelson, of disastrous memory, at this time heavily protected by gunboats. He did some sharp fighting but without success, and returned to Shelbyville. At Donelson, Sam Maverick, of San Antonio, distinguished himself by swimming the Cumberland River, in a driving sleet, and setting fire to a number of the enemy's transports. During the winter and spring Forrest captured three thousand wagons, eight thousand mules, quartermaster's and commissary stores, and prisoners without number. He was always on the wing, swooping down upon the enemy when least expected, raiding from Sparta, Tennessee, to every point of the compass, —at times into Kentucky, again towards Nashville, fighting and dashing away seemingly into space. In April, the Eleventh Texas was mounted, and with Duke's regiment, the First Kentucky Cavalry, was sent to Wharton. In June, Bragg began his retreat to Chattanooga, Wharton's brigade doing picket duty in his rear, fighting at Gray's Gap, Allison, Deckard, Battle Creek, and Trenton. From this long and hard campaign the "Rangers" went into camp at Cave Springs, near Rome, Georgia, with two hundred and fifty men and one hundred and sixty horses fit for service. Here they rested for two months, and returned to peaceful and pleasant ways of life. Chaplain Bunting, mindful of their souls, now that he was not binding up their wounded bodies, held a series of revival meetings. A Masonic lodge was formed, and "pie-rooting" and flirting kept pace with the more serious business. General Wharton having had three horses killed under him, and having refused to run for governor of Texas (his mother had refused for him, saying her son's place was "at the front, as long as there was need for a man there"), the "Rangers" determined to present him with the finest charger Confederate money would buy. They bought a magnificent bay thoroughbred, and sent to San Antonio for a thousand-dollar Mexican saddle, all embroidery and jingling silver. They gave a grand barbecue, and the whole surrounding country being invited, came and pitched their tents along with the soldiers. Private John B. Rector (now a grave and reverend United States district judge) presented the horse to Colonel Wharton in a speech full of war poetry and fire-eating eloquence. Spread-eagle oratory and fun were the order of the day.

The "Rangers" were in fine condition when they broke camp at Silver Creek. The command had recruited to four hundred and twelve men. Rosecrans was marching towards Chattanooga with seventy thousand infantry and artillery, to drive his famous "wedge into the Confederacy." Burnside was moving towards Knoxville with twenty-five thousand men. Longstreet's corps had been sent from Virginia to reinforce Bragg and make a decisive stand against Rosecrans. The Confederate army now numbered sixty thousand, making the two armies more

nearly equal than they had ever been. The "Rangers" were sent out on a line to Alpine, Georgia, to prevent a flank movement of the enemy. At Alpine and other mountain passes they had eight severe skirmishes with the Federal cavalry. They were scouting during the day and strengthening weak points, and were on guard three nights at a time. They now became familiar with the axe, in felling timber to obstruct these passes. They were at Alpine one day, Somerville the next, and on the third at McLemore's Cove. The 19th of September found them moving rapidly upon the left flank of the enemy towards Chickamauga. Rosecrans's army was distributed up and down the west side of the Chickamauga Valley, Chickamauga Creek separating it from the Confederates. The Federals made a vigorous attack on General Walker's corps on the 19th, but were gallantly repulsed, the Confederates capturing several batteries of artillery. In the afternoon Hood's whole front became hotly engaged, and continued fighting with varied fortunes until nightfall. On the morning of the 20th, Breckinridge made a forward movement on the right against Thomas, and about eleven o'clock Longstreet on the left, Hood advancing in the centre. Rosecrans's line slowly gave way, but contested every foot. Late in the afternoon the Confederate line made a forward movement of its entire length, a mighty tide of resistless force, carrying the field triumphantly. The Federals retired towards Missionary Ridge. Night fell, but with a brilliant moon. Longstreet ordered Wheeler to dash forward with his cavalry between Chattanooga and the enemy, and sent a courier to General Bragg to say that a forward movement of his whole line would capture Rosecrans's army. General Forrest climbed a tall tree to find out for himself what was going on, and seeing the Federal army a disorganized, panic-stricken mass, straggling in flight, he shouted to a staff officer: "Tell General Bragg to advance the whole line. The enemy is ours." But General Bragg called in the stragglers, and in his official report says: "The darkness made further movements dangerous." The Federal loss was greatly larger than that of the Confederates, but Bragg makes the appalling statement that he has lost two-fifths of his army. During the day of the 19th Wharton's command, with the exception of the "Rangers," was dismounted and ordered to charge a battery posted on a hill overlooking the valley, the "Rangers" going around and charging from the rear. The fight was so stubborn that a Confederate and a Federal ensign crossed their color-poles. The command suffered severely, one of the wounded, Colonel David S. Terry, being a volunteer for the occasion. Wharton moved on to Gordon's Mills, crossing the ground Hood had just fought over. Trees had been shot into splinters, and the undergrowth looked as if mown by a reaper. Dead men and hospitals marked the field for two miles. On the 20th, the "Rangers" were dashing here and there, charging and falling back, until night, when they were sent with Wheeler to intercept the Federal flight. Late in the afternoon, Captain Gordon, of Wharton's scouts, riding up to a small stream, found himself face to face with a squad of Yankees. With the effrontery of a "Texas Ranger" he coolly called to them to "Stack arms and come over here, or I will turn my battery loose on you." Instantly the white flag went up, and the whole sixty of them stacked arms, and were moved back to his ten scouts waiting a short distance away.

For days after Chickamauga the "Rangers" were on scout duty, following Rosecrans's retreat to Chattanooga. They captured their food and ate it in the

saddle. Men slept in the saddle from exhaustion. The regimental report, on October 1, shows that forty per cent. of them had been killed, wounded, and captured,—one-fourth of these off duty forever. On the 18th of October, 1863, General Rosecrans was relieved from the Army of Tennessee, and U. S. Grant assumed command with autocratic powers. He telegraphed Thomas to "hold Chattanooga at all hazards." Bragg had invested Chattanooga, and held the Yankee army there at the point of starvation. Wheeler's cavalry, to which the "Rangers" were attached, had been sent to the rear to cut off supplies. Near McMinnville, after a sharp fight, he captured seven hundred prisoners and a train of seven hundred wagons loaded with ammunition and other stores. He then attacked McMinnville, capturing another large train and five hundred and thirty prisoners, and destroying several bridges and the railroad track. He moved on to Shelbyville, where he captured and burned a large amount of stores. The army supplies captured and destroyed by him in this raid is without precedent in the annals of raiding.

Near Shelbyville the "Rangers" had a desperate skirmish with Wilder's cavalry, which charged down upon them with a battery of eight guns as they turned into the Louisburg Pike, cutting them off from Wheeler's main body. Colonels Cook and Christian and Ben Polk were wounded as the regiment cut its way through to Wheeler. The "Rangers" were now sent to Knoxville, to guard Longstreet's rear, and were with him during the East Tennessee campaign against Burnside, then intrenched at Knoxville. The territory to be scouted over was large and full of secret foes (dastardly traitors to their own people), the cavalry few and worn out by long and hard service, the horses barely fit for use. Incessant vigilance being necessary, the men were continually on duty. The soldiers were without tents, and often with no other food than parched corn, scouting and skirmishing through snow and sleet, swimming swollen streams,—sometimes their clothes were frozen and their horses' manes and tails solid icicles when they reached the opposite bank. The Texans were ordered to take the fords below the other troops, in order to rescue the soldiers who were swept from their horses. On one occasion Private Tom Gill swam his horse across with an Alabamian, clutched by the hair, in each hand. At Strawberry Plains, almost starved, they came upon a track of flour which they traced to a covered outhouse. They appropriated their "find" in short order, but before they could get their biscuits made a good angel, in the shape of a woman, ran up and told them that the flour was poisoned. A test was made, and enough poison found to kill Longstreet's army, much less the troublesome "Rangers."

From the 1st of January, 1864, they were raiding continually. They crossed and recrossed the Tennessee River six times, going around the Federal army, capturing supplies and prisoners, fighting and falling back, until the 13th of April, at Cleveland, Tennessee, where they made a gallant stand, but were driven back to the main army. In the mean time, Bragg had been defeated at Chattanooga and Missionary Ridge by the "Great Hammerer" and had retreated to Dalton, Georgia, where he was removed and Joseph E. Johnston placed in command. Grant had been transferred to the Army of the Potomac, and Sherman had taken command of the Western army,—his battle-cry, "On to Atlanta." He moved on to Dalton in three columns, under Thomas, Schofield, and McPherson. Here Johnston was expected to give battle, but instead he retreated towards Atlanta.

Johnston in his retreat would get into position and offer battle. Sherman would make a feint in front, while his flank would be on the move towards Johnston's rear with nothing to oppose it but Wheeler's cavalry. At Resaca the "Rangers" had a short and sharp fight. At Cassville they made a daring and successful charge. They were on Wheeler's left, dismounted and lying in the sunshine holding their horses, one company on picket. Suddenly the two regiments in front were thrown into disorder by the Federal cavalry charging into their midst and hammering them with their sabres. "To mount! To mount!" sounded Polk's bugle; "Charge!" and making the woods ring with, "If you want to smell hell jist jine the cavalry," the "Rangers" dashed to the rescue, the six-shooter again victorious. At New Hope Church and at Big Shanty they were dismounted, fighting as infantry and doing work with pickaxe and spade, building the breastworks which General Johnston thought so necessary. Napoleon said, "An army that remains behind intrenchments is beaten." At New Hope Church, at Altoona and Marietta, there was battle royal for hours, and again at Atlanta, where Johnston began at once to strengthen the defences. Early in July Johnston was removed and Hood placed in command. From Dalton to Atlanta Sherman had lost forty thousand men; Johnston had not lost a regiment, nor a wagon, nor (his soldiers say) a wagon-pin in that most wonderful retreat of history. He had won the admiration of his own army and the very careful respect of William Tecumseh Sherman.

After the battle of Peachtree Creek, Hood, needing correct information of Sherman's movements, asked Wheeler for a careful, fearless, and trusted officer and a small force, and Captain A. M. Shannon and three men from each company of the "Rangers" were sent to him. Shannon's order was, "Reliable information at all hazards."

Captain Shannon divided his men into squads; each squad had orders to rendezvous at certain points at given times for further instructions, their movements to be independent but sure. Woe to the Yankee house-burner, thief, and ravisher found in their path! They watched for Sherman's torch from the highest points, and when they saw a column of smoke a signal was given, and like a small cyclone they rushed down upon the "bummers" before they could recover their arms or make resistance. But these miserable offscourings of the earth rarely resisted, oftener falling on their knees to beg for their coward lives. Mr. Claiborne gives this extract from the diary of a private in Company B: "August 9, 1864. Saw a large smoke about a half-mile to our left. Ten of us started to investigate. Found eighteen or twenty Yankees burning house and gin of Mr. K. Yankees looting, women and children trying to save anything they can, negroes dancing and singing. We moved upon them from two sides, and in a moment were among them, our six-shooters doing full duty. Killed nine, wounded seven, balance prisoners. Gave horses and grub to the family. Whipped a few of the negroes and warned them, divided greenbacks, arms, and accoutrements, and moved out for the next little expedition at hand."

In July Sherman invested Atlanta, and sent Stoneman and McCook, with nine thousand cavalry, to tear up the railroad tracks around Macon and move on to Andersonville. The purpose of the raid was to capture Andersonville and release

seventy thousand prisoners there and to turn them against Johnston's rear. Harrison's and Ross's brigades under General W. H. Jackson met McCook at Newman, Georgia, and repulsed him, capturing two guns and a number of prisoners and leaving many killed and wounded. "On the whole," Sherman reports, "the cavalry raid is not deemed a success." Hood now sent Wheeler with his entire cavalry to raid on Sherman's line of communication. On the 31st of August, 1864, Hood telegraphed to Richmond that it was necessary to abandon Atlanta. Sherman ordered the evacuation of the city, and the women and children were driven from their homes at the point of the bayonet. General Hood, protesting that this was "ungenerous and unprecedented cruelty," this modern Attila replied: "Talk this to the marines, not to me. War is cruelty." His orders in Tennessee had been to "treat Southern sympathizers as wild beasts," and well did his troops obey him. Wherever his horse trod he left the abomination of desolation behind him.

Hood began his march in the rear of Sherman towards Tennessee, leaving only Wheeler's cavalry to annoy and delay the "march to the sea." The "Rangers" fought the Federal cavalry daily. At Aiken, South Carolina, they fought artillery. At Johnstown, Anderson Court-House, Wilmington, Ayresboro', Harrisboro', Buckingham House, and around Raleigh they had sharp skirmishes. On the 10th of March, 1865, General Wade Hampton surprised General Kilpatrick at Monroe's plantation, that brilliant soldier barely escaping with his life, and leaving his Arabian charger and his octoroon lady-love in his sudden flight. The Confederates captured a large amount of stores and arms. General Tom Harrison and his chief of staff, Major W. B. Sayers, were wounded in this charge. From the fight with Kilpatrick to Bentonville, North Corolina, where the "Rangers" made their last charge, was a ten-days' battle. Cook and Jarmon, the last of the field officers, were wounded and sent to the rear. Colonel Cook had so often been wounded that the soldiers called him "their Yankee lead-mine." Captain Doc Matthews, of Company K, a youth of twenty-three, was now in command of the regiment, and Colonel Baxter Smith, of Tennessee, after a twenty-two months' imprisonment, was in charge of the brigade. In the *Century Magazine* of October, 1887, Captain W. R. Friend, a "Ranger" who was there, gives the following account of this famous charge:—

"The writer, who for four months, during the trying and exciting march from Atlanta to Bentonville, had been absent by reason of wounds, joined the regiment on the 22d of March. The Confederate army was reported to be on the south side of Mill Creek. A high causeway, a quarter of a mile long, led through marshy and boggy ground to a bridge over the stream. I heard firing about a mile south of us. Soon this causeway was filled with a disordered mob of Confederate cavalry making good time finding the rear. From them it was learned that at least a corps of the enemy's infantry had attacked and driven them back, and while they were telling the tale the enemy gained the high bank of the opposite side of the creek and cut off the only line of retreat for Hardee's army. Just here firing was again heard on the south side, and knowing the 'Rangers' were there, the writer ventured to tread the dangerous path to share their fate and fortune. As he ascended the opposite hill, General Hardee and a few staff officers and couriers were on the right of the road. As the enemy approached Butler's cavalry, they retired so hastily

that General Hardee asked: 'Are there no troops, no men here to check this advance?' It was suggested that the 'Rangers' were in reserve, and Hardee ordered them up. When the head of the column approached, the veteran eye of the general scanning the juvenile face of Matthews indicated the belief that if the salvation of the army depended on him all was lost. But to his order, 'That this advance must be checked,' the quick, decisive reply of Matthews, 'We are the men to do it, general,' gave him hope. The order, 'Forward, Rangers! Front into line!' was given by the captain. As the regiment passed the general, he and his sixteen-year-old son Willie, who had the day before enlisted in Company D, tipped their hats to each other. And, as gallantly as at the first charge at Woodsonville, the 'Rangers' raised a yell and spurred at the long blue line of infantry regardless of disparity in numbers. The enemy, scarcely making a stand, fired a volley or two and retreated as if panic-stricken. Almost the first shot fired struck Willie Hardee, killing him instantly. The writer met the regiment as it reformed near General Hardee and General Johnston, who had joined him. A more gallant band never returned from victory. Black as Mexicans from exposure, pine-smoke, and the lack of soap, ragged and dirty, a bronze front they formed, one hundred and fifty of them, all that was left of two thousand. They had made their last charge, the last regular fight of Johnston's army."

Thirty days afterwards, at Greensboro', North Carolina, Johnston formally surrendered to Sherman, and all was over.

"All is gone,—
But the memory of those days; of the ranks that met the blaze
Of the sun adown the hill. Charge on charge, I see them still.
All is gone.—
Yet I hear the echoing crash, see the sabres gleam and flash;
See the gallant, headlong dash.—All is gone."

From their enlistment until the surrender the "Rangers" maintained themselves at their own and the enemy's expense. True to themselves and their cause, they neither flinched nor faltered, but fought on until their flag was furled forever. They felt that the reputation of the heroes of the Alamo and San Jacinto, and later the fame of the border frays of that dashing ranger, Captain Jack Hays, rested upon them; and with devotion and heroism, through victory and defeat, each man was counted worthy. No battle-song has been penned for them, no history written of their valor; but not Travis nor Crockett, not Rusk nor the elder Whartons, offered their lives a more willing sacrifice to a cause they believed just.

The patience and silent heroism of that after-struggle with poverty and changed social conditions, under a military despotism that pales into insignificance the Russian occupation of Poland,—so-called "reconstruction,"—who can fitly portray it? Some day, in a new generation, a new Carlyle, poet and historian, will tell the story to a listening world. Thrice happy the State that claims such sons, doing their duty nobly, whether in storm of battle or stress of life.

In December of each year the remnant of the old regiment meet to ride and raid, in the track of old armies, under the shadow of the Tennessee mountains, by whispering streams, under silent stars, growing young and dashing and heroic again as they thrill to the shock of old battles. God's blessing rest upon them, until that last bugle calls them to "fall in" with the shadowy line, two thousand strong, on the other side.

CHAPTER V.

HISTORY OF GREEN'S BRIGADE.

BY J. H. McLEARY.

DURING the Civil War Texas sent many thousand gallant soldiers to the field of battle. Where all acquitted themselves with honor it is useless to make comparisons. Although the great battles of the war were fought east of the Mississippi River, it should not be forgotten that the post of duty is the post of honor, and that there is as much danger in contests between small armies as there is when the forces engaged are numbered by corps and divisions instead of by brigades and battalions. It shall not be my purpose to compare Valverde with Manassas or Mansfield with Chickamauga, but without detracting from the glory of others, simply to tell the tale of what Green's cavalry brigade did for the Confederacy, from August, 1861, until May, 1865, during "the period of the war" according to the terms of their enlistment. Let their actions tell the bloody story.

Although there was much talk of secession during the Presidential canvass of 1860, and until the 4th of March, 1861, the day of Lincoln's inauguration, and despite the fact that by that time all of the Gulf States had actually seceded, very few people in Texas believed that there would really be any war. Even the echo of Sumter's gun, on the 12th of April, 1861, failed to convince our people that there would be anything more than a display of an armed force, and then they thought that the government at Washington would "bid the erring sisters depart in peace." However, companies were organized and drilling all over Texas, and when the news of the great battle of Manassas reached the State, these isolated companies rushed to their several rendezvous and rapidly organized into battalions, regiments, and brigades.

General H. H. Sibley, who had been a captain in the United States army, and had been stationed in the Territory of New Mexico, resigned his commission and tendered his services to the Confederacy. He was at once commissioned a brigadier-general, and authorized to raise a brigade for the occupation of New Mexico. He had only to let it be known that he wanted men, and thirty companies were at once on the march to meet him at San Antonio. On the 27th day of August, 1861, a company, raised in Guadalupe and Caldwell Counties, and commanded by Captain William P. Hardeman, was mustered into the service, and was classed as Company A of the First Regiment of this brigade. The next day Captain John S. Shropshire from Colorado County enrolled his company as Company A of the Second Regiment of Sibley's brigade. Day after day new companies arrived and were mustered into the service of the Confederate States "for the period of the war, unless sooner discharged by the proper authorities," until on the 26th of

October thirty companies were organized into three regiments; and these, with three sections of artillery armed with two mountain howitzers each, composed the brigade.

During these two months these regiments were beirg drilled and taught the duty of the soldier at camps of instruction on the Leon and Salado in the immediate vicinity of San Antonio. This education was much needed, although many of the companies had been organized for several months, and had been drilling in the vicinity of their homes, waiting to be called into active service. These regiments were all cavalry, or they might have been called mounted infantry. After the regimental officers had been appointed, the first regiment of the brigade was called the Fourth Texas Mounted Volunteers, the second regiment was called the Fifth Texas Mounted Volunteers, and the third regiment was called the Seventh Texas Mounted Volunteers. These designations were afterwards changed to the Texas Volunteer Cavalry instead of Texas Mounted Volunteers, the numbers remaining the same.

The brigade organization consisted of Brigadier-General H. H. Sibley; Major A. M. Jackson, assistant adjutant-general; Captain R. R. Brownrigg, quartermaster; Captain Griffin, commissary; Dr. Covey, brigade surgeon; Major W. L. Robards, aide-de-camp; Thomas P. Ochiltree and Joseph E. Dwyer, volunteer aides.

General William Steele.

The Fourth Texas Cavalry had the following regimental officers: colonel, James Reiley; lieutenant-colonel, William R. Scurry; major, H. W. Raguet; quartermaster, H. E. Loebnits; commissary, Captain Nobles; adjutant-general, —— Reiley; surgeon, Dr. William Southworth; assistant surgeons, Drs. J. W. Matchett and —— Taylor.

The Fifth Texas Cavalry was commanded by Colonel Thomas Green, and had the following field and staff officers: lieutenant-colonel, Harry C. McNeill; major, Samuel A. Lockridge; quartermaster, Captain M. B. Wyatt; commissary, Captain Joseph Beck; adjutant, Lieutenant Joseph D. Sayers; surgeon, Dr. F. Bracht; assistant surgeons, Drs. J. M. Bronaugh and J. R. McPhail.

The Seventh Texas Cavalry had the following officers: colonel, William Steele; lieutenant-colonel, J. S. Sutton; major, A. P. Bagby; quartermaster, Captain Ogden; commissary, Captain Lee; adjutant, Thomas Howard; surgeon, Dr. George Cupples; assistant surgeons, Drs. Hunter and Greenwood. The Rev. Messrs. L. H Jones and William J. Joyce were chaplains in the brigade, and were quite as ready to handle the musket or the pistol as the Bible or the hymn-book. The names of the thirty captains commanding the companies in the brigade are not here given, but the most distinguished will be mentioned in connection with the marches and battles in which this command was engaged.

This sketch will necessarily be more or less imperfect from the fact that in their numerous battles, marches, and other casualties of war the records of this brigade were almost entirely destroyed.

The long and tiresome march from San Antonio, Texas, to Fort Fillmore, New Mexico, a distance of more than a thousand miles, showed the eagerness and determination of the volunteers to meet the enemies of Texas on their own ground, and thus prevent an invasion of the Lone Star State. The brigade marched in detachments,—these being separated from each other by a few days' travel in order to secure water and grass for the horses and mules, and for convenience in camping. The first detachment of the Fourth Texas Cavalry started for El Paso on the 23d of October, 1861, and the first detachment of the Fifth left San Antonio for the same destination on the 10th of November. The march, after the brigade had proceeded a little beyond the frontier settlements of Castroville and Uvalde, lay through an unbroken wilderness, watered at long intervals by clear streams, water-holes, lakes, mountain springs, and sparsely timbered, more or less undulating, and in sections mountainous. It is needless to detail the hardships of this long journey, for, although to the troops they seemed at the time very great, the perils and pains of scouts and battles afterwards endured so far eclipsed the privations of marching and starvation as to make them appear trivial.

The command reached the upper Rio Grande on Christmas night, after a wearisome march. During all this time there was no rain, and no forage for the horses, reliance being had exclusively on the prairie grass, which the animals could crop around the camp at nights and mornings. Having reached the river near old Fort Quitman, the companies moved on up the Rio Grande, and in a week covered the eighty miles of valley and reached Fort Bliss on New Year's day, 1862.

All of Green's regiment having arrived at Franklin, they rested there several days, and then proceeded in detachments farther up the river.

While the brigade was proceeding by detachments to the general rendezvous at Fort Thorn, they were considerably annoyed by the forays of hostile Indians, attacking small squads and especially isolated wagons or herds of horses, instigated purely by love of plunder and not from any desire to take part in the Civil War. During the month of January the Fourth and Fifth Regiments and six companies of the Seventh reached Fort Thorn, where General Sibley had established his headquarters, and reconnoitring parties were sent out in the direction of Fort Craig, where it was evident that the Federal forces would make a stand.

In the mean time, for several months, Colonel John R. Baylor had been occupying the lower portion of the Territory, and had captured several posts and a large number of prisoners, with considerable quantities of supplies, which were of great use to General Sibley and his brigade.

The forces under Colonel Baylor were now united with Sibley's brigade, and the whole command under General Sibley was designated by the somewhat high-sounding title of the "Army of New Mexico." On the 14th of February the entire available Confederate force was united on the right bank of the Rio Grande, about ten miles below Fort Craig. Major Lockridge, with about six hundred men, moved up to within a mile and a half to reconnoitre, but did not succeed in drawing the Federals out of the fort. On his return to camp he captured a scouting party composed of twenty-one Mexican soldiers. These men were on the following Sunday released on parole.

On the 16th of February, 1862, the brigade drew up in line of battle on the

right side of the Rio Grande, near Fort Craig, and in the afternoon a sharp skirmish ensued, in which one man was wounded on the Confederate side, the Union loss being unknown. W. C. Burton, of Company F, of the Fifth Texas Cavalry, was the wounded man in this the first engagement of the brigade. Three days were spent in manœuvring, and on the 19th the Confederates crossed the river to the east side and camped near the stream. Here they cooked three days' rations and slept on their arms. The next day they passed Fort Craig, in full view of it from the hills, on the left bank of the Rio Grande. Another skirmish ensued, without any loss on either side as far as is known. The country over which the troops marched was a trackless desert of sand, yet they kept toiling on hour after hour during the night through the ravines and over the hills, resting but a short time, and daylight found them on the crest of the ridge two miles from the river, overlooking a green valley with a *mesa* lying to the southwest between the Confederates and the fort. The men and their horses were much jaded and nearly famished for want of water; but between them and the river lay a large Federal force, and it was plainly evident to all the Texans that if they drank water that day they would first have to fight for it. At nine o'clock the battle began. The Texans opened fire with their light batteries of artillery.

General Sibley, being quite unwell, remained in the rear, and intrusted the command of the Texans on the field to Colonel Thomas Green, of the Fifth Cavalry. His force consisted of the Fourth and Fifth and five companies of the Seventh Regiment of Texas Cavalry, Pyron's battalion of mounted men, and Teel's, Fulcrod's, and Riely's batteries, numbering, all told, not exceeding two thousand men. The artillery were six-pounder mountain howitzers and numbered about ten pieces. The cavalry were armed with shot-guns and pistols, except two companies, B and G, of the Fifth Regiment, and G of the Fourth Regiment, who were supplied with lances. The Union forces under General Canby consisted of fifteen hundred regular infantry and a battery of artillery, all well armed and equipped; also of a regiment of volunteers from the Territory of New Mexico under the famous Colonel Kit Carson and other leaders. Altogether the Federals numbered about seven thousand effective men. To the advantage of superior numbers General Canby added that of a choice position, having his men posted along the river-bank and in the thick grove of large cottonwood-trees which covered the ground near the stream. Pyron brought on the engagement and was hard pressed by heavy forces, but held his ground until reinforced by the remaining Texans, who arrived on the field before ten o'clock. All the Texas cavalry were then dismounted except four companies of the Fourth, under Major Raguet, and the squadron of lancers from the Fifth, led by Captain Lang. The dismounted men were posted by Colonel Green in a dry slough or depression about eight hundred yards from the Federal lines. Here they remained for hours under a heavy fire of artillery. The men busied themselves in digging with their bowie-knives shallow trenches for protection and in watching the bursting shells, which for the most part went clear over them and fell among the horses some distance away, causing them to be several times removed farther from the scene of action. The Fifth Regiment was commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel H. C. McNeill, who caused shallow wells to be dug in the rear of his lines to supply the men with drinking-water. The Fourth Regiment was under the leadership of

Lieutenant-Colonel William R. Scurry, who bore himself with great gallantry throughout the action. The Seventh Regiment was commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel J. S. Sutton, who was killed while leading his battalion in the charge. The Federals, first moving against the right wing of the Texans, were repulsed and retired on their artillery. Then large bodies of Federal cavalry appeared, pressing both wings. Green ordered Lang to charge with his lancers on the right and Raguet with his battalion on the left. The object of this was to divert attention from the centre, where a charge was ordered along the whole line. Raguet and Lang, while gallantly leading their men against overwhelming numbers, were both killed, and lost many of their men in killed and wounded. Lockridge led the charge of the Fifth and Scurry of the Fourth, comprising altogether fourteen companies. The men charged in line of battle, and ran for eight hundred yards in the face of a deadly fire of artillery and musketry before reaching the battery and the line of infantry posted to support it. The order to the Texans was: "Save your shot-guns until near enough to make their fire effective." Many reserved their fire until they were at the wheels of the cannon, and there was a hand-to-hand fight over these six-pound field-pieces. Major Lockridge fell dead about ten paces from the cannon's mouth, and the captain of the Federal battery, the gallant McRae, fell dead by his guns. Nearly every man of this artillery company was killed, wounded, or captured. Their defence was hardly less heroic than the charge of the victors. A charge of the Federal cavalry made a gallant effort to recapture the guns, but was repulsed, and only succeeded to some extent in covering the retreat of the infantry, many of whom perished in crossing the river. The retreat of the Federals was almost a rout, and had it been closely followed up the fort might have been captured. But Fort Craig was seven miles away, and the Union commander sent in a flag of truce asking leave to bury his dead, and in the mean time night came on and closed the carnage.

General Sibley, having assumed command at seven P.M., ordered the pursuit of the Federal army to be abandoned.

The victory of the Texans was complete, and, supplied with water from the river and food from the haversacks abandoned by the Federals in their flight, they bivouacked on the field. The brigade lost thirty-nine killed and one hundred and sixty-nine wounded. Among the killed were Captain Von Hoedel, of the Fourth Regiment, and Lieutenant David H. Hubbard, of Company A, of the Fifth Regiment. Captain Lang died of his wounds at Socorro a few days later. The Federals lost one hundred and twenty-nine killed, six hundred and nineteen wounded, and thirty missing. Many of the New Mexican militia shortly afterwards deserted, from the panic caused by their first meeting with the Texans, who, they said, "fought not like men but like devils."

This battle was called "Valverde" (green valley), from the name of the ground on which it was fought, lying in a bend of the Rio Grande on its left bank, about seven miles above Fort Craig. Soon after the battle an artillery company was formed to man the six pieces captured on the field of Valverde. This battery was placed in command of Captain Joseph D. Sayers, who had served up to that time as first lieutenant and adjutant of the Fifth Texas Cavalry, on Colonel Green's staff. It was called the "Valverde Battery" in honor of the Confederate

victory gained on the 21st of February, 1862; and in placing Sayers in command of it, Colonel Green said he knew the Confederate captain would stand by it as long as the Union captain had done,—that was "until death."

In addition to the six pieces of artillery, about three hundred Minié muskets were also captured on the battle-field. These arms were of good use, as they were immediately issued to the men, replacing as far as they would go the shot-guns and hunting-rifles with which the Confederates had been previously armed. The Federals, having retreated seven miles down the river along the right bank, sent in a flag of truce just before sunset asking permission to bury their dead, which request was granted. Under cover of darkness they recovered a part of their cannon which had not yet been secured by the victors. The Confederates bivouacked on the field of battle, having reached the river and obtained water in plenty, though at the cost of blood and life. Remaining one day (Saturday) on the field of Valverde, on the morning of the 23d (Sunday) the Confederates began an advance movement up the Rio Grande, having crossed over to the right bank and leaving Fort Craig unreduced in their rear. They proceeded up the river to a small village called Socorro, where they established a hospital and left all their wounded who were not able to travel, and continued their march to Albuquerque, where they arrived in a few days without any serious opposition.

On March 26, 1862, Major Charles Pyron, with a small force composed of some of Baylor's men and two pieces of artillery, halted in Apache Cañon, twenty miles from Santa Fé on the road to Fort Union, and Companies A, B, C, and D, of the Fifth Texas Cavalry, under Major Shropshire, had marched out from Santa Fé and bivouacked at the mouth of the cañon. Pyron and Shropshire's force combined amounted to about two hundred and fifty men. About ten o'clock, Major Chivington, of the First Colorado Volunteers, with four hundred and eighteen men moving towards Santa Fé from Fort Union, captured Pyron's pickets and surprised the advance in the Apache Cañon. The Confederate battery opened on the Federals, and thus warned Shropshire's battalion, which, without waiting for further orders, fell into line on foot and marched at once to Pyron's assistance. Coming up with the artillery at a point to which Pyron had fallen back, Shropshire divided his men and sent two companies on each side of the cañon up the side of the mountain, deployed as skirmishers to meet the enemy, who had already adopted similar tactics. Some of the men, from Company A for the most part, advanced on the right considerably beyond the main body of Pyron's men with the artillery in the cañon, and the artillery being hard pressed by the Federals retreated, together with the troops supporting the battery. Company F, of the Colorado Volunteers, made a charge on horseback down the cañon, and, being followed by the infantry, swept around to the right and left, cutting the Confederate line in two, and took each party in the rear. Thus the day was lost to the Confederates; being outflanked, outnumbered, and outgeneralled, they fell back to their camp at the mouth of the cañon, near Johnson's Ranch, in some disorder. The Federals only held the field long enough to gather up what prisoners they could find, and then under cover of night fell back about seven miles to Pigeon's Ranch and awaited reinforcements. The Federal loss in this skirmish was reported by Major Chivington to be five killed and fourteen wounded. The Confederates had two killed and three wounded,

besides seventy-one who had been surrounded and taken prisoners. Company A, of the Fifth Texas Cavalry, being farthest in advance, suffered most severely. After the skirmish, Pyron, who was in command as the senior officer, held his ground and sent couriers to Green and Scurry for reinforcements. Lieutenant-Colonel Scurry, being nearest, only sixteen miles away, at Gallisteo, arrived on the morning of the 27th, and awaited all day for the Federals to attack, but they did not appear.

Lieutenant-Colonel Wm. R. Scurry having arrived at Pyron's camp at three o'clock on the morning of March 27, as soon as it was light made a thorough examination of the ground to ascertain the situation of his own forces and the position of the Federals. He so disposed his troops as to be ready for an attack, and thus remained until the morning of the 28th. Then he left a small guard with his wagons and advanced to meet the enemy. He had under his command a portion of nineteen companies, amounting to about a thousand men. Of these, however, owing to the number on detail and sick and disabled, only about six hundred were fit for duty and actively engaged in the ensuing combat. At about ten o'clock in the forenoon the two small armies came into collision at a point in Glorietta Cañon about one mile west of Pigeon's Ranch. Colonel Slough, of the First Colorado Infantry, had left Kozlowski's Ranch at about eight o'clock the same morning with about thirteen hundred and fifty effective men; having in the mean time sent Major Chivington with four hundred and thirty picked men to march around the mountain and to capture and burn the Confederate wagon-train. As soon as the respective forces met, the Confederate cavalry under orders retired slowly and, dismounting, came into action on foot. The artillery, consisting of four pieces, was advanced rapidly to a slight elevation in the cañon, and immediately opened fire upon the advancing Federals. The Confederate infantry was rapidly deployed into line, extending from a fence on the left to a pine forest on the right, across the road which led through the narrow defile, and completely blocking the way and driving in the Federal pickets. The Federals then brought up their artillery, consisting of two batteries, eight pieces,—six twelve-pounders and two six-pounders. The infantry were at the same time thrown out upon the flanks, taking positions on the mountain-sides to the right and left. During the whole day the Confederates were acting on the aggressive and the Federals on the defensive. The Federal left wing under Colonel Tappan, occupying a position covered with trees and large boulders, was especially difficult to dislodge, and offered a stubborn resistance. It was at this point that the Confederates charged under the gallant Major John S. Shropshire, who was killed, and Captain D. W. Shannon, of Company C, of the Fifth Regiment, was at the same time captured. Shropshire fell by the hands of Private Pierce, of Company F, First Colorado Volunteers. On the fall of Shropshire his men retired, but renewed the charge successfully later in the day. On the Confederate left Colonel Scurry directed the operations in person, Major Raguet commanding the centre and Major Pyron the right. A large body of Federals, availing themselves of a gulch that ran up the centre of an enclosed field on their right, sought to turn the Confederate left flank; but Scurry, perceiving the movement, advanced his men, charging through the clearing some two hundred yards under a heavy fire, and fell upon the Federals in the gulch with knives and pistols. For a short time a

most desperate and deadly hand-to-hand conflict ensued, when the steady courage of the Confederates prevailed, and their antagonists broke and fled in the wildest disorder and confusion. Major Raguet charged rapidly down the centre, driving the Federal artillery before him; however, the Federal batteries made a stubborn resistance, took a new position, and renewed the contest three several times before they finally lost the day.

Lieutenant Bradford of the Confederate artillery having been wounded and carried off the field, and his battery having no other officer to command, it was hastily withdrawn. Colonel Scurry seeing this, ordered the battery to again advance, and made a pause to reunite his forces, which had in the action become somewhat scattered. When again ready to advance, which was not long after, he found the Federals strongly posted behind a long *adobe* wall that ran nearly across the cañon, and a large ledge of rocks in the rear. The artillery having returned to the front under Sergeant Patrick and Private Kirk, again opened fire on the enemy. Major Shropshire was sent to the right and Major Raguet to the left, with orders to advance through the pine timber and attack the Federals on both the flanks. The centre having been posted on the road, with orders to charge as soon as they heard the sound of their comrades' guns on the flanks, Scurry sent Pyron to the assistance of Raguet, and he went to the left to find Shropshire and learn the cause of the delay in making the assault. Colonel Scurry, finding that Shropshire had been killed, at once assumed immediate command of the right wing and attacked the Federals at the ranch; at the same time Major Raguet and Major Pyron opened a galling fire on the left from the rocks on the mountain-side, and the centre charging down the road, the Federals were driven from the *adobe* wall to the ledge of rocks in the rear, where they made their final stand. Here their batteries of eight guns opened a furious fire of shell, grape, and canister upon the advancing Confederates, who, heedless of the iron storm, pressed bravely on in a heroic effort to capture the batteries. Meeting here a strong force of infantry, the conflict waxed hotter than it had been before. The Confederate right and centre united on the left. The heroic Scurry, the intrepid Raguet, the courageous Pyron, pushed forward, followed by their men, until the muzzles of the guns of the opposing lines touched each other. Inch by inch the Federals held their ground until their artillery and their splendid train of a hundred wagons had time to escape. Then the Federal infantry broke ranks and fled from the field. In their precipitate flight they cut loose the teams and set fire to two of their wagons. The Confederates kept up the pursuit until they were forced to halt from the extreme exhaustion of the men. The battle lasted from ten in the morning till five in the afternoon, about seven hours, and during this time great valor was displayed on both sides. The artillery took position right along with the infantry and fought in close quarters. A solid shot from the Federal battery struck a cannon of the Confederates full in the muzzle and disabled it. The dress of the Coloradoans and the Texans was so similar that they could hardly tell each other apart even at close quarters.

The Federals retired under cover of the darkness to Kozlowski's Ranch, whence they had started out that morning to capture Santa Fé. But this victory of the Confederates was not unattended with disaster. The wily mountaineers had a general in command. Slough had sent Chivington to the rear, where he with a

force of four hundred picked men fell upon the wagon-guard of the Confederates, consisting of about two hundred sick and disabled men commanded by Chaplain L. H. Jones, and defeated them, capturing sixteen of their number and driving off the rest towards Santa Fé. The wagons were all burned, and Rev. Mr. Jones, while holding a white flag in his hand and offering to surrender, was shot and dangerously wounded by the cart-burners. Doubtless Chivington would have attacked Scurry in the rear had it not been for the circumstance that about the time the wagons were consumed a party of five Federal prisoners arrived from the front and were recaptured. They told Chivington of Scurry's victorious advance, so he beat a hasty retreat by the same route which he had taken in the morning, giving orders that the prisoners should be shot in case he should be attacked in his flight.

The Federal loss in the battle of Glorietta, according to the best information at command, was forty-four killed, sixty-four wounded, and thirty missing. The Confederate loss was thirty-six killed, sixty wounded, and sixteen captured. But among the slain the Texans mourned the daring and impetuous Major Shropshire and the accomplished and heroic Major Raguet; the former of whom fell early in the day, and the latter in the last and most desperate of the charges. The gallant Captain Buckholts and Lieutenant Mills, after fighting gallantly all day, fell near the close of the conflict. Major Pyron's horse was shot under him and Colonel Scurry's cheek was twice grazed by whizzing bullets. Colonel Scurry having lost his supply-train was in great straits for subsistence, but he permitted the Federals to bury their dead, and remaining upon the field during the 29th, performed the same sad service for the fallen Texans, and on the night of the 29th countermarched to Santa Fé to procure supplies and transportation.

During the campaign in New Mexico the soldierly qualities of Captain William P. Hardeman were conspicuously displayed. On the route from Valverde up the Rio Grande he observed with much anxiety the demoralization likely to ensue from the fact that a large portion of the horses in the Fourth Regiment had been lost and killed in battle. Knowing that discipline and organization could not be maintained with a part of the men mounted and a part on foot, he proposed to Colonel Scurry, who was in command, to dismount the Fourth Regiment and turn over their horses to the other regiments and the battery just formed. Through his influence, backed by the eloquence of Scurry, this change was effected, to the great gratification of General Sibley, who in his report speaks of the self-denial of the men of the Fourth Regiment in the highest terms. Again when it was necessary for the new-made infantry to cross the river, which was encrusted with ice near the banks half an inch thick, the men hesitated until Hardeman, the oldest man in the regiment, led the way, when all plunged in waist-deep with a cheer for "Old Gotch" that made the valley ring. General Sibley, finding that Captain Hardeman could control his men, placed him with his company on police duty at Albuquerque to preserve order and protect private property.

When the rest of the army moved on towards Santa Fé and Fort Union, Hardeman was left in command at Albuquerque, to garrison the town and preserve the commissary stores, on which the whole Confederate force depended for subsistence. About the 8th day of April Canby moved up from Fort Craig with about fifteen hundred men, and knowing that Hardeman only had about two hundred men

all told, including about forty convalescents from the hospital, he supposed that the Confederates would at once either retreat or surrender.

Canby's column marched right on up to the town without even halting the baggage-wagons, until they were greeted by a six-pound shot from Hardeman's artillery. The Federals then retired a short distance and made an attempt to enter the town by the road from the east. But "Old Gotch" moved his guns behind the *adobe* walls and gave Canby another greeting from his battery. The Federals then drew off and camped, and placing their twenty-four pounder in position shelled the town, although it was full of women and children supposed to be friendly to the Union cause.

They invested Albuquerque for five days and nights, shelling the town and driving in the pickets, but not assaulting in force. During all this time Hardeman and his company lay on their arms and did not remove their clothing for an hour's sleep. But they saved the town and the commissary stores on which Sibley depended to feed his men. Had these stores been lost, the whole Confederate outfit would have been compelled to surrender.

Though in point of bloodshed this engagement appears insignificant in comparison with others occurring in this Territory during the Confederate occupation, the heroic determination which characterized the struggle, and the results achieved, entitle it to particular mention.

Leaving Albuquerque on the 12th of April, Sibley's army took its course down the Rio Grande, the Fourth Regiment crossing over to the right bank and the Fifth remaining on the left bank of the stream. For three days they continued marching in this fashion, as if despising their antagonists or inviting attack. A small party of Kit Carson's regiment of Mexicans killed a couple of stragglers of the Fourth Regiment, and were in turn attacked by the "Brigands" (a company of Californians in the Confederate service), who killed two of them and captured twenty-five.

In the mean time General Canby with a force from Fort Craig had formed a junction with Colonel Paul from Fort Union at Tijeras, on the 13th, and, turning quickly, marched thirty-six miles and arrived at Peralta before Colonel Green knew of his approach. A mountain howitzer and seven wagons loaded with supplies, having been detained by the deep sands of the roads and the weakness of the teams, were captured by the Federals. The escort of the train made a stubborn resistance, which resulted in a loss to the Confederates of six men killed, two wounded, and twenty-two captured. In the mean time, Sibley, learning that Green had been attacked, sent Scurry with the Fourth Regiment to his relief. Colonel Paul with his column and three companies of the Third United States Cavalry attacked Green's men, but they made no impression on them except to drive in their skirmishers, with a loss to the Federals of one killed and three wounded. The fighting continued all day, both with small-arms and artillery, but neither party deemed itself strong enough to attack the other in their improvised breastworks behind ditches and *adobe* walls. The only loss sustained by the Confederates was one man wounded accidentally by a shot from a comrade. The Federal loss was not ascertained.

During the night Colonel Green crossed over the river and joined the main

body of the Confederates on the left bank of the Rio Grande. Though Green was taken unawares he stood his ground bravely, and though Canby had the Texans almost surrounded with a greatly superior force, he lacked the nerve to attack them.

After the fight at Peralta, Sibley's army marched leisurely along down the Rio Grande on the right bank, Canby's forces following on the left, in sight of each other. General Sibley states that it was at first his intention on leaving Albuquerque to push on by the river route, being two days in advance of Canby, and attacking Fort Craig before his arrival to demolish the fort. This design appears to have been defeated by the rapid movements of the Federals after effecting a junction of the forces from Fort Craig and Fort Union at Tijeras on the 13th of April, and their sudden appearance at Peralta on the morning of the 15th, before the Fifth Texas Cavalry had succeeded in crossing the river.

It being deemed impracticable to attack Fort Craig in the crippled condition in which Sibley found his command at this time, it was determined to leave the river and seek a route through the mountains, and thus reach Donna Anna below Fort Craig without the hazard of another general engagement. Major Bethel Coopwood, who was familiar with the topography of the country, was selected for "the difficult and responsible task of guiding the little army through this mountainous and trackless waste." Accordingly, on the night of the 17th of April, all the wagons, amounting to thirty-eight in number, which could be dispensed with, and all surplus supplies, were abandoned or burned, seven days' rations were packed on mules, and the weary and perilous march through the mountainous desert was begun. The Confederates left the Rio Grande, and, after marching over a very rough country more than seven hours, came to the head of a cañon, which they followed down until nearly daylight, making a distance of about fourteen miles, and bivouacked without water. Eight miles farther on they reached water, which was very brackish, and here the advance waited for the rear to come up. On the 19th the Texans resumed their march,—five miles to the head of Salt Creek and twenty more to Bear Spring, which were covered by the infantry, cavalry, and artillery. Along this route it was necessary for the men to tie ropes to the cannon and drag them up the mountains. Scurry set the example by dismounting and taking hold of the ropes himself. Each regiment had a battery to pull along, and divided out the guns among the several companies. The men cheerfully surrendered their horses for use in the artillery carriages and put their own shoulders to the wheels in the steepest places. Conspicuous among those who toiled at this self-imposed task was Major William P. Hardeman, of the Fourth Texas Cavalry, who by the force of his example was worth a hundred men. Passing along narrow defiles, toiling up precipitous hills and mountains, crossing tremendous cañons, the weary, starving Texans pursued their march hour by hour and day by day. Now and then a herd of antelope would cross their track only to fall before their unerring rifles and replenish their depleted commissary stores; water was only to be had at long and weary intervals, and then in insufficient quantities and sometimes scarcely palatable.

On Friday, April 25, the weary, dispirited soldiers arrived at the valley of the Rio Grande at the north of Sheep Cañon, a point about five miles below Alamosa

and forty miles below Fort Craig, after nine days of incredible hardships and privations and a journey of one hundred and fifty miles through a wilderness of mountain peaks and almost bottomless cañons.

This was a wonderful retreat in more than one respect. The patience and fortitude of the men were as remarkable as the misfortunes which they had to encounter. Had Canby followed up the retreat with the mounted men he had just received from Colorado, he must have succeeded in capturing the entire Confederate force, or, if he had confronted the toil-worn Confederates when they turned in to seek the Rio Grande again below Fort Craig, he could have compelled an immediate and unconditional surrender. The subordinate officers and the men among the Texans cannot be praised too highly for their courage, fidelity, patience, and fortitude, and every soldierly quality, except discipline.

General Sibley having reunited the remnants of his little army along the Rio Grande about Fort Fillmore, in the latter days of April, 1862, began his preparations to evacuate the Territory of New Mexico. By the first days of August the last of the Confederates had left New Mexico and Fort Bliss, Texas, and Sibley's brigade had reached San Antonio and been furloughed to rest, recruit, and re-equip themselves with clothing, blankets, and such supplies as they could obtain from their friends and relatives at home.

The short furlough given to the members of the brigade after their return from New Mexico having expired, the several regiments were ordered to rendezvous in the vicinity of Hempstead on the 28th of October. This order was promptly obeyed, and the men returned to duty with renewed energy and refreshed patriotism. Most of them had been re-outfitted with arms and horses furnished by themselves or their friends at home, but they were wholly without tents or uniforms, and many of the necessary munitions of war were wholly lacking.

The brigade was, however, reorganized and drilled daily in squad and company, and weekly or oftener by regiments, and now and then was assembled in review. These occupations were continued during the months of November and December, 1862, at Camp Groce and in that neighborhood, where there was plenty of provisions and forage.

On October 10, 1862, Major-General John B. Magruder was assigned to the command of the District of Texas, New Mexico, and Arizona, relieving Brigadier-General Hebert. Sibley's brigade was at that time in camp near Hempstead, preparing for their march to Louisiana, for which field of operations they had marching orders. General Hebert, deeming Galveston untenable, had evacuated it and withdrawn the main body of the Confederate troops which had occupied it to the mainland, still holding the bridge across the bay and a small earthwork at the island end of the bridge opposite Virginia Point. When General Magruder took command of the district he determined, if possible, to free every inch of Texas soil from the footsteps of the invaders. For this purpose he caused two river steamboats, the *Bayou City* and the *Neptune*, to be transformed into rams, and rudely armored by a protection of their boilers and a barricade of cotton-bales. The next step was to get these boats manned by soldiers to serve as marines. A call was made for volunteers, and hand-bills were posted all over the city of Houston urging the people to enlist in this service. Captain Leon Smith, who had been a seaman or a naval officer,

was to have command of the expedition on the water, while General Magruder in person commanded the forces co-operating from the land. Either the extreme hazard of the expedition or the fact that Leon Smith was a stranger deterred the citizens and many soldiers from volunteering to man the boats. In this extremity, at the suggestion of Lieutenant-Colonel Bagby, General Magruder sent for Colonel Tom Green. He unfolded to him the plan of attack, and asked him to take three hundred men from his brigade and embark on the boats under the command of Captain Leon Smith. This Colonel Green declined to do, insisting that his rank should be respected on the sea as well as on the land. It was finally concluded that the command of the flotilla should be intrusted to Colonel Green, with Captain Leon Smith as a sort of sailing-master. Green returned to his regiment and called for volunteers in the following famous order :—

"SOLDIERS: You are called upon to volunteer in a dangerous expedition. I have never deceived you. I will not deceive you now. I regard this as the most desperate enterprise that men ever engaged in. I shall go, but I do not know that I shall ever return. I do not know that any who go with me will, and I want no man to volunteer who is not willing to die for his country, and to die now."

Every man in the Fifth and Seventh Regiments, to whom this order was addressed, volunteered in response to this call. The Fourth was some distance away and did not hear of the expedition in time. However, sixty of them volunteered, but were ordered back to their regiment. Three hundred men were selected, half from each of the two regiments, the Fifth and Seventh, to serve as marines. Those from the Fifth embarked on the *Bayou City*, and the detachment from the Seventh on the *Neptune*. The *Bayou City*, the largest of the two boats, was the flag-ship, as it might be called, and was under the immediate command of Colonel Green. The *Neptune*, the fastest boat, was commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Bagby. Each boat had a tender to supply her with wood and other necessary materials. In addition to these house-marines, Lieutenant Harby, with a company of infantry acting as artillery, was ordered on board the *Neptune*. On board the *Bayou City* were also Captain Weir's company of Cook's heavy artillery regiment, who had volunteered and were ordered to this service from the Sabine, and Captain Martin's company of cavalry from New Iberia, Louisiana. The volunteer marines of the naval expedition were armed with Enfield rifles and double-barrelled shot-guns.

General Magruder had in the land force Cook's regiment of heavy artillery, six companies of Pyron's regiment, portions of Elmore's regiment and Griffin's battalion, Reiley's regiment, and the remnants of Green's and Steele's regiments of the Sibley brigade. The Confederates also had twenty pieces of artillery, of which six were heavy siege-guns. The Federals had taken possession of the city of Galveston on its evacuation, but with a very small force. On the 24th of December three companies, D, G, and I, of the Forty-second Massachusetts arrived at Galveston in the steamer *Saxon*, and the next day landed on Kuhn's wharf, which they fortified. They patrolled the city during the day, but withdrew into their fortifications at night. The Federal fleet, then lying in the waters of Galveston, consisted of the *Harriet Lane*, carrying four heavy guns and two twenty-four-pounder howitzers, commanded by Captain Wainwright, United States navy ; the

Westfield, flag-ship of Commodore Renshaw, a large propeller, mounting eight heavy guns; the *Owasco*, a similar ship to the *Westfield*, mounting eight heavy guns; the *Clifton* and the *Sachem*, both steam propellers, having four heavy guns each; two armed transports, two large barks, and an armed schooner, with two other schooners.

Such was the formidable array which the Confederates had to encounter in their heroic efforts to recapture the Island City. The land forces moved off after dark, and arrived within the city limits without opposition. Captain Fontaine was sent with his artillery company, supported by Colonel Pyron, with six companies of his regiment, to secure Fort Point and make an attack from that quarter. Colonel Cook was placed in command of a storming party of about five hundred men, detailed from Pyron's and Elmore's regiments and Griffin's battalion. These were provided with scaling-ladders with which to mount the Federal fortifications on Kuhn's wharf.

Lieutenant-Colonel Mobly was posted at Virginia Point to protect the base line of operations, and the rest of the land forces were under command of Brigadier-General Scurry, lately lieutenant-colonel of the Fourth Texas Cavalry. General Magruder led the centre in person, and approaching within a short distance from the wharves discharged the first cannon, which was the signal for a general attack by land and sea. This was responded to by an almost simultaneous fire along the whole line of the Confederate land forces. Colonel Reiley, who had joined the Sibley brigade at Bray's Bayou on the 31st of December, took command of it there. Lieutenant-Colonel McNeill was in command of the Fifth, and Lieutenant-Colonel Hardeman of the Fourth. The Seventh was in command of Major Gustave Hoffman. This brigade, just as the first gun was fired by Magruder, marched into Galveston at double-quick from Eagle Grove, where they left the train which brought them from Houston. Lieutenant-Colonel McNeill was ordered to take some men from his regiment and man a nine-inch columbiad that was half-way in position at the railroad dépôt. This duty he performed with credit. McNeill was a graduate of West Point and a fine officer in any branch of the service. The firing of the guns from the ships was a beautiful sight to see,—from a safe distance,—but the bombs fell thick and fast around the Confederates as they were marching in double-quick time to their several points of attack; and, as it was impossible to charge these sea-batteries, their discharges were all the more unwelcome. Three shots pierced the custom-house and made it uncomfortable for those seeking shelter behind its walls.

In the mean time the moon had gone down, but there was bright starlight, showing the Federal ships plainly as they rode at anchor in the harbor. These from the first kept up a very heavy discharge of shells, alternating with grape and canister. The Confederates stood by their guns and gave shot for shot. Colonel Cook with his storming party, finding the scaling-ladders too short for use, after some hot work, withdrew to the shelter of the buildings on the nearest wharf. As the Federal fire from the ships was very dangerous and deadly, and daylight came on to show the position of the Confederate artillery more exactly, General Magruder withdrew the cannon to places of greater security. This delicate duty was performed by General Scurry with great skill and gallantry. The contest between the

gunboats and the infantry on the Northern side and the attacking Confederates on the island, lasted about two hours and a half, and grew warmer every minute. Such was the condition in which daylight found the land forces under Magruder, when Green with his cotton-clad boats came dashing down to the rescue.

The flotilla moved off from Harrisburg, in Buffalo Bayou, at two P.M. on the 31st of December, 1862. Although the service was novel and known to be extremely dangerous, such was the confidence of the Texans in their commander, Colonel Green, that the expedition had to some extent the appearance of a pleasure excursion,—at least until it entered Galveston Bay. At midnight the little fleet passed Half-Moon Shoals, and proceeded down the bay to within five miles of the city; but the signal-gun being silent, the marines returned to the shoals and awaited the booming of Magruder's cannon. This was heard with joyful hearts at half-past four New Year's morning, 1863, and immediately the flotilla was started for the city under a full head of steam. The scene as it appeared to Green and his men was magnificent. The artillery duel between land and sea in the clear starlight made an illumination superior to any other class of fireworks, rivalling in splendor the aurora borealis. Then the sound of artillery was the sweetest of music to the ears of these veteran soldiers. Their hearts beat high with patriotic impatience, and they were eager to encounter the invaders of Texas soil. They had not long to wait. The *Neptune*, being the fastest boat, was the first to engage the Federal fleet. Moving to the larboard she passed the *Harriet Lane*, and was struck amidships by a round shot, and sunk at once to the bottom; but the water was so shallow that the riflemen on the upper deck were able to do serious execution picking off the gunners on the *Harriet Lane*, and this they did in martial style. The *Bayou City* slowly but surely came into action, but in the advance her best piece of artillery was bursted, killing the brave and lamented Captain Weir. The Confederate ram kept on her course and ran her prow directly into the wheel-house of the *Harriet Lane* and stuck fast, disabling the Federal vessel and careening the *Bayou City*. Then, under orders from Colonel Green, the Texans grappled the *Harriet Lane* and boarded her, cutting away the netting as they went. Sergeant Carson, of Company A, of the Fifth Regiment, was the first man on board, followed closely by Captain Leon Smith and others. Colonel Green was soon on deck among his men, and the victory was complete. Captain Wainwright was killed and Lieutenant Lea of his ship met the same fate. The father of Lieutenant Lea was among the forces manning the *Bayou City*. As soon as the *Harriet Lane* was taken, the Forty-second Massachusetts surrendered to Colonel Cook, and the Federal vessels in the harbor hoisted the white flag. A truce was agreed on for three hours between the vessels in the harbor. This truce did not extend to the land forces; though, with the surrender of the Massachusetts troops, the firing ceased.

In the mean time Commodore Renshaw, who was on board the *Westfield*, which in attempting to assist the *Harriet Lane* had run aground on Pelican Island, was unable to manœuvre his vessel, and the *Clifton*, which had come to her assistance, being unable to float her, he determined to blow her up. The *Mary Boardman* also tried to help the *Westfield* off, but failed. At about ten A.M., while the truce was still in force, Commodore Renshaw, having poured turpentine over the magazine, set fire to the *Westfield* with his own hand. He then stepped down

into his boat, in which were his lieutenant, his engineer, and two oarsmen. The magazine of the *Westfield* exploded prematurely, blowing her to pieces and destroying the boat and all on board of it, including the ill-fated commodore. Then the Federal fleet having secured a pilot, under command of Captain Law, went over the bar. In this ignominious flight, made in violation of the truce, were included the *Owasco*, the *Clifton*, and the *Sachem*, all gunboats, followed by the *Saxon*, the *Boardman*, and two schooners. There were left in the hands of the Texans the *Harriet Lane*, two barks, and a schooner. The Texans thus captured one fine steamship, two barks, and one schooner, ran ashore and destroyed the flag-ship of the commodore, drove off two war steamers, all of the United States navy, and three armed transports, and took over three hundred prisoners. The number of guns captured was fifteen; and a large quantity of stores, coal, and other material also was secured. The *Neptune* having been sunk in the beginning of the contest, her officers and crew, with the exception of those killed in battle, were saved, as were also her guns. The loss on the Confederate side was twenty-six killed and one hundred and seventeen wounded. The alacrity with which officers and men, all of them totally unacquainted with this novel kind of service, some of whom had never seen a ship before, volunteered for an enterprise so extraordinary and apparently desperate in its character, and the bold and dashing manner in which the plan was executed, are certainly deserving of the highest commendation.

The brigade remained on Galveston Island for sixteen days, and then returned to Hempstead and Navasota; and about the middle of February started on the march for Louisiana.

General Richard Taylor having been assigned to the command of the District of Louisiana, in the fall of 1862, made vigorous and successful efforts towards putting Louisiana in a position of defence. The nature of the country, covered as it is with rivers and bayous and indented with bays and estuaries, rendered it peculiarly difficult to protect from the ravages of gunboats and the inroads of land forces sheltered by these floating batteries.

General Tom Green.

Early in February of 1863 Green's brigade, just from the victorious encounter with the Federal fleet at Galveston, was ordered to reinforce General Taylor in Louisiana. The regiments set out separately and marched by different routes, and finally arrived during the second week in March at various camps in the vicinity of Opelousas. Waller's battalion had been in Louisiana for several months, and, after the battle of Bisland and the promotion of Green to the rank of brigadier, was attached to Green's brigade. Waller may be said to have opened the Louisiana campaign by his successful attack on the Federal forces at Bayou Des Allemands, in the fall of 1862; and the capture of two companies of infantry and their guns. His men were equipped afterwards with the captured arms, and used them to advantage in many encounters with the Federal forces.

On the 28th of March, 1863, General Weitzel sent the gunboat *Diana* up the

Bayou Têche, from Berwick's Bay, supported by a land force, and attacked the Confederate outposts. The Federal skirmishers were repulsed, and Captain Joseph D. Sayers with a section of the Valverde Battery advanced rapidly, and opened fire from the banks of the bayou on the gunboat and silenced her artillery in short order. The *Diana* surrendered with two companies of infantry on board. Her thirty-two-pound Parrott and two field-guns proved a valuable reinforcement to the Confederate artillery. The *Diana*, though protected by railroad iron and thoroughly armed and equipped, was not equal to the valor displayed by Captain Sayers and his light artillery. Early in April, 1863, the Federal forces were massed at Berwick's Bay sixteen thousand strong. They were commanded by Generals Weitzel, Emory, and Grover. On the 12th the Federals, twelve thousand strong, marched against Bisland, where the Confederates had thrown up slight earthworks. Another Federal force, four thousand in number, under command of General Grover, entered Grand Lake, endeavoring to turn Taylor's left flank and cut off his retreat at Yokeley's Bridge above Franklin. The main body of the Federals under Weitzel arrived in front of the earthworks at Bisland in the afternoon, and threw out skirmishers and opened on the Confederate lines with artillery. Taylor had the Confederate forces arranged as follows: Mouton's division, numbering six hundred men with six pieces of artillery, occupied the left, and held the ground from the lake to Bayou Têche. The gunboat *Diana*, under command of Captain Semmes, occupied the bayou, and was supported by two twenty-four-pound cannon on the right bank of the stream. Sixteen hundred men and twelve pieces of artillery held the ground between the Têche and the incomplete railroad embankment. Green's two regiments—Fifth and Seventh—occupied the extreme right, being dismounted and fighting on foot. Colonel Reiley with his regiment, the Fourth, and the Second Louisiana Cavalry, with a section of artillery, were at Hutchin's Point, on Grand Lake, awaiting the approach of Grover in his attempt to make the flank movement. With nightfall on the 12th the firing on both sides ceased, and the two armies bivouacked on the field. On the morning of the 13th Weitzel began his forward movement very leisurely, awaiting the success of Grover's flanking expedition. As the day advanced the Federal firing grew heavier, and his twenty-four-pound Parrott guns made their presence felt. The Confederates were short of ammunition for their artillery, and Major Brent thought it best to reserve the supply for emergencies. On the extreme right the Federal artillery fire was severely felt by Green's brigade, but his veterans stood their ground without flinching, though they suffered considerably in killed and wounded. Among the latter was Captain Joseph D. Sayers, of the Valverde Battery, who here received wounds which kept him on crutches (but not out of service) until after the war. The *Diana*, being subjected to a heavy fire from the Federal Parrotts, was disabled, and it was necessary to withdraw it from the action for repairs, causing a loss to the Confederates of their best gun. The Federals some time during the afternoon formed as if going to make a general assault on the Confederates, who awaited the attack with eagerness, but for some reason it was not made. Night again brought quiet, and both armies slept on their arms. At nine o'clock at night Colonel Reiley reported to General Taylor that Grover had landed at Hutchin's Point with his infantry and artillery. Of course an immediate retreat was necessary, for should Grover reach and hold Yokeley's

Bridge, near New Iberia, Taylor's army would be caught in a trap. Mouton silently withdrew from his position with his trains and his artillery, followed by his infantry. Semmes brought the *Diana* during the night softly past Franklin in time to participate in the conflict with Grover, but was compelled after the engagement to blow up his boat, having saved his crew, but, being the last to leave, was himself captured. Green with his two regiments composed the rear-guard, and opposed the advance of the Federals with such vigor as to save the trains and give the infantry and artillery time to pass Yokeley's Bridge. However, the Confederates were compelled to abandon the two twenty-four pounders and one piece from Cornay's battery, which had been disabled in the action. Everything else was brought off.

Grover in his advance from Hutchin's Point had stopped half a mile short of the road and the bridge, and Reiley with his own regiment and Vincent's and a section of artillery, aided by Clack's battalion, attacked him just at daylight, charging his lines and taking his men completely by surprise. But as the day broadened the weakness of the Confederates was exposed, and they were compelled to retire to the timber near the road. This movement was effected without disorder, though the gallant Colonel Reiley was killed and Vincent wounded and other losses were incurred. But the advance of the Federals was arrested. Mouton with his infantry came to the rescue, and Green held Weitzel well in check. The last wagon and foot-soldier passed Yokeley's Bridge; Green retired sullenly, firing on the Federal advance, and, passing the bridge, Taylor's army was saved.

Though Taylor was defeated at Bisland, his escape under the circumstances had all the moral effect of a victory. His resistance encouraged the people and impressed the enemy with respect. He retreated slowly by way of New Iberia and Vermilionville to Opelousas. Green had the post of honor, the rear-guard, throughout the retreat. He made a prolonged stand at Bayou Vermilion until night and destroyed the bridge. Taylor retired by easy marches to Red River above Alexandria, and Weitzel, after raiding Alexandria, turned to the east, crossed the Mississippi, and invested Port Hudson. Mouton with his and Green's brigade turned west towards the Sabine and recruited their wasted energies.

During the Têche campaign there were about one hundred men belonging to the Fifth that were on detached service. In the latter part of March, 1863, at a camp near Alexandria one night a call was made for "volunteers to go on a secret and dangerous service," and, as usual, there was a rush to get on the detail. It was intended that the detachment was to go on board the *Webb*, which was being fitted up as a gunboat by being barricaded with cotton-bales. The detachment was placed in command of Major Shannon and marched to Marksville, near Fort De Russy, and there camped until the early days of May, when it rejoined the regiment, not having seen an enemy or fired a gun. Great was the disgust of these volunteers not to have participated in the battle of Bisland and the masterly retreat for which Colonel Tom Green was made a brigadier-general.

During this campaign the Confederates lost in killed, wounded, and captured about twelve hundred and fifty men; many of the latter were stragglers from the Louisiana troops, who fell out on the retreat to visit their homes and tarried too long with their friends. The Federal loss was great, but the number is unknown.

After Weitzel had crossed the Mississippi, Green returned from Niblett's Bluff on the Sabine, and with his brigade scouted over the Têche country during the months of April and May, 1863; but Federal soldiers were scarce west of the Atchafalaya, and the Confederates were not strong enough to cross that bayou.

Early in the month of June, 1863, General Tom Green, under the orders of General Mouton, moved with his brigade to the lower Têche country for the purpose of reconnoitring the Federal position at Brashear City, and to collect and fit up a small fleet of light boats preparatory to an attack on that important stronghold.

On the night of the 22d of that month Green moved to Cochran's sugar-house, two miles from Berwick's Bay, with the Fifth Texas Cavalry, Second Louisiana Cavalry, Waller's battalion, the Valverde Battery, and a section of Nichols's battery. Here, leaving their horses, the dismounted men were thrown forward before daylight to the village called Berwick City, opposite Brashear City, where the Federals were encamped about two thousand strong. In the mean time Major Sherrod Hunter, of Baylor's regiment, on the evening of the 22d, had taken three hundred and twenty-five picked men from the Fifth Texas Cavalry, Waller's battalion, Rountree's battalion, Second Louisiana Cavalry, and Baylor's regiment, and embarked in small boats and sugar-coolers, numbering altogether forty-eight, at the mouth of Bayou Têche, in order to attack Fort Buchanan in the rear. He proceeded up the Atchafalaya into Grand Lake and, halting, muffled all the oars, and again set out silently for the point of destination. After a steady pull of eight hours the little mosquito fleet landed in the rear of Brashear City. Here they found the shore very swampy, and had to wade ashore and abandon their boats, such as they were, in the deep water, thus cutting off all means of retreat. Being here delayed by the difficulty of finding the road, it was not until after sunrise that, crossing a palmetto swamp in single file, they reached the open ground in full view of Brashear City, some eight hundred yards distant.

At dawn of day, Green, finding the Federals in quiet slumber, waked them up by a cannonade from the Valverde Battery. The first shot exploded in the centre of their camp, at a distance of nine hundred yards, causing the greatest confusion and panic. The Confederates fired forty or fifty shots into the Federal camp before they made any reply at all. Their first shot was from the gunboat lying at anchor in the bay not far below Berwick City. After daylight the Federal gunboat advanced towards the position of the Confederates, but a few well-directed shots from the Valverde Battery drove her off to a position about a mile below, where she opened on her assailants with her heavy guns. About the same time several batteries from the eastern shore of the bay opened on Green's men. The well-directed shots from the Federal cannon caused the Confederate artillery several times to shift their position. A heavy gun from the fort above the city, with the garrison of that fort, was brought down opposite Green's position, and opened a heavy fire on his brigade. This, together with the retreat of the gunboat, left the way open for Major Hunter and his forlorn hope to make their unexpected attack.

Having rested his men in the edge of the swamp until Green had engaged the Federals on the west side of the bay and attracted all their attention, Major Hunter now approached to within about four hundred yards of Fort Buchanan and drew up his men in line of battle. Dividing his forces into two columns, he charged the

Federal forts and the camps above and below the railroad depot at the same time; concentrating on the railroad building, where the main body of the Federals were posted under cover. Hunter's men advanced rapidly under a heavy fire from all parts of the Federal lines. After a severe but brief conflict the Federals surrendered at about half-past seven o'clock in the morning. The surprise was complete and the victory overwhelming.

The Federal loss was forty-six killed, forty wounded, and seventeen hundred prisoners. The Confederates lost three killed and eighteen wounded.

The Confederates captured the camp and all the equipage, stores, and munitions, valued at more than a million dollars. Among the spoils were twelve twenty-four- and thirty-two-pound siege-guns and two thousand five hundred stands of small-arms, about two hundred wagons and three hundred tents, and two thousand negroes.

The camp was given up to pillage. This was about the only time that this brigade ever looted a town or a camp. But few of the men could carry away their plunder, for Green ordered a pursuit, and they at once set out on their march for Bayou Bœuf.

During the evening of the same day Green came up with the Federals at Ramos, and there had quite an animated skirmish with them. The Federals had burned the railroad bridge and the wagon bridge and were well fortified on the east bank of the bayou; but finding that they were outflanked by Green with a part of his command on the east side of the Bœuf, they hastily retreated. On the night of the 23d Green crossed a small detachment over the Ramos and approached quite near to the Federal position on the Bœuf.

Colonel Major's command having approached the rear of their position, the Federals surrendered about four hundred men on the morning of the 24th of June. Thus ended this three days' campaign with a second victory for Green and his Texans.

On the 26th of June, 1863, General Mouton issued an order from his headquarters at Thibodeaux, commanding General Green with his cavalry division to take possession of the Federal fort at Donaldsonville. He took up the line of march about eight o'clock that night with Hardeman's, McNeill's, and Herbert's regiments of his own brigade, and Lane's, Stone's, and Phillips's regiments of Major's brigade, and Semmes's battery. After marching the entire night the troops encamped within nine miles of Fort Butler about sunrise on the 27th, Saturday.

Here Green rested his troops and their horses, and proceeded to collect all the information possible relative to the situation and strength of the defences at Donaldsonville. He learned that the fort was garrisoned by about four or five hundred Federal troops, and that there were five gunboats lying in the river opposite. He also learned that the approach to the fort was through an open plain nine hundred yards wide, and that there was a ditch around the fort, on all sides but that next the river, sixteen feet wide and twelve feet deep; making it impossible to scale the works except by the use of strong planks or scaling-ladders. From his camp at the ford and Davenport Plantation he wrote General Mouton, giving him this information, and expressing the opinion that an attempt to storm the fort would be attended with great loss of life and no adequate benefit, even if successful. He

further suggested that the object of the expedition being to annoy and capture, if possible, the Federal transports in the river, it could be better and more safely accomplished by taking a position below the town of Donaldsonville. He added that until he arrived at that point he had no idea of the position, strength, or feasibility of taking the fort, or the value of it when taken. He then detailed the preparations he was making for the attack, and strongly urged General Mouton to come down and take command; adding again that he thought the fort could be rendered nugatory by taking a position below it, thus compelling the garrison to come out and fight in the open field. To this letter General Mouton replied, approving the views of General Green as to turning the fort; but the letter was not received by Green until after the assault had been made and repulsed. During the day (Saturday) Green was not idle. He placed a pontoon bridge constructed of sugar-coolers across Bayou La Fourche, and crossed over Stone's regiment to the east of the bayou, and ordered him to advance towards Donaldsonville on that bank, and attract the attention of the Federals, and, if possible, to attack them on that side. With the balance of the division he advanced during the night of the 27th to within one and a half miles of the fort, and dismounted the men. Here he called the officers commanding the regiments together, and explained to them specifically the position each one was to occupy in the assault. After the troops had been ordered into position, Colonel Hardeman went to General Green and advised him not to make the attack, stating as his opinion that if the fort was taken the gunboats would shell the Confederates out as soon as the sun shone on them. As we have seen, this was Green's own opinion, but his orders were imperative; he had no reply to his letter written General Mouton, and the attack had to be made.

The plan of attack was as follows: Major Shannon, in command of the Fifth Texas Cavalry, was to make a circuit around the fort, reach the Mississippi one mile above, and advance down the line to the stockade, consisting of upright timbers set in the ground between the levee and the water's edge, and there make an entrance. Colonel Hardeman, commanding the Fourth Texas Cavalry, was to move up the Bayou Road along the levee of the La Fourche, and as soon as he heard the fire opened by Shannon, or a fire from the fort, to assault the fort at the water's edge along the stockade, and simultaneously with Shannon to make an entrance through the stockade, and with Shannon assault the garrison within, hand to hand. Both Shannon and Hardeman were charged that they were expected to take the fort; while Phillips, Lane, and Herbert, with their regiments, were to envelop the works, moving up around them to the brink of the ditch, shooting down the cannoneers and their supporters from the ramparts, at a distance of eighteen feet.

After this explanation to the commanders of the regiments, Shannon and Hardeman, being furnished with guides, set forward to approach and attack the fort. The regiments which were to surround the fort and attack from the outside of the ditch were under command of Colonel Major, and were also set in motion. As Shannon reached the river and turned down towards the fort he encountered the Federal pickets, and immediately a murderous fire was opened on the Fifth Regiment by the artillery from the fort and the two gunboats in the river. Evidently the assault was not unexpected, and the garrison and the gunboats were wide awake and waiting for the fray. Shannon led his men forward regardless of the

deadly hail from front and flank, and advancing down the Mississippi struck the stockade at the river's edge, and drove the enemy from it into the fort itself, firing at them through their own port-holes. The men scaled the stockade, mounting on each other's shoulders, and those left waded around the end of the stockade in the water two feet deep and thus gained an entrance; but they found to their surprise that they were not yet within the fort. As soon as this entrance was effected Shannon was wounded and captured, and the command of the storming party devolved on Captain Ragsdale, who was ignorant of the plan of attack, and had no orders as to what to do next. There was an impression among the men that they were to wait here for some one to come in from the other side; and, according to the plan, Colonel Hardeman was to meet them here from the lower side of the fort, but he was delayed until after daylight by the ignorance or treachery of his guide, and did not arrive in time. Hearing the firing from Shannon's rifles amid the roar of the artillery, General Green ordered an advance of the whole line. Colonel Phillips at the head of Major's column marched around the fort and with some of his men also entered the stockade. Colonel Herbert, of the Seventh, enveloped the ditch as directed and opened fire on the garrison. The fight was desperately contested on every side from without and within. Besiegers and besieged vied with each other in deeds of daring. Although Hardeman, from the causes named, arrived too late, his losses show with what determined courage that veteran regiment stood its ground after it came into action. By some mistake Colonel Lane with his regiment did not get into action. He was waiting for a guide who did not appear, though General Green acquitted him of all blame for not reaching the scene of conflict.

The purpose of the night attack, made as it was at two A.M., was to prevent the gunboats from observing the advance. But this scheme wholly failed, as the gunboats opened fire as soon as Shannon reached the river. There were no weeds along the margin of the stream to conceal the approach of the assailants, and their presence was immediately known and recognized by a concerted fire from fort and river. The failure of the attack has been attributed to the existence of a ditch within the stockade and on the river side of the fort, but this would not have prevented the Fifth and Fourth from capturing the fort if they had arrived simultaneously and had a commander who knew the plan of attack to lead them. After entering the stockade and waiting for the arrival of the Fourth Regiment, the men of the Fifth, without a leader, for Ragsdale was killed shortly after he took command, had a most desperate hand-to-hand fight with the Federals within the fort, using not only rifles and pistols, but brick-bats and any other missile which chance supplied. Captain Killough and Lieutenant Land and many of the men were wounded in the heads and faces by these novel weapons. There never was more desperate courage displayed than was shown by the assailants in this assault, and the besieged stood their ground with the greatest coolness and gallantry. The contest lasted from two o'clock until daylight, about three hours. The garrison consisted of about five or six hundred men; the assaulting party engaged was about eight hundred strong. The Confederate loss was very heavy in killed, wounded, and prisoners. The Federal loss is unknown. Among the killed were Captain Ragsdale and Lieutenants Darby and Cole, of the Fifth, Lieutenant Cart-

wright, of the Fourth, and Major Ridley, of Phillips's regiment. Major Shannon and Lieutenant John Shepard, of the Fifth, and fifty or sixty other officers and men were wounded and captured. The fort was much stronger than General Green expected to find it, and the difficulties in the way of its capture were not fully understood or appreciated. Had it been taken, it could not have been held against gunboats in the river, for it was built to resist a land attack only. The prize would have been a dear one at the cost of the lives and limbs of so many brave men, which, as it was, were lost in vain.

After the battle, General Green issued an address and circular, congratulating his troops on the heroism displayed, and speaking in befitting terms of their dead comrades. The circular was addressed especially to the Fifth Regiment, which he had commanded as colonel, and speaks in every line his confidence, his pride, and his affection for his comrades in the field.

After the dismal night of the 28th of June, 1863, Green's brigade remained in the vicinity of Donaldsonville watching the movements of the Federals at that point, while Major's brigade operated on the Mississippi River, having with them several batteries, mounting altogether about twenty pieces of artillery. These troops kept up an almost continual fire upon the Federal gunboats and transports which passed their points of observation. Several of the Federal boats were crippled more or less badly. This being such a great source of annoyance to the Federals, on the 11th of July several transports came down from Port Hudson loaded with troops, followed on the 12th by another large detachment. To meet this threatened advance General Green called in Major's brigade with the artillery and concentrated his forces along the Bayou La Fourche on both sides of that stream, facing the Federals as they descended in two columns, one on each bank. Green's forces, counting cavalry and artillery, did not exceed sixteen hundred men. These consisted of Major's brigade on the right wing, ascending the left bank of the bayou, and his own brigade on the left wing, ascending the right bank of the bayou. The regiments of Major's brigade were commanded by Colonels Lane, Stone, Baylor, and Phillips. He also had on the left bank of the bayou two sections of Faires's battery. The regiments of Green's brigade were commanded as follows: the Fourth by Lieutenant-Colonel Hampton, the Fifth by Captain McPhaill, and the Seventh by Lieutenant-Colonel Herbert. They were aided on the right bank of the bayou by one section of Gonzales's battery under Lieutenant Angel. There had been warm skirmishing for some days, and the Federals were advancing in force on both sides of the bayou. On the right bank of the bayou were the brigades of Generals Weitzel and Dwight, and on the left bank part of the command of General Grover.

On the morning of the 13th of July the Federal forces pushed on down the Bayou La Fourche towards the town of Thibodeaux, and at nine o'clock brought up their artillery and strengthened their skirmish line, filling the cornfields which covered the valley with troops in line of battle. Green determined then and there to deliver battle, and accordingly reinforced his skirmishers and checked the Federal advance. Calling Colonel Lane across the bayou, he gave him instructions for the engagement, and as soon as he had recrossed himself commenced the attack on the right side of the bayou. He found the Federals drawn up in battle array, reaching

from the bayou across the broad valley entirely to the swamp. Not having troops enough to oppose the whole of the Federal force on the right bank General Green attacked the two wings with the largest part of his brigade. Captain McPhaill, with a part of the Fifth and a small detachment of the Seventh Cavalry, advanced along the bayou, charging the opposing artillery, killing most of the gunners, and cutting to pieces the infantry support. He carried this battery in gallant style. At the same time Colonel Hampton was charging briskly the Federal right wing and turning his flank, while Colonel Herbert, with the Seventh Regiment and a part of the Fifth, drove the Federal centre through the fields in a regular steady advance. The Federals frequently rallied their flying forces and made desperate stands in the ditches which stretched across the fields, but one or the other of their flanks was invariably turned by the Confederates, and a galling fire poured down the ditches, while Herbert moved up on them in front, and thus they were driven about four miles up the bayou, almost to the walls of their fort. Each stand made by the retreating Federals was more feebly defended than the preceding, and the whole battle was a series of charges, the advancing Confederates frequently delivering their fire at a distance of twenty-five paces with the same coolness as if on parade.

COLONEL WALTER P. LANE.

The victory was complete for the Confederates. The entire ground over which the fight was made was strewed with dead and wounded Federals. They lost two hundred dead on the field, three hundred wounded, and two hundred and fifty captured. The Confederates also captured three pieces of artillery and about a thousand stand of small-arms, principally Enfield rifles. Among the spoils was also found a large quantity of ammunition, provisions, tents, wagons, teams, and general camp equipage. The Confederate loss was nine killed and twenty-four wounded. The disparity of losses shows the panic in which the charges of Green's men were received and the energy with which they pushed their advances. For the numbers engaged, the bloody annals of 1863 seldom show a more signal victory. Green remained on the field and in the vicinity for two days, and when under orders he retired to the bay, the Federals remained quietly under the walls of their fort, making no hostile demonstrations whatever, not even following the retiring Confederates with a picket line. Green reached the bay without molestation.

After the battle of La Fourche, Green crossed Berwick Bay and marched up the Têche, traversing the battle-field of Bisland and, passing the lovely village of Franklin, camped awhile at Jeanerette, observing the movements of the invaders. General Banks about this time sent a large force to Morganza, where the Atchafalaya leaves the Mississippi, with the purpose of forcing the Confederates to evacuate the Têche country. Here he began to cross the bayou on the night of the 1st of September, 1863. Hearing of this, Green immediately set out to check the Federal advance. On the 5th of September, Major H. H. Boone with a small

cavalry force met the foremost of the Federal forces at Nash's plantation on Big Cane and drove them back to Bayou de Glaize. On the next morning the Confederate artillery arrived and covered the crossing while the cavalry crossed the bayou. They then advanced, and all the brigade crossed without opposition. On the 7th a brisk engagement was fought at Morgan's Ferry, in which the Federals were repulsed with great loss.

Having driven the opposing forces from the ferry, Green spent some days in scouting up and down the bayou. The swamps here proved very sickly, and the Confederates buried more men from fever than they had lost in battle for months before.

On the 12th the Federals fell back to Catlett's plantation on the Fordôche, took a strong position, and checked the Confederate advance. Here day after day was passed in skirmishing with more or less men engaged, but with few losses on either side. Having succeeded in inducing General Mouton to send him on the 12th of September a reinforcement of Major's brigade, Green determined to attack the Federals wherever he found them. The weather was very unpropitious, but Green continued his preparations in the face of all the difficulties which severe storms, muddy roads, and incessant rain-storms could oppose to him, and at last was ready to advance.

On the 19th of September, 1863, General Mouton ordered General Green to make preparations for a movement against the Federal forces occupying the country east of Atchafalaya, and General Green proceeded to carry out these orders with marked ability and activity, his preparations resulting in a sharp engagement at the Fordôche Bridge and Mrs. Sterling's plantation on the Fordôche, six miles from Morganza. In obedience to orders, Colonel Major sent Phillips's regiment, commanded by Major Frazer, to General Green at Morganza. Green's forces began crossing the Atchafalaya at three o'clock P.M. on the 28th of September, Waller's and Rountree's battalions being the first to cross with their horses. Semmes's battery followed and were successfully crossed before dark. Next came Speight's and Mouton's brigades of infantry and the Fourth, Fifth, and Seventh Regiments Texas Cavalry, dismounted. All were safely landed on the east bank of the Atchafalaya about one o'clock on the morning of the 29th. It rained almost incessantly from dark in the evening of the 28th for forty-eight hours.

On the morning of the 29th at daylight the Confederate troops began their march. Colonel Henry Gray, commanding Mouton's brigade, to which Speight's brigade had been added, with fifteen mounted men from Waller's battalion, took up his line of march by a trail through the swamp which intersected the main road to Morganza about four miles from that place, and thus threw his forces between the main Federal forces at Morganza and their advance at Sterling's plantation and the Fordôche Bridge. Colonel Gray attacked the Federal advance on reaching the intersection of the road, Speight's brigade bringing on the engagement. The balance of the troops under General Green, consisting of his own brigade, with Waller's and Rountree's battalions of cavalry and Semmes's battery, started out at daylight by the main road, and reached Fordôche Bridge about eleven o'clock in the morning. The Confederate cavalry, being sent forward to the bridge, were fired on by the Federal pickets at that place. Sharp skirmishing continued here for

half an hour, when the report of firing was heard from the rear at Sterling's plantation. General Green moved forward with one section of the battery, under command of Lieutenant West, and the Fourth and Fifth Regiments, deploying through a ploughed field, opened fire with artillery upon the Federals at the negro quarters on Catlett's plantation. At the same time Major Boone, with two sections of the battery and the Seventh Regiment of Cavalry, moved rapidly down the road to the bridge, while the Fourth and Fifth Regiments, dismounted, advanced at double-quick across the ploughed field to the quarters. In the mean time the Federal cavalry advance had retired to their head-quarters, one mile farther on, at Norwood's house. The sections of artillery being united at the bridge, the whole Confederate force proceeded rapidly towards Norwood's house. Majors Boone and Rountree made a dashing charge upon the Federal cavalry, drawn up in line of battle near Norwood's house, and completely routed them, so that they made no further appearance upon the field, having retreated through a lane leading around the rear of the plantations, which means of exit was unknown to General Green. In this charge Lieutenant Spirey was killed while riding in the front with L. H. McNelly, who was wounded. During these transactions the battle between Colonel Gray and the Federals at Sterling's plantation had continued with slight interruption, and Major Boone, under orders from General Green, took his own command and Rountree's battalion and made a gallant charge upon the Federal battery at Sterling's, receiving two severe wounds from which he has never recovered. This charge closed the battle, with victory for the Confederates, the Federals surrendering in detachments as they retreated from the field and were overtaken by the advancing and victorious Texans.

The results of this victory consisted of four hundred and sixty-two prisoners, including twenty-nine officers, two excellent ten-pounder Parrott guns with caissons complete, two new ambulances, and one new hospital wagon filled with medical stores, two stands of regimental colors belonging to the Nineteenth Iowa and Twenty-sixth Indiana Volunteers, and a large quantity of small-arms and accoutrements, with which Green replaced ineffective weapons in his own command. The brigade in this engagement was under command of Colonel A. P. Bagby, of the Seventh Texas Cavalry, who brought his men most handsomely to the charge and kept them in hand ready for any emergency, and by his intelligent activity rendered most efficient service. The Confederate loss was, all told, twenty-six killed, including four officers, eighty-five wounded, including seven officers, and ten men missing; total, one hundred and twenty-one.

After burying the dead, General Green took up the line of march for Morgan's Ferry, having called in Colonel Gray with Mouton's brigade, and sent Phillips's regiment of cavalry towards Morganza to repulse the Federals should they attempt to advance from that point. The artillery reached the bank of the Atchafalaya at seven o'clock P.M. and commenced crossing. Owing to the muddy state of the banks, and the fact that only one ferry-boat could be used, it was nearly daylight before their crossing was completed. A small steamboat having arrived, was used in crossing the infantry. Many of the dismounted men and the infantry fell by the roadside completely exhausted, but all were crossed safely during the morning of the 30th.

When the wretched weather is considered, the heavy rains falling and the roads knee-deep in mud, the rapid movements of the Confederate troops and their great enthusiasm and willingness to make an attack and bring on a battle are deserving of great praise. Major H. H. Boone, from his gallantry in this engagement and from the severity of his wounds, which disabled him for the rest of the war, has been called "the Hero of Fordòche."

General Franklin landed at Brashear City on the 1st of October, 1863, with twenty-seven thousand men, and at once began a rapid march up Bayou Têche. His advance reached Vermilionville on the 9th, and was met by the Fourth Texas Cavalry under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Hampton, and a sharp skirmish ensued. The superior numbers of the attacking Federals compelled the Confederates to retire, which they did sullenly and in good order. Hampton fell back slowly, contesting every mile of road, continually checking the vanguard until the main force should arrive, and on the 13th reached the Carrion Crow. Here he found Hardeman and the rest of the brigade, and a desperate engagement ensued, continuing until night closed the conflict. This fighting checked the Federal advance for two days. On the 16th, Colonel H. C. McNeill with the Fifth Texas Cavalry met the Federals in the morning at Mrs. Rogers's plantation. He held them in check until noon, when their reinforcements arriving, McNeill was outnumbered and compelled to retire on the brigade, which, under Colonel Hardeman, had been in line of battle all day. As Hardeman had been waiting for a fight, he got it then and there, and it continued hot and heavy until night dropped the curtain and closed the bloody drama. On the following morning the Confederates retired to Hudson's plantation, where they again awaited the advance of the Federals, and sharp skirmishing ensued, lasting all of the 17th and 18th, the whole division being engaged under the personal command of General Green. But in consequence of the Federals being reinforced in overwhelming numbers, Green was compelled to fall back, fighting as he went. At Opelousas on the 19th the Federals were again checked by the brigade under command of Colonel Bagby. It was here that Franklin first learned of the Confederate victory at Sabine Pass, and in consequence of this news withdrew the main body of his forces to Vermilionville, leaving an outpost more than five thousand strong at Bayou Bourbeux.

On the 20th of October, 1863, Green with his cavalry division retired from Opelousas before the advancing Federals. His forces were disposed on Bayou Bœuf and Big Cane wherever forage could be procured. Resting here a few days, the Federals were found to have fallen back from the vicinity of Opelousas, where they had been encamped in considerable force. Green was then reinforced by three regiments of infantry, two from Walker's and one from Mouton's divisions, and by three sections of artillery. The Confederate forces at Opelousas, on the 1st of November, 1863, consisted of the following troops: 1st. An improvised brigade of infantry, made up of the Fifteenth Texas, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel J. E. Harrison, numbering two hundred and seventy-five; the Eighteenth Texas, commanded by Colonel W. H. King, numbering three hundred and twenty; and the Eleventh Texas, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel James H. Jones, numbering three hundred and fifty-five;—amounting all told to nine hundred and fifty officers and men. Colonel O. M. Roberts, being the senior officer present, was assigned by

General Green to the command of the infantry brigade. 2d. Bagby's brigade of cavalry, being the Fourth, Fifth, and Seventh Cavalry and Waller's battalion. Hardeman commanded the Fourth, McNeill the Fifth, and Herbert the Seventh Regiments. 3d. Major's brigade, consisting of three regiments of new troops, called Partisan Rangers. 4th. The artillery, consisting of a section each of the Valverde and Daniel's Batteries, commanded respectively by Lieutenants Hume and Hamilton, both sections for the day under command of Lieutenant Morse. The whole Confederate force under Green did not exceed two thousand five hundred men. The exact numbers are not accessible from any documents at hand.

The Federals under General Burbridge numbered at least five thousand,—being composed of two brigades of infantry of the Thirteenth Army Corps, three regiments of cavalry, and two batteries of artillery. These were encamped on Bayou Bourbeux, and constituted the rear-guard of Franklin's army. A much larger force was posted on Carrion Crow Bayou, three miles below, and the main army was encamped at Vermilionville.

The attack was made by Green about ten o'clock A.M., with the infantry on the left, Bagby's brigade in the centre, and Major's on the right. The infantry engaged the Federals first, and drove them steadily, until Bagby with the Fourth and Fifth dismounted and the Seventh and Waller's battalion mounted made a magnificent charge from the centre; and Major dashing in on them from the right, with his Partisan Rangers on horseback, pressed them back to their camp.

All this while the Federals had been pouring a galling fire into the advancing Confederates from musketry and artillery; but nothing could check the advance. The small artillery force on the Confederate side also made themselves heard and painfully felt. As soon as the engagement became general the Federal force gave way and fled. The victory was complete. The Federal loss was one hundred killed, one hundred and fifty wounded, and over six hundred prisoners; total, eight hundred and fifty.

General X. B. de Bray.

There were prisoners from the Sixtieth and Sixty-seventh Indiana, Twenty-third Wisconsin, Eighty-third and Ninety-sixth Ohio, and the First Louisiana (Federal) Cavalry. The Confederates also captured two batteries, besides a large quantity of improved small-arms, which were always acceptable, and accoutrements and camp equipage, which were eagerly appropriated. Most of the Federal artillery horses being killed, only one fine Parrott gun and caisson could be removed from the field. The Confederate loss was twenty-four killed, one hundred and two wounded, and thirty-eight missing, probably captured during a temporary confusion of the infantry lines on the left. The loss was heaviest among the infantry; they having encountered the main body of the Federals with the artillery half an hour before the cavalry could turn their left flank.

Two hours after the victory General Weitzel, of the Federal Nineteenth Army Corps, came up with a division of infantry, composed of three brigades, from the Carrion Crow Bayou; and General Green, being already outnumbered, thought it imprudent to give battle to these fresh troops, more than double his entire force, gradually retired towards Opelousas, and the Federals declined to follow.

This was one of the most brilliant engagements ever fought in Louisiana, and displays the genius of General Green for war, as well as the courage and endurance of the Texas troops, in the brightest colors.

After the battle of Bourbeux, Green with his cavalry took up his position at Carrion Crow Bayou. Here he remained quietly until the morning of the 11th of November, 1863, when the Federal commander determined on a reconnoissance in force, and accordingly advanced. Hardeman, leading his brigade, met him in the prairie with a determined resistance. Having satisfied himself of the Confederate strength, the Federal commander fell back on Vermilionville, and then evacuated that town on the 15th. Having burned the bridge over the bayou, the retreating Federals checked the advance of their pursuers for a few hours until another bridge could be constructed. This delay prevented the Federal pickets being overtaken again until they came within one mile and a half of New Iberia. The Federals here approaching in force, the Confederates left a strong picket-guard under Captain Stevenson, of the Fourth Regiment, and retired to Vermilionville. At twelve o'clock on the night of the 20th, Major Hoffman, of the Seventh Regiment, relieved Captain Stevenson on picket. Hoffman placed his pickets on the roads leading from New Iberia as he had been directed. Men from another regiment who were ordered to guard a road on Hoffman's left failed to reach their post, and thus left an avenue unguarded, by which a strong force of Federals marched, arrived and attacked Hoffman in the rear, while the whole army, twenty thousand strong, moved on him from the front. A general rout was the result,—Hoffman's men fled in every direction; some saved themselves from capture by wading into the water and hiding under the weeds and rushes until the Federals retired. The Confederate loss was one hundred and twenty-nine, mostly prisoners. Notwithstanding this affair, the Confederate pickets were still kept at Camp Pratt, twenty miles from the main force at Vermilion Bayou. Two companies at a time were detailed for outpost duty.

On the 24th of November, Companies A and E, of the Fourth Regiment, were sent out under Captain Long and Lieutenant Roberts. They were to be relieved the next morning by Captain Alexander with Companies C, F, and H of the same regiment. At daybreak on the 25th the Federals advanced in force.

The outpost under Lieutenant Roberts quickly fell back on the main guard under Captain Long, and they in turn were driven into the reserve under Captain Alexander, who as ranking officer took command. A line of battle was quickly formed, but to no purpose. The Federals with overwhelming numbers advanced with great gallantry and determination, and the Confederates were unable to check them. There were three columns, one in front of Alexander's men and one on each flank. There was nothing left to him but flight, death, or capture; so they all put spurs to their horses and retired in more haste than order. A long chase was had of twelve miles to the main camp on Bayou Vermilion. The Confederate

loss was one man killed and fifty-six prisoners, of whom many were wounded. The Texas cavalry in these movements made the serious mistake of undervaluing their adversaries. Many victories had made them over-confident, and they had to pay the penalty for these errors.

On the 29th of November an exchange of prisoners was effected between Generals Green and Franklin. As the Confederates had the larger number by more than seven hundred, it was agreed that these should be paroled, and in turn all the prisoners in New Orleans belonging to the Trans-Mississippi Department should be released. But the latter part of the bargain, for some unknown reason, was never carried out, and some of the best men in Green's brigade suffered a long and painful imprisonment in the Crescent City.

In the mean time Banks was organizing another expedition to make a descent upon the Texas coast. In order to meet and repel it General Magruder asked for reinforcements, and especially requested General E. Kirby Smith to send him Green with his brigade. Accordingly, on the 14th of December, 1863, Green and his mounted men took up the line of march for Houston, where they arrived, the advance on Christmas morning and the rear-guard a few days later. The weather at this time was very severe, wet and cold, and, as usual, the brigade was without tents, and sought shelter in the pine groves, where they constructed rude huts of pine boughs and such other materials as chance afforded. The whole country was inundated, ice formed on all the puddles and ponds two inches thick, and it was difficult to find dry spots enough to build camp-fires upon. Several of the men's feet were frozen and their toe-nails dropped off, but there was very little murmuring, and all stood by their colors.

The 9th of January, 1864, found Green's brigade at Sandy Point, in Brazoria County; here they remained about ten days, and started again for Hempstead to occupy, as they thought, their old quarters at Camp Groce. But not so; having left their horses on the Brazos, they took the train for Houston and thence to Virginia Point, where they remained a month. Then, on the 19th of February, they again went by rail to Columbia and remained a few days, after which they reached their horses once more at Hempstead.

This occasioned great rejoicing, for, although this brigade often dismounted to make a charge or to receive an attack on the battle-field, they never relished the idea of marching except on horseback. Their favorite appellation among themselves was Texas *Mounted* Volunteers. But the men were not allowed to remain long enjoying inglorious ease. It soon became evident that Banks did not really intend making a descent upon the Texas coast, but rather to attack that State by way of Louisiana. So Green's brigade, with other Texas troops, was ordered to reinforce General Taylor as rapidly as possible, and on the morning of the 15th of February, 1864, the advance under Colonel Waller set out for Louisiana. On the following day the Fifth Regiment marched, closely followed by the Fourth and Seventh Regiments. The fatigues and hardships of this forced march to Mansfield were so usual in the experience of these brave men that little record has been left of the incidents of their journey. No time was lost, for every soldier knew that there was bloody work awaiting their arrival at Taylor's headquarters.

On the 30th of March, 1864, Colonel McNeill with his regiment, the Fifth Texas Cavalry, reached Natchitoches, being in the advance of Green's brigade, and the first reinforcements received by General Taylor this year from Texas. He was ordered to fall back slowly towards Pleasant Hill, which he did, being joined *en route* by the other regiments of the brigade and other Texas troops. At the double bridges a brisk skirmish took place, in which the gallant Major Hoffman, of the Fourth Texas Cavalry, received a wound in the forehead, and, what grieved him more, had one of his spurs shot away. General Banks was advancing with his whole force, amounting to over twenty-five thousand men, in the direction of Shreveport, and was supported by Admiral Porter with a large fleet of gunboats in Red River. General Kirby Smith, commanding the Trans-Mississippi Department, on the part of the Confederates, was seeking to concentrate a large force at Shreveport and await an attack there. General Taylor, getting in all the troops he could from Texas and elsewhere, was looking out for a favorable position to make a stand, placed General Green in command of all the cavalry, and assigned him to the post of honor immediately in front of the advancing Federals. Green with his cavalry was able to check the advance of Banks, and give time for Major and Buchel to bring their Texans from Logansport to Mansfield.

On the 7th of April the advancing Federals attacked Green's rear-guard north of Pleasant Hill, and ground was won and lost several times in the sharp skirmishing which ensued. Towards evening the Federals, being largely reinforced, pressed the Confederate rear-guard back on Bayou du Paul, which is a clear, running stream, and the first water north of Pleasant Hill. General Green, being at Mansfield, and hearing the sound of artillery in the direction of the rear, rode down towards Pleasant Hill, accompanied by General Taylor, who embraced the opportunity on the way of definitely locating the battle-field for the general engagement which was to occur on the morrow. General Taylor, after selecting his ground, returned to Mansfield, and Green rode on in the direction of the firing, and met the Confederates retreating at Robertson's Mill on Bayou du Paul. Here, finding Colonel Walter P. Lane in command, he placed his troops, now reinforced till they numbered about three thousand, in line of battle. Shortly after he was attacked with vigor by the Federal advance, six thousand strong, and a furious contest raged until sunset, the waters of Bayou du Paul being the immediate prize to be lost or won. Green held the water-line and sent to Taylor for reinforcements of infantry, requesting Mouton's division; but Taylor ordered him to fall back during the night to the place selected, promising to deliver battle in the morning. Green fell back as directed to Moore's Farm, three miles from Mansfield, and held his ground until Taylor was ready to receive Banks in battle array. General Taylor, after consulting with Green and Mouton, selected his ground and determined to deliver battle on the 8th. The place selected was a large field lying across the main road from Pleasant Hill to Mansfield, three miles south of the latter village. In the mean time Banks had set out from Grand Ecore with his army, and Porter, with six gunboats and twenty transports, had left the same point and was working his way up Red River. Taylor concentrated his forces, composed of Churchill's division from Missouri, Walker's division from Texas, and Mouton's division from Louisiana, all infantry, and of Green's division of mounted men, composed of his

old brigade under Bagby and of two other brigades commanded respectively by Bee and Major. These, with several batteries of artillery, constituted the Confederate available fighting force.

General Taylor gives his numbers on the morning of the 8th of April, 1864, as follows: "I had on the field five thousand three hundred infantry, three thousand horse, and five hundred artillerymen,—in all eight thousand eight hundred men, a very full estimate. They were disposed for battle as follows: on the right of the main road, Walker's infantry division, composed of three brigades with two batteries; on the left of the main road, Mouton's infantry division, composed of two brigades and two batteries. As Green's men came in from the front they were arranged in a position, dismounted, on the left of Mouton. A regiment of mounted men was placed on each of the roads running parallel with the main road, and De Bray's cavalry regiment with McMahon's battery was held in reserve on the main road. It so happened, from the configuration of the ground, that McMahon's battery was the only artillery which was able to do much service, but these brave artillerists acquitted themselves handsomely. During the forenoon the Federals having advanced and poured a heavy fire into Mouton's men, and showing themselves in an effort to turn the Confederate left flank, Randall's brigade was moved from Walker's line on the right of the main road to strengthen Mouton's on the left. The Federals were driven back with heavy loss, and, after twice more endeavoring to outflank the Confederates, made no forward movement again during the forenoon. About four o'clock in the afternoon, the Federals showing no disposition to advance, Taylor ordered a general forward movement along the whole Confederate line. Mouton's men advanced under a heavy fire across the field and into the woods beyond. Here the Confederate loss was severe. General Mouton and several of his colonels and other officers and many of his brave men laid down their lives for the Southern cause. Polignac's brigade of Texans suffered greatly, losing Colonel Noble with many others. Captain Chauncey B. Shepard was killed, and Major Joseph D. Sayers, who was fighting on crutches, was again severely wounded. On the right of the road, Walker with Waul's and Scurry's brigades drove everything before him, turned the Federal left flank, and greatly aided in the general rout which followed.

General William R. Scurry.

General Green, after reconnoitring carefully the Federal position, gave the order to advance, which was heartily obeyed by his cavalry, now dismounted and fighting as infantry. Although retarded by dense woods and resisted by a heavy force in front, Green gradually turned the Federal right flank, and inflicted heavy loss upon them in killed, wounded, and captured, taking a large wagon-train and several pieces of artillery. The Confederate charge was made along the whole line at the same time. It was a grand and imposing spectacle to see the infantry march

across the field at double-quick, not halting to fire or break their alignment until the southern fence of Moore's farm was reached and crossed, and the Federal forces posted in the woods behind were forced back into the depth of the forest. Here the Confederates renewed the advance, and were stubbornly resisted for a long time by a heavy force of Federals, who were at last compelled to give way with great loss in killed and wounded and artillery and men captured. The first Federal line, consisting of all the cavalry and one division of the Thirteenth Army Corps, had already fled, leaving wounded, prisoners, artillery, and wagon-trains in the hands of the victorious Confederates. The advancing columns of the pursuing party after following for about two miles came up with the Second Division of the Thirteenth Army Corps, which was soon routed with heavy loss, and, abandoning their artillery and wounded, joined in the general retreat. The Confederates continued their victorious advance for more than four miles, taking prisoners, wagons, and artillery in their way; and at nearly sunset found the Nineteenth Army Corps, which had yet been engaged, drawn up on a little hill called by General Banks, Pleasant Grove. Here breastworks had been hastily constructed, and the Confederate advance was checked at a small stream in the open pine woods. The fatigued forces of Taylor, somewhat scattered in the pursuit, made another advance on the fresh troops of the Federals posted behind their breastworks on the crest of the hill, but a furious fire covered the little peach orchard on the hill-side with Confederate dead. As the main body of the Federals were in full flight, and the Confederates had gained the water and held the battle-field, it was deemed best not to press the pursuit in the darkness which was now coming on; so they bivouacked on the field along the banks of the little stream, and waited for the dawn to renew the pursuit. The Confederates secured more than two thousand five hundred prisoners, twenty-two pieces of artillery, many thousand stands of small-arms, numerous regimental colors, and a large train, consisting of two hundred and fifty wagons loaded with ammunition, baggage, and supplies. Eight thousand Federals, comprising cavalry and two divisions of infantry, had been utterly routed and disorganized. The loss of the Confederates in killed and wounded was heavy, especially among the officers, who were everywhere leading their men, but not near so large in proportion as that of the Federals. Thus ended the battle of Mansfield, and the part that Green's brigade played in it was as glorious as their previous history gave reason to expect of them.

On the morning of the 9th of April, 1864, Green prepared to attack the Nineteenth Army Corps on the crest of the hill at the peach orchard, but not a soldier was to be seen behind the deserted breastworks. Green pushed on with his cavalry towards Pleasant Hill, fourteen miles away, capturing large numbers of stragglers on the way without firing a gun. As he reached the open ground in front of Pleasant Hill, he saw the last of the Federals just entering the village. Here Banks was reinforced by ten thousand men, chiefly from the Sixteenth Army Corps, under command of General A. J. Smith. These reinforcements swelled his effective force, notwithstanding his losses at Mansfield, to more than eighteen thousand men. The village of Pleasant Hill is situated on a table-land rising along the Mansfield and Fort Jessup Road, a mile or more from east to west. On the western margin rises College Hill, where the road from the Sabine enters the hamlet. Blair's Landing lies on Red River, sixteen miles east, and Natchitoches and Grand Ecore are

thirty-six miles away. The Federal fleet, supported by land forces, was on the 9th above Blair's Landing, forty-five miles by the river from Grand Ecore. The reconnoissance made by Green as soon as he reached the field showed the Federals to be posted on the edge of an old clearing partly grown up with young pines. The Federal right rested on a deep ravine, and extended to the left along the edge of the clearing and down a ravine to the edge of the rising ground, and thence with the acclivity back to the College Hill, where the left wing rested. The whole Federal line was thus concealed from sight. The main line with the artillery occupied the plateau. Green with his cavalry dismounted kept the Federals busy until the Confederate infantry could arrive. Shortly after noon Churchill's division came up, being the first to arrive. They were so much jaded from long marching that they were ordered to lie down and rest for two hours. Then came Walker's and Polignac's divisions later, and they received similar orders. When the whole Confederate force had reached the field there were not more than twelve thousand effective men. At three o'clock P.M. Churchill was ordered, with his division and three regiments of cavalry and two batteries of artillery, to move to the right across the Sabine Road and turn the Federal left flank and make a vigorous attack; a like attack was to be made by Major on the Federal right, and by turning this flank Major was to reach the rear of Banks and cut off his retreat to Grand Ecore. At half-past four Brent opened fire on the Federal centre with twelve pieces of artillery advanced to within seven hundred yards of his lines, and soon silenced the opposing guns. Then the guns were directed to the hill opposite with effect. As the noise of Churchill's attack on the Federal left grew louder, De Bray's brigade, under orders from Green, charged down the main road on the Federal centre. General H. P. Bee, in command of this division, led this charge in person. The Federals, being disconcerted by the suddenness of this onslaught, fell back on their second line, and there opened a destructive fire on the advancing Confederates at short range, which forced them to retire. Here the gallant Colonel Buchel was slain, brave De Bray was wounded, and Bee had his horse killed under him. This brigade, though repulsed, fell back in good order and filed to the right and dismounted, preparing to attack on foot, while Walker's infantry came to the front and took their place in the line.

GENERAL H. P. BEE.

Green now made his attack on the Federal right, posted upon the ravine, where they maintained their ground with much courage; but the Confederate attack was so vigorously made and maintained that they were compelled to retire over the ravine, up the hill, and back to and beyond the road down which Bee with De Bray's brigade had recently charged. Green, coming up with Walker's infantry division and finding General Walker wounded and disabled, being the senior officer, took command and directed another attack upon the point of the hill in front, which appeared to be the Federal stronghold. The Federals being

posted behind a dense growth of small pines, the attacking Confederates were put at a great disadvantage and failed to make any impression on their antagonists. The configuration of the ground was such, also, that the Federals could concentrate a heavy fire from several lines upon the advancing Confederates, and so severe was the rain of leaden hail that the small pines were cut down in windrows along the front. The gallant assault of the Confederates was unsuccessful. Being defeated in the effort to carry this stronghold, Green obtained from General Taylor the help of Polignac's division, which had been held in reserve, and moving farther to the left, where the front was more open, he directed, with all the forces, horse, foot, and artillery, under his command, an attack from this quarter. The assault was vigorously made, but on the approach of night some confusion arose, and the cry was made that the Confederates were firing into their own men, and thus the combat ended in that portion of this bloody field.

At the sound of Churchill's guns on the right Walker led forward his division in *échelon* from the right. The attack was delivered in good order, and in the mean time Major with his mounted men had turned the Federal right flank and gained possession of the road to Blair's Landing; but just at the dawn of victory disaster fell upon the Confederates. Churchill did not move quite far enough to the right, but made his attack from both sides of the Sabine Road instead of crossing it and advancing from the farther side. Thus he failed to turn the Federal left, and when his gallant Missourians had driven the Federals from their front in the gully and the thicket to the high land near the college, capturing two battalions and sending to the rear three hundred prisoners, and had broken the Federal line and entered the village, they were attacked by Benedict's brigade, which their general had left on his right; and being separated from their comrades by three hundred yards and the intervening gullies, and surrounded on all sides and thrown into confusion, losing heavily, they were compelled to retreat in haste with great disorder.

Colonel Hardeman, with the Fifth Texas Cavalry and other mounted men, being in reserve, checked the enemy and held his ground until Parsons rallied his men and resumed the line first held by Churchill. "Old Gotch," as usual, was at the right place at the proper time. The Arkansas brigades crossing the gully reached the plateau just as the Missourians on the right began their retreat, whereupon they also fell back, Gause's brigade on the left of their line running into Scurry's brigade on the right of Walker's division and impeding its advance. Churchill's two batteries followed the Missourians to the plateau and under great difficulties opened a destructive fire; but being compelled to retreat when the infantry retreated, they left three of their guns on the field. When Scurry's brigade was disordered by the retreat of Gause's men, Waul and Randall led in their fine brigades, gallantly forced the Federals to retire, and retrieved the waning fortunes of this part of the field. Severe fighting continued here, and Waul and Randall advancing became separated by a gully in which a Federal brigade had been left by their comrades. In attempting to get out, these Federals fought like wild-cats, and at length succeeded in escaping. The suddenness of the affair and the unexpected antagonists caused the Federals to suspect that they were firing on their own men and caused some confusion. Night coming on, it was found necessary to withdraw to the open field, which was done slowly and in good order.

Green's brigade was not all together at Pleasant Hill; the Fourth and Seventh Regiments were with General Taylor on the Confederate left, and the Fifth Regiment, under Colonel Hardeman, was supporting Churchill on the right; but all along the line they did their whole duty and kept their honorable record bright. In this engagement Churchill lost in killed and wounded four hundred and seventy-two men; also one hundred and sixty-nine prisoners and three pieces of artillery. He captured over three hundred prisoners. In other parts of the field the Confederate loss was not so severe. General Taylor never claimed Pleasant Hill as a victory, though it had all the effect of one. Banks claimed a victory, but Grant spoke of it as a disaster. We can fairly class it as a drawn battle.

During the night the Federals retreated towards Grand Ecore and the Confederates retired to the Bayou du Paul, seven miles in the rear, leaving pickets on the field of battle. General Taylor estimates his loss in the two battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill in killed and wounded at twenty-two hundred, four hundred and twenty-six prisoners, and three pieces of artillery. But the campaign of conquest designed and partially begun by Banks had ignominiously failed.

Although none of Green's brigade were engaged in the affair at Blair's Landing, it deserves a place here because of the fatal results to its best-beloved commander. General Green, being stationed at Pleasant Hill in command of all the cavalry of Taylor's army, was ordered to take a sufficient force and strike the Federal fleet at Blair's Landing, eighteen miles distant from that point and four miles above Grand Ecore. He was promised an artillery force to support him in his efforts to capture or disable the transports detained above that point. General Green took for this service new troops, which had nearly all arrived from Texas after the battles of the 8th and 9th, and on the morning of the 12th of April before daybreak reached Bayou de Pierre, about two miles from Red River. Stopping here without light or fire, at dawn he sent out scouts to look for the land forces of the Federals. None were found in the vicinity. At the Landing there were a turreted monitor aground and three wooden boats. Green was reinforced by a battery of four twelve-pound howitzers instead of the rifle artillery promised. Notwithstanding the disadvantages under which he was placed, General Green determined on an attack, in execution of his orders to prevent the Federal boats from passing down the river. After crossing Bayou de Pierre in some small boats picked up here and there for that purpose, it was late in the afternoon before his preparations were completed. Marching across the swamp for some distance, he posted his troops in a small ravine at the edge of Blair's plantation, not far from Red River. The river at this point made a large bend, upon the convex point of which the Confederate attack was to be projected. It being understood that all the Federal vessels except the four above named had gone below, the howitzers were stationed on the lower flank to prevent any boat ascending to the rescue. The monitor and other boats were a short distance above the houses of Blair's plantation. Above and below the Landing for some distance the banks of the river on the south side were high, some forty feet above the water, but on the north side were very low, almost even with the water's edge, and covered with a heavy growth of timber. Green was on the south side.

With his troops dismounted and acting as infantry, numbering about fifteen hundred, General Green marched rapidly across the field, reaching the river below

the plantation houses and turning up along the river-bank to reach the boats, expecting to find a land force of the Federals concealed beneath the bank. None were, however, discovered there. On reaching the bank opposite the boats he opened a rapid fire of musketry upon them, which at once drove their men below the decks. Although there was no firing from the Federals now, except a shot at intervals from the monitor, Green could not with musketry alone force a surrender. The artillery was for that reason ordered up to the assistance of the infantry. In the mean time a Federal transport from above, whose presence was until then unknown, landed troops in the woods opposite, and they poured a heavy fire upon the Confederates from the bushes. This caused most of the losses among Green's men. At this instant there came up from below an iron-clad gunboat and opened upon the Confederates with its heavy guns. Although the infantry attacked this gunboat, they were not able to do any damage owing to its armor. Being a so-called "tin-clad," it was possible to pierce its armor with rifled cannon, as was frequently done afterwards. The gunboat having passed up the river, now returned to a point opposite Green's position. He then directed his riflemen to approach nearer the river and fire into the port-holes. This was the customary method in use by his brigade when attacking gunboats. It was here that General Green exclaimed: "I would give a million to-day for my old brigade and the Valverde Battery." These were his last words. A grape-shot from the Federal gunboat struck him on top of the head and killed him instantly. However, the wound did not disfigure his noble countenance, which even when cold in death retained its martial majesty.

After the death of General Green the Confederates remained at the river continuing the attack, until Colonel Parsons, now in command, communicated with General Major, who was near the field but had not arrived, and under his direction withdrew his troops and, recrossing Bayou de Pierre, encamped for the night. The Confederates retired in perfectly good order, bringing off the body of General Green and nearly all their wounded. The retrograde movement was made under a heavy artillery fire from the guns of the Federal fleet nearly two miles below. Had Green lived and had his dying wish, the result might have been far different.

On the 10th of April, the brigade, under command of General Bagby, marched from Pleasant Hill towards Pearcal Island in pursuit of the retreating Federals. Crossing Pearcal Bayou on the night of the 11th, a sharp skirmish ensued in which about a dozen Confederates were captured.

On the 13th, having recrossed to the mainland, the sad news of the repulse at Blair's Landing and the death of General Green was made known to his old brigade in general orders. All the flags were draped in mourning, and many a veteran soldier's cheek was wet with tears of sorrow. Then the brigade marched down to the double bridges and did outpost duty for several days, watching the Federals in and around the town of Natchitoches. On the 20th of April, 1864, General Bagby was assigned to the command of another brigade in Bee's division and Colonel W. P. Hardeman was made brigadier-general of the old brigade. It would have been difficult since the promotion of Green to find a man in the brigade more beloved by his men or more worthy to command. A hardy frontiersman, a veteran of three wars, an Indian-fighter of renown, one of nature's noblemen, and an old-time

Southern gentleman, were all combined in the person of General Wm. P. Hardeman. The line of march was taken up here for the lower Red River, to make an effort to cut off the Federal retreat, or to hang upon the flanks of the flying foe and harass every detachment that left the main army for an hour or a mile. For a month these tactics were followed assiduously and heroically.

On the 21st of April, General H. P. Bee, with his cavalry division and one battery, under orders, marched by a route through the piney woods with the purpose of taking such a position on Red River as would enable him to prevent the passage of transports and supplies to the army of General Banks, intrenched and beleaguered at Grand Ecore. He reached Red River, some thirty miles below Natchitoches, on the afternoon of the 22d. The engineers examined the ground and selected a suitable location on the river for the battery, too late in the day, however, to establish it before night. Here Bee, believing himself far distant from immediate danger, sought to rest his exhausted troops. At two o'clock in the morning of the 23d, however, his advance pickets in the direction of Natchitoches were driven in by a large force of Federal cavalry. Bee at once aroused his slumbering soldiers and formed in line of battle to check this advance, and sent off his train to Monette's Ferry, six miles below. Daylight coming on and showing the Federals in large force, he withdrew his division to Monette's Ferry, and together with Major's division, including Bagby's and De Bray's brigades, which he found already there, took position at the crossing of Cane River. It was only at this point that General Bee found that he was confronted by Banks's whole army on its retreat to Alexandria. He then realized the importance of holding this position if possible. From a hill above the Ferry where he had established his head-quarters, affording an extended view of the surrounding country, he closely watched the movements of Banks. At eight o'clock A.M. detachments of the Federals were sent forward to feel the approaches. Two hours later a large force crossed Cane River two miles above the Ferry and moved down on the Confederate left. Another column passed down the river to a ford four miles below. The remainder of Banks's force, probably fifteen thousand strong, confronted the Confederate centre. Although plainly perceiving the plan of the Federal attack, Bee was powerless to prevent it. Cane River was fordable at all points, and the swamps and lagoons on the Confederate left, which were usually impassable, were quite dry. Bee's line of defence extended for a mile and a half along Cane River, having his artillery, consisting of three batteries, in the centre.

The Federal advance on the Confederate left flank was met by Colonel Madison with his own and Wood's regiments. The attack was furious, but stubbornly resisted for two hours under an incessant fire; at last Madison was driven back and the Federals gained the hill. The troops on the Confederate left centre were withdrawn, and under the personal command of General Bee reinforced the extreme left. Scarcely had this movement been accomplished when Banks advanced. This advance was met by the fire of a section of McMahon's battery under Lieutenant Fontaine, at close range with double canister, and the concentrated fire of twelve hundred rifles. The effect was crushing and the repulse decided. In the mean time Captain Lane, commanding De Bray's regiment, was stubbornly but vainly contesting the Federal advance on the extreme right. Bee was in close quarters; the

Federals had turned both his flanks and a heavy force was pressing his centre. Availing himself of the momentary advantage gained on his left, he determined to abandon his position, and had scarcely given the necessary orders when the artillery, which had been masked opposite his centre, opened such a fire as plainly showed that his position was no longer tenable. The Confederates retired in good order and at a walk, losing only about fifty men and one artillery wagon. The Federal loss was about four hundred in killed and wounded. The Federal forces were at least twenty-five thousand strong. The Confederates had two thousand cavalry and three batteries of artillery. The position was not a strong one, for, although immediately at the Ferry the banks of the river are high and steep, the frequent fords afforded the Federals every opportunity of turning the Confederate flanks, which, with their overwhelming numbers, they were not long in accomplishing. The battle lasted for some hours, and, if it did not result in a victory for the Confederates, it brought them no dishonor.

Bee fell back to Beasley's in the piney woods, twenty-eight miles distant, where his supply-train was parked.

Leaving Beasley's on the 26th of April, the brigade again pressed the rear of the Federals retreating. They were overtaken at Bayou Cotile, and a brisk skirmish was the result. The Federals fell back, after burning every house in the neighborhood. On the 29th they were driven to McNutt's Hill, and five miles beyond another desperate fight ensued, in which Hardeman's and Parsons's brigades were most actively engaged. On the next day, the 30th, Polignac's infantry with the artillery came up, and the cavalry again moved to the front. Major's division, in which Hardeman's brigade was included, was sent to Cheneyville, with orders to strike the Federal rear on Red River and annoy his transports and gunboats, and if possible cut off his communications with the Mississippi. On the 1st day of May, Stone's, Lane's, and Baylor's regiments reached Red River and captured the transport *Emma* loaded with cotton bound for New Orleans. Ninety-six prisoners and some valuable stores were captured. On the 3d, the Fifth Texas Cavalry and some other regiments taken from both brigades attacked the *City Belle* on her way to Alexandria carrying troops. A large number of prisoners and many valuable stores were captured in this affair. Again, on the 5th, the Confederates, improving by practice, captured two gunboats, *No. 8* and *No. 26*, and another transport, the *John Warner*, loaded with cotton. These were burnt, but the stores, guns, and ammunition were saved. It must not be supposed that all these captures were made without resistance. In every case sharp fighting, attended by bloodshed and loss of life, was the result of the attack and preceded the surrender.

These events transpired at and near Smith's Landing, twenty miles below Alexandria, while Admiral Porter was trying to float his fleet over the rapids. This admirable feat of engineering was finally accomplished on the 11th of May, and the army at once began to move towards the mouth of Red River.

On the night of the 6th of May, Hardeman's brigade was ordered to reinforce General Bee at Lecompte, and after making a forced march of twenty-nine miles arrived at his head-quarters. Shortly after their arrival Polignac's division of infantry also came marching up. On the morning of the 7th the Federals were reported to be advancing on their retrograde movement from Alexandria. General

Bagby took command of the Confederate advance, having his own brigade and Hardeman's under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Hampton. The Fifth Regiment, except Companies C and G, was under the immediate command of Hardeman on the Confederate left, supporting the Valverde Battery. Bagby advancing up the railroad about a mile dismounted, and then advanced on foot for half a mile, and forming into line of battle approached Bee's division. The firing of the skirmishers told of the proximity of opposing forces. Two-thirds of Hardeman's brigade were sent to the front and the rest held in reserve. General Polignac having arrived in person, a forward movement was ordered. Colonel Terrell's regiment advanced rapidly for about eight hundred yards, and on coming to the edge of a field saw a line of the Federal cavalry, which the colonel ordered his men to charge. At this moment a column of infantry sprang from a ditch in which they had been concealed and poured a murderous fire into the Confederates. This threw them into confusion, and they fell back on the reserve, when they were rallied and remounted. The Federals, about eight thousand strong, advanced with loud huzzahs, thus warning the Confederate infantry, who were concealed behind an embankment awaiting the attack. As they approached within close range, a furious volley was poured into their ranks, accompanied by the rebel yell. They were checked in their onward course, and, reeling, ran backward even farther than they came. About this time darkness silenced the voice of battle, and the Confederates bivouacked on the battle-field. The Confederate loss was small, but the Federal loss was considerable. During the night the Federals retreated to Alexandria, leaving a force of about three thousand cavalry to protect their rear. This was a small but brilliant affair, and quite a triumph for General Polignac, who was now well known as a fighter.

Early on the morning of the 15th of May, General Wharton concentrated a cavalry force in the edge of the Choctaw Swamp near the Marksville Prairie. Here the weary Confederates sought a few hours' repose. At ten A.M. the cessation of the firing of cannon from the Federal fleet indicated a forward movement on the part of their land forces.

At two P.M. the Federal vanguard reached the edge of the prairie and had a desperate hand-to-hand fight with a detachment of Lane's brigade, forcing them to retire. In the mean time Hardeman's brigade had formed in line of battle, upon which Lane's men rallied, and together they gave the advancing Federals a warm reception. After fighting with great determination for some time, the Confederate commander, seeing that his antagonists were bringing their infantry to the front and had sent their cavalry to operate on his flanks, caused his forces to retire for about two miles to the rear of the town of Marksville, where the Confederate artillery, numbering twenty-six pieces, was posted. The Confederate line of battle was formed with Lane's brigade on the left and Hardeman's brigade under Waller on the right, the artillery being in the centre, supported by the Fourth Texas Cavalry under Colonel Hampton. Presently the Federals made an advance, first with their cavalry dismounted, and were met by a dismounted force of half their number, taken from Lane's and Hardeman's brigades, and easily repulsed. This took place some three hundred yards in advance of the Confederate line of battle. Seeing his troops thus driven from the field, the Federal commander at once brought to the front his

whole infantry force, twenty-three thousand strong, and pressed the Confederate right and centre; at the same time sending his cavalry, amounting to about seventy-five hundred men, to operate against the Confederate left. The Confederate skirmish line gradually withdrew before the heavy force of infantry. Lane's brigade had in the mean time remounted. Not a shot was fired; silence settled over the prairie like a morning mist. But the clear notes of a bugle rang out on the sultry afternoon air, and it was immediately answered by a deafening roar from the Confederate artillery. A murderous volley of canister from the double-shotted guns of the waiting Confederates sent their adversaries reeling and flying to the rear. Simultaneously with the discharge of the artillery, Lane's men charged gallantly with loud cheers, regardless of the overwhelming numbers before them. The Federals rallied and renewed the onset, and thirty-two pieces of artillery threw a broadside into Lane's advancing squadrons. This caused them to retire until they were met and covered by their companions advancing to the rescue. The contesting troops now met each other on foot, and the artillery ceased to hurl shot and shell at the opposing forces. Even after darkness had fallen over the scene the muskets continued to flash and rattle and the discharge grew brighter and louder, until a few well-directed shots from West's Louisiana battery, under Lieutenant Joyce, drove the Federals from the field. The losses on both sides, though considerable, are unknown. The Confederates held possession of the field and bivouacked in the edge of the prairie.

The battle of Mansura was one of the most beautiful artillery duels ever fought on the fields of Louisiana. It occurred on the 16th of May. General Hardeman commanded the division; Colonel Waller commanded Hardeman's brigade, which occupied the right wing, the Fifth Regiment being on the extreme right flank. The Confederate artillery was massed in the centre, covered by Bagby's brigade of Bee's division, commanded by Colonel Terrell. Lane's brigade on the left, with Polignac's division of infantry, supported the battery of heavy guns, which, from being drawn by oxen, was called the "Bull Battery." The Federals first charged Terrell's line with infantry, and it retired under orders in apparent confusion to the rear of McMahon's battery, and the Valverde Battery immediately opened on their advancing antagonists with canister at close range, creating great slaughter. This charge being thus repulsed, the Federal artillery was brought to the front. The two lines of battle occupied the crests of two gentle acclivities in an open prairie, with a verdant valley between them. The distance between the opposing cannoneers was less than a thousand yards; there being about twenty pieces on each side, the thunder rolled in a regular succession of peals and flashes, and not without doing some execution. After some strains of this sort of music, a well-directed shot fired by Lieutenant Joyce disabled three of the best pieces of the Federal artillery. After a momentary

General Arthur P. Bagby.

lull in the active work of the Federal gunners, they renewed their vigorous cannonade, and were answered with the same spirit and determination. In the mean time the Federals had received large reinforcements of infantry and artillery, and it was not long before they were firing volley after volley from forty-two cannon in a single line of battle. The Federal commander, finding that this time, at least, the boys in gray could stand artillery, and that he was not able to dislodge them with his cannon, commenced a flank movement and endeavored to turn the left wing of the Confederates, and in this he nearly succeeded.

It then became apparent that the Confederates could not much longer resist the overwhelming numbers of the Federals, who were constantly arriving on the field. In order to draw off the artillery without danger of a charge from the Federal infantry, a beautiful movement was executed in the open field. The Confederate cavalry, beginning with the Fifth Texas occupying the extreme right, galloped down into the valley between the two lines of battle and rode from the right to the left along the entire front of both armies for about two miles, under a heavy fire from forty-two pieces of Federal artillery. As fast as they passed in front of the Confederate forces the artillery moved to the rear, and the cavalry fell into the column and joined in the gallop across the battle-field.

Then Hardeman's brigade was left as the rear-guard and had to meet a furious charge of the Federals, who by this time saw what was the meaning of this unusual movement. They came on with impetuous valor, but were met by the most stubborn courage on the part of Hardeman's men, and were repulsed with great slaughter. Although the Federals were armed with the best weapons of modern warfare and Hardeman's brigade had nothing but Enfield rifles which they had captured from infantry in previous engagements, and the assailants outnumbered the assailed two to one, the Texans stood their ground and saved their artillery. General Wharton was on the field and commanded in person and greatly encouraged his troops by a display of good generalship and intrepid valor. He ordered Colonel Waller to hold his position until the rest of the Confederates had safely left the field, and the Federals, having failed to drive this brigade from the field by a direct assault, concentrated the fire of their artillery upon the Fourth Regiment and Waller's battalion, and for half an hour poured a terrific cannonade upon them. Still, Waller and his little band stood their ground with heroic valor. Shells screamed and burst in the midst of the cavalry, but they formed their lines as coolly as if on parade, and, when all their companions had reached a safe distance from this hotly contested field, retired in good order before overwhelming numbers.

On the morning of the 17th of May, the advance of the Confederates, composed of the Fifth Texas Cavalry and Waller's battalion, made a dash into the village of Moroville, and meeting a column of Federal cavalry ran into them pell-mell, neither recognizing the other for several minutes, on account of the dust which enveloped them in blinding clouds. As soon as the antagonists recognized each other, a furious hand-to-hand fight began, in which several Federals were killed and wounded; and the Confederates captured fifty-six prisoners, among them one lieutenant-colonel, two majors, and eight other officers. This little skirmish did not last half an hour, but it was warm while it lasted.

On the 18th of May, 1864, the victorious Confederates under Taylor were pur-

suing the retreating column of the Federals, and the cavalry under General John A. Wharton were close upon his rear at Yellow Bayou near Simmesport. The Thirteenth and Nineteenth Army Corps, together with the cavalry and artillery under the Federal General A. J. Smith, had constructed a bridge of boats at Simmesport across the Atchafalaya Bayou, were crossing as fast as possible, and had they been unmolested, would have soon been out of the Trans-Mississippi Department. But General Wharton, just from the Army of Tennessee, had lately been promoted to succeed General Green after the unfortunate loss of that heroic leader, and being in command of all the cavalry was loath to let the campaign close without reaping some of the glory of victorious war. He accordingly ordered an attack upon the Federal lines, and soon drove in the pickets and skirmish lines. But he had aroused a nest of hornets. A. J. Smith had to fight or surrender; he could not retreat until his bridge of boats was completed. So, having at least five men to Wharton's one, he turned upon him like an Andalusian bull at bay. General Joseph A. Mower was in the immediate command of the Federal forces on the field, and he ordered a general advance, repulsing the advance of the Confederates and forcing them back on their main body. Advancing through an open field and through a brier thicket, he found Wharton's cavalry dismounted and posted behind a hastily constructed barricade of fence-rails, near the intersection of Yellow Bayou and Bayou de Glaize. The Confederates here also had about twelve pieces of artillery, and a brigade of mounted men on their right under Colonel G. W. Baylor, who drove in the left wing of the Federals, causing them considerable loss. Colonel Baylor, commanding Lane's brigade, made a steady advance on the Confederate right, driving their antagonists rapidly until the cavalry in their retreat were reinforced by infantry and artillery. Being now in an open field, Baylor's men found the firing of the artillery very hot, but stood their ground and drove nearly all the cannoneers from their guns. But Mower having massed his forces against the Confederate left, Baylor was almost surrounded and compelled to fall back, which he did in good order, though suffering heavily in wounded and having twenty-eight men captured, though he had but few killed. Having but a single line of cavalry, he contested the field nobly against overpowering odds in cavalry, infantry, and artillery. Baylor says that had Terrell's regiment come up on the right he would have captured the Federal battery and cut off their left wing from the main body, or inflicted heavy loss upon them. Perhaps he would; he seemed to glory in the game of war.

After at first falling back, General Mower formed all his forces in solid phalanx and advanced along the whole of his line. Pressing the left of the Confederates with a heavy mass of troops, by mere force of numbers he compelled them to retire from their fence-rail barricade across the open field under a heavy fire, with great loss in killed, wounded, and prisoners. The Federals having forced the Confederate left, composed of dismounted men, in the open field next to Bayou de Glaize, turned against the cavalry in the woods to their left and drove them back, also. However, all retired in good order, and the Federal skirmish line advanced only about half-way across the field in which Norwood's sugar-house was situated. The main body occupied the woods below. Here they remained for some time, until General Polignac came up from the Confederate reserve, and with his infantry division regained the day, drove the enemy back, and reoccupied the battle-field.

What part General Wharton took, save in ordering the attack, has never transpired. He failed to reap the honor and glory and left many a brave Texan on this bloody field. Colonel Stone, who was that day commanding Polignac's old brigade, was among those "dead on the field of battle." Lieutenant Land and Private Kindred perished here. The Confederate loss was four hundred and fifty in killed and wounded and one hundred and sixty in captured. The Federals had about two hundred killed and wounded.

After this repulse the Confederates suffered the Federals "to depart in peace," which they did on the two days following, crossing the Atchafalaya and the Mississippi and again investing Port Hudson. It was a pity that Taylor's brilliant campaign should thus be clouded in the closing days and the sun of victory thus go down in blood.

On the 23d of June, 1864, General Hardeman with his brigade was ordered to the little town of Trinity, on Black River. After a week's marching they arrived at their destination and went into camps. Here the Fifth Regiment was stationed, and the Fourth, under Colonel Hampton, was sent down the river to Johnson's Ferry to observe the movements of the Federal forces supposed to be in that region. The Seventh had their camps at Liddell's plantation, a few miles below Trinity. Waller's battalion was assigned to provost duty at Hardeman's head-quarters. Captain Pridgeon, with three companies of the Fifth, was on outpost duty at Cosgrove's plantation on Cross Bayou. They exchanged an occasional shot with the boys in blue merely for practice. Here was planned and executed a raid on Vidalia, a Federal outpost opposite Natchez garrisoned by negroes. After a night march through a dismal swamp of thirty odd miles, at daybreak they reached the Mississippi River four miles below Vidalia. Waller's battalion, being in advance, drove the enemy from their position and captured twenty negroes, one hundred and thirty-five mules, and sixty horses. There was no loss on the Confederate side, but as the place was untenable they soon withdrew. They next attacked a transport in the river, and just as they were in the act of boarding, the Federals, being largely reinforced and greatly outnumbering the Confederates, charged them, capturing two men of the Seventh Regiment and wounding one. The Federal loss was twenty-three killed and many more wounded.

The brigade returned to their camps on Black River and rested a few days. Then Colonel Hampton made another raid on the Mississippi River and brought off one thousand sacks of corn.

On the 29th of August the camps on Black River were abandoned, and the brigade moved up the Tensas and over to Waterproof on the Mississippi, and on the 1st of September took up the line of march for Arkansas. In Arkansas the time was spent in marching and countermarching, drilling, and in policing camp, a kind of duty to which this brigade was not accustomed and for which it never had a liking. General Taylor bears testimony to this assertion. On the 11th of September the advance of the brigade, which was now commanded by Colonel McNeill, of the Fifth, reached Monticello, and on the 27th crossed the Arkansas River fifteen miles above Arkansas Post and marched up on the opposite side to within a few miles of Pine Bluff. A portion of Waller's battalion and a detachment of the Fourth Regiment under Lieutenant Taylor were sent in the direction of

Duval's Bluff, on White River, and engaged the Federal forces found in their way, who, after firing a few rounds, hastily retreated. Then the brigade made a forced march by night, recrossing the river and destroying the boats, and halted again at Monticello. Here, being ordered to Lewisville, they continued their march through wretched weather and miry roads and at last reached their destination. Resting a few days at Lewisville, they set out under orders, making forced marches for Washington, where, resting half a night, they continued in their rapid transit on the road towards Arkadelphia, but when about half-way countermarched and returned to their old camps at Rusk Lake, near Washington, where they remained until the 27th of October.

About this time the brigade was ordered to Fulton, Arkansas, and the Fourth Regiment was detached and placed on outpost duty. The brigade did not enjoy their stay at Fulton. There was too much drill and fatigue duty and not enough of fighting to suit the victors of Galveston and Mansfield. On the 20th of November news arrived of Price's retreat from Missouri, and at the same time orders for McNeill and the brigade to convoy a large supply-train to Princeton. This disagreeable duty was made doubly so by the wintry weather. It rained and blew storms all day and froze the ground hard every night. They passed days without anything edible for man or horse, and on reaching their destination learned that General Price had taken a different route and that all their hardships were useless. However, on countermarching and returning to Fulton, they received orders to march for Texas. This command was hailed with delight. General Wharton had already gone to Texas and General Hardeman was in command of the cavalry corps.

After drawing a small part of their pay and a few shoes and shirts, the brigade crossed the Red River, and on the 6th of December reunited at White Oak Shoals. Colonel McNeill having been furloughed, Colonel Hampton took command of the brigade, and the next day set out for Nacogdoches.

The brigade did not remain long at Nacogdoches, but brigade head-quarters were soon removed to Alto, where they remained during the month of December, 1864, the regiments being camped in the vicinity. From there the next change was to Crockett, in Houston County, and thence to Hall's Bluff, where head-quarters were established on the 16th of January, 1865. In this vicinity the brigade remained, drilling and foraging and waiting for orders, until the 11th of March, when they moved to Fairfield, Freestone County, and from this point, on the 15th, to Alto Springs, in Falls County, and on the 21st of March to Millican, in Grimes County. During all this time, since the 4th of December, the brigade had been commanded by Colonels Hampton and Waller alternately, Colonel McNeill having been granted leave of absence. On the 26th of March General Hardeman returned to the brigade and took command. Shortly thereafter, General Wharton having been killed in a private quarrel at Houston, the cavalry corps was put under command of General John G. Walker, an excellent soldier and a polished gentleman.

On the 30th of March, the old brigade, which had together trod the ways of glory, was dismembered, and the Fourth Regiment alone was retained in Hardeman's brigade. The Fifth was transferred to De Bray's brigade and the others elsewhere. The Confederacy shortly afterwards collapsed. All of the regiments com-

posing Green's brigade had remained in Central Texas awaiting orders to march again to meet the foe ; but there were no Federals in the Trans-Mississippi Department to make war upon, and these veteran soldiers had nothing to do but to watch the current of events.

Even as late as the 15th of May the records show that "Old Gotch" was firm in the belief that the independence of the Confederate States would finally be accomplished, although Lee and Johnston had surrendered and Kirby Smith was negotiating for terms for the Trans-Mississippi Department. General Hardeman did not know defeat when it stood staring him in the face. Finally, on the 20th of May, 1865, the regiments were disbanded, and the companies marched in good order and without violence or any sort of rapine to the county-seats of the several counties where they were organized four years before, and the men were then discharged from the Confederate States' service.

Few brigades in the Confederate army did better service, suffered greater hardships, or made greater sacrifices than did this the Sibley-Green-Bagby-Hardeman brigade, and none did their duty more cheerfully or with greater patriotism. Texas owes them a debt which can never be entirely repaid, but which may be partially discharged by the gratitude of posterity.

CHAPTER VI.

NOTES ON GRANBURY'S BRIGADE.

BY O. P. BOWSER.

THE Fifteenth, Sixteenth, Seventeenth, and Eighteenth Texas Cavalry were dismounted near Little Rock, Arkansas, in the early part of July, 1862, near which place they went into camp, where they were joined by the Tenth Texas Infantry under Colonel Nelson. After several months under the most efficient drill officers, the five regiments were ordered to Arkansas Post, where they arrived some time during the fall of 1862. Here they went into winter quarters, providing themselves with comfortable huts, or cabins, and settled down, as they thought, for the winter. The brigade was joined here by the Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth Texas Dismounted Cavalry and the Nineteenth Arkansas, and the whole of the command, except one regiment, afterwards belonged to what was known in the army and is now known in history as "Granbury's brigade."

About the 7th of January, 1863, General Sherman, who had recently made an unsuccessful assault on Vicksburg, made his appearance in the river below the Post, with a fleet of gunboats and transports and an army of about forty thousand men, and immediately began preparations to attack the fort. General —— commanding the Post with about three thousand rank and file, the battle began in earnest on the morning of January 10 and ended, after two days' fighting, in the afternoon of the 11th. The loss in killed and wounded on the Confederate side was trivial, while that of the Federals was quite heavy considering the small force opposing them. Through some misunderstanding, and ill-advisedly, the white flag was raised about four o'clock in the afternoon, and almost the entire command of three thousand Confederates surrendered to the forty thousand Union soldiers. The little band was crowded on the small transports like so many cattle, and started the following morning for Northern prisons, most of the private soldiers and non-commissioned officers to Fort Douglas, Illinois, the rest to Alton, Illinois; while the field, staff, and line officers were sent to Camp Chase, near Columbus, Ohio. The death loss from cold and hunger during the three months of prison life was terrible, amounting to more than thirty per cent. of the entire command. About the 5th of April, 1863, the men in the prison of Camp Douglas and those at Alton, Illinois, were shipped south *via* Pittsburg, Baltimore, Chesapeake Bay, and James River, to City Point, near Petersburg, Virginia, where they were exchanged, the commissioned officers following about three weeks later. After camping around Petersburg and the city of Richmond about four or five weeks, and being joined by the officers, the entire command was ordered to report to General Bragg, who was then in camp with the Army of Tennessee near Tullahoma, not far from Murfreesboro', Tennessee.

Soon after arriving at Tullahoma the seven Texas regiments were consolidated into two, and the death-rate had been so great that the two regiments were not full,—at least their numerical strength was not so great as two of the original regiments when they left the State of Texas at the beginning of the war. Colonel (now United States Senator) R. Q. Mills was placed in command of the regiment composed of the Sixth, Tenth, and Fifteenth Texas, while the regiment composed of the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Twenty-fourth, and Twenty-fifth Texas Cavalry (dismounted) was commanded by Colonel Gillespie, forming a brigade, which was placed under John T. Coit, lieutenant-colonel. Other consolidations let out a great number of non-commissioned officers, who returned home, most of them entering the service west of the Mississippi River, or the Trans-Mississippi Department.

The command immediately began a most industrious and systematic course of drilling under that military genius, Major Pat Cleburne, to whose division it was assigned, and under whose gallant leadership it afterwards won fame and glory on many a hard-fought battle-field. At this time the command was known as Deshler's brigade, and consisted of about seventeen hundred men,—all young, very few having reached the age of thirty-five, and many not more than seventeen or eighteen years. General Deshler was a native of Pennsylvania, and resigned a captain's commission in the United States army to cast his lot and fortune with the South. He commanded the brigade, with Joseph L. Hearne, of Galveston, Texas, adjutant-general, Lieutenant George Jewell, brigade ordnance officer. Under the personal supervision of General Cleburne the men were soon perfectly drilled and ready and anxious for active campaign duty, which soon began. On June 28, 1863, the command broke camp and marched to Blue Bird Gap to meet the enemy under General Rosecrans, who had begun his campaign on Chattanooga, Tennessee. The conflict amounted to little more than ordinary skirmishing on this line, however, and we were treated to the first of that doughty general's famous flank movements, which became so popular with his successor, General Sherman, in his march to the sea in 1864. July 1 the army took position near Tullahoma and awaited the enemy, but another flank movement on the part of the enemy forced us to change our position. Nothing more serious than skirmishing took place in this part of the campaign, and about the 3d or 4th of July we took up our march across the country for Chattanooga, where the campaign soon began in earnest. On September 16 an attempt was made to bag General Thomas with his corps of about seventeen thousand men, in McLemore's Cove. General Cleburne's division, with our Texas brigade in front, was promptly on time in the gap assigned them, but through some mishap General Hindman with his division failed to reach the position assigned him, and General Thomas retreated by the gap through which we had entered. Two days later part of the brigade engaged the enemy in Catlett's Gap, McLemore's Cove, holding them in check all day and in the evening driving them from their position with small loss on our side. Saturday, the 19th, the brigade with Cleburne's division was engaged in the thickest of the fight, driving the enemy and holding every position during the day. September 20, 1863, was the last day of the bloody battle of Chickamauga. Perhaps never in the history of "grim-visaged war" was a battle so stubbornly and tenaciously fought by both armies, with numbers and losses so nearly equal, and never was victory so dearly bought. The day opened bright and

clear. The autumn leaves were taking on their colors of amber and gold. The day was perfect, as if nature was smiling on the deadly faces, and pleased in contemplation of the terrible carnage and blood that were to make that day to be remembered in the history of men and warfare; Blue Ridge, Lookout Mountain, and Missionary Ridge were to be silent witnesses of the awful struggle. There was no manœuvring, no strategy. The rank and file did the fighting. The officers simply put them in line and awaited results. The men of both armies seemed to be imbued with the fact that whoever gained the victory would gain it at a terrible price, and that ere the sun went down many of them would bivouac on Eternity's camping-ground; but it made them none the less determined, and ere the sun set each army had lost about one-third of its gallant soldiers. The loss of the Texas brigade was especially heavy, Company E, of the Sixth, Tenth, and Fifteenth, commanded by Captain Jack Leonard, late of Dallas, losing more than half its men. General Deshler, commanding the brigade, was killed. Colonel R. Q. Mills succeeded to the command of the brigade.

Between four and five o'clock the entire Federal line gave way and left the field to the Confederates, who were too greatly exhausted to follow up the victory so dearly bought. On Monday night, the 21st, General Bragg moved his army in the direction of Chattanooga, besieging that city on the 23d, but he found the enemy too well fortified to risk an assault or to attempt to take the city by storm, and all the fruits of our victory at Chickamauga were lost. The remainder of September, October, and a part of November were spent in the siege, Granbury's brigade occupying a position near the centre of the Confederate army. Guard duty was very hard here, our picket lines being within two hundred yards of the enemy, and within plain view of each other. Notwithstanding the strict orders to keep constant vigilance against surprise attacks, soldiers from both armies would often lay down their arms under a temporary armistice and meet half-way between the two lines and exchange newspapers or Confederate tobacco for Yankee coffee. After a friendly chat and the compliments of the day, these soldiers would return to their respective posts of duty, declare the armistice off, and seize the first opportunity to take a pop at each other, or at any other enemy who might too carelessly expose his person. It was during our stay here that President Davis paid General Bragg's army a visit for the purpose, doubtless, of encouraging the officers and enthusing the soldiers, as well as to see for himself the condition of the army and the position they held. It was during the siege of Chattanooga that the brigade was joined by the Seventh Texas Infantry, Colonel H. B. Granbury commanding; K. M. Vanzandt, now of Fort Worth, major. The Third and Fifth Confederate Regiments, of Memphis, Tennessee, Colonel Cole, of Memphis, commanding, were also added to the brigade, which was now made up of the following regiments, viz.: the Sixth, Tenth, and Fifteenth Texas Regiments, consolidated, commanded by Colonel R. Q. Mills; the Seventh Texas Infantry, commanded by Colonel H. B. Granbury; the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Twenty-fourth, and Twenty-fifth Texas Regiments, consolidated, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel John T. Coit, of Dallas, Texas; and the Third and Fifth Confederate Regiments, commanded by Colonel Cole, of Memphis, Tennessee. The brigade was commanded by Brigadier-General J. A. Smith, of Alabama, with Captain J. T. Hearne assistant adjutant-general, Captain

George Jewell brigade ordnance officer, and D. F. Stewart brigade surgeon. During the two months' siege of the city there was no regular engagement between the infantry of the two armies, the fighting being confined to the skirmishers and the cavalry, but the soldiers of both armies were treated to an artillery duel almost daily, and it was a grand sight to look upon, the distance being too great to do much execution. General Grant, having taken command of the Federal forces, began to press our lines on the 23d of November, and on the 24th the battles of Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge began. Granbury's brigade, holding the extreme right of Bragg's army, occupied a position on the ridge near the tunnel of the Cleveland and Chattanooga Railroad. On the morning of the 25th the battle began in earnest, leading off with Hooker's attack on Bragg's left, which occupied Lookout Mountain. General Sherman, with his seventeen thousand Western men, entertained General Pat Cleburne's division, Granbury's brigade bearing the brunt of his attacking columns, receiving and repulsing charge after charge of his magnificent lines. Twice during the day, after repulsing the enemy's charge, the brigade sallied out and drove them from the field. The brigade held its position all day and until late at night, thinking the Confederates had gained a complete victory over an enemy vastly superior in numbers and equipment; and it was not until we heard the loud huzzas away towards Lookout Mountain that it dawned upon the men of Granbury's brigade that Bragg had suffered defeat, and, though they had repulsed ten times their number all day long, they must in history be charged with their share of that defeat. A distinguished Union general has said since the war that Granbury's brigade with eleven thousand men repulsed, drove back, and held at bay seventeen thousand Union soldiers, and that he did not believe another brigade of either army had achieved a like victory, and that he doubted if a like feat had been accomplished in either modern or ancient warfare. General Smith and Colonel Mills both fell wounded, and the command of the brigade fell upon Colonel H. B. Granbury. It was not until about eleven o'clock at night that the command left the position they had so gallantly and successfully held and defended during the entire battle. The rank and file of the brigade were greatly disappointed at being ordered from their position, which they felt they could have held indefinitely and against any and all odds, and they sullenly left the field, retiring first to Chickamauga Station, and then to Chickamauga Creek, where they camped on the night of November 26. Early on the morning of the 27th the command was ordered into line and marched to Ringgold Station. There being no boats or bridges, the troops were compelled to wade the ice-cold Chickamauga, which proved an unpleasant bath on so cold and frosty a morning. The larger part of Bragg's army was demoralized, and the enemy, flushed with victory, was sorely pressing its

GENERAL H. B. GRANBURY.

rear and flank. Early in the morning General Bragg ordered General Cleburne to take his position in Ringgold Gap and try and hold the enemy in check until twelve o'clock, in order that he might get the scattered commands of his army together and save at least a part of the wagon-train bearing the commissary and quartermasters' stores. General Cleburne replied that he should have plenty of time to save every wagon and team in the army, and that he need not lose a canteen or frying-pan so far as the Yankees were concerned. General Cleburne formed his line on either side of the road, some two hundred yards up the side of the mountain, in shape of the letter V, with Captain Douglas's Texas battery massed and concealed with pine-tops in a cut at the apex of the V. The Federals came rushing on in four lines marching in flank, merry as school-boys, shouting after the "Johnnies" to stop, so confident of their victory and superior number that they did not even have out their skirmishers or advance-guard, and were entirely ignorant of their danger until the batteries were unmasked, not more than seventy or eighty yards in front of the head of the four columns, and before they recovered from their surprise every gun in the battery was pouring shot and shell down their lines, utterly demoralizing both rank and file. The infantry immediately advancing poured a merciless fire into either flank. The astonished and panic-stricken men fled in the utmost confusion. The rout was complete and the Federal loss fearful, while the Confederate loss was very light. This determined stand on the part of Cleburne's division saved Bragg's army, and the enemy abandoned the pursuit and went into winter quarters, the Confederates following suit. A vote of thanks was tendered the Texas brigade by the army for their gallantry in this fight, and right well did they earn it, for they enabled Pat Cleburne to keep his promise to Bragg, and not a canteen or frying-pan was lost. It won for Colonel Granbury, their heroic commander, a brigadier's commission. To the regret of Granbury's brigade the Ringgold fight ended the Chattanooga campaign. It can be asserted without boasting that the men of this brigade, as well as of Cleburne's division, were never satisfied with the policy of their commanders from Nashville to Atlanta, and would have rather met the enemy in sanguinary conflict every day than to have yielded one foot of territory. The men who knew the troubles had to be fought out in the end never could understand why it could not as well be done one place as another. They could never understand why Rosecrans and Sherman could flank us all the time and we not flank them. Of course, the men were not West Point graduates, and, therefore, not up on the science of warfare; but they always believed, and some still think, that if there had been less sparring and more real fighting over the territory mentioned fewer Federal soldiers would have lived to draw pensions.

The Confederate army went into winter quarters near Turner Hill. About the 1st of January, 1864, General Joseph E. Johnston was put in command of the army, and the remainder of the winter was largely spent in disciplining the army, improving their condition in the way of clothing, rations, etc. About the 1st of May, 1864, General Sherman took up his march to Atlanta, and then to the sea. Our brigade was in fighting trim and ready for the fray. General Johnston had inspired the whole army with confidence, such as had always characterized Cleburne's division in their commanders, and the boys confidently hoped and expected that it would not

be long until they could bag Sherman with his entire army, "boots and baggage." It was about the 7th of May when the brigade engaged the enemy near Resaca, Georgia, but no hard fighting was done on this line. On the morning of the 8th we lost a few men, on the 12th the army passed through Kingston, and about the 13th camped near Cartersville. On the 14th the army camped on Pumpkinvine Creek, where it remained about one week. On the 22d the brigade took a position near New Hope Church, and on the 27th occupied the extreme right of the army. About four o'clock P.M. the enemy brought on the fight by a vigorous charge, which was repulsed with heavy loss to them, but they were not satisfied, and they came again and again, line after line, each to be driven back in turn. The slaughter was something terrible. About dark the firing ceased for a short time, when the enemy under cover of the wood and a deep ravine massed a double force immediately in our front only a few yards away, and gave the command, "Run over them, boys." Again they made a desperate effort to dislodge the brigade, but the deadly fire which greeted them soon brought confusion which ended in a total rout, which was followed by a charge of the Texas boys that drove the enemy from the field in confusion and disorder. It was an open field-fight, no breastworks on either side, most of the time at short range. The attack was vigorous and continued, while the resistance of the brigade was determined and successful. Considering the great numbers against which they had to contend and the time the battle lasted, the small loss sustained by the brigade appeared miraculous. The loss on the side of the Union soldiers was terrible, the enemy's dead literally covering the ground almost the entire length of the brigade. The sight was sickening to look upon. We buried more than five hundred of the enemy's dead on the field. Allowing for the usual mortality of the wounded, it is safe to say that not less than seven hundred and fifty or eight hundred brave and patriotic soldier boys in blue sacrificed their lives in the service and on the altar of their country in front of Granbury's brigade in this single engagement,—more than half as many men as there were in the brigade at that time. General Johnston and other field officers who viewed the field of carnage the following morning said they had never seen anything to equal it, nor did they believe history recorded anything like it. The commander-in-chief saying to our brigade commander, "This shall no longer be called Granbury's, but shall be known as Johnston's brigade," the Texas boys were very naturally proud of their achievement; and had every brigade in Johnston's army accomplished as much as Granbury's brigade in this one engagement, not one of Sherman's legions would have reached home to tell the fate of his army, and Sherman's march through Georgia would have been unknown in history. The following day the brigade took their position on Pine Mountain, or what may be better remembered as the Golgotha Church line, which they occupied until about the 17th or 18th of June. It was on this line that General Leonidas Polk lost his life, and in his death the South lost one of its greatest generals,—one of its bravest and most patriotic soldiers, a bishop in the Episcopal Church, always a Christian, his men loved him dearly. During the manœuvring and fighting the army was exposed to the heaviest and most drenching rains that fell upon them during the war. About twelve o'clock of the night of the 18th the brigade moved their position and formed their line on Kenesaw Mountain. The following morning the enemy again made their appearance, and immediately

put the command under heavy fire, both rifle and artillery, which was kept up day and night for more than two weeks. Here a little armistice was frequently had between soldiers on picket, and newspapers, coffee, and tobacco were exchanged. These little social courtesies always took place when no field officer was in sight, about half-way between the two lines and within plain view of the soldiers on picket duty at the time. Messages and letters were often sent to father, mother, brother, or sister, behind the opposing lines, from these little meetings, which always testified to and emphasized the humanity retained by brave men daily engaged in taking the life of their fellow-beings in the service of their country and in the name of duty. After about sixty days of hard and almost continued fighting, on the night of July 3, Bragg's army abandoned their position on the Kenesaw line and slowly took up their march for Atlanta, reaching the Chattahoochee River on the following day, where the brigade was engaged in some heavy skirmishing until the position was abandoned about July 12, and the army crossed the river to the Atlanta side. It was here, on July 18, that General Joseph E. Johnston was relieved of the command of the army, and was succeeded by General John B. Hood, by order of Jefferson Davis, President of the Confederacy. The removal of General Johnston caused great dissatisfaction in the army. While General Johnston had within ninety days fallen back from Dalton to Atlanta, yielding to superior numbers, the army had never under his command become demoralized in the slightest degree. The men had such faith in his capacity as a general and such confidence in his ability to avoid any useless slaughter, that they responded most cheerfully to his every call to meet the enemy, to take or to hold any position assigned them. They did not doubt the patriotism or courage of their new commander, but feared his rashness.

On the following day General Hood had his whole army on the move in response to Sherman's move to flank his right. Cleburne's division took their position east of what was then known as Peachtree Creek Road, about two miles to the east, which position they held overnight until the morning of the 20th, when the command was moved still farther to the right, where they remained until about three o'clock in the afternoon, when they moved in double-quick back to Peachtree Creek Road, across which the division formed at right angles, the centre of Granbury's brigade being near the road, with Gavans's Arkansas brigade on the right. About half-past four the two brigades were ordered to charge the enemy across an old field to their front, which was done under a most galling fire. The enemy was dislodged, but no real advantage gained, and nothing accomplished except the loss of a few brave soldiers on either side. The following night the Confederates took position on the line upon which the many battles in defence of Atlanta were fought. On July 21 the brigade was subjected to the most terrific artillery fire experienced by it during the entire war. The position held by them threw their line in shape to be enfiladed by the enemy's cannon, and for hours they lay under a double fire "from flank and front," and it seemed for a while that unless Providence interfered the boys in blue would be able to settle up some old scores. But with the exception of about two companies of our regiment, the casualties were not great. Company C and Company E, of the Fifteenth, Sixteenth, Seventeenth, and Eighteenth, consolidated, lost quite heavily. One

shell exploding in their ranks killed and wounded nineteen men. The enemy's loss in front of the brigade was much more than our own, their feeble assaults throughout the day being easily resisted. Before daylight of the 21st, General Hood ordered Hardee's corps, consisting of three divisions, commanded by Generals Cheatham, Cleburne, and Walker, to flank the enemy's left. By rapid marches under cover of the darkness and the friendly pine thickets, the Confederates succeeded in reaching the Federal rear and taking them by surprise. Cheatham on the Confederate left and Cleburne's division in the centre formed their lines almost without halting and immediately attacked the enemy, whom they found in three lines of battle, the front as they thought ensconced behind strong breastworks. Their surprise was complete, many of them surrendering without firing a gun and offering no serious resistance, until the third and last line was reached, which shifted to the opposite side of their breastworks, giving the surprise party a warm reception. It was here and immediately in front of Granbury's brigade that the brave and humane Union officer, General McPherson, lost his life. In attempting to pass down his line and trying to rally his men, he rode within thirty yards of the rebel front. He was a magnificent specimen of the American soldier; with his bright uniform, mounted on his spirited horse, he made a picture beautiful to look upon. The men seemed loath to take the life so easily in their reach, and repeatedly called, "Halt! halt! halt!" As if preferring death to a surrender, he paid no attention to the command to surrender, put his horse in a gallop, and in another moment would have reached shelter behind a cluster of trees, when a volley of Minié-balls from twenty or thirty rifles brought rider and horse dead to the ground. When his identity was known, the Confederates looked upon his lifeless form much more in sorrow than exultation. This brave soldier had by his kindness to prisoners of war and his humanity to citizens at his mercy won the respect, admiration, and gratitude of Bragg's and Johnston's armies. Judging this gallant soldier and General Sherman by their treatment of the helpless, they differed as much as angels do from men. Just as General Walker was moving his division into line to protect Cleburne's right, he, like the gallant McPherson, yielded up his life in the service of his country. The officer next in command seemed not to understand the plan of the attack, and the division failed to reach the position assigned them, and soon retired, leaving Cleburne's flank entirely uncovered. Until this moment the entire movement had been successful beyond all reasonable expectation. Until this time the Confederate loss had been very light, while that of the enemy had been heavy, especially in prisoners and loss of artillery, arms, and ammunition. Discovering the unprotected condition of Cleburne's right, the Federals hurriedly massed a heavy force on the flank and to the rear of Granbury's brigade, prosecuting a most vigorous assault, recaptured many of their men who had been taken prisoners, several pieces of their lost artillery, and finally, before the close of the day's fighting, recovered the remains of their dear general. But for the death of General Walker, causing the failure of his command to carry out their part of the plan of battle, the victory at one time so nearly won would have doubtless been complete, which would in all probability have been followed up and likely ended in the complete rout of Sherman's army. For nearly two months Sherman contented himself with commanding the city of Atlanta. Regardless of the presence

of many women and children who were still in the city, more than one innocent non-combatant fell a victim to his relentless shot and shell. The latter part of August he began to extend his right wing and to push the Confederate left until it rested near East Point, six miles south of the city, but the fighting amounted to little more than heavy skirmishing, and no great loss was sustained by either army. Here the boys on picket would frequently get up a little armistice with the Yankee pickets, and meet out on half-way ground to exchange tobacco, papers, and coffee, and discuss the war. At one of these little social meetings one of the Confederate soldiers submitted a plan to end the war, which was to let Jefferson Davis and Abraham Lincoln meet as representatives of their respective governments and armies and fight it out, and the soldiers and people of either side abide by the result. The Yankee boys took the proposition under advisement, and as no final answer ever came we supposed it did not meet with the approval of "Uncle Abe."

The latter part of September Sherman began preparations to extend his march to the sea, his first move being to throw a corps of his army with a heavy detachment of cavalry around to Jonesboro', about twenty-five miles below Atlanta. Hardee's corps was despatched to meet them, and on the 29th of September attacked the enemy and drove them about two miles. During the night they received reinforcements, and early the next morning began a vigorous assault on the Confederate lines, paying their special compliments to Gavans's Arkansas and Granbury's Texas brigades. The attack was begun with infantry, but finding the Confederates had hurriedly gathered up logs, chunks, rails, etc., providing themselves with partial breastworks which they showed a determination to defend, they withdrew their infantry temporarily, and for several hours subjected the two brigades to the most galling and continuous cannonading. About three o'clock the infantry attack was resumed. Three lines of battle made several attempts to break the Confederate lines. Failing, they renewed the artillery duelling, concentrating their fire on a battery near the centre of the Arkansas brigade, fairly mowing down the little hill occupied by the Confederate battery and disabling two pieces of their artillery, which was followed by the explosion of a caisson by a Federal shell. Immediately the three lines of Federals renewed their charge, and for the first and only time during the entire war Gavans's gallant boys lost their ground under fire, literally run over and borne down by superior numbers. They were not demoralized, and did not run, but contested every foot of ground in a hand-to-hand fight, using bayonets and clubbing muskets and mixing with the foes until one could not tell the Federals' front or Confederates' rear. This desperate struggle took place to the right and rear of Granbury's brigade, who were powerless to go to the rescue of their comrades. Being assailed by superior numbers in flank and front, it looked for some time as if they must share the same fate. Some of the scenes were thrilling in the extreme. Not more than two hundred yards away the writer witnessed a Federal attempt to bayonet a Confederate who had not finished loading his rifle. The Confederate, being too quick, fired and the Federal fell. Another Federal seeing the danger of his comrade, rushed forward with musket clubbed, felled the Confederate, but too late to save the life he was trying to protect. Federal number two had scarcely more than felled his man when he went down from a blow from Confederate number two. The first two combatants were approaching each other

with quick-step, the last on a race, each trying to save a comrade, the shot and two blows occurring almost simultaneously. Seldom will a soldier witness anything so exciting and thrilling. All this time Granbury's brigade was occupying the most trying position, three battle lines of the enemy in their front, the entire ridge to the right and in part of their rear literally covered with the enemy, for more than an hour subjected to a murderous fire from three directions. It seemed impossible to hold out longer, but both men and officers were determined to defend and hold their position until ordered away or exhausted in the attempt. At the most critical moment a reserve brigade came to the rescue of Gavans's brigade, and with their assistance drove the enemy back until the rear and flank of Granbury's men were protected. There were no better soldiers enlisted in the late war than those of Gavans's Arkansas brigade, and none ever fought more gallantly than they did at Jonesboro'. Granbury's brigade held its position until about ten o'clock at night, when it was ordered to fall back and take up its march to Lovejoy, about seven miles to the south. During the night we heard the magazines being blown up in Atlanta, which plainly told that Hood was abandoning the city. Many a soldier in the brigade regarded the dismal sounds as the death-knell of the Confederacy, and regarded every soldier lost after that as a life sacrificed in a hopeless contest. To those who fully realized the situation, that night was the saddest and most gloomy since the beginning of hostilities, for it closed the doors to all hope for the cause they loved so well and for which they had sacrificed so much. They realized for the first time that all they had endured and suffered in camp, on the field, in prison, from wounds and sickness, had been in vain, and that whatever they might be called upon to do in the name of duty, patriotism, and love of country, must be done without hope. None but those who have passed through the trying ordeal can have the slightest conception of the heartaches endured by many a brave Confederate soldier on that night; but being ordered to the side of the road to rest, supperless and wearied, the poor fellows were soon asleep, unconscious of the two terrible days just passed.

Early the next morning the men fell in line in answer to the bugle-call, marched a short distance, and again formed in line of battle, where they awaited the enemy and their breakfast, looking to the front for the one and impatiently glancing to the rear for the other, having had nothing to eat for twenty-four hours. They had been longer without bread than without the enemy. The latter appeared on the scene about ten o'clock, opening fire on our skirmishers, which was kept up all day and most of the following night. It was on this line that the brigade lost Captain Perry, of the Eighteenth Texas, who fell lifeless, pierced by a Minié-ball. No general engagement took place here, however, and the killed and wounded were few. At the close of the second day the enemy withdrew, and retired to Atlanta a few days later. General Hood moved his army by the northwest and went into camp near Palmetto, about twenty miles southwest of Atlanta, where he rested his soldiers some weeks while he watched the movements of General Sherman. While in camp at this place Hood was visited by President Davis and his staff, who reviewed and inspected the Army of Tennessee, and evidently helped General Hood plan his ill-fated campaign into Tennessee, which ended in the disastrous battles of Franklin and Nashville.

Between the middle and latter part of October, 1864, the army took up its line of march to the rear of General Sherman, crossing the Chattahoochee River on the evening of the first day, camping on the side of a small mountain, the summit of which seemed to be covered with mineral rock or stones. It was here that the brigade was treated to a taste of what was in store for them. Soon after stacking arms a violent thunder- and rain-storm blew up, accompanied by the most blinding and terrible electric disturbance, during which a bolt of lightning struck the earth at the head of the camp, passed along the mountain-side parallel with the line of the brigade, striking more than fifty men prostrate to the ground, killing three of the victims and seriously injuring a dozen more, destroying many muskets, bayonets, etc. No soldier who witnessed the sight or felt the shock will ever forget the awe-inspiring sensation of the moment. The following day we reached Sherman's rear and watched the movements of that doughty general, while the balance of the army moved on towards Marietta and Dalton, capturing the forts and block-houses with the small garrisons defending and tearing up the railroads, hoping to cut off the Yankees' supplies. On reaching Dalton the army deflected to the southwest across the Alabama line, resting two days, when they again resumed their march to Tennessee, reaching Florence, Alabama, about the 18th of November, 1864. Here the army again halted, rested a few days, while Hood made an effort to gather supplies to better equip his half-fed, half-clothed army for the Nashville campaign, and to call in the few scattering men within call for his final *coup*. His efforts in gathering stores, however, were not a success, and it was then pitiable to see, and now seems cruel to remember, the brave boys thinly clad and half fed, marching in the coldest of winter without overcoats or tents, with but one blanket, sleeping on the wet and frozen ground. Their suffering was almost past endurance. On the morning of November 23, 1864, Hood's army broke camp, and crossing the river took up their line of march towards Columbia, where he first encountered the enemy, whom he immediately engaged with S. D. Lee's corps. With the others he moved to the right of the city, crossing the river above, soon occupying a position to the Federal rear, which Granbury's brigade, with Cleburne's division, was first to reach, near Spring Hill. The men of the brigade were wildly enthusiastic, feeling that they had the enemy bagged, but the rest of the army failing to come up until after night, the Federals escaped under cover of darkness, abandoning a large part of their wagons, mules, and army stores. This was the first blunder of that unfortunate campaign, for, with the enthusiasm of the Confederates and demoralization of the Federals, a vigorous attack by Granbury's brigade, supported by one or two divisions, would have resulted in the capture of Schofield and his eighteen or twenty thousand men; but it seemed that fate was against Hood and his army and that the god of war was doing all he could to hurry the fratricidal strife to a close. The weather was now getting quite cold, and the men, still wet from wading the deep creeks during the day, sought what sleep they could get on the damp, frosty ground. Early on the morning of the 29th the army was on the move towards Franklin. The pike was literally strewn with broken-down and abandoned wagons, caissons, and dead mules, left by the retreating Federals the night before. About three o'clock in the afternoon Hood's army halted about one mile south of Franklin, and he immediately formed his lines for a general assault

on the enemy's works, which were in two lines about three hundred yards apart, and from the Confederates' position looked almost impregnable. There was an open woodland to the left of the pike. To the right and in front of Granbury's brigade was an open field or valley. The left of the brigade rested on the pike, the right extending across the open plain to the east. The men calmly marched in order under the inspiration of martial music by one of the finest bands of the army. The command was given by General Cleburne in person to charge and take the works. The enemy's first or outer line, though well fortified and protected by earthworks, was taken without halting or great loss, about one-half of them surrendering in the ditch, the other half of them throwing down their arms and double-quicking towards the inner lines. It was here the first real resistance was met. In a double line of battle, behind a most thoroughly built line of works, protected in front by an almost impassable abatis made with young trees cut from a grove of locusts that grew near by, the tops cut and sharp-pointed ends, all defended by a large field battery of heavy cannon belching forth shot and shell, grape and canister, until it seemed to be raining lead and iron. The enemy wavered when the Confederates first reached their works, but the ranks of the gallant Southern boys had been reduced almost one-half by this time, and the Yankees, seeing the small number that had reached their lines, took courage and renewed the conflict, which now became a hand-to-hand struggle. Many of the Southern soldiers passed over the second line of works to be immediately made prisoners. The unequal struggle could have but one ending. After two-thirds of the brigade had fallen dead or wounded, the remainder of the command fell back to the first line of works, which they held until the enemy had abandoned the city, which they did three hours later. The loss in dead and wounded was terrible, and no pen can describe the scene that greeted the eye the next morning. The ground was literally covered with the dead, and in places near the second line of works the blood had actually run over the ground like water. Cleburne, Granbury, every regimental commander, had fallen victims to the enemy's bullets. There was not an officer in the brigade who carried a captain's commission who answered the roll-call the following morning. But "war means fighting and fighting means to kill," and this was war. No soldiers could have done more; few could have done as much. A Union soldier who had fought in front of Granbury's brigade, writing of that charge some years ago, said: "The Texas troops charged not like men, but like demons; they fought not like soldiers, but like devils;" and he eulogized the courage and daring of the brave Texans as only a soldier who had tested that courage could do. About ten o'clock the following day the army moved on to Nashville, reaching there on the evening of December 1. The weather was intensely cold, and the soldiers suffered fearfully from the snow and sleet that fell on their half-clad forms. For two weeks Hood laid siege to the city of Nashville. On the 1st of November the enemy attacked his lines and began the battle, but Granbury's brigade was not actively engaged until the following day, when they defended the extreme right of the Southern army. An attempt was made early in the day to dislodge the command, but every assault was repulsed and their position held throughout the day with slight loss of life. It was about four o'clock in the afternoon that the Confederate left gave way, which was soon followed by a break in the

centre, and soon Hood's entire army was under a hasty retreat. Failing to receive orders to abandon their position, the brigade was completely flanked and their retreat almost cut off before they left the field, and for the first and only time during their four years' service they double-quicked to the rear in view of the enemy. The army became panic-stricken, and Granbury's brigade was called on to form across the Franklin Pike and protect Hood's rear. The first resistance was feeble, but the second stand was more effective, and the enemy did no further harm that day. The retreat was kept up, however, until nightfall, and the army reached Franklin before going into camp. Early the next morning Hood's army continued its retreat, Granbury's brigade as usual covering his rear, making a stand just below Spring Hill, where with Bledsoe's Missouri battery they received and successfully repulsed the enemy's charge, which ended the fighting on the part of Hood's infantry in that memorable campaign. The men suffered intensely on this raid. Many of the brigade and numbers of Hood's army came out of Tennessee barefooted, all half-clad and never on full rations during the entire campaign. Most of the time it was raining, sleeting, or snowing, part of the time the ground frozen and so rough that it caused the bare feet of the shoeless soldiers to bleed profusely. We camped in and around Columbia that night, falling back to Pulaski the next day, the 17th, where we remained until about noon of the 18th, when the army leisurely returned to the Tennessee River, which was crossed on pontoons the night of the 24th, and the following day went into camp at Tuscumbia, Alabama, where the army remained until about the 5th of January, 1865, taking a much-needed rest and securing a few commissary and quartermasters' stores for the half-famished, half-clad soldiers. The army next moved to Corinth, Mississippi, where it remained until January 20, when it again took up its line of march for Tupelo, Mississippi. Thus ended the campaign, and with it the last hope of all intelligent thinking Confederate soldiers of the Army of Tennessee. Those who cared to reflect fully realized that all they had endured, all they had suffered, had been in vain; their four years of heroism and endurance must go for naught, except to testify to their courage, lofty patriotism, and unequalled endurance; and how one of the old veterans could nerve himself to battle further for a cause already lost is more than even one of them could explain at this time. On January 26 Hood's army was ordered to North Carolina *via* Mobile and Montgomery, Alabama, Columbus, Milledgeville, and Augusta, Georgia, Fairfield and Chester, South Carolina, then to Salisbury and Raleigh, North Carolina. Here the army was again under the command of Joseph E. Johnston, and about March 4 met Sherman near Old Bentonville, which was the last battle in which Granbury's brigade participated, and about the 25th of April, 1865, went into camp near Greensboro', where it remained until the terms of surrender were arranged by Generals Sherman and Johnston, and each officer and soldier was furnished with a passport in the shape of parole home. This ended the services of Granbury's Texas brigade, the pride and glory of every soldier whose name was on its roll. At this late day no complete or correct history can be written, as no diary or memoranda can be found giving its experience in detail. Few, if any, brigades suffered as greatly during the war between the States as this Texas brigade. Of the eight Texas regiments there were not exceeding six hundred soldiers paroled. Of the Eighteenth

Regiment, which left the State with more than eleven hundred men, only forty-five answered its roll-call the last month of its service. Company E of this regiment organized with one hundred and twenty-seven men and received nine recruits during the war, making a total of one hundred and thirty-six men, surrendered with five men present, one of whom was still disabled from a wound received at Jonesboro', Georgia. Other regiments and companies suffered quite as great as the Eighteenth did.

PART VI.

THE RESULTS OF FIFTY YEARS OF PROGRESS IN POPULATION, MATERIAL DEVELOPMENT, AND GENERAL SOCIAL, EDUCATIONAL, AND RELIGIOUS GROWTH, WITH STATISTICAL TABLES.

THE RESULTS OF FIFTY YEARS OF PROGRESS IN POPULATION, MATERIAL DEVELOPMENT, AND GENERAL SOCIAL, EDUCATIONAL, AND RELIGIOUS GROWTH, WITH STATISTICAL TABLES.

By DUDLEY G. WOOTEN.

[The preparation of this chapter was originally intrusted to the late General S. B. Maxey, than whom no more competent, zealous, and intelligent authority could have been selected. But unfortunately his feeble health for many months and his death in August, 1895, prevented his attention to the work to the extent necessary to complete it. The task was suddenly and unexpectedly devolved upon the editor of these volumes of collecting and arranging the materials for this portion of the history, and he has performed it as exhaustively as the available resources for information would allow. The subjoined statistical tables are compiled from the latest reports of the Census Bureau and of the several departments of the State government, and they will be found to contain much valuable and suggestive information. There has until very recently been no systematic or official effort on the part of the State to collect and preserve the data for the history of the material, social, educational, and religious growth of Texas; so that what is available to the student of these topics is quite desultory and by no means complete nor always authentic. The best that can be done is to present such facts as will in a general way indicate the results of the fifty years of marvellous growth that has characterized the career of the State since annexation to the United States, together with a cursory view of the antecedent periods when Texas was a Spanish-Mexican province and an independent republic. Many of the topics here discussed are more elaborately treated in the special chapters on "The Texas Land System," "The Texas Educational System," "Physical Geography, Geology, and Material Resources," etc., in this publication, to which the reader is referred.]

THE early settlement and development of Texas were astonishingly slow and difficult. For three hundred years after Cabeza de Vaca and his shipwrecked companions landed on the coasts of the unknown province, the valleys and prairies of this vast region remained tenantless and unexplored, save by the precarious efforts of Catholic missionaries, the occasional adventures of Spanish and French filibusters, the feeble and flickering prosperity of a few garrison towns, and the predatory existence of wandering Indian tribes. The colony of La Salle, the expeditions of De Leon, the establishment and mutations of the various missions, the journeys of St. Denis, La Harpe, and Perez, the desperate sallies of Magee and Long, the alternate struggles of Spanish governors and commandants to establish and maintain some show of authority and civilization in the territory then known as the New Philippines,—all these were but successive exhibitions of the real desolation

and lethargy that yet prevailed in this fertile and virgin wilderness. At the close of the eighteenth century, in spite of the treasure, sacrifice, and energy that had been expended by both the military and ecclesiastical powers of New Spain, Texas was still an unsettled and almost an unknown country.

The next twenty years witnessed but little progress towards the population or development of the province, although it was an era of increasing interest in the resources and future destiny of the region included between the Red River and the Rio Grande. The premonitory struggles of the Mexican patriots under Hidalgo and Morelos gave promise of a successful revolt from Spain, and the eyes of American adventurers and colonists were directed towards the prospect of this new field for enterprise and skill in the event that republican liberty should be established here. The Revolution of 1821 came, and the hoped-for republic was founded on the ruins of the Spanish viceroyalty. Texas was apparently assured of a political career not materially different from that of an American State, and the inviting liberality of the early colonization laws of the Mexican federation soon attracted the vigorous and aspiring citizens of the United States of the North to new homes beyond the Sabine. Even before the assurance of a liberal government and kindly institutions had been given, the ambitious and hardy spirit of the Austins had led them to seek concessions at the hands of the Spanish rulers of Mexico, and there can be no doubt that the influence of the younger Austin had much to do with the first favorable legislation of the new republic of Mexico.

The period of American colonization in Texas dates from the first colony of Stephen F. Austin, in 1822, and for the next ten years the influx of a slow but splendid immigration filled up many of the choice valleys of the district between the Trinity and the Colorado, while the ancient seats of Spanish settlement at Nacogdoches and along the Neches and Angelina became favorite spots for the new-comers from the States. The perils and hardships of those primitive days were very severe, and only the hardiest and the most daring could survive the continual struggle for supremacy over the roughnesses of the wilderness and the bloody competition of its wild and ruthless savages. Still, there was a measure of prosperity and contentment among the old settlers, and they met the necessities of the situation with dauntless spirits. All would have been well but for the inevitable conflict that was steadily approaching between two irreconcilable races influenced by widely different views of governmental and civil institutions, and inheriting essentially antagonistic traditions of life, liberty, and law. The social and political temper of the Anglo-American settlers could never be brought into harmony with the *pseudo*-republican principles of a government that still retained the infamous features of the Spanish colonial system. Still less would they submit to the arbitrary operations of a thinly-disguised despotism. This was the true cause of the Texas Revolution. Its success, after many and marvellous struggles and sacrifices, ushered into the family of nations a new republic, founded on the well-attested principles of political, civil, and religious freedom so illustriously portrayed in the constitution and laws of its still young but puissant parent on the north.

The new nation began its career with comparatively few citizens, an empty treasury, a burdensome public debt, a poor but sturdy population, and an extensive domain abounding in great but undeveloped resources. Its destiny was still to

some extent shadowed by the malignant threats and lowering frowns of the Mexican government, but its hopes were brightened by the welcoming friendship of many older and powerful sovereignties, while the consciousness of its own inherent strength inspired its people with prophetic pride and supplied its rulers with loyal courage and patriotic zeal.

The real poverty of the republic of Texas in population, material wealth, and available resources is at this day but faintly realized. No census of the province had ever been taken, but rough estimates had been made from time to time during the preceding century. In 1744 the white inhabitants of Texas did not exceed 1500; in 1765 they had decreased to half that number, and the estimated commerce and trade of every description was about $175,000 annually. In 1806 there were about 7000 whites and *reduced* Indians, of whom nearly one-third lived in and around San Antonio de Bexar. In 1831 the influx of Americans under the *empresarios* had raised the white population to about 20,000, and in 1834 Santa Anna sent his trusted officer, Colonel Juan N. Almonte, to make observations and a detailed report of the condition of the province. In that year Almonte estimated the total white population at 21,000, distributed in thirteen municipalities, as follows: Bexar, 2400; San Patricio, 600; Matagorda, 1400; Nacogdoches, 3500; Jonesborough, 2000; Goliad, 700; San Felipe, 2500; Gonzales, 900; San Augustine, 2500; Victoria, 300; Columbia, 2100; Mina, 1100; Liberty, 1000. He also reported the total exports of the province at $1,080,000, consisting of cotton, cattle, grain, and peltries, and the imports at $590,000.

In September, 1836, six months after Texas had declared her independence, the President of the United States sent Mr. Henry M. Morfit to investigate the resources and conditions of the country. He made a detailed report as to the state of affairs in the infant republic, estimating the population as follows:—

Anglo-Americans	30,000
Mexicans	3,470
Indians	14,200
Negroes	5,000
Total estimated population, September 1, 1836	52,670

At the date of the inauguration of the permanent government of the republic, in the fall of 1836, the financial plight of the country was deplorable. The public debt was easily a million and a quarter of dollars, public obligations were worthless; the trade, foreign and domestic, had been practically destroyed by the war for independence; the people had been broken up in their homes and business by months of terror, uncertainty, and turmoil; the territory was rapidly filling up with new immigrants, many of them not of the most desirable class; and the cessation of hostilities had left unemployed and unsatisfied a large number of ambitious, turbulent, and intriguing men, some of them not without merit and ability, but whose presence and pernicious activity were not conducive to wise and peaceful counsels. There were no railroads and but very few and primitive modes of transportation of any kind, no factories, no mines, none of the practical sources of public revenue or private prosperity. There was simply a vast and fertile landed domain, whose prospective value was but lightly appreciated, but sufficiently seductive to

arouse personal cupidity and inspire legislative schemes for its rapid and improvident dissipation. Schools were scarce and but feebly supported, one newspaper had survived the Revolution, the government itself was without a fixed habitation, and its duration and destiny seemed doubtful even to the hardy and hopeful spirits whose valor had won its existence and recognition. This was the condition in 1836, and the ten years that followed were filled with debts, doubts, and difficulties innumerable; but the result, wrought amid many perils and privations, culminated in the ultimate redemption of the government from all of its embarrassments, the assured prosperity of a thrifty and increasing population, and its incorporation as a stable commonwealth among the co-equal States of the American Union.

The joint resolution of the Congress of the United States for the annexation of Texas was approved March 1, 1845. In accordance with its terms a State Constitution was framed and adopted by the Texas convention. August 27, 1845, was submitted to a vote of the people, together with the question of annexation, in the following October, and, by a vote of 4174 for to 312 against, it was ratified by the people of Texas. On December 29, 1845, the Constitution thus framed and adopted was accepted by the Congress of the United States, and from this last-named date Texas legally became one of the United States of America. The new State government, however, which was elected in December, 1845, did not assume its functions until the following February, 1846. For purposes of practical computation we may adopt January 1, 1846, as the beginning-point in the history of Texas as an American State, so that on January 1, 1896, she closed her first half-century of Statehood. Taking these dates as the limits of observation, the subject of this chapter may be conveniently treated under the following sub-heads:—

GROWTH AND CHARACTER OF POPULATION.

No official census of the republic was ever taken, and the number of its inhabitants can only be estimated by the popular vote at the successive elections, aided by some attempts that were made at enumerating the population of various counties. The vote at the several elections from 1836 to 1849 was as follows:—

For first President, September, 1836	5,704
For second President, September, 1838	7,247
For third President, 1841	11,534
For fourth and last President, 1844	12,689
For first Governor, 1845	9,578
For second Governor, 1847	14,767
For third Governor, 1849	21,715

Upon the basis of ten inhabitants for every voter, the election of 1845 would show a population of 95,780; or, taking the preceding election of 1844 as more nearly representative, the population at the date of annexation would be 126,890, which is no doubt a very liberal estimate. It is more probable that the entire population, excluding the Indians, did not exceed 100,000. In 1847 a partial enumeration by counties was made, showing 135,777 inhabitants, including 38,729 slaves. These inhabitants were for the most part located in Eastern Texas and along the Trinity, Colorado, and Brazos Rivers from the coast as far inland as the Old San

Antonio Road, with a considerable settlement at San Antonio, and a fringe of floating population along Red River and the Rio Grande. There was no city of any size, no trade centre, few roads of the roughest character, no internal trade of much value, and a primitive scarcity of all those things that constitute modern civilization in its most vigorous attitude. The Mexican War, which at once broke out in 1846 as the result of annexation, retarded further immigration for a time, and it was not until after 1848 that the country began to really develop in its population and resources.

In 1850 the first census was taken, showing a population of 212,592, of whom 154,034 were white and 58,161 were colored. The composition of this inhabitancy was cosmopolitan in a very marked degree, and in that regard it was the prototype of the character of the Texan citizenship of all the subsequent years to the present time. Perhaps no other American State has had so unique a blending of nationalities and social types. Although what may be called the *staple* of the population—that element which gives complexion and a permanent character to social life and customs—has from the first been derived from the Southern States of the American Union, there has always been such a large and influential admixture of immigrants from the North and East, together with a vigorous and healthy foreign colonization from Germany, Sweden, Norway, Denmark, Bohemia, France, and Great Britain, to say nothing of the Spanish and Mexican influences that originally underlay all the others, that the resultant *Texan* is a composite citizen of a commonwealth that possesses peculiar excellencies for rapid and liberal growth.

When the war with Mexico had ended, February 2, 1848, the way was opened for safe and stable progress in Texas, except for two vexed and unsettled questions. These were the public debt and the boundary dispute. The settlement of the two was more or less inseparable, and the final result was fortunate for Texas. The debt of the republic was at last fixed at $11,050,201.50, which by a process of scaling was adjusted at $5,528,195.19, and was finally paid off with $8,497,604.95, the ultimate liquidation being consummated in 1858. The boundary dispute with the United States was disposed of as part of the famous Compromise Measures of September 9, 1850, passed by the Congress of the United States, and accepted by Texas on November 25, 1850. By this act Texas surrendered her claim to New Mexico in consideration of the payment by the United States of $10,000,000 in stock, due in fourteen years, and bearing 5 per cent. interest. The money thus realized enabled the State to discharge the old debts of the republic without impoverishing her current revenues for a series of years, as would otherwise have been inevitable. The adjustment of this troublesome issue seemed to forever dispose of all controversies in regard to the Texas boundaries, but the *Greer County case*, involving the location of one part of our northwestern boundary, arose in later years to vex legislatures, congresses, and courts. It was finally decided by the Supreme Court of the United States in 1896 adversely to the contention of Texas, thus taking away the large territory formerly known as Greer County. That controversy involved the construction of the third article of the treaty between Spain and the United States of February 22, 1819, as to the true location of the "Red River" therein named as constituting part of the limits of the two governments on this continent.

The rapidity in the growth of the population of Texas from 1850 to 1890 is shown by the following totals of the United States Census for the several decades:—

Population, 1850	212,592
Population, 1860	604,215
Population, 1870	818,579
Population, 1880	1,591,749
Population, 1890	2,235,523

These figures demonstrate that in the decade from 1850 to 1860 the inhabitants increased threefold; from 1860 to 1870, despite the ravages and impediments of the great Civil War, the increase was over 33⅓ per cent.; from 1870 to 1880 the population was nearly doubled; and from 1880 to 1890 the increase was 75 per cent. The rate of increase in thirty-eight States of the Union during a period of forty years was on an average 39.53 per cent. The great increase in the popular vote at the three State elections since 1890 indicates that there have been large additions to the population in the past six years. The returns show the following results:

Popular vote at the election of 1892	435,467
Popular vote at the election of 1894	422,716
Popular vote at the election of 1896 (about)	540,000

A conservative estimate, based on the usual proportion between the voters and the entire population, would give Texas at the present time not less than 3,000,000 of people, being more than fourteen times her population in 1850.

According to the census of 1890, the then population was classified as follows:—

White	1,741,190
Colored	492,837
Indian	766
Chinese	727
Japanese	3
Total	2,235,523

The occupations of the people have not been classified, nor the ratio between rural and urban populations. There are two cities (Dallas and San Antonio) of more than 50,000 inhabitants, three others of over 25,000, and perhaps six or seven of over 10,000. Farming and stock-raising are of course the leading pursuits of the great mass of the people, but manual and skilled labor is rapidly finding lucrative employment in the larger cities and towns, where the arts of industrial life are fast developing.

Under the appointment of 1890 Texas is entitled to thirteen Representatives in the lower house of the American Congress, and she has thus fifteen votes in the electoral college.

AREA, MUNICIPAL DIVISIONS, PUBLIC LANDS, ETC.

Prior to the Texas Revolution of 1835–36 the territory of the province was divided into *municipalities*, each governed by its local officers, after the manner of Spanish-Mexican institutions; and the country was further divided into three political districts, each ruled by a political chief (*jefe politico*), who was in turn responsible to the governor of the state or to the commandant of the military province.

The system of county governments was adopted by the provisional government in November, 1835, and upon the organization of the republic in 1836 twenty-three counties were created. This number was increased from time to time until at the date of annexation in 1845 there were thirty-six organized counties. In 1846 thirty-two new counties were created, and these local governments have multiplied with the growth and necessities of the population until, in 1894, there were two hundred and twenty-six organized counties and twenty-one unorganized. Some of these are larger in area than several of the smaller States of the Union, and they are all quite liberal in dimensions.

The present area of Texas, according to the official records of the General Land Office of the State, is 250,004 square miles of land and 2510 square miles of water surface, making a total of 252,514 square miles, being about 8.7 per cent. of the entire area of the United States and Territories. This does not include the rivers and streams, which are estimated to cover an additional area of 800 square miles.

The timber lands of the State cover 35,537,967 acres, the bodies of heaviest timber being situated in the eastern and southeastern part of the State, although there is a liberal supply of forest growth along all the streams in the prairie region.

Under the system of jurisdiction existing while Texas was a part of the Mexican federation, the vacant lands within her borders, except as required for federal purposes, were owned and controlled by the state government of Coahuila and Texas. At the time of the establishment of Texan independence there was an immense territory of these public lands, exclusive of such as had been titled under the Spanish and Mexican government. It is impossible to determine accurately the amounts and respective dispositions of titles to lands in Texas under Spanish, Mexican, or Texan jurisdiction, as the records kept are too meagre and confused. It is roughly estimated that 10,000,000 acres were titled under Spanish domination, 25,000,000 acres during Mexican rule, and that the republic owned at the time of its organization nearly 150,000,000 acres of vacant public lands. This of course included the territory of New Mexico, which was afterwards ceded to the United States, being about 125,000 square miles. The history of the manner in which this vast domain has been handled and disposed of by the successive governments of Texas constitutes a separate and very complex subject of historical research and narrative, and will not be pursued further here.[1]

By the terms of the joint resolution for the annexation of Texas, further strengthened by the Compromise Measures of 1850, the State of Texas retained the title to all of her vacant public domain. This at once gave her a source of wealth and a means of promoting internal development not enjoyed by any other State in the Union. The many millions of acres which she owned in 1845 have been liberally used to establish and maintain a magnificent system of free public education, including a great University and a complete system of normal schools; to build railroads throughout her borders; to endow and provide for the support of her various asylums and charitable institutions; to erect a State capitol, which is one of the largest and finest public structures on the western continent, and to promote many other measures of necessary and valuable internal improvements.

[1] See chapter on "Land System of Texas," vol. i. page 784.

There are now estimated to be about 4,400,000 acres of unappropriated public lands, which are subject to be acquired under the laws regulating homestead donations. This land is exclusive of the large amount of domain held in trust by the State for the benefit of public schools, University, and asylums, and is situated in Western and Northwestern Texas. The lands belonging to the schools, University, and asylums aggregate about 30,000,000 acres, and of these the greater part are subject to purchase or lease by actual settlers at low rates and on easy terms.

AGRICULTURAL, MINERAL, AND INDUSTRIAL RESOURCES.

The extended domain of Texas is such that it combines the products of the temperate and subtropical zones, abounding in the cereals, cotton, sugar, every variety of fruit product, and many things peculiar to Mexico and the lower latitudes. The early settlers were chiefly engaged in pastoral pursuits, although the sturdy colonists of Austin and his associate *empresaries* made considerable progress in farming, cotton and grain being subjects of export in paying quantities. The sparse population, however, and the difficulties of transportation rendered agriculture a precarious and irksome occupation, and the facilities for stock-raising were so favorable and extensive that the great domestic industry from the beginning was that of cattle- and horse-raising, the State having always held the lead in those pursuits. Irrigation in the neighborhood of the early Spanish-Mexican settlements promoted a certain degree of small agriculture, but it was not until the building of railroads and the opening up of the great black-land prairies of Central, Northern, and Northwestern Texas that farming assumed its present proportions. The inexhaustible fertility of the river-bottoms, when brought in communication with the markets of the seaboard and the outlets by rail to the North and East, readily responded with marvellous crops of cotton and corn, while the broad acres of rolling plain throughout the middle and northern parts of the State became the granaries of the Southwest and the greatest cotton-producing country in the world.

After 1850 the growth of these interests was astonishing in its rapidity and volume. The following figures for the year 1857 show the progress that was made to that date :—

Acres planted in cotton	544,495
Acres planted in wheat	196,878
Acres planted in cane	16,080
Acres planted in corn	1,125,500
Total acres in staples	1,882,953

The crop of 1857–58 was estimated to be 425,000 bales of cotton, 25,000,000 bushels of corn, 3,750,000 bushels of wheat, and 11,000 hogsheads of sugar.

A comparison of crops by decades shows the following results :—

Years.	Cotton, Bales.	Corn, Bushels.	Wheat, Bushels.
1850	58,072	6,028,876	31,729
1860	431,053	16,200,717	1,475,345
1870	350,628	20,551,535	415,112
1880	8[illegible],284	24,965,172	2,867,737
1890	1,47[illegible],212	69,112,150 (1889)	4,283,344

The production in live-stock and wool for the same periods was as follows :—

	1850.	1860.	1870.	1880.
Cattle, number	61,013	2,761,736	2,933,588	3,387,927
Horses and mules, number	76,760	352,698	424,504	805,606
Hogs, number	629,022	1,371,532	1,202,445	1,960,374
Wool, pounds	131,917	1,493,738	1,251,328	6,925,619

The census of 1890 discloses the following facts as to the agricultural and pastoral products of Texas :—

Number of bales of cotton	1,471,242
Pounds of wool, 1889–90	14,917,068
Number of horses on farms	1,026,002
Number of meat cattle on farms	6,201,552
Number of hogs on farms	2,252,476
Number of sheep on farms, lambs excluded	3,454,858
Number of horses on the range	99,838
Number of cattle on the range	2,342,083
Number of sheep on the range	809,329

The entire cotton crop for the season of 1894–95 was 9,901,251 bales, of which Texas produced 3,154,976 bales. The value of the total crop was estimated at $297,037,530, which would make the value of the Texas product for that year nearly $100,000,000.

For further and more detailed information of the agricultural and live-stock statistics of later years reference is made to the tables at the close of this chapter.

The mineralogical resources of Texas have only recently begun to be explored and developed, and no accurate or extensive information can be given. Enough is practically known, however, to demonstrate that the mineralogical wealth of the State is not inferior to its other natural funds for the support of the vast population that will soon fill its borders. Coal is found in abundant quantities in various parts of the State, and is being profitably mined at several places, notably at Thurber, on the Texas and Pacific Railway, west of Fort Worth. There are three coal-fields of great extent in Texas, two of which furnish good qualities of bituminous coal and the other a superior grade of lignite. The supply, when fully developed, is ample for all manufacturing and industrial purposes.

Iron ore has long been known and worked to a limited extent in Eastern Texas, but within the last few years a new impetus has been given to the mining of this valuable product. Experts pronounce the iron ores of Texas to be in many important respects superior to any in the world, and the only impediment to their rapid development is the difficulty encountered in their reduction, owing to the scarcity of suitable fuel. This want will be met when further progress is made in the mining of our extensive coal-fields.

The reports of the State Geological Department show the existence in profitable quantities and favorable localities of copper, lead, silver, gold, manganese, potter's clay, kaolin, petroleum, gypsum, hydraulic limestones and lime, cements, marbles and building stones, salt, asphaltum, and many refractory materials valuable in the arts. These are all being used, and their production increases year by

year. Artesian water is obtainable over a very large area of the State, and the ease with which flowing wells can be constructed renders the problem of water-supply in many otherwise arid regions one whose solution will not be difficult. The mineral resources of the State are as yet in an experimental period of development, and enough has not been done or ascertained to enable an accurate table of statistics on that head.

RAILROADS, COMMERCE, INTERNAL IMPROVEMENTS, MANUFACTURES.

The Fathers of Texas early realized the necessity for rapid and easy means of transportation and intercourse between the different portions of the extensive territory included within the limits of the State. These were absolutely indispensable to the settlement and development of so vast a dominion, both for populating and policing the great extent of country and for marketing the products of the soil which an industrious citizenship would naturally evolve. The absence of streams navigable to any profitable degree rendered railroads a prime necessity, and to their construction the ingenuity and providence of the first legislatures were directed. The newness of the country and the almost total want of such internal trade as would support great lines of steam traffic required substantial inducements to that character of enterprise, aside from any immediate profits to be derived from the transportation business.

Fortunately Texas possessed the means to offer these inducements. Her immense tracts of public land furnished a fund for munificent subsidies to railroad construction, and most munificently has that fund been applied to that purpose. In the first years of the State's existence, and even before annexation, special laws were passed looking to the encouragement of railway-building in Texas, but little of practical progress was made until 1854. In that year the policy of land donations to railroads took shape in the enactment of a general law for the purpose of promoting such enterprises. There were at first two policies proposed. One—which was understood to have for its leading exponent Governor E. M. Pease—was that the State should build and own her own railroads, paying for them in public lands, and then lease them out to competing companies, which would operate them under government regulation and control, paying for their use a reasonable hire, and rendering to the public acceptable service at the lowest practicable rates for transportation. The other plan was a donation of the lands outright to the railroad companies for lines of road actually constructed and put in operation, requiring the companies to survey and sectionize the public lands, the State and the railroads to receive the alternate sections, and the companies being required to alienate their lands within a reasonable term of years. The latter policy was the one finally adopted. Its ostensible advantages were that it secured a survey of the public lands without cost to the State, that it made it to the interest of the railroads to settle the country as rapidly as possible so as to bring all the lands into the market, and that it promoted the public revenues by tending to create a constantly-increasing taxable wealth in the shape of lands held by private ownership. The disadvantages of the system are not so obvious, but the experience of forty years has not been without many evidences of the improvident and disastrous results of the policy as practised during the progress of railroad operations in Texas.

The first railroad actually projected in Texas was the Galveston, Harrisburg,

and San Antonio road, organized in 1853 by General Sidney Sherman and associates. Its first line was constructed from Harrisburg, on Buffalo Bayou, twenty miles to Stafford's Point. A little later it was extended to Richmond, and in 1860 it had reached a point near Columbus. The Houston and Texas Central Railway was begun in 1853–54 by Paul Bremond and other citizens of Houston. It was first built from Houston to Cypress, then to Courtney, Hempstead, Navasota, and in 1861 it reached Millican. From 1856 to 1860 the Texas and New Orleans road was constructed from Houston to Liberty, Beaumont, and Orange. About the same time the Gulf, West Texas and Pacific road ran from Port Lavaca to Victoria.

In Governor Pease's first administration, by the act of January 30, 1854, the first general law for the encouragement of railroad construction by grants of land was passed. In its general provisions this law furnished the model and contained substantially the same conditions as were embodied in all subsequent legislation on the same subject, of which there has been a great deal from time to time. It provided that when any company had constructed and put in running order twenty-five miles of railroad, it could have thirty-two sections of public land surveyed for each mile of road so constructed, the land to be surveyed in square sections of 640 acres each, and every alternate section was donated to the railroad company, while the intervening sections were appropriated to the permanent fund of the public free schools of the State.

Under these liberal inducements the building of railroads progressed rapidly until interrupted by the Civil War in 1861. After the restoration of peace and settled order a renewed activity characterized this with all other departments of domestic industry, and the results have been most satisfactory. In 1857 there had been incorporated by the State 41 railroad companies, of which 15 had forfeited their charters, and at the breaking out of the war in 1861 there were about 300 miles of railway in Texas, in detached sections. In 1865 there were 335 miles, which increased to 583 miles in 1869, and to 711 miles in 1870. In the ten years that followed, to 1880, construction developed with astonishing rapidity, so that at the close of the latter year there were 3293 miles of road. The period between 1880 and 1890 was also most prolific in railroad-building, as in the last-named year there had been completed a mileage of 8709 miles. In 1892 this had increased to 8977 miles; in 1893 (June) it was 9088 miles; in June, 1894, it was 9153 miles; and in June, 1895, it had reached 9290 miles. At the close of the year 1895 there had been an increase of 224 miles for that year, being nearly three times as much increase as that of the next highest State in the Union,—Ohio with 87 miles of new road in 1895.

In 1892 there were 52 roads operating lines in Texas; in 1893, 54 railroads; on June 30, 1894, there were 58; and on June 30, 1895, there were 59. Under the various laws for donating lands to railroad construction, it is estimated that the companies have received from the State the magnificent area of about 35,000,000 acres, besides many large money subsidies and extensive exemptions from taxation and other public charges.

The tables at the close of this chapter will give more detailed information of the values, operations, earnings, and traffic of the railroads of the State.

The growth of railroads and the character and extent of their traffic, as shown by the appended tables, also furnish a very fair index to the nature and magnitude

of the internal commerce of the State, and reference is made to those tables for information on the commerce of Texas. The foreign trade of the State is difficult to be estimated, as in the movement of freight over the railroad systems it is intermingled with inter-State commerce, and there is no method for computing such traffic. The largest seaport in the State is Galveston, and the annexed "Report of Transactions" at that port for the years 1894, 1895, and 1896 indicate to some extent the volume of business at the principal custom-house on the Gulf coast of Texas. There is also a very considerable trade at Sabine Pass, Velasco, Aransas, Corpus Christi, Brazos Santiago, and El Paso, besides the land trade at Laredo and Eagle Pass on the Rio Grande, the statistics of none of which are available.

The great commercial enterprise in which Texas in common with the entire Western country has been for many years deeply interested is the obtaining of a safe and commodious harbor on the coast of the Gulf of Mexico. This has apparently been at last accomplished at Galveston. The following statement of operations there in the matter of securing deep water by the "jetty system" has been kindly furnished by the contractors whose labors have done so much towards attaining the desired object :—

"As a result of the rapid increase of population during the past decade throughout that vast portion of the United States lying between the Mississippi River and the Rocky Mountains, and the immense volume of its products from the grain-fields of Kansas and Nebraska, as well as the enormous tonnage of cotton grown in Texas and the Indian Territory, equalling one-third of the entire crop produced by the United States, no other public question has occupied so much attention upon the part of the people of Texas, Kansas, Colorado, Nebraska, and Arkansas, and the entire West and Southwest, as the obtaining of a deep-water port upon the Texas coast, which would enable the people of this immense territory to reach tide-water with their products and to receive manufactured articles purchased in the East, as well as imported merchandise and products, by a rail route of 600 to 1200 miles shorter than by shipment *via* the Great Lakes or all-rail routes to and from the Atlantic seaboard. All political parties and men engaged in all occupations have from the beginning been of one mind upon this important subject; and public sentiment finally united in concerted action at a convention held in the city of Topeka, Kansas, in 1885, at which almost every Western and Southwestern State was represented. At this convention Congress was memorialized to select the most suitable location to be found on the Gulf coast of Texas, and to construct a deep-water port and harbor where vessels of the deepest draught could enter or leave port in all stages of weather.

"This action of the 'Deep Water Convention' at Topeka resulted in the passage of an act by Congress, constituting a board of engineers to examine every available location on the Texas coast, for the purpose of selecting for improvement the most suitable locality for a deep-water port, as well as for a harbor of refuge for vessels of the navy, where a depth of thirty feet of water could be secured and maintained from the Gulf to an inland harbor of ample proportions to accommodate the shipping for which the port was designed.

"After a complete examination of the coast, the Board of Engineers recommended that the entrance to Galveston Harbor be improved, as the conditions discovered at this point would permit the construction of a port, in accordance with the act of Congress, more economically and effectually than elsewhere.

"The recommendations of the board were adopted by Congress in an Act approved September 19, 1890, appropriating $500,000 for continuing improvement to entrance to Galveston Harbor, and providing 'That contracts may be entered

into by the Secretary of War for such materials and work as may be necessary to carry out the plan contained in the report of the Chief of Engineers for Eighteen Hundred and Eighty-Six for the improvement of that Harbor;' in pursuance of which a contract was entered into May 12, 1891, by the government with O'Connor, Laing & Smoot, of Dallas, Texas, for the completion of the entire works, these contractors having undertaken the work on terms more favorable to the government than any other propositions which could be secured.

"As early as 1870, appropriations were made by the Federal Congress to begin the work of deepening the harbor of Galveston, and for a number of years following that date small appropriations were made from year to year for the Galveston Harbor, as well as for several other harbors upon the Texas coast. Up to 1880 there had been appropriated for Galveston Harbor $610,000, which was spent in dredging and in an ineffectual attempt to construct jetties of gabionades. These gabionades were large baskets woven of brush and covered with cement, and filled with sand and placed in position along the line of the jetty.

"The authorities were compelled to resort to some such practice in lieu of the use of stone, as available quarries along the lines of railroad tributary to Galveston did not exist. The experiments with gabionades was more or less a failure, and the gabionades have entirely disappeared.

"In 1880 the manner of building the jetties was changed, rock having now become accessible, and jetties were projected consisting of brush and rock, to follow approximately the lines upon which the work had been done in previous years. Between 1880 and 1884 $970,000 was expended in construction of the South Jetty of brush mattresses and rock. Thus, in fourteen years, appropriations had been made aggregating about $1,600,000. Many times during this period the suspension of work became necessary through lack of funds. The plant and machinery procured were necessarily insufficient, in view of the fact that the sums to be appropriated in the future were wholly in doubt. The expenditure of Federal appropriations upon neighboring harbors had necessarily resulted in smaller appropriations for Galveston Harbor, and not until Congress abandoned the smaller harbors to the south of Galveston and concentrated appropriations at the latter place was substantial progress possible.

"The estimated cost of the entire work by the jetty system, completed and including all expenditures since work was started in 1870, was $8,478,000.

Amounts expended in small contracts, dredging, gabionades	$2,278,000.00
Balance to complete works	6,200,000.00

"The plans proposed by the Board of Engineers for securing deep water on the Galveston Bar were severely criticised and condemned by many eminent engineers throughout the country, and by engineers and contractors who had previously secured contracts with the government for obtaining deep water at other points. It was the opinion of Mr. Haupt and Captain Eads, as expressed before Congressional Committees and in the press, that the plans proposed would result either in shoaling the bar or fail wholly to produce the result required. This opposition was without result, as previously stated, and Congress adopted the report of the Board of Engineers, and a contract was made with Messrs. O'Connor, Laing & Smoot on May 12, 1891, for the construction and completion of the entire jetty works, and such dredging as might be necessary to afford the channel depth across the bar which was required by the commerce of the port and comprehended in the project which had been adopted by Congress.

"Messrs. O'Connor, Laing & Smoot immediately began the construction of a plant of machinery, boats, and appliances which would be required for the rapid building of the jetties, and at the same time opened up quarries for the supply of stone and granite at six to seven different points along the lines of as many separate railroads, the most distant of the quarries being three hundred miles from Galveston.

It was estimated that the following quantities of work and material would be required to complete the jetties: 54,000 linear feet railway and trestle, 1,440,000 tons (2000 pounds) sandstone riprap, 684,000 tons (2000 pounds) granite blocks. This tremendous quantity of stone can be more readily comprehended when it is stated that the stone would load over 100,000 cars with more than 40,000 pounds each, and, if placed in a single train, would exceed 700 miles in length.

"In a short time the contractors had massed the following plant on the works at Galveston and at the several quarries, in preparation for the inauguration of the great work which was to require five years of unceasing push and labor to accomplish the purpose for which the works were designed:—

Boats.		
Two tugs, cost	$46,500.00	
Granite barges	67,500.00	
Derrick barges	35,000.00	
Transfer barges	10,500.00	
Water barges	6,000.00	
Total 12 vessels, all built new for this work		$165,500.00
Locomotives, pile-drivers, cars, etc.	$31,900.00	
Railroad tracks and wharves, South Jetty	47,998.00	
Railroad tracks and wharves, North Jetty	65,588.00	
Buildings, tanks, bins, etc.	10,150.00	
Machinery and plant, granite quarry	13,250.00	
Machinery and plant, sandstone quarry	14,500.00	
Derricks, tracks, and wharves, Clinton	4,500.00	
Railroad spurs to quarries, 26¾ miles	21,400.00	
Machinery and plant, Millican Quarry	6,100.00	
Machinery and plant, Clay Station Quarry	10,115.00	
Machinery and plant, Muldoon Quarry	7,850.00	
Machinery and plant, Dodge Quarry	3,920.00	
		237,271.00
		$402,771.00

"The following table shows the quarries which have been operated for a supply of stone, and the railroads and distances over which same was transported to Galveston:

Quarries.	Railroads.	Distance in Miles.	
Granite:			
Granite Mountain, *via*	A. & N. W.	74	
Granite Mountain, *via*	H. & T. C.	166	
Granite Mountain, *via*	G. C. & S. F.	53	
			293
Sandstone:			
Ledbetter, *via*	H. & T. C.	98	
Ledbetter, *via*	I. & G. N.	49	
			147
Millican, *via*	H. & T. C.	81	
Millican, *via*	I. & G. N.	49	
			130
Muldoon, *via*	S. A. & A. P.	157	
Muldoon, *via*	I. & G. N.	49	
			206
Quarry Station, *via*	G. C. & S. F.	138	
Clay Station, *via*	G. C. & S. F.	154	
Dodge, *via*	I. & G. N.	122	
			414
			1190

"Between two and three thousand railway cars being constantly required for a steady and uniform movement of the stuff, it was necessary to open quarries on the several railways in order to obtain a sufficient supply of cars.

"The first shipment of rock was put in the work by the contractor on July 31, 1892, and work has been prosecuted day and night without intermission ever since. The South Jetty received the entire attention of the contractors until that jetty reached the crest of the bar, a distance of 32,800 feet, in May, 1893, when work on this jetty was suspended and construction begun on the North Jetty. While work was in progress on the South Jetty, the contractors made all necessary preparations for opening work on the North Jetty without the loss of a day, as soon as the South Jetty should be built to the bar.

"The North Jetty was to be built from Bolivar Peninsula, starting on the Gulf shore and building out into the Gulf towards the bar, four miles at sea. Bolivar Peninsula is a low sand-spit half covered with water at high tide, and no wharf or landing existing along its shores where a railroad-tie or a ton of coal could be unloaded.

"The water for half a mile off the coast was only a few inches to two or three feet deep, thereby necessitating the construction of wharves and railroad tracks from the water end, and then building same on towards land, where the locomotives and cars loaded with material and the machinery required for the construction of the yards and wharves could be ferried across the channel from Galveston and landed.

"An extensive storage yard capable of holding 400 standard railway cars was completed, and railway tracks with all necessary sidings and switches constructed across Bolivar Peninsula to the site of the North Jetty, in readiness to begin the delivery of stone into the jetty when work on the South Jetty should be suspended. Work on the North Jetty was commenced in April, 1893.

"A large steel twin-screw tug had been constructed at Camden, New Jersey, especially for the work to be done on the jetties. This tug was lashed to barges having three railroad tracks on deck, which were loaded at Galveston with the cars of rock as they came from the quarries, and ferried two and a half miles across the Bolivar channel to the wharves or landings at Bolivar above described. A locomotive met the ferry-boat on Bolivar wharf and drew the cars from the barge, reloading same with empty cars, which had just been discharged of their loads of stone or railway materials.

"The construction of the North Jetty was similar to the method pursued in the building of the South Jetty. First, a trestle-work for a standard gauge railway track is built, supported on two to five large piles, which are driven deep into the bottom of the sea. These bents of piling are driven 15 feet apart, and, owing to the great depth of water and soft bottom occasionally found, piles of 70 and 75 feet are required to afford a sufficient support for the locomotives and heavily-loaded stone cars which are to pass over same.

"The cars of sandstone are pushed out on this trestle by locomotives and the stone unloaded from the sides and ends of the cars by hand. Trainload after trainload of stone is unloaded into the sea at the bottom of work which is being built up, until the embankment of stone reaches a height of two feet above mean low tide, the stone meanwhile taking its natural slope on the sides of the jetty, which is generally one foot vertical to one and one-half feet horizontal. To prevent the displacement of this stone by wave-action, a covering of heavy granite blocks is brought on barges by the contractors down Buffalo Bayou and Galveston Bay and towed out to that portion of the jetty where work is in progress and unloaded and placed on the jetty with enormous floating derricks.

"The regularity of the surface of the jetty when covered by these immense blocks of granite is such that waves of large size pass over the jetty, displacing no materials, none but the top surfaces of the granite blocks being exposed, and their great weight securing them in their positions against the force and fury of the waves.

"The height of the crest of the jetty is 5 feet above mean low tide. Its width at the base is as great as 110 feet where the water is deep. The foundation of the rock-work is immediately upon the sand bottom of the Gulf, and yet the subsidence or settlement of the jetties is in no place more than a few inches, which is either due to the compression of the bottom or the settlement to a firmer bed of the separate stones, due to vibration of a mass when struck by a heavy sea.

"Coincident with the building of the jetties, when the same approached the bar, came rapid increases of depths available for vessels entering the harbor.

"On the outer bar when work began there was a depth of 12 feet. The completion of the South Jetty to a length of 32,000 feet increased the depth in the navigable channel to 13¾ feet on March 2, 1893; the rapid construction of the North Jetty increased this depth to 14 feet on March 2, 1894, and on March 2, 1895, to 15 feet, with a straight channel, while formerly the channel had been very tortuous and difficult to navigate, and the grounding of vessels on the bar was a not infrequent occurrence. This was obviated by the channel becoming straight and easily navigable, the flow of the currents having been controlled and directed by the jetties.

"To recapitulate: The depth when work began was 12 feet; the depth on March 2, 1893, was 13¾ feet; the depth on March 2, 1894, was 14 feet; the depth on March 2, 1895, was 15 feet; the depth on March 2, 1896, was 22 feet. While at this date we have 24 feet of water at mean low tide, capable of floating the largest vessels in the world when loaded with cotton, which is the great export commodity of this harbor. This rapid and steady increase in the depth of water on the bar justifies the expectation that 25 feet of water will be available within a few months, and ultimately a depth of 30 feet, which is capable of floating any vessel, merchant or war, that now navigates the waters of the globe.

"Major Alexander M. Miller, corps of engineers, United States army, took charge of the Galveston Harbor works as representative of the government in March, 1893, and he was soon followed by First Lieutenant William V. Judson as assistant engineer in charge. To the able management of these officers and their untiring efforts to complete the works at the earliest date possible, in order to place at the service of the commerce of the country the deep-water harbor which had been so long desired, is due the utmost credit for the splendid results obtained, and the wonderful success achieved at Galveston, where failure was freely predicted by well-known engineers for the novel methods proposed by the engineers of the army, adds new lustre to the reputation of that corps which has so long been famous for the genius and ability of its several officers, as well as for its integrity and patriotism as a body.

"In connection with the history of deep water at Galveston, the following abstract of appropriations made by Congress for improving that harbor will be of interest:—

By act of July 11, 1870	$25,000.00
By act of March 3, 1871	20,000.00
By act of June 10, 1872	31,000.00
By act of June 23, 1874	60,000.00
By act of March 3, 1875	150,000.00
By act of August 14, 1876	142,000.00
By act of June 7, 1878	75,000.00
By act of June 18, 1878	50,000.00
By act of March 3, 1879	100,000.00
By act of June 14, 1880	175,000.00
By act of March 3, 1881	250,000.00
By act of March 4, 1882	100,000.00
By act of August 2, 1882	300,000.00
Total amount of appropriations expended on dredging, gabions, and sundry projects	$1,478,000.00

"The following appropriations were expended on the present project, which is now nearly completed :—

By act of August 5, 1886	$300,000.00	
By act of August 11, 1888	500,000.00	
By act of September 19, 1890	500,000.00	
By act of March 3, 1891	600,000.00	
By act of August 5, 1892	450,000.00	
By act of March 3, 1893	1,000,000.00	
By act of August 18, 1894	600,000.00	
By act of January 25, 1895	200,000.00	
By act of March 2, 1895	1,160,000.00	
By act of January, 1896	300,000.00	
By act of June 17, 1896	840,000.00	
Total amount appropriated for present work to this date		$6,450,000.00
Distribution of amounts appropriated, including payment for work to June, 1896 :—		
Cost of South Jetty	$1,994,997.33	
Cost of shore branch of South Jetty	174,143.44	
Cost of North Jetty	2,807,655.28	
Cost of dredging by contract	74,997.07	
Cost of dredge "Comstock" and outfit	95,268.54	
Cost of operating "Comstock" to May 31, 1896	27,208.71	
Contingent expenses of work since July 1, 1897	308,223.05	
Total amount expended to June 17, 1896		5,481,803.42
Balance available June 17, 1896		$968,196.58

"In addition to amount expended on South Jetty on present project the sum of $730,000 was expended on this jetty under former projects. Of this sum it is estimated that $574,000 was utilized as cost of foundation work for present jetty.

"Cost of dredge, dredging, and shore branch of South Jetty were not included in estimate for construction of jetties.

From the total amount appropriated to June 17, 1896		$6,450,000.00
Deduct the amount allotted for dredging		250,000.00
Balance available for construction of jetties		$6,200,000.00
Estimated cost of constructing jetties in 1886		7,000,000.00
Amount remaining to be appropriated to complete jetties		$800,000.00
June 17, 1896, balance available		968,196.58
Total amount of funds available for the work		$1,768,196.58
Deduct balance of allotment for dredging	$52,525.68	
Deduct cost of engineer's supervision to June 30, 1897	40,000.00	
		92,525.68
Balance available for jetty construction		$1,675,670.90
Estimated cost of completing jetties to the limits estimated in 1886		1,200,000.00
Amount that will probably be saved		$475,670.90

"The contractors, Messrs. John F. O'Connor & E. K. Smoot (Mr. Laing having retired from the firm), undertook this enormous work in the summer of 1891, with no plant or machinery available for prosecuting the work, many special machines having to be constructed. The building of the jetties has required the quarrying, transportation, and delivery into the jetties up to this date of the almost incredible number of 60,000 carloads of stone.

"In the aggregate an army of men are employed, and the active co-operation of six separate railroads has been essential to the rapid delivery of the stone. In addition, Messrs. O'Connor & Smoot have operated at the jetties four locomo-

tives, two steam-tugs, a transfer or ferry of 2½ miles, with a capacity for handling 125 cars per day, loaded and light, or 250 cars in twenty-four hours, two double-derrick barges, having a capacity for lifting twenty tons each derrick, and a barge line down Buffalo Bayou from Houston to Galveston for the transportation of the enormous blocks of granite which cover the top and sides of the jetties, twelve barges being constantly employed by the contractors, besides three steam railway pile-drivers, railway derrick cars, and numerous smaller machinery of the special character required for the rapid and economical execution, repair, and maintenance of the jetties and their extensive plant of machinery.

"With the employment of large capital and the individual energy and direction of Messrs. O'Connor & Smoot, who are among the largest and most successful of the engineers and contractors of the times, the Galveston jetty works have been constructed far in advance of the requirements of the contract with the government, and the contractors are now approaching the successful completion of their works. Through their skill, energy, and ability the government for its use as a harbor of refuge and the commerce which has already commenced to flow through the jetties are benefited several years in time; in addition, the unexpected effect of the currents in scouring away the sands immediately following the rapid building of the jetties is a result which may not have attended a more tardy completion of the jetties to the bar.

"The scouring of the currents between the jetties has now removed nearly 20,000,000 cubic yards of sand and mud, this material having been carried out to sea and borne away by the currents which flow along the coast. The work of the dredges, which has been concentrated on the shallowest points or knolls which were left by the action of the currents in the channel across the bar, has resulted in the removal of 600,000 cubic yards of material.

"Both jetties are now being extended out into the Gulf, their sea ends being in 27 feet of water. Probably one year will be required for the completion of the jetties to their final limits, or to 30 feet of water in the Gulf, where their ends will be spread to serve as foundations for light-houses. It is expected when the jetties are built to 30 feet of water that a similar depth will be scoured by the currents across the bar, and that the same agency will maintain a channel of this depth, with approximate regularity of direction; which latter, however, may require the occasional operation of the hydraulic dredge which has been constructed especially for this work, and has already rendered valuable assistance in opening a direct channel as above described.

"The total length of the completed jetties will probably be about 65,000 feet, or more than twelve miles. The bar has moved out about 1200 feet since construction began on the jetties in 1891, which will increase the cost of the completed jetties above that originally estimated, provided it is found advisable to continue the construction of the jetties until their ends are in 30 feet of water. This additional cost over and above the original estimate will, however, be largely overcome by the economy of construction up to this date, the works as far as they have been completed having been built at a cost of $475,000 less than estimated.

"The contractors, Messrs. O'Connor & Smoot, enjoy the distinction of having successfully carried out the first continuous contract inaugurated by the Congress of the country; and their work at Galveston has been so far appreciated by Congress that all of the larger river and harbor works of the country, by the bill passed in June, 1896, are placed under this system."

The growth of manufacturing industries has been of comparatively recent date in Texas. The sparsity of population, the distance from the great centres of trade and distribution, and the difficulties and expense of transportation have all been serious impediments to the development of such enterprises. Yet there are many

flourishing and profitable factories now in operation, and their number and efficiency are steadily increasing. Cotton- and woollen-mills, iron-foundries, salt-works, coal- and iron-mines, cement- and lime-works, rope-factories, cotton-seed-oil-mills, flouring- and lumber-mills, tanneries and leather goods factories, and in fact every species of manufactory for the conversion of raw material into finished products, are in successful and constantly increasing activity throughout the State.

For the two years ending December 31, 1893, there were organized in Texas 6657 manufactories of all kinds, with a total capital of $50,261,620, employing 37,763 operatives, handling $21,927,471 of raw material, and turning out $36,950,864 of finished products. The increase for the three succeeding years has been in still greater ratio, although the exact figures are not now obtainable.

EDUCATION, RELIGION, SOCIAL STATISTICS, AND GENERAL GROWTH.

The devotion of Texas to the cause of popular education is historic. The unfriendliness of Mexico to free public education was one of the emphatic grievances alleged in the Declaration of Texan Independence in 1836. By an act of the legislature of Coahuila and Texas of May 11, 1829, decree No. 92, the first law for the establishment of public schools was enacted. It provided for a system of schools for "mutual instruction on the Lancastrian plan" (monitorial schools) at the capital of each department, and required free instruction for a limited number of poor children, enforcing compulsory education upon parents able to pay tuition. On May 2, 1833, we notice a decree granting four leagues of land to the municipality of Nacogdoches for public school purposes. These were the initiative acts towards public free schools, but evidently the Mexican government did not practically satisfy the demands of the Texas colonists in this direction, as they made it the subject of specific complaint in their Revolution three years later.

After the republic was inaugurated, under the presidency of Lamar, the first general law for the establishment and maintenance of a system of public instruction was passed, which also contemplated the foundation of two universities. By the act of January 26, 1839, the Congress of the republic enacted that each county should have surveyed and set apart to it three leagues (13,285 acres) of land, for the purpose of establishing and maintaining a primary school or academy in the county; and fifty leagues of public lands were required to be set apart to the founding of two universities. By the act of February 5, 1840, an additional league was granted to each county for the purpose of being sold to furnish equipment and apparatus for the schools. The same act provided for the organization of school districts and communities and the actual inauguration of the system contemplated.

After annexation, by the act of January 16, 1850, four leagues of land were appropriated to the new counties that had been formed since February 16, 1846, so as to put them on an equal footing with the old counties. On January 31, 1854, $2,000,000 of the bonds received from the United States in payment for the territory of New Mexico were set apart to the public free schools, and the organization of a complete system of free public instruction was provided for. This fund was afterwards invested in railroad bonds to encourage railroad construction, and a great part of it was lost.

The alternate sections of lands surveyed by the railroads under the laws for

railroad promotion were donated to the schools, and these added immensely to the landed endowment of the public school system. In 1856 the fifty leagues of university lands were authorized to be sold, the proceeds to constitute an available fund for the founding of the institution. In 1858 an act was passed to organize the University, but the approach of the war prevented its organization at that time. During the war a large sum of money belonging to that institution was diverted to other purposes. In 1866 an act was again passed contemplating the immediate organization of the University, but nothing came of it, and it was not until 1883, under the act of 1881, that it was finally opened, with its main branch at Austin and the medical school at Galveston.

In the mean while, by various legislative and constitutional provisions, large quantities of public domain have from time to time been appropriated to the public schools and University, amounting in the aggregate to nearly 40,000,000 acres. These lands and the proceeds of the sale and lease of the same constitute the permanent fund of the educational system, while the interest thereon and moneys derived from other sources are the available fund.

The exact details of the school system of Texas and its endowment are shown by the following extract from the annual report of the Department of Agriculture, Insurance, Statistics, and History, for the year 1894, which are substantially correct for the current period :—

"Under this topic are included : 1. The common school system. 2. The normal schools. 3. The University of Texas.

"*The Common School System.*—This system embraces : 1. Rural schools. 2. Independent school districts (cities and towns).

"The rural schools are organized in two ways : (A) Districts; (B) Communities.

"The districts are formed by the Commissioners' Court, have geographical boundaries, and may vote a levy of local school tax not exceeding two mills. One hundred and ninety-one counties are thus districted, and about 3 per cent. of the districts levy local taxes. The average school term for the year 1894–95 was 4.57 months in the districts ; the average salary paid teachers was $225, and 80 per cent. of the children within scholastic age were enrolled in school some time during the year.

"In thirty-five counties the schools are operated on a peculiar plan called the Community system. The community has no geographical boundaries, and enrolment on the community list is a matter of local enterprise. Local taxes can be levied in community counties, but the plan is cumbrous and rather inefficient. The average school term in these counties for 1894–95 was 4.16 months ; the average salary of teachers was $218, and the percentage of enrolment on the scholastic population was 83.

"The cities and towns of the State may be constituted independent districts on a majority vote of the people of the municipality. Independent districts may vote a levy of local school tax not exceeding five mills. There are two hundred of these districts in the State, including all the larger and many of the smaller towns. The average school term in these districts in 1894–95 was 8.51 months ; the average annual salary of teachers $409.80, and the percentage of enrolment 85. These districts are independent of the county school officers, and receive the State apportionment direct from the State Treasurer.

"The State endowment of the common schools is large. About $7,484,598 in interest-bearing bonds, more than $14,000,000 in interest-bearing land notes, and

about 23,000,000 acres of unsold lands constitute the State endowment. Of the unsold school lands 20,000,000 acres are leased at 4 cents per acre, and the funds thus derived added to the annual available school fund. Total State and county permanent fund $73,454,869.

"Besides the State endowment fund each county has been granted by the State four leagues of land, which constitute county endowment. As these lands are sold the funds received are invested under the authority of the county Commissioners' Court, and the interest on the investment is annually applied to the support of the schools. A considerable portion of these lands is leased for varying terms of years, and the rental applied as the rental of the State school lands. These lands are under the exclusive control of the county authorities; 5,756,400 acres have been thus granted to counties, and a reservation has been made from the public domain for the unorganized counties.

"In addition to the interest on bonds and land notes and rental from leases, the State levies an annual *ad valorem* school tax of two mills, devotes one-fourth of the occupation taxes, and an annual poll tax of $1 to the available school fund. The entire amount of available apportioned school fund for the years 1894–95 was $2,836,363.50, and the total receipts by local treasurers, including balances from the previous year, were $3,962,637.51. The disbursements for the same year amounted to $3,675,501.62. Balance on hand, $287,135.89."

From the report of the same department of the State government for 1891–92 we quote the following in regard to the University, the main facts being applicable to existing conditions:—

"The buildings are situated about three-quarters of a mile north of the State capitol, on an imposing site in the centre of a forty-acre tract of land set apart by the Third Congress of the republic of Texas for that purpose, and were opened for the reception of students September 15, 1883. Thus was the long-cherished desire of the fathers of Texas and the wishes of the people so often expressed in the various State Constitutions at last attained.

"The University is governed by a Board of Regents composed of eight citizens, residents of different sections of the State, who are appointed by the governor and confirmed by the Senate. By an act of the Legislature approved April 10, 1883, 1,000,000 acres of the public-debt land were added to the permanent University fund.

"Of the various land-grants made to the University there remained unsold 2,020,049 acres on December 31, 1891.

"The permanent fund consists of:—

State bonds	$571,340.00
Cash	1,327.21
Total	$572,667.21

"The interest on the above sum, rental on leased lands, and matriculation fees, amounting to $53,831.87 per annum, constitute the available University fund.

"*System of Instruction.*—The system of instruction adopted by the University is a combination of what is known as the elective system and what is known as the class system. The four classes—freshman, sophomore, junior, and senior—are retained, and serve to articulate the four years devoted to the completion of any full course in the academic department. The studies, however, are grouped into three general courses, designated, respectively, the Course in Arts, the Course in Letters, and the Course in Science. A student upon matriculation is allowed to *elect* any

one of these courses, and upon its completion he is entitled to a diploma of the University.

"*Academic Degrees.*—The three general courses of arts, letters, and science lead respectively to the three following degrees: Bachelor of Arts (B. A.); Bachelor of Letters (B. Lit.); Bachelor of Science (B. Sc.). Each special course leads to the same degree as the general course to which it is related."

Attendance at the University has steadily increased in all the departments, and during the college year beginning in September, 1896, there were about 450 matriculates in the main branch at Austin and about 200 in the medical department at Galveston. The institution now has a president, after the manner of the older universities of the country, the first selection to that office being Dr. George T. Winston, late of the University of North Carolina, appointed in June, 1896.

As important parts of the educational system of Texas are also two large normal schools at Huntsville and Prairie View,—the former for whites and the latter for colored teachers,—the Agricultural and Mechanical College near Bryan, and the Deaf and Dumb and Blind Institutes at Austin, the latter being, in part at least, in the nature of public charities.

There are very many excellent private schools and colleges in the State, most of them under denominational religious patronage or control. Some of these date from pioneer days, and they are all valuable and potent factors in the intellectual, moral, and social evolution of Texan civilization.

The detailed operations of the public-school system will be more fully seen in the appended tables of educational statistics.

Side by side with intellectual culture and enterprise, religious faith and zeal have attended the progress of Texas. In fact, religion began its ministrations in the wilderness of Mexican Texas before education was much thought of by the struggling colonists. The Methodists and Baptists were the pioneers in the mission field, always excepting those first Catholic missionaries whose silent sacrifices and heroic courage planted the Cross from the Sabine to the Rio Grande before yet the Anglo-American had set foot west of the Alleghanies. In 1824–25 the first Protestant Church services were held among the settlements of Austin's colony, and from that time the advance in religious thought and labor has kept pace with every forward movement in the development of Texas. The results of these years of prayer and preaching, as shown in the present condition of church affairs in the State, may be partially seen in the short table of church statistics appended to this chapter.

TAXABLE WEALTH, STATE FINANCES, PUBLIC BUILDINGS AND INSTITUTIONS.

The taxable values of property of all kinds in Texas, as shown by the assessment rolls, for the past five decades were as follows: 1850, $51,814,615; 1860, $294,315,659; 1870, $170,473,778; 1880, $311,470,736; 1890, $782,111,883. For the five years following 1890 the assessed values were as follows: 1891, $856,202,283; 1892, $856,528,600; 1893, $886,175,395; 1894, $865,120,989; 1895, $860,910,567.

These figures show a constantly increasing wealth until within the last three years, except for the decade ending in 1870, which was due to the devastating

effects of the war and the ravages of reconstruction, coupled with the destruction of the property in slaves which was enumerated prior to 1864. The years 1894 and 1895 show a net decrease respectively of $21,054,406 and $4,210,422, as compared with preceding years and with each other. It is understood that the year 1896 shows a corresponding decrease as compared with the preceding two years. How far this is due to a real falling off in the property values of the State, and how far it is attributable to a vicious system of finances now prevailing in the United States, under which the purchasing power of money is constantly appreciating at the expense of human labor and enterprise, is a problem the economists will have to solve, and which the people of this country will themselves solve in the near future. There is certainly no specific cause for the apparent reversal in the tide of prosperity and wealth in Texas, and the like condition prevailing throughout the Union would appear to indicate a common source for so universal an economic symptom.

The tables of financial and economic statistics annexed were compiled from the reports of the several departments of the State government whose functions are concerned with the financial affairs of the State, and their details will be found to embrace nearly all items of general interest.

Aside from its administration of educational affairs and its strictly governmental functions, the State has been most liberal in providing and maintaining all those public institutions of charity, benevolence, and humanity the existence of which is so characteristic a feature of Christian civilization. From the foundation of the State government specific funds were provided for the establishment of the principal eleemosynary institutions for the care of the afflicted and destitute members of society, and as the increasing population of the State has rendered these establishments necessary to be extended, the liberality of the people through their legislatures has kept pace with the demands of the occasion. A brief mention and description of the several charitable foundations maintained by the State are worthy of a place in the outline of her growth. The following sketches of these institutions are taken from the annual report of the Department of Agriculture, Insurance, Statistics, and History, for the year 1892–93, and present succinctly the methods, objects, and operations of the State charities mentioned :—

"The State Lunatic Asylum is situated about two miles north of Austin, on a beautiful plateau of ground adorned and beautified by flowers, plants, summer-houses, and forest-trees, the latter constituting a splendid park, upon whose grassy lawn the patients are permitted to take exercise and get fresh air and sunshine. The buildings are capacious and elegant, though somewhat crowded owing to the rapidity with which the insane population increases.

"There are ninety-five employés in the institution.

"The estimated value of the buildings and grounds is $544,239, that of all other property belonging to the institution $50,969.83.

"In connection with the institution there is a large farm and garden where patients are permitted to work with a view of diverting the mind and affording exercise for the body. For the same purpose concerts, music, dancing, and other amusements are indulged in once each week. Most of the patients enjoy the farm-work very much, and look forward with great interest for the return of the day appointed for the weekly entertainment. In this way their minds are pleasantly occupied with new subjects, and in many cases ultimate recovery thereby made possible.

"From the report of the superintendent for the year ending November 1, 1892, the following data has been obtained :—

"Number of patients admitted during the year, 121; discharged restored, 45; discharged improved, 3; discharged unimproved, 3; total discharged, 49; died, 27; discharged (escaped), 1 male. Total treated during the year, 731. Number in asylum October 31, 1893, 654.

"The per cent. of deaths is 4.40; the per cent. of the recoveries on whole number treated is 6.19, and on admissions 46.87. Total expenditures for the year, $167,432.70, of which $68,880.84 was for permanent improvements, repairs, stock on hand, etc.

"The total number of patients admitted from the beginning of the hospital is 3380, of which number 725 died and 1944 were discharged.

"North Texas Hospital for the Insane is located at Terrell, in Kaufman County, and was first opened for the reception of patients July 15, 1885. It was established in obedience to a general demand for additional asylum room for the accommodation of the hundreds of insane persons then confined in jails and on poor-farms throughout the State.

"The buildings are constructed on the latest and most improved plan of hospitals for the insane, and contain all modern conveniences for the treatment of the insane.

"The following facts in relation to the operations of the institution for the year ending October 31, 1892, are from the superintendent's annual report: Number of patients on hand at the beginning of year, 606; received during the year, 388; discharged restored, 158; discharged improved, 29; total number discharged, 194; died, 71; on hand November 1, 1892, 729.

General Statement of the Operations of the North Texas Hospital for the Insane for the Eight Years ending October 31, 1892.

Years.	Number Admitted.	Number Discharged.	Number Treated.	Discharged Recovered.	Discharged Improved.	Discharged Unimproved.	Discharged Not Insane.	Eloped.	Died.
1885	139	17	139	15	..	1	..	1	1
1886	319	138	442	119	9	8	1	1	37
1887	343	184	616	152	23	7	1	1	54
1888	259	192	631	169	15	7	..	1	36
1889	238	186	642	169	14	1	..	2	41
1890	284	154	676	135	12	5	..	2	30
1891	351	196	861	168	..	..	..	2	50
1892	388	194	994	158	29	7	..	..	71

"The actual running expenses for the year were $111,758.31; cost of maintaining inmates per capita per year, $170; per week, $8.

"The estimated value of the buildings, grounds, furniture, and other appurtenances is $267,760.48.

"Number of officers connected with the institution, 5; employés, 42.

"The Southwestern Insane Asylum is situated four miles south of San Antonio, on an eminence near the San Antonio River, opposite the historic Franciscan Mission of San José.

"The location is healthy, and the surrounding country beautiful and picturesque. The grounds surrounding the building are naturally attractive, and in time can be made more so.

"The State owns 640 acres of good farming and pasture lands adjoining the asylum, donated by the citizens of San Antonio. Over 100 acres are in cultivation.

"The buildings are imposing, substantial, and comfortable, and are well adapted to the purposes for which they were erected. They are nearly fire-proof,

and are supplied with modern appliances for steam heating, electric lighting, etc. The capacity of the present buildings is about 200 patients. The buildings and other improvements have cost the State about $220,000 to this time.

"The asylum was opened for the reception of patients on April 6, 1892.

Admitted from April 6 to October 31, 1892, males	93	
Admitted from April 6 to October 31, 1892, females	49	
Total		142
Discharged restored	13	
Discharged improved	1	
Escaped	2	
Died	1	
		17
Total on hand October 31, 1892		125

"There are 4 officers and 36 employés connected with the institution.

"The creation of an Orphan Asylum was contemplated and provided for by the founders of our State government, who gave it the same land endowment bestowed on other charitable institutions.

"This institution was required to be established by an act of the twentieth legislature, approved April 4, 1887. The governor was required to appoint three commissioners to select a site for the asylum. Competition between the various towns in the State for the location of the institution was invited, which resulted in the selection of Corsicana, in Navarro County.

"The sum of $5700 was appropriated out of the available Orphan Asylum fund for the establishment of the institution. Subsequently at the special session of the twentieth legislature $15,000 and the available fund to the credit of the asylum in the State treasury was appropriated for the erection of buildings and other improvements.

"The site on which the asylum is located and the surrounding scenery are unsurpassed by any place in the State for their beauty and adaptability for such an institution.

"The buildings, which are constructed on the cottage plan, and have a capacity of about 200 inmates, were completed and the institution formally opened July 15, 1889.

"From the date of the opening of the institution, November 1, 1890, 60 children—23 girls and 31 boys—had been received into the home. Of those 2 ran away and 4 were returned to friends, leaving 54 in the institution.

"The expenses of the asylum for the seventeen months ending October 31, 1890, amounted to $13,993.63.

"The asylum is governed by a board of managers who are appointed by the governor, and have power to prescribe rules and regulations for the admission of inmates and control of the institution.

"All orphan children under the age of 14 years shall be admitted, subject only to such restrictions as the board deem necessary to the welfare and good government of the asylum.

"The superintendent is required to keep a list of the names and ages of all children, with such data as may be obtainable concerning their history, subject at all times to public inspection. He is also required to see that their *pro rata* of the public school fund is set aside, and to provide them with proper educational facilities.

"By act of the twentieth legislature, approved March 29, 1887, a State House of Correction and Reformatory for youthful convicts was provided for, and the governor required to appoint a commission to locate the same.

"The institution was located two and one-fourth miles northeast of Gatesville, Coryell County, and the necessary buildings erected there during the summer of 1888.

"Up to date of the last report of the superintendent $81,619 had been expended in the purchase of land, erection of buildings, and equipping the institution.

"The institution has a capacity of about 100, and was opened January 3, 1889. Up to October 31, 1890, 136 persons had been received at the institution, as follows:—

White males	57
Colored males	55
Mulattos	15
Colored females	2
Mexican males	7
Total	136
Number on hand March 1, 1891	126
Received since March 1, 1891, to November 20, 1892	168
Total	294

Discharged from March 1, 1891, to November 20, 1892.

Pardoned by governor	34
Escaped	4
Expiration of sentence	69
Total	107
Leaving on hand November 20, 1892	187

"All persons under 16 years of age convicted of any felony, the punishment for which does not exceed five years' confinement, are sentenced to the Reformatory.

"The trustees are required 'to see that the inmates are taught habits of industry and sobriety, some useful trade, and to read and write, and also supplied with suitable books.' The white and colored inmates of the institution are required to be kept, worked, and educated separately.

"The institution is conducted on the 'cottage' or family plan. The buildings are heated by steam and lighted by electricity. Since the institution was opened a farm of 200 acres and a garden and orchard—about 600 acres—have been put in cultivation.

"There are 6 officers and 3 guards at the institution.

"Expense of the institution from March 1, 1892, to November 20, 1892, $18,708.82.

"The State Asylum for the Blind was established September 2, 1856, and has for its object the education of blind persons. It is not an asylum where the indigent and helpless are cared for at the public expense, but a school in which the blind receive such general education and training in industrial pursuits as will aid them to become self-supporting as other classes. When the course of study prescribed has been completed the pupils return to their homes as do the students of other schools, and like them are no longer a charge upon the State. In short, the only difference between the school for the blind and a public school is the amount of money the State expends on them. Sighted persons only receive free tuition, while the blind are fed, clothed, and transported to and from school at public expense.

"The course of study is as follows:—

"Reading by Touch in Point and Line Print, Writing in New York Point, Arithmetic, Mathematical and Physical Geography, English Grammar, Etymology, Elements of Ancient and Modern History, Natural Philosophy, English Literature, Elements of Chemistry, Physiology, and Hygiene.

"Of the trades, piano-forte-tuning, broom-making, and upholstering are taught to the young men.

"The young ladies receive instruction in crocheting and bead-work, and learn to sew by hand and by machine.

"The young men excel sighted persons as piano-tuners, and become very proficient at making brooms, mattresses, pillows, and bottoming chairs with cane and rattan. The bead-work and crocheting done by the young ladies would reflect credit on sighted persons. The physical development of pupils is promoted by regular daily exercises in calisthenics, with dumb-bells, Indian clubs, and rings.

"Pupils whose sight can be benefited by operating on their eyes receive treatment from a skilled oculist connected with the institution. Nearly 100 persons have been benefited by the oculist during the last eighteen years.

"All blind persons, or persons who cannot see to read ordinary newspaper print, between 8 and 20 years of age, will be admitted to the institution.

"The school is located in Austin, and in number of teachers, size of the buildings, the amount of philosophical, chemical, and astronomical apparatus, maps, globes, and appliances for the school-room, variety of musical instruments, etc., is the largest in the South.

"Number of pupils enrolled during 1893, 171. The average cost *per capita* of feeding them was about $6 per month.

"Number of officers and teachers, 19; number of employés, 15.

Value of buildings and grounds	$135,500.00
Value of scientific apparatus	1,250.00
Value of school and musical apparatus	9,800.00
Total	$146,550.00

"The State Deaf and Dumb Asylum is situated at the State capital, on a commanding height south of the Colorado River, and is justly regarded as one of the most beautiful and healthful locations in the city.

"During the session of 1893, 224 pupils were enrolled up to October 31, and 210 were in actual attendance.

"The health of the institution has been very good.

"The total expense of maintaining the institution from March 1, 1893, to November 1, 1893, was $25,700.08. This includes all ordinary expenses, such as board, fuel, lights, medicine, salaries of officers, teachers, and employés, and so much of clothing and transportation as was paid by the State.

"There are 17 officers and teachers, 4 experts, and 12 employés connected with the institution.

"It is the purpose of the State in establishing such institutions to give the students a practical education, and as far as possible rescue this unfortunate class from helplessness and dependence. In addition, therefore, to the instruction usual in such schools, a printing-office, bookbindery, and shoe-shop have been established for the purpose of teaching those trades to such of the pupils as have the ability and inclination to learn them. Skilled workmen, experts in their business, are in charge of each of these departments, and the progress made by the students under them has thus far been very encouraging.

"An art department was inaugurated October 5, 1887, and is now one of the most interesting and attractive features of the school. Some of the pupils acquired such skill in crayon-work before the end of the session that they were offered profitable employment at work of that kind during vacation.

"The conditions of admission to the institution are few and simple. The age at which pupils are received and the length of time they are kept are matters left to the discretion of the superintendent. Persons not susceptible of receiving instruction will not be received at all. Parents are required to furnish transportation if able to do so, otherwise it will be provided by the State.

"The school opens the first Wednesday in September and closes the first Wednesday in June of each year.

"Pupils are required to return to their homes during vacation to give opportunity to renovate and repair the buildings.

Value of buildings and grounds	$157,559.09
Value of library	500.00
Total	$158,059.09

"The Deaf and Dumb and Blind Institute for Colored Youth was established by act of the twentieth legislature, $50,000 being appropriated by that act for the purchase of grounds and the erection and furnishing of suitable buildings. An admirable site, embracing 100 acres, two and one-half miles northwest of Austin, was selected.

"The buildings consist of the new asylum building proper and of several other buildings purchased with the site, and which are used for dormitories for the young men, workshops, sewing-rooms, etc. The new building is a model of elegance, comfort, and convenience. It contains dormitories for the young ladies, the superintendent's office, recitation- and music-rooms, etc. It is lighted by electricity and heated by steam, the power for which is derived from a plant on the premises. A fine artesian well supplies abundance of pure water for all purposes.

"Conditions of admission and general rules of government prevailing in the asylums for the whites obtain also in this.

"All the text-books for the blind are in New York Point or in Line Print. Pupils read by touch in Point and Line and write by Point.

"The studies pursued this year embrace reading, arithmetic, writing, geography, language, history, and physiology.

"The number of pupils enrolled in 1893 was 105; of these 54 were blind and 41 deaf-mutes. The present attendance is 79. Number of officers, 3; teachers, 5; experts, 2; employés, 5.

Value of grounds and buildings	$34,600.00
Value of library	700.00
Value of school and musical apparatus	1,100.00
Total expenditures from March 1, 1893, to November 1, 1893	11,095.35"

The various public buildings at the State capital for the use of the government in its several departments are commodious and imposing structures, but the new State capitol is so notable a building that it merits special mention. The old capitol erected in 1856 was destroyed by accidental fire in November, 1881, and for a time the offices of the government were kept in a temporary structure built by the State at the head of Congress Avenue in Austin. Very soon active steps were taken to build a new capitol suitable in dimensions and grandeur to the dignity and wealth of the State. Three millions of acres of public land had been appropriated for that purpose, and an arrangement was finally consummated by which a syndicate of Chicago capitalists agreed to take the land in exchange for a complete State-house built on the plans and specifications furnished by the State. The structure was finally completed and dedicated by a grand international military drill and display, in May, 1888.

Its description is briefly as follows:—

"*Dimensions.*—Length, 566 feet 6 inches, inclusive of porticos. Width, 288 feet 10 inches at widest point. Height, 311 feet from grade-line to top of statue on dome. Contains 258 rooms, and is second only in size to the capitol at Washington, and is the seventh largest building in the world.

"The State executive offices are located on the first floor, as follows: governor, secretary of state, comptroller, treasurer, superintendent of public instruction, adjutant-general, attorney-general, commissioner of agriculture, insurance, statistics, and history, superintendent of public buildings and grounds, and State geologist. Also the police department and offices of the electrician and janitor.

"The Senate chamber and hall of House of Representatives, State library and reading-rooms, reception- and consultation-rooms of the governor, president of the Senate, speaker of the House, the legislative committee rooms, and the office of the State inspector of oils are located on the second floor.

"The Supreme Court, Court of Appeals, law libraries, galleries of the House of Representatives and Senate chamber, and reporters' galleries, and marshal's, clerks', and other offices of the judicial department, are located on the third floor.

"The fourth floor consists of twenty-three unassigned rooms.

"All the conveniences necessary to a complete modern structure have been incorporated in the building.

"The following brief description of the capitol is copied from the 'Official Guide to the Texas Capitol,' by Charles N. McLaughlin:—

"'The building is located on a commanding elevation, near the centre of the city of Austin, in the square originally selected for the capitol of the republic of Texas.

"'It is shaped like a Greek cross, with projecting centre and flanks, having a rotunda and dome at the intersection of the main corridors.

"'The exterior walls are built of Texas red granite from the inexhaustible quarries of Burnet County. This granite is pronounced by experts to be equal to any in the world, both in beauty and imperishability. The stately ideas of ancient builders have been blended with the useful of the modern, and the whole conception and aim seems to have been to meet the practical demands of a progressive and cultured people.

"'Wherever it was practicable Texas material has been used in the building, and the fact that nearly all the material used is native is an illustration of the wonderful and varied resources of Texas. Besides the granite, a vast amount of other material, including stone, lime, wood, brick, etc., and many other articles, were secured in Texas, so that it may be said the State-house is built for Texas land out of Texas material.'"

It may seem a strange and startling transition from a description of the State's palatial council halls to the gloomy corridors of its prison walls and the consideration of its wretchedness and crime. And yet the juxtaposition is not so inappropriate as it may at first appear. A great novelist has said: "Well might these be so near to the halls of a people's legislative palace,—near to the heart of every legislator for a people must be the mighty problem how to increase a people's splendor and its virtue, and how to diminish its penury and its crime."

The problem of penitentiary management was for a long time the most perplexing the State had to deal with. The lease system was practised for a while, but was abandoned in 1883, and now the convicts are employed on State account or by private contract. There are two State penitentiaries, one located at Huntsville and the other at Rusk. Forces of convicts are worked in some instances outside the prison walls, on farms and railroads, sometimes on private contract, and sometimes by the State on its own account, considerable areas of sugar lands owned by the State having been thus profitably farmed. Various industries are prosecuted at the prisons, and the revenues therefrom in the future may prove to be very substantial.

At the Huntsville Penitentiary there is the wagon department, in which are built wagons, drays, cane, and log wagons, buggies, hacks, etc. In the cabinet department are made chairs and furniture, mostly of a cheap class.

In the machine-rooms are made engines, boilers, hydrants, etc. In the foundry various kinds of castings.

There is a factory in which is manufactured mostly the stripes for all the clothing for the convicts. In the shoe- and tailor-shops are made convict shoes and clothes, and there is also done on order some citizens' work.

At the Rusk Penitentiary the principal industries are the making of pig-iron, manufacture of castings of various kinds, and making of cast-iron water- and gas-pipe. A large number of convicts are engaged in making charcoal and digging iron-ore for the smelting-furnace.

The State owns and works on State account with convicts a farm about two miles from the Huntsville Penitentiary, on which are raised cotton for the factory, corn for farm and prison consumption, and vegetables for the prison.

In connection with the Rusk Penitentiary some of the land belonging to the State is used for raising fruit and vegetables for the convicts, and other lands have been rented contiguous to the prison, on which has been raised corn, peas, etc., for prison use.

Another farm belonging to the State, in Fort Bend County, on Oyster Creek, and known as Harlem, is worked on State account, and raises cotton, corn, and sugar for the general market. All of these farms are operated with second- and third-class convict labor,—convicts not fit for much other kind of labor.

There are two farms worked on the share system, by which the State furnishes the labor and the owners of the farms the land and teams, and crop divided.

The value of State property belonging to the penitentiaries is fully set forth in the report of the superintendent, up to November 1, 1890, as follows :—

Huntsville Penitentiary	$769,096.72
Rusk Penitentiary	720,245.62
State Farm, Harlem	266,074.83
Rogers's share farm	21,062.48
Contract farms	9,702.32
Railroad trains	10,152.27
State penitentiaries, cash on hand, etc.	43,621.28
Total valuation of penitentiary property November 1, 1892	$2,193,041.68
Total valuation of penitentiary property November 1, 1890	1,840,955.52
Increase in valuation of penitentiary property in the past two years	$352,086.16

The financial agent, Mr. R. W. Finley, furnishes the following statement of account for the year ending November 1, 1892 :—

Receipts and Disbursements Texas State Penitentiaries for the Year November 1, 1891, to November 1, 1892.

Cash on hand November 1, 1890	$37,846.43	
Receipts from all sources	1,375,022.63	
Disbursements, all sources		$1,288,668.21
Balance on hand November 1, 1892		124,260.85
	$1,412,869.06	$1,412,869.06

A few statistical tables are collected at the close of the chapter, showing the criminal population of the State at various periods, the results of police efforts to suppress crime, the operations of our courts in that direction, and such other data as are obtainable on the subject.

An outline has now been given of the progress of Texas in the various departments of life and enterprise that go to constitute the civilization of a commonwealth, and an incomplete presentation has been made of the present approximate results of her fifty years of statehood as an American State. The aggregate accomplishment in all directions has been most satisfactory and encouraging. By comparison with the achievements of the other communities composing the Union of States, Texas has all reasons to be proud of her career. She was the sixteenth State admitted by the Congress of the United States, making with the original thirteen colonial States twenty-nine in all in the Union at that date. Between 1845 and 1850 two others were admitted,—Wisconsin and California,—and at the taking of the census of 1850 Texas stood twenty-fifth in population among the United States. In 1860 she was twenty-third ; in 1870 she was nineteenth ; in 1880 she had reached eleventh ; and in 1890 she stood seventh, being beaten for sixth place by Massachusetts by only 3480. The States ranking her in population in 1890 were in the order named : New York, with a population of 5,997,853 ; Pennsylvania, 5,258,014 ; Illinois, 3,826,351 ; Ohio, 3,672,316 ; Missouri, 2,679,184 ; and Massachusetts, 2,238,943. The recent election of 1896 clearly indicates by the popular votes of the several States that Texas has now a greater population than either Missouri or Massachusetts, and the census of 1900 bids fair to place her fourth or fifth in the list of the most populous States in the Union. Her other claims to superiority are sufficiently attested by her resources, enterprise, and capacity for growth, as shown by this short and imperfect sketch.

STATISTICAL TABLES.

POLITICAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 1.

CHIEF EXECUTIVES OF TEXAS FROM 1691 TO 1897—206 YEARS.

SPANISH—1691 TO 1822—131 YEARS.

Domingo Teran.
Don Gaspardo de Anaya.
Don Martin de Alarconne.
Marquis de Aguayo.
Fernando de Almazan.
Melchoir de Mediavilla.
Juan Antonio Bustillos.
Manuel de Sandoval.
Carlos de Franquis.
Prudencia Basterra.
Justo Boneo.
Jacinto de Barrios.
Antonio de Martos.
Juan Maria, Baron de Riperda.
Domingo Cabello.
Rafael Pacheco.
Manuel Muñoz.
Juan Bautista el Guazabel.
Antonio Cordero.
Manuel de Salcedo.
Christoval Dominguez.
Antonio Martinez.

MEXICAN—1822 TO 1835—13 YEARS.

Trespalacios	1822	José Maria Viesca	1828
Don Luciano de Garcia	1823	José Maria Letona	1831
Rafael Gonzales (Coahuila and Texas)	1825	Francisco Vidauri	1834
Victor Blanco	1826		

TEXAN—1835 TO 1846—11 YEARS.

Henry Smith, Provisional Governor	1835 to 1836
David G. Burnet, President *ad interim*	1836
Sam Houston, Constitutional President	1836
Mirabeau B. Lamar, President	1838
Sam Houston, President	1841
Anson Jones, President	1844

STATE GOVERNMENT SINCE ANNEXATION—1846 TO 1897—51 YEARS.

J. Pinckney Henderson	1846	A. J. Hamilton (Provisional)	1865 to 1866
George T. Wood	1847	James W. Throckmorton	1866 to 1867
P. H. Bell	1849 to 1851	E. M. Pease (Provisional)	1867 to 1870
P. H. Bell	1851 to 1853	E. J. Davis	1870 to 1874
E. M. Pease	1853 to 1855	Richard Coke	1874 to 1876
E. M. Pease	1855 to 1857	R. B. Hubbard	1876 to 1879
H. R. Runnels	1857 to 1859	O. M. Roberts	1879 to 1883
Sam Houston	1859 to 1861	John Ireland	1883 to 1887
Edward Clark	1861	L. S. Ross	1887 to 1891
F. R. Lubbock	1861 to 1863	J. S. Hogg	1891 to 1895
Pendleton Murrah	1863 to 1865	C. A. Culberson	1895 to 1899

GENERAL ELECTIONS IN TEXAS FROM 1835 TO 1896, INCLUSIVE.

In the Consultation of Texas, November 11, 1835, Henry Smith was elected Governor and J. W. Robinson Lieutenant-Governor. The vote in the Consultation was:

FOR GOVERNOR.

	Votes.		Votes.
Henry Smith	31	Stephen F. Austin	22

FIRST GENERAL ELECTION UNDER REPUBLIC, IN 1836.

FOR PRESIDENT.

	Votes.		Votes.
Sam Houston	3,585	Scattering	5
Stephen F. Austin	551	Against Constitution	223
Henry Smith	144	For Constitution, 1836	3,199
T. J. Green	42		

SECOND GENERAL ELECTION, 1838.

FOR PRESIDENT.

M. B. Lamar	6,995	Robert M. Wilson	252

THIRD GENERAL ELECTION, 1841.

FOR PRESIDENT.

Sam Houston	7,915	David G. Burnet	3,616

FOURTH GENERAL ELECTION, 1844.

FOR PRESIDENT.

Anson Jones	6,443	Edward Burleson	5,054

FIRST STATE ELECTION, 1845.

FOR GOVERNOR.

J. P. Henderson	7,853	Scattering	52
J. B. Miller	1,673		

SECOND STATE ELECTION, 1847.

FOR GOVERNOR.

George T. Wood	7,154	J. J. Robinson	379
J. B. Miller	5,106	Scattering	852
N. H. Darnell	1,276		

THIRD STATE ELECTION, 1849.

FOR GOVERNOR.

P. H. Bell	10,319	For amendment to Constitution	15,852
George T. Wood	8,764	Against amendment to Constitution	3,139
John T. Mills	2,632		

FOURTH STATE ELECTION, 1851.

FOR GOVERNOR.

P. H. Bell	13,595	B. H. Epperson	2,971
M. T. Johnson	5,262	T. J. Chambers	2,320
John A. Green	4,061	Scattering	100

FIFTH STATE ELECTION, 1853.

FOR GOVERNOR.

E. M. Pease	13,091	L. D. Evans	4,677
W. B. Ochiltree	9,178	T. J. Chambers	2,449
George T. Wood	5,983	John Dancy	315

SIXTH STATE ELECTION, 1855.

FOR GOVERNOR.

	Votes.		Votes.
E. M. Pease	26,336	M. T. Johnson	809
D. C. Dickson	18,968	George T. Wood	226

SEVENTH STATE ELECTION, 1857.

FOR GOVERNOR.

H. R. Runnels	32,552	Sam Houston	28,628

EIGHTH STATE ELECTION, 1859.

FOR GOVERNOR.

Sam Houston	36,227	Scattering	61
H. R. Runnels	27,500		

NINTH STATE ELECTION, 1861.

FOR GOVERNOR.

F. R. Lubbock	21,854	T. J. Chambers	13,759
Edward Clark	21,730		

TENTH STATE ELECTION, 1863.

FOR GOVERNOR.

Pendleton Murrah	17,511	Scattering	1,070
T. J. Chambers	12,455		

ELEVENTH STATE ELECTION, 1866.

FOR GOVERNOR.

J. W. Throckmorton	49,277	E. M. Pease	12,168

TWELFTH STATE ELECTION, 1869.

FOR GOVERNOR.

E. J. Davis	39,901	Hamilton Stuart	380
A. J. Hamilton	39,092		

THIRTEENTH STATE ELECTION, 1873.

FOR GOVERNOR.

Richard Coke	85,549	E. J. Davis	42,633

FOURTEENTH STATE ELECTION, 1876.

FOR GOVERNOR.

Richard Coke	130,581	Wm. Chambers	47,719

FIFTEENTH STATE ELECTION, 1878.

FOR GOVERNOR.

O. M. Roberts	158,933	A. B. Norton	23,402
W. H. Hanman	55,002	Scattering	99

SIXTEENTH STATE ELECTION, 1880.

FOR GOVERNOR.

	Votes.		Votes.
O. M. Roberts	166,101	W. H. Hamman	33,721
E. J. Davis	64,382		

SEVENTEENTH STATE ELECTION, 1882.

FOR GOVERNOR.

John Ireland	150,809	J. B. Robertson	334
George W. Jones	102,501		

EIGHTEENTH STATE ELECTION, 1884.

FOR GOVERNOR.

John Ireland	212,234	A. B. Norton	25,557
George W. Jones	88,450		

NINETEENTH STATE ELECTION, 1886.

FOR GOVERNOR.

L. S. Ross	228,776	E. L. Dohoney	19,186
A. M. Cochran	65,236	Scattering	102

TWENTIETH STATE ELECTION, 1888.

FOR GOVERNOR.

L. S. Ross	250,338	Marion Martin	98,447

TWENTY-FIRST STATE ELECTION, 1890.

FOR GOVERNOR.

J. S. Hogg	262,432	E. C. Heath	2,238
W. Flanagan	77,742		

TWENTY-SECOND STATE ELECTION, 1892.

FOR GOVERNOR.

J. S. Hogg	190,486	A. J. Houston	1,322
George Clark	133,395	D. M. Prendergast	1,605
T. L. Nugent	108,483	Scattering	176

TWENTY-THIRD STATE ELECTION, 1894.

FOR GOVERNOR.

C. A. Culberson	207,167	T. L. Nugent	152,731
W. K. Makemson	54,520	J. M. Dunn	2,196
J. B. Schmitz	5,026	Scattering	1,076

TWENTY-FOURTH STATE ELECTION, 1896.

FOR GOVERNOR.

C. A. Culberson	298,528	J. C. Kearby	238,692
Clark	1,876	Scattering	495

POLITICAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 2.

Showing the Speakers of the Texas House of Representatives from 1846 to 1897, inclusive.

Legislatures.	Names.	Date of Meeting.	Date of Adjournment.	Extra Session Met.	Extra Session Adjourned.
1	William E. Crump	Feb. 16, 1846	May 13, 1846	.....	.....
2	James W. Henderson	Dec. 13, 1847	Mar. 20, 1848	.....	.....
3	C. G. Keenan	Nov. 5, 1849	Feb. 11, 1850	.....	.....
4	D. C. Dickson	Nov. 3, 1851	Feb. 16, 1852	.....	.....
5	H. R. Runnels	Nov. 7, 1853	Feb. 15, 1854	.....	.....
6	H. P. Bee	Nov. 5, 1855	Feb. 4, 1856	July 17, 1856	Sept. 1, 1856
7	W. S. Taylor	Nov. 2, 1857	Feb. 16, 1858	.....	.....
8	M. D. K. Taylor	Nov. 7, 1859	Feb. 13, 1860	Jan. 21, 1861	April 9, 1861
9	N. H. Darnell	Nov. 4, 1861	Jan. 14, 1862	Feb. 2, 1863	Mar. 6, 1863
10	M. D. K. Taylor	Nov. 2, 1863	Dec. 16, 1863	May 9, 1864 Oct. 17, 1864	May 28, 1864 Nov. 15, 1864
11	N. M. Burford	Aug. 6, 1866	Nov. 13, 1866	.....	.....
12[1]	Ira H. Evans[2]	April 26, 1870	Aug. 15, 1870	Sept. 12, 1871	Dec. 2, 1871
13	M. D. K. Taylor	Jan. 14, 1873	June 4, 1873	.....	.....
14	G. M. Bryan	Jan. 13, 1874	May 4, 1874	Jan. 12, 1875	Mar. 15, 1875
15	T. R. Bonner	April 18, 1876	Aug. 21, 1876	.....	.....
16	J. H. Cochran	Jan. 14, 1879	April 24, 1879	.....	.....
17	George R. Reeves	Jan. 11, 1881	April 4, 1881	.....	.....
18	C. R. Gibson	Jan. 9, 1883	April 13, 1883	Jan. 8, 1884	Feb. 6, 1884
19	L. L. Foster	Jan. 13, 1885	Mar. 31, 1885	.....	.....
20	George C. Pendleton	Jan. 11, 1887	April 4, 1887	April 16, 1888	May 15, 1888
21	F. P. Alexander	Jan. 8, 1889	April 6, 1889	.....	.....
22	R. T. Milner	Jan. 13, 1891	April 13, 1891	Mar. 14, 1892	April 12, 1892
23	John H. Cochran	Jan. 10, 1893	May 9, 1893	.....	.....
24	T. S. Smith	Jan. 8, 1895	April 30, 1895	Oct. 1, 1895	Oct. 15, 1895
25	L. T. Dashiell	Jan. 12, 1897	.....	.....	.....

[1] The twelfth legislature was called together on April 26, 1870. The regular time of meeting as provided by the Constitution was January 10, 1871. This legislature also met in second called session September 12, 1871, and adjourned December 2, 1871. W. H. Sinclair was speaker of the adjourned session.

[2] First regular session January 10, 1871.

POLITICAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 3.

Showing the Counties of the State, for whom Named, from what Taken, when Created, when Organized, Area in Square Miles, County Seats, and Population in 1880 and 1890, respectively.

Counties.	Named for	Counties Created from	When Created.	When Organized.	Area in Square Miles.	County Seat.	Population in 1880.	Population in 1890.	Decrease.	Increase.
Anderson	Kenneth L. Anderson	Houston	Mar. 24, 1846	July 13, 1846	1,088	Palestine	17,395	20,921	..	3,526
Andrews	Richard Andrews	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Unorganized.	1,900	Unorganized	..	..	..	..
Angelina	Angelina River	Nacogdoches	April 22, 1846	July 13, 1846	878	Homer	5,239	6,904	..	1,665
Aransas	Aransas River	Refugio	Sept. 18, 1871	—— 1871	405	Rockport	696	1,524	..	828
Archer	Branch T. Archer	Clay	Jan. 22, 1858	July 27, 1880	900	Archer	596	2,090	..	1,494
Armstrong	Pioneers of that name	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Mar. 8, 1890	900	Claude	31	..	..	..
Atascosa	Atascosa River	Bexar	Jan. 25, 1856	Aug. 4, 1860	1,222	Pleasanton	4,217	6,449	..	2,232
Austin	Stephen F. Austin	Original	Mar. 17, 1836	—— 1837	711	Bellville	14,449	17,786	..	3,337
Bailey	—— Bailey	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Unorganized.	918	Unorganized	..	..	..	..
Bandera	Bandera Pass	Bexar and Uvalde	Jan. 29, 1856	Mar. 10, 1856	1,091	Bandera	2,158	3,778	..	1,620
Bastrop	Baron de Bastrop	Original	Mar. 17, 1836	April 8, 1837	928	Bastrop	17,215	20,692	..	3,477
Baylor	Henry W. Baylor	Fannin	Feb. 1, 1858	April 13, 1879	901	Seymour	715	2,575	..	1,860
Bee	Bernard E. Bee, Sr.	San Patricio, Goliad, Refugio	Dec. 8, 1857	July 25, 1858	888	Beeville	2,268	3,716	..	1,448
Bell	Governor P. H. Bell	Milam	Jan. 22, 1850	Aug. 1, 1850	1,625	Belton	20,518	31,189	..	12,671
Bexar	Duke of Bexar	Original	Mar. 17, 1836	—— 1837	1,178	San Antonio	30,470	50,145	..	19,675
Blanco	Blanco River	Burnet, Hays, Gillespie, Comal	Feb. 12, 1858	April 12, 1858	713	Blanco	3,583	4,635	..	1,052
Borden	Gail Borden	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Mar. 17, 1891	900	Durham	35	..	..	..
Bosque	Bosque River	McLennan	Feb. 4, 1854	Aug. 7, 1854	1,041	Meridian	11,217	14,120	..	3,903
Bowie	James Bowie	Red River	Dec. 17, 1840	—— 1841	915	Texarkana	10,965	20,273	..	9,308
Brazoria	Municipality of Brazoria	Original	Mar. 17, 1836	—— 1837	1,479	Brazoria	9,774	11,474	..	1,700
Brazos	Brazos River	Washington and Robertson	Jan. 30, 1841	Feb. 6, 1843	549	Bryan	13,576	16,603	..	3,027
Brewster	H. P. Brewster	Presidio	Feb. 2, 1887	Feb. 26, 1887	2,278	Murphyville	..	..	..	..
Briscoe	Andrew Briscoe	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Jan. 11, 1892	900	Silverton	12	..	..	..
Brown	Henry S. Brown	Travis and Comanche	Aug. 27, 1856	Mar. 2, 1857	960	Brownwood	8,444	11,346	..	2,929
Buchel	Col. Buchel, of Confederate Army	Presidio	Mar. 15, 1887	Unorganized.	2,013	Unorganized	..	..	..	..
Burleson	General Edward Burleson	Milam and Washington	Mar. 24, 1846	July 13, 1846	663	Caldwell	9,243	12,712	..	3,469
Burnet	President David G. Burnet	Travis, Williamson, Bell	Feb. 5, 1852	Aug. 7, 1852	1,098	Burnet	6,888	10,645	..	3,757
Caldwell	Matthew Caldwell	Gonzales	Mar. 6, 1848	Aug. 7, 1848	483	Lockhart	11,257	15,781	..	3,994
Calhoun	John C. Calhoun	Victoria	April 4, 1846	July 13, 1846	994	Indianola	1,739	815	924	..
Callahan	James M. Callahan	Bosque, Travis, Bexar	Feb. 1, 1858	July 3, 1877	900	Baird	3,453	4,402	..	1,009
Cameron	Ewin Cameron	Nueces	Feb. 12, 1848	Aug. 7, 1848	3,308	Brownsville	14,999	13,020	1,879	..
Camp	J. L. Camp	Upshur	April 6, 1874	June 20, 1874	201	Pittsburg	5,931	6,605	..	674
Carson	S. P. Carson	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	June 26, 1888	900	Panhandle	..	346	..	..
Cass	Lewis Cass	Bexar	April 25, 1846	July 13, 1846	951	Linden	16,724	22,567	..	5,843
Castro	Henry Castro	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Dec. 18, 1891	900	Dimmit	..	..	..	..
Chambers	Thomas J. Chambers	Liberty and Jefferson	Feb. 12, 1858	Aug. 2, 1858	851	Wallisville	2,187	2,341	..	154
Cherokee	Cherokee Tribe of Indians	Nacogdoches	April 11, 1846	July 13, 1846	1,098	Rusk	16,723	22,915	..	6,192
Childress	George C. Childress	Fannin	April 11, 1876	April 11, 1887	758	Childress	25	1,175	..	1,150
Clay	Henry Clay	Cooke	Dec. 24, 1857	Nov. 24, 1873	1,122	Henrietta	5,045	7,460	..	2,351
Cochran	—— Cochran	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Unorganized.	828	Unorganized	..	..	..	..
Coke	Richard Coke	Tom Green	Mar. 13, 1889	April 23, 1889	918	Robert Lee	..	2,037	..	2,037
Coleman	R. M. Coleman	Travis	Feb. 1, 1858	Oct. 6, 1863	1,243	Coleman	5,003	6,080	..	2,483
Collin	Collin M. Kinney	Fannin	April 3, 1846	July 13, 1846	884	McKinney	28,963	37,114	..	11,151
Collingsworth	Judge Chas. Collingsworth	Fannin	Aug. 21, 1876	Sept. 30, 1890	900	Abernathy	6	57	..	51

Colorado	Municipality of Colorado	Original	Mar.	17,	1836	——	1837	960	Columbus	16,673	19,470	2,797
Comal	Comal River	Bexar, Travis, Gonzales	Mar.	24,	1846	July	13, 1846	673	New Braunfels	5,516	6,411	895
Comanche	Comanche Tribe of Indians	Coryell and Bosque	Jan.	28,	1856	Mar.	17, 1856	939	Comanche	18,608	16,194	7,586
Concho	Concho River	Bexar	Feb.	1,	1858	Mar.	11, 1879	498	Paint Rock	800	1,051	251
Cooke	William G. Cooke	Fannin	Mar.	20,	1848	Mar.	10, 1849	933	Gainesville	20,391	24,602	4,211
Coryell	James Coryell	McLennan and Bell	Feb.	4,	1854	Mar.	4, 1854	960	Gatesville	10,924	17,777	5,853
Cottle	G. W. Cottle	Fannin	Aug.	21,	1876	Mar.	11, 1892	1,125	Paducah	24	. . . . .	. . . .
Crane	William Carey Crane	Tom Green	Feb.	25,	1887	Unorganized.		806	Unorganized	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . .
Crockett	David Crockett	Bexar	Jan.	22,	1875	July	14, 1891	3,332	Ozona	127	194	. . . .
Crosby	Stephen Crosby	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	Sept.	11, 1890	900	Estacado	82	417	335
Dallam	James W. Dallam	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	Sept.	9, 1891	1,168	Texline	. . . . .	112	. . . .
Dallas	G. M. Dallas	Robertson and Nacogdoches	Mar.	30,	1846	July	13, 1849	900	Dallas	33,488	67,693	33,515
Dawson	Nicholas Dawson	Bexar	Feb.	1,	1858	Unorganized		900	Unorganized	24	. . . . .	. . . .
Deaf Smith	Erastus Smith	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	Dec.	1, 1890	1,410	La Plata	38	. . . . .	. . . .
Delta	Named from location and shape	Hopkins and Lamar	July	26,	1870	Oct.	6, 1870	266	Cooper	8,597	9,110	3,513
Denton	John B. Denton	Fannin	April	11,	1846	July	13, 1846	959	Denton	18,145	21,247	3,131
De Witt	Green De Witt	Gonzales, Victoria, Goliad	Mar.	24,	1846	July	13, 1846	918	Cuero	10,582	14,796	4,214
Dickens	J. Dickens	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	Mar.	14, 1891	900	Espuela	28	228	200
Dimmit	Philip Dimmit	Bexar, Webb, Uvalde, Maverick	Feb.	1,	1858	Nov.	2, 1880	1,290	Carrizo Springs	666	1,041	375
Donley	Judge Stockton P. Donley	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	Mar.	14, 1882	900	Clarendon	462	1,648	1,188
Duval	The Duval Family	Live Oak, Nueces, Starr	Feb.	1,	1858	Nov.	7, 1876	1,759	San Diego	5,732	7,588	1,856
Eastland	W. M. Eastland	Coryell, Bosque, Travis	Feb.	1,	1858	Dec.	2, 1873	909	Eastland	4,855	10,349	5,494
Ector	General Mat Ector	Tom Green	Feb.	26,	1887	Jan.	6, 1891	900	Odessa	. . . . .	924	. . . .
Edwards	Hayden Edwards	Bexar	Feb.	1,	1858	April	10, 1883	2,316½	Leakey	266	1,955	1,689
Ellis	Richard Ellis	Navarro	Dec.	26,	1849	Aug.	5, 1850	969	Waxahachie	21,294	31,757	10,463
El Paso	Taken from The Pass	Bexar	Jan.	3,	1850	May	7, 1871	8,260	El Paso	5,545	15,728	11,883
Encinal	Spanish name—Oak Grove	Webb, Starr, Nueces	Feb.	1,	1858	Unorganized.		1,798	Unorganized	1,992	. . . . .	. . . .
Erath	George B. Erath	Coryell and Bosque	Jan.	25,	1856	Aug.	4, 1856	1,042	Stephenville	11,596	21,514	9,718
Falls	Falls on Brazos River	Milam and Limestone	Jan.	28,	1850	Aug.	5, 1850	769	Marlin	16,240	20,707	4,457
Fannin	James W. Fannin	Red River	Dec.	14,	1837	Jan.	18, 1838	891	Bonham	25,801	39,079	13,175
Fayette	General LaFayette	Colorado and Bastrop	Dec.	15,	1837	Jan.	—, 1838	963	La Grange	27,996	31,413	3,417
Fisher	S. Rhodes Fisher	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	April	27, 1886	900	Roby	1,16	3,008	2,872
Floyd	D. Floyd	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	May	28, 1890	1,147	Floydada	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . .
Foard	Robert L. Foard	Hardeman, King, Cottle, Knox	Mar.	3,	1891	April	27, 1891	750	Crowell	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . .
Foley	Family by the name of Foley	Presidio	Mar.	15,	1887	Unorganized.		2,537	Unorganized	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . .
Fort Bend	A Fort on the Brazos River	Austin	Dec.	20,	1837	Jan.	—, 1838	889	Richmond	9,380	10,576	1,196
Franklin	B. C. Franklin	Titus	Mar.	8,	1875	April	30, 1875	310	Mt. Vernon	5,280	7,356	2,076
Freestone	. . . . .	Limestone	Sept.	6,	1850	July	6, 1851	883	Fairfield	14,921	15,993	1,072
Frio	Frio River	Bexar, Atascosa, Uvalde	Feb.	1,	1858	July	20, 1871	1,080	Pearsall	2,130	3,172	992
Gaines	James Gaines	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	Unorganized.		1,560	Unorganized	8	. . . . .	. . . .
Galveston	Count de Galvez	Brazoria and Liberty	May	15,	1838	Jan.	1, 1839	673	Galveston	24,121	31,416	7,295
Garza	The family of Garzas	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	Unorganized		900	Unorganized	36	. . . . .	. . . .
Gillespie	Captain R. A. Gillespie	Bexar and Travis	Feb.	23,	1848	June	5, 1848	980	Fredericksburg	5,228	7,027	1,799
Glasscock	George W. Glasscock, Sr.	Tom Green	April	4,	1887	Mar.	28, 1893	900	Garden City	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . .
Goliad	Municipality of Goliad	Original	——		1836	——	1837	823	Goliad	5,833	5,906	74
Gonzales	Rafael Gonzales	Original	——		1836	——	1837	1,077	Gonzales	14,840	18,008	3,168
Gray	Peter W. Gray	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	Unorganized.		900	Unorganized	56	. . . . .	. . . .
Grayson	Peter W. Grayson	Fannin	Mar.	17,	1846	July	13, 1846	968	Sherman	36,108	53,293	15,095
Greer	John A. Greer	Clay	Feb.	8,	1860	July	16, 1886	2,462	Mangum	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . .
Gregg	General John Gregg	Upshur and Rusk	April	12,	1873	June	28, 1873	279	Longview	8,810	9,902	872
Grimes	Jesse Grimes	Montgomery	April	6,	1846	July	13, 1846	781	Anderson	18,603	21,293	2,690
Guadalupe	Guadalupe River	Gonzales and Bexar	Mar.	30,	1846	July	13, 1846	711	Seguin	12,292	15,000	2,708
Hale	Lieutenant J. C. Hale	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	——	1888	998	Plainview	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . .
Hall	Warren D. C. Hall	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	June	21, 1890	900	Memphis	36	. . . . .	. . . .
Hamilton	James Hamilton	Comanche, Bosque, Lampasas	Jan.	22,	1858	Aug.	2, 1858	977	Hamilton	6,405	9,372	2,967
Hansford	John M. Hansford	Bexar	Aug.	21,	1876	Mar.	11, 1889	910	Hansford	18	133	115
Hardeman	Two brothers—Bailey and T. J. Hardeman	Clay	Feb.	21,	1858	Dec.	31, 1884	1,180	Margaret	50	3,902	3,852
Hardin	William Hardin	Liberty and Jefferson	Jan.	22,	1858	Aug.	2, 1858	827	Hardin	1,870	3,956	2,086

POLITICAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 3.—Continued.

Counties.	Named for	Counties Created from	When Created.	When Organized.	Area in Square Miles.	County Seat.	Population in 1880.	Population in 1890.	Decrease.	Increase.
Harris	John R. Harrison	Original	——— 1836	——— 1837	1,800	Houston	27,688	37,404	...	9,719
Harrison	A pioneer named Harrison	Shelby	Jan. 28, 1839	June 18, 1842	850	Marshall	25,477	26,976	...	1,499
Hartley	O. C. and R. K. Hartley	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Feb. 9, 1891	1,470	Hartley	100	252	...	...
Haskell	Charles Haskell	Fannin and Milam	Feb. 1, 1858	Jan. 13, 1885	900	Haskell	48	1,663	...	1,615
Hays	Captain Jack Hays	Travis	Mar. 1, 1848	Aug. 7, 1848	683	San Marcos	7,555	11,338	...	3,773
Hemphill	Judge John Hemphill	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1879	July 5, 1887	900	Canadian	149	501	...	352
Henderson	Governor J. P. Henderson	Houston and Nacogdoches	April 27, 1846	July 13, 1846	965	Athens	9,735	12,279	...	2,544
Hidalgo	Guadalupe Hidalgo	Cameron	Jan. 24, 1852	Aug. 7, 1852	2,356	Hidalgo	4,347	6,534	...	2,187
Hill	George W. Hill	Navarro	Feb. 7, 1853	May 14, 1853	1,030	Hillsboro	16,554	26,798	...	10,244
Hockley	A planter, General G. W. Hockley	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Unorganized	900	Unorganized	...	...	...	...
Hood	General John B. Hood	Johnson	Nov. 2, 1866	Dec. 25, 1866	492	Granbury	6,125	7,567	...	1,442
Hopkins	A pioneer family	Lamar and Nacogdoches	Mar. 25, 1846	July 13, 1846	785	Sulphur Springs	15,401	20,549	...	5,008
Houston	Sam Houston	Nacogdoches	——— 1836	——— 1837	1,177	Crockett	16,702	19,354	...	2,652
Howard	Volney E. Howard	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	June 15, 1882	900	Big Springs	50	1,210	...	1,160
Hunt	Memucan Hunt	Nacogdoches and Fannin	April 14, 1846	July 13, 1846	869	Greenville	17,230	31,835	...	14,605
Hutchinson	Anderson Hutchinson	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Unorganized	900	Unorganized	50	...	...	...
Irion	——— Irion	Tom Green	Mar. 7, 1889	April 10, 1889	900	Sherwood	...	869	...	869
Jack	W. H. and P. C. Jack	Cooke	Aug. 27, 1856	July 7, 1887	876	Jacksboro	6,626	9,732	...	3,106
Jackson	Andrew Jackson	Original	——— 1836	——— 1837	911	Edna	2,723	3,687	...	964
Jasper	Sergeant Jasper	Original	——— 1836	——— 1837	973	Jasper	5,779	5,826	193	...
Jeff Davis	Jefferson Davis	Presidio	Mar. 25, 1887	May 21, 1887	2,280	Fort Davis	...	1,027	...	1,027
Jefferson	Jefferson Beaumont	Original	——— 1836	——— 1837	1,052	Beaumont	3,489	5,287	...	1,798
Johnson	M. T. Johnson	Navarro and McLennan	Feb. 4, 1854	Aug. 7, 1854	987	Cleburne	17,911	22,261	...	4,350
Jones	Dr. Anson Jones	Bexar and Bosque	Feb. 1, 1858	June 13, 1881	900	Anson	546	3,747	...	3,201
Karnes	Henry Karnes	Bexar, De Witt, Goliad	Feb. 4, 1854	Feb. 1, 1854	738	Helena	3,270	3,608	...	338
Kaufman	David S. Kaufman	Henderson	Feb. 26, 1848	Aug. 7, 1848	832	Kaufman	15,448	21,742	...	6,294
Kendall	George W. Kendall	Blanco and Kerr	Jan. 10, 1862	Feb. 18, 1862	678	Boerne	2,763	3,807	...	1,044
Kent	R. Kent	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Nov. 1, 1892	900	Clairmont	62	...	...	...
Kerr	James Kerr	Bexar	Jan. 26, 1856	Mar. 22, 1856	1,188	Kerrville	2,168	4,445	...	2,277
Kimble	——— Kimble	Bexar	Jan. 22, 1858	Jan. 3, 1876	1,302	Junction City	1,443	2,334	...	891
King	William King	Fannin	Aug. 21, 1876	June 25, 1891	900	Guthrie	40	173	...	...
Kinney	H. L. Kinney	Bexar	Jan. 28, 1850	——— 1874	1,794	Brackett	3,731	4,497	...	766
Knox	Knox County, Ohio	Fannin	Feb. 1, 1858	Mar. 20, 1886	900	Benjamin	77	1,124	...	1,047
Lamar	M. B. Lamar	Red River	Dec. 17, 1840	——— 1841	920	Paris	27,195	37,834	...	10,641
Lamb	Lieutenant Lamb	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Unorganized	1,080	Unorganized	...	...	...	...
Lampasas	Lampasas River	Fannin and Bell	Feb. 1, 1855	Mar. 10, 1856	868	Lampasas	5,141	7,593	...	2,142
La Salle	Cavalier de la Salle	Bexar and Webb	Feb. 1, 1858	Nov. 2, 1880	1,512	Cotulla	789	2,138	...	1,349
Lavaca	Lavaca River	Gonzales, Victoria, Jackson, Fayette, Colorado	April 6, 1846	July 13, 1846	1,004	Hallettsville	13,641	22,758	...	9,117
Lee	General Robert E. Lee	Burleson, Bastrop, Fayette, Washington	April 14, 1874	June 2, 1874	603	Giddings	8,937	11,310	...	2,373
Leon	Alonzo de Leon	Robertson	Mar. 15, 1846	July 13, 1846	1,039	Jewett	12,817	13,780	...	963
Liberty	Mount Liberty, of Liberty	Original	——— 1836	——— 1837	1,172	Liberty	3,686	4,999	...	1,313
Limestone	———	Robertson	April 11, 1846	Aug. 28, 1850	974	Groesbeck	19,246	24,593	...	5,347
Lipscomb	Judge Abner S. Lipscomb	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1879	June 6, 1887	900	Lipscomb	19	612	...	593
Live Oak	Live Oak County	San Patricio and Nueces	Feb. 2, 1856	Aug. 4, 1856	1,117	Oakville	1,294	2,993	...	69
Llano	Llano River	Bexar and El Paso	Feb. 1, 1856	Aug. 4, 1856	962	Llano	3,962	6,099	...	2,037
Lo[illegible]	[illegible]	[illegible]	Feb. 20, 1877	Unorganized	775	Unorganized	...	...	...	...

Lubbock	Tom Lubbock	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	Mar. 10,	1891	900	Lubbock	25	33		
Lynn	G. W. Lynn	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	Unorganized.		900	Unorganized	9			
Madison	James Madison	Grimes, Walker, Leon	Jan. 12,	1853	Aug. 7,	1854	400	Madisonville	5,391	8,806		3,111
Marion	Francis Marion	Cass and Harrison	Feb. 8,	1860	Mar. 15,	1860	418	Jefferson	10,835	10,983		148
Martin	Wily Martin (pr's. consultation)	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	Nov. 4,	1884	900	Marienfield	12	472		460
Mason	Captain Mason, of U. S. Army	Bexar	Jan. 22,	1858	Aug. 9,	1858	908	Mason	2,655	5,168		2,513
Matagorda	Municipality of Matagorda	Original		1836	——	1837	1,428	Matagorda	3,040	3,080		40
Maverick	S. A. Maverick	Kinney	Feb. 2,	1856	July 13,	1871	1,338	Eagle Pass	2,967	3,689		722
McCulloch	Ben McCulloch	Bexar	Aug. 27,	1856		1876	1,043	Brady	1,533	3,205		1,672
McLennan	Neil McLennan	Limestone, Milam, Navarro	Jan. 22,	1850	Aug. 5,	1850	1,083	Waco	26,934	39,136		12,202
McMullen	John McMullen	Atascosa, Live Oak, Bexar	Feb. 1,	1858	——	1877	1,176	Tilden	701	1,037		336
Medina	Medina River	Bexar	Feb. 12,	1848	Aug.	1848	1,304	Castroville	4,192	5,328		1,136
Menard	M. R. Menard	Bexar	Jan. 22,	1858	May 8,	1871	886	Menardville	1,207	1,239		32
Midland	From its relative location	Tom Green	Mar. 4,	1885	June 15,	1885	900	Midland		1,033		
Milam	R. R. Milam	Original		1836	——	1837	991	Cameron	18,650	24,750		6,100
Mills	John S. Mills	Lampasas, Hamilton, Brown, Comanche.	Mar. 15,	1887	Sept. 12,	1887	1,361	Goldthwaite		5,401		
Mitchell	Two brothers—A. and E. Mitchell	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	Jan. 10,	1881	900	Colorado	117	2,059		1,942
Montague	Daniel Montague	Cooke	Dec. 24,	1857	Aug. 2,	1858	891	Montague	11,257	18,629		7,432
Montgomery	General James Montgomery	Washington	Dec. 14,	1837	——	1837	1,054	Willis	10,154	11,736		1,582
Moore	Commodore R. W. Moore	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	July 6,	1892	900	Dumas				
Morris	W. W. Morris	Titus	Mar. 13,	1875	May 12,	1875	267	Daingerfield	5,633	6,980		1,348
Motley	Dr. Wm. Motley	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	Feb. 25,	1891	1,005	Matador		139		
Nacogdoches	Nacogdoches Tribe of Indians	Original		1836	——	1837	974	Nacogdoches	11,590	15,964		4,374
Navarro	José Antonio Navarro	Robertson	April 25,	1846	July 13,	1849	1,055	Corsicana	21,702	25,287		3,585
Newton	Sergeant Newton	Jasper	April 22,	1846	July 13,	1846	875	Newton	4,359	4,645		286
Nolan	Philip Nolan	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	June 10,	1881	900	Sweet Water	640	1,576		936
Nueces	Nueces River	San Patricio	April 18,	1846	July 13,	1846	2,845	Corpus Christi	7,673	8,089		416
Ochiltree	W. B. Ochiltree	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	Feb. 21,	1884	900	Ochiltree		198		
Oldham	Williamson S. Oldham, Sr.	Bexar	Aug. 25,	1876	June 12,	1890	1,177	Tascosa	169	287		118
Orange	From the orange fruit	Jefferson	Feb. 5,	1852	Mar. 20,	1852	396	Orange	2,938	4,768		1,830
Palo Pinto	Palo Pinto River	Bosque and Navarro	Aug. 27,	1860	April 27,	1873	968	Palo Pinto	5,885	8,319		2,434
Panola	Indian tribe	Harrison and Shelby	Mar. 30,	1846	Sept. —,	1846	799	Carthage	12,219	14,301		2,082
Parker	The family of Parkers at Parker's Fort.	Navarro and Bosque	Dec. 12,	1855	Mar. 1,	1856	900	Weatherford	15,870	21,662		5,792
Parmer	Martin Parmer	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	Unorganized.		858	Unorganized				
Pecos	Pecos River	Presidio	May 3,	1871	June 13,	1872	7,470	Fort Stockton	1,326	1,807		481
Polk	James K. Polk	Liberty	May 30,	1846	July 13,	1846	1,109	Livingston	7,189	10,323		3,134
Potter	Robert Potter	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	Sept. 6,	1887	900	Amarillo	28	450		422
Presidio	Presidio del Norte	Bexar	Jan. 3,	1850	——	1875	2,652	Marfa	1,698	2,873		1,175
Rains	Emory Rains	Wood, Hunt, Hopkins	June 9,	1870	Dec. 1,	1870	267	Emory	3,035	3,909		874
Randall	H. Randall	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	July 27,	1889	900	Canyon	3	187		184
Red River	Municipality of Red River	Original		1836	——	1837	1,062	Clarksville	17,194	21,327		4,133
Reeves	George R. Reeves	Pecos	April 14,	1883	Nov. 4,	1884	2,721	Pecos		600		
Refugio	Municipality of Refugio	Original		1836	——	1837	880	Refugio	1,237	1,585		348
Roberts	John S. Roberts	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	Jan. 10,	1889	900	Miami	32	328		296
Robertson	Sterling C. Robertson	Milam	Dec. 14,	1837	——	1838	869	Franklin	22,383	26,496		4,113
Rockwall	An underground wall	Kaufman	Mar. 1,	1873	April 23,	1873	159	Rockwall	2,564	5,817		2,833
Runnels	Governor H. R. Runnels	Bexar and Travis	Feb. 1,	1858	Feb. 16,	1880	900	Ballinger	920	3,122		2,202
Rusk	Thomas J. Rusk	Nacogdoches	Jan. 16,	1843	Feb. 6,	1843	917	Henderson	18,833	18,986		433
Sabine	Municipality of Sabine	Original		1836	——	1837	574	Hemphill	4,161	4,958		797
San Augustine	Municipality of San Augustine	Original		1836	——	1837	856	San Augustine	5,084	6,684		1,600
San Jacinto	Battle-field of San Jacinto	Polk, Liberty, Walker, Montgomery.	Aug. 13,	1870	Dec. 1,	1870	637	Cold Springs	6,186	7,356		1,170
San Patricio	Municipality of San Patricio	Original		1836	——	1837	644	San Patricio	1,010	1,309		299
San Saba	San Saba River	Bexar	Feb. 1,	1856	May 3,	1856	1,131	San Saba	5,324	6,614		1,290
Schleicher	Captain Schleicher, M. C.	Crockett	April 1,	1887	Unorganized.		1,300	Unorganized				
Scurry	William R. Scurry	Bexar	Aug. 21,	1876	June 28,	1884	900	Snyder	102	1,410		1,308
Shackelford	Dr. Shackelford	Bosque	Feb. 1,	1858	Sept. 12,	1874	900	Albany	2,012	2,037		25

POLITICAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 3.—Continued.

Counties.	Named for	Counties created from	When created.	When organized.	Area in square miles.	County seat.	Population in 1880.	Population in 1890.	Decrease.	Increase.
Shelby	General Shelby, of Kentucky	Original	——— 1836	——— 1837	892	Center	9,523	14,241	...	4,718
Sherman	General Sidney Sherman	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	June 13, 1889	911	Coldwater	...	34	...	...
Smith	James Smith	Nacogdoches	April 11, 1846	July 13, 1846	957	Tyler	21,833	28,297	...	6,434
Somervell	Alexander Somervell	Hood	April 12, 1875	April 12, 1875	199	Glen Rose	2,649	3,411	...	762
Starr	James H. Starr	Nueces	Feb. 10, 1848	Aug. 7, 1848	2,544	Rio Grande City	8,394	10,149	...	1,759
Stephens	Alexander H. Stephens	Bosque	Jan. 22, 1858	——— 1876	900	Breckenridge	4,725	4,935	...	210
Sterling	Sterling Creek	Tom Green	Mar. 4, 1891	June 3, 1891	900	Sterling City	...	...	...	...
Stonewall	General T. J. (Stonewall) Jackson	Fannin	Aug. 21, 1876	Dec. 20, 1888	900	Raynor	104	1,025	...	921
Sutton	Lieutenant-Colonel Sutton, of Confederate Army.	Crockett	April 1, 1887	Nov. 4, 1890	1,500	Sonora	...	...	...	...
Swisher	James G. Swisher	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Nov. 11, 1890	900	Tulia	4	...	...	...
Tarrant	R. H. Tarrant	Navarro	Dec. 20, 1849	Aug. 5, 1850	900	Fort Worth	24,671	40,888	...	16,217
Taylor	A family by name of Taylor	Bexar and Travis	Feb. 1, 1858	July 3, 1878	900	Abilene	1,736	6,946	...	5,210
Terry	Frank Terry	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Unorganized.	900	Unorganized	...	...	...	...
Throckmorton	Dr. William E. Throckmorton	Fannin and Bosque	Jan. 13, 1858	Mar. 18, 1879	900	Throckmorton	711	902	...	191
Titus	An old settler	Red River and Bosque	May 11, 1846	July 13, 1846	420	Mt. Pleasant	5,999	8,189	...	2,230
Tom Green	General Tom Green	Bexar	Mar. 13, 1874	Jan. 8, 1875	3,548	San Angelo	3,615	5,133	...	1,518
Travis	William B. Travis	Bastrop	Jan. 22, 1840	April 8, 1843	1,019	Austin	27,018	37,193	...	9,176
Trinity	Trinity River	Houston	Feb. 11, 1850	April 1, 1889	708	Groveton	4,915	10,566	...	5,651
Tyler	John Tyler	Liberty	April 3, 1846	July 13, 1846	918	Woodville	5,825	10,681	...	4,856
Upshur	Abel P. Upshur	Nacogdoches and Harrison	April 27, 1846	July 13, 1846	519	Gilmer	10,296	12,659	...	2,363
Upton	John and W. F. Upton	Tom Green	Feb. 26, 1887	Unorganized.	1,167	Unorganized	...	...	...	...
Uvalde	José Uvalde	Bexar	Feb. 8, 1850	April 21, 1856	1,548	Uvalde	2,541	3,802	...	1,261
Val Verde	From the relative location of the county.	Kinney, Crockett, Pecos	Mar. 24, 1885	May 2, 1885	3,231	Del Rio	...	2,800	...	...
Van Zandt	Isaac Van Zandt	Henderson	Mar. 20, 1848	Aug. 7, 1848	840	Canton	12,619	16,234	...	3,615
Victoria	Municipality of Victoria	Original	——— 1836	——— 1837	882	Victoria	6,289	8,655	...	2,366
Walker	Robert J. Walker	Montgomery	April 6, 1846	July 13, 1846	768	Huntsville	12,024	12,911	...	887
Waller	Edwin Waller	Grimes and Austin	April 28, 1873	Aug. 16, 1873	499	Hempstead	9,024	10,577	...	1,553
Ward	Thomas W. Ward	Tom Green	Feb. 26, 1887	Mar. 29, 1892	855	Barstow	...	...	...	...
Washington	Municipality of Washington	Original	——— 1836	——— 1837	603	Brenham	27,595	28,601	...	1,036
Webb	James Webb	Bexar and San Patricio	Jan. 28, 1858	Mar. 16, 1858	1,552	Laredo	5,273	16,583	...	11,310
Wharton	W. H. and J. A. Wharton	Matagorda, Colorado, Jackson	April 3, 1846	July 13, 1846	1,472	Wharton	4,549	7,536	...	2,987
Wheeler	Judge Royall T. Wheeler	Bexar and Fannin	April 21, 1876	April 12, 1879	900	Mobeetie	512	778	...	266
Wichita	Wichita River	Young Land District	Feb. 1, 1858	June 21, 1882	589	Wichita Falls	333	4,631	...	4,298
Wilbarger	Wilbarger family	Bexar	Feb. 1, 1858	Oct. 10, 1881	937	Vernon	126	7,672	...	6,946
Williamson	R. M. Williamson	Milam	Mar. 13, 1848	Aug. 7, 1848	1,497	Georgetown	15,155	18,588	...	10,733
Wilson	James C. Wilson	Bexar and Karnes	Feb. 13, 1860	Aug. 6, 1860	798	Floresville	7,118	10,651	...	3,533
Winkler	Judge C. M. Winkler	Tom Green	Feb. 26, 1887	Unorganized.	837	Unorganized	...	...	...	...
Wise	Henry A. Wise	Cooke	Jan. 23, 1856	May 5, 1856	900	Decatur	16,601	24,133	...	7,532
Wood	George T. Wood	Van Zandt	Feb. 5, 1850	Aug. 5, 1850	792	Quitman	11,012	13,928	...	2,716
Yoakum	Henderson Yoakum	Bexar	Aug. 21, 1876	Unorganized.	825	Unorganized	...	...	...	...
Young	William Cooke Young	Fannin and Bosque	Feb. 2, 1856	April 17, 1874	900	Graham	4,726	5,044	...	318
Zapata	Zapata, a Mexican patriot	Starr and Webb	Jan. 22, 1858	April 26, 1888	1,291	Carrizo	3,550	3,636	...	86
Zavala	Lorenzo de Zavala	Uvalde and Maverick	Feb. 1, 1858	Feb. 25, 1884	1,260	Batesville	410	1,096	...	686

Total population of counties in 1890 . . . . . 2,235,523 Increase since 1880 643,783

AGRICULTURAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 4.

Showing Total Crops, Acreage, and Value of Products for the Years 1889, 1890, 1891, 1892, 1893, and 1894.

Crop.	Year.	Acres.	Product.	Value.
Cotton	1889	3,735,934	1,575,406 bales	$61,688,795.00
	1890	4,661,539	1,692,839 bales	71,031,282.00
	1891	4,820,310	2,026,774 bales	69,429,476.00
	1892	3,979,173½	1,848,334 bales	69,702,589.88
	1893	4,269,114	1,708,602 bales	52,867,779.00
	1894	4,988,560	2,842,888 bales	60,962,932.12
Corn	1889	3,042,116	67,149,851 bushels	$41,724,296.00
	1890	2,996,493	41,812,962 bushels	22,365,325.00
	1891	3,166,353	61,133,004 bushels	28,429,126.00
	1892	3,424,444	77,727,202 bushels	28,098,789.00
	1893	3,120,563	88,140,499 bushels	25,820,629.00
	1894	3,289,534	63,164,490 bushels	29,111,640.84
Wheat	1889	492,154	5,117,534 bushels	$3,284,387.00
	1890	359,440	2,368,525 bushels	1,989,207.00
	1891	412,337	6,078,358 bushels	5,244,303.00
	1892	570,798	6,553,578 bushels	3,614,381.00
	1893	780,240	6,639,184 bushels	3,184,402.00
	1894	532,878	5,839,176 bushels	2,725,299.58
Oats	1889	517,849	14,988,662 bushels	$3,737,409.00
	1890	347,033	6,603,074 bushels	3,274,062.00
	1891	473,799	13,106,853 bushels	5,152,626.00
	1892	703,004	21,596,169 bushels	6,019,499.55
	1893	660,292	15,408,560 bushels	4,526,524.00
	1894	610,132	16,206,715 bushels	5,401,508.95
Barley	1889	5,642	124,089 bushels	$59,375.00
	1890	2,846	45,341 bushels	37,700.00
	1891	5,357	110,757 bushels	71,152.00
	1892	9,527	78,672 bushels	66,096.00
	1893	6,758	88,421 bushels	43,092.00
	1894	4,873	78,779 bushels	38,012.79
Rye	1889	6,168	83,008 bushels	$55,717.00
	1890	2,890	43,371 bushels	36,655.00
	1891	3,584	45,479 bushels	33,529.00
	1892	3,048	50,778 bushels	24,237.00
	1893	2,398	19,369 bushels	14,395.00
	1894	2,239	25,132 bushels	15,512.50
Rice	1889	No report	No report	No report
	1890			
	1891			
	1892			
	1893			
	1894	6,733	103,794 bushels	$99,302.00
Sweet Potatoes	1889	41,526	5,101,295 bushels	$1,329,795.00
	1890	33,643	3,992,382 bushels	1,977,639.00
	1891	29,938	3,612,883 bushels	1,593,764.00
	1892	35,367	4,675,513 bushels	2,285,083.00
	1893	31,591	2,731,221 bushels	1,511,117.00
	1894	41,401	4,963,796 bushels	2,346,598.72
Irish Potatoes	1889	6,276	651,749 bushels	$439,752.00
	1890	7,307	611,176 bushels	540,661.00
	1891	8,629	650,075 bushels	497,641.00
	1892	7,428	578,939 bushels	417,077.00
	1893	6,614	528,629 bushels	391,513.00
	1894	6,603	557,794 bushels	399,797.69
Peas	1889	No report	No report	No report
	1890			
	1891			
	1892			
	1893			
	1894	66,467	385,149 bushels	$199,746.00
Beans	1889	No report	No report	No report
	1890			
	1891			
	1892			
	1893			
	1894	2,173	28,759 bushels	$49,941.95
Millet	1889	No report	No report	No report
	1890	32,874	47,275 tons	$495,967.00
	1891	35,985	52,853 tons	475,792.00
	1892	52,511	77,028 tons	543,303.00
	1893	26,517	44,550 tons	353,257.00
	1894	57,997	89,105 tons	632,675.75
Sugar-Cane	1889	15,136	67,064 barrels	$1,003,976.00
	1890	15,416	63,013 barrels	1,066,816.00
	1891	16,115	63,133 barrels	981,877.00
	1892	15,704	41,118 barrels	693,542.00
	1893	17,211	74,396 barrels	774,151.00
	1894	17,759	94,476 barrels	1,094,102.00

AGRICULTURAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 4.—Continued.

Crop.	Year.	Acres.	Product.	Value.
Sorghum	1889	84,409	52,227 barrels syrup 180,679 tons forage	$1,752,756.00
	1890	39,799	19,517 barrels syrup 77,520 tons forage	787,971.00
	1891	54,699	21,703 barrels syrup 90,729 tons forage	1,914,425.00
	1892	73,563	153,481 barrels syrup 135,882 tons forage	1,426,548.20
	1893	68,334	43,299 barrels syrup 84,078 tons forage	563,089.00
	1894	127,110	38,325 barrels syrup 306,792 tons forage	1,934,539.37
Cultivated Hay	1889	37,383	77,310 tons	$556,307.00
	1890	27,520	50,187 tons	300,954.00
	1891	30,233	46,223 tons	390,414.00
	1892	32,705	100,259 tons	545,745.00
	1893	49,684	62,575 tons	459,300.00
	1894	75,067	126,584 tons	1,001,371.50
Prairie Hay	1889	141,169	171,403 tons	$1,106,750.00
	1890	183,573	164,130 tons	1,289,103.00
	1891	179,163	184,228 tons	1,147,668.00
	1892	176,653	194,159 tons	1,662,313.00
	1893	174,844	152,436 tons	938,860.00
	1844	206,981	189,380 tons	1,140,584.57
Peanuts	1889	No report	No report	No report
	1890			
	1891			
	1892			
	1893			
	1894	1,073½	23,367 bushels	$26,772.00
Tobacco	1889	No report	No report	No report
	1890			
	1891			
	1892			
	1893			
	1891	272	68,549 pounds	$13,627.00
Pecans	1889	.....	No report	No report
	1890	.....		
	1891	.....		
	1892	.....		
	1893	.....		
	1894	.....	42,608 bushels	$62,844.00
Melons	1889	10,193	.....	$441,964.00
	1890	11,498	.....	491,580.00
	1891	16,243	.....	576,652.00
	1892	15,067	.....	447,525.00
	1893	12,740	.....	391,359.00
	1894	16,278	.....	473,522.75
Garden Crops	1889	35,906	.....	$3,002,877.00
	1890	31,269	.....	2,246,127.00
	1891	34,851	.....	2,531,093.00
	1892	42,211	.....	2,567,745.00
	1893	32,296	.....	2,055,915.00
	1894	35,676	.....	2,194,887.00
Apples	1889	11,365	.....	$322,831.00
	1890	11,606	.....	148,819.00
	1891	11,428	.....	289,650.00
	1892	9,882	.....	204,449.00
	1893	11,221	.....	222,527.00
	1894	9,872	.....	145,276.40
Peaches	1889	52,334	.....	$1,681,072.00
	1890	45,007	.....	418,159.00
	1891	51,750	.....	1,276,851.00
	1892	53,844	.....	1,283,530.00
	1893	50,008	.....	945,329.00
	1894	42,914	.....	653,960.00
Pears	1889	987	.....	$11,685.00
	1890	1,676	.....	64,150.00
	1891	2,525	.....	69,025.00
	1892	2,959	.....	75,060.00
	1893	3,741	.....	87,993.00
	1894	2,138	.....	50,125.00
Plums	1889	2,897	.....	$84,195.00
	1890	2,126	.....	18,120.00
	1891	2,951	.....	56,850.00
	1892	3,399	.....	50,000.00
	1893	3,379	.....	54,[illegible]1.00
	1894	1,912	.....	36,817.50
Grapes	1889	887,520 vines	.....	$161,472.00
	1890	791,415 vines	.....	85,075.00
	1891	490,556 vines	.....	137,[illegible]
	1892	1,555,754 vines	.....	181,[illegible]
	1893	1,412,274 vines	.....	281,016.00
	1894	1,016,621 vines	.....	190,[illegible]

AGRICULTURAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 5.

Showing Number of Farms Owned and Rented, Number of Farm Laborers, Average Wages, Value of Agricultural Implements from 1890 to 1894, inclusive.

Years.	Number of Farms Worked by the Owners.	Number of Tenant Farms.	Value of Agricultural Implements.	Number of Farm Laborers.	Average Monthly Wages.
1890	142,437	87,479	$3,978,908.00	57,321	Total Average. $2,868.81
1891	138,839	95,150	4,591,292.00	56,091	3,130.75
1892	154,626	96,918	4,428,760.00	57,042	Average per month. $13.89
1893	154,708	101,239	4,059,361.00	54,261	13.40
1894	154,199	93,136	3,976,424.00	54,218	12.91

NOTE.—It is estimated that an average of twenty thousand small farms escape assessment each year, and this number should be added to the foregoing figures in order to approximate the total farms of all kinds in Texas. The number of tenant farms indicate the number of renters in the State, and by "farm laborers" are meant individuals simply working for wages.

AGRICULTURAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 6.

Showing Production of Honey in Texas from 1890 to 1894, inclusive.

Years.	Number of Stands of Bees.	Honey Produced.	Value.
1890	145,542	2,316,889 pounds	$236,466.00
1891	183,928	2,581,116 pounds	262,303.00
1892	152,716	2,377,413 pounds	259,263.00
1893	128,452	1,814,357 pounds	179,221.00
1894	122,935	2,273,515 pounds	210,007.66

AGRICULTURAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 7.

Showing the Wool Industry in Texas from 1889 to 1894, inclusive.

Years.	Number of Sheep Sheared.	Wool Clip.	Value.
1889	3,754,069	18,345,618 pounds	$3,319,155.00
1890	2,814,372	13,531,166 pounds	2,496,625.00
1891	2,978,459	15,499,979 pounds	2,741,675.00
1892	2,539,784	13,620,629 pounds	2,063,902.00
1893	2,104,866	12,179,311 pounds	1,198,899.00
1894	1,879,943	11,557,258 pounds	819,866.66

RAILROAD STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 8.

Annual Report of Railway Companies for the Year ending September 30, 1887.

1.

Railway Companies.

Number of Railroads 36

2.

The capital stock and the amount actually paid in.

Capital stock	$221,489,876.45
Paid in	151,100,328.65
Subscribed	428,400.00

3.

The amount expended for the purchase of land, construction of the road, for buildings, and for engines and cars, respectively.

Construction of roads, buildings, cars, and engines	$189,099,131.85
Purchase of land	275,611.19
Construction, etc.	900,000.00
Cash expenditure	19,184.23
	$190,254,247.67

4.

The amount and nature of indebtedness, and the amount due the corporations.

Indebtedness:

Bonds	$229,203,890.00
Bills, accounts, etc.	6,842,661.41
Carried forward	$227,046,551.41
Brought forward	$227,046,551.41
Floating debts	1,961,039.69
Coupon debts	2,281,132.11
State school fund	843,571.66
Capital stock	3,304,500.00
Constructing	47,000.00
Interest on bonds not yet due . . .	125,278.00
Receiver certificates	25,000.00
Miscellaneous	8,814,734.52
	$243,099,321.51

Due Companies:

Bills, accounts, etc.	$1,712,987.20
Subscription to capital stock . . .	5,000.00
In litigation	26,731.97
Miscellaneous	3,630,424.97
	$5,674,744.14

5.

The amount received for the transportation of passengers, of property, of the mails and from all other sources.

Transportation of passengers	$5,057,747.93
Transportation of freight	16,867,242.49
Transportation of express	516,853.35
Transportation of mail	788,311.31
Transportation of property	3,844,997.02
Telegraph	20,257.47
Miscellaneous	1,153,215.74
	$27,448,424.49

RAILROAD STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 9.

Mileage, Capital Stock, Bonds, and Indebtedness of Railroads in Texas, June 30, 1893.

Name of Road.	Mileage Owned.	Stocks.		Bonds.		Other Indebtedness.		Summary.	
		Amount Outstanding.	Amount per Mile for Road Owned.	Amount Outstanding.	Amount per Mile for Road Owned.	Equipment Trust Obligations.	Current Liabilities.	Total Amount of Stocks and Debts.	Amount per Mile for Road Owned.
Austin and Northwestern	109.100	$1,016,000	$9,313	$1,929,000	$17,599	....	$159,977	$3,065,977	$28,377
Brownsville and Gulf	1.010	25,000	24,752	....	....	....	....	25,000	24,752
Central Texas and Northwestern	12.360	200,000	16,181	180,000	14,563	....	18,771	398,771	32,263
Chicago, Rock Island and Texas	55.600	159,400	2,705	840,000	15,108	....	107,708	1,098,108	19,759
De Kalb and Red River	9.500	10,000	1,053	....	....	....	....	10,000	1,053
Denison and Washita Valley	15.250	305,000	20,000	305,000	20,000	....	73,200	683,200	44,800
El Paso and Northern	10.040	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
Fort Worth and Denver City	468.950	9,375,000	19,991	8,401,000	17,915	$169,000	459,604	18,395,604	39,227
Fort Worth and New Orleans	10.050	300,000	7,491	709,000	17,703	....	299,900	1,308,900	32,682
Fort Worth and Rio Grande	146.105	2,777,100	19,000	2,923,000	19,998	....	270,889	5,970,989	40,851
Galveston and Western	13.100	317,000	24,198	....	....	....	17,027	334,027	25,498
Galveston, Harrisburg and San Antonio	939.720	27,084,200	29,100	25,911,139	27,840	....	4,762,753	57,758,292	62,064
Galveston, Houston and Henderson	50.000	1,000,000	20,000	2,600,000	49,000	....	19,723	3,619,723	69,304
Gulf, Colorado and Santa Fé	1,068.000	4,860,000	4,310	21,160,000	18,800	....	7,610,161	33,330,161	31,993
Gulf, Western Texas and Pacific	111.200	500,000	4,497	2,224,000	20,000	....	14,869	2,738,869	24,639
Houston and Brazos Valley	16.420	52,870	3,220	....	....	....	46,914	99,784	6,077
Houston and Texas Central	452.550	10,000,000	22,097	16,463,420	36,379	....	732,489	27,195,909	60,095
Houston East and West Texas	192.000	1,940,000	10,000	2,688,000	14,000	....	29,982	4,657,982	24,156
International and Great Northern	775.400	9,755,000	12,581	17,898,500	23,083	....	1,164,708	28,818,208	37,162
Kildare and Linden	13.300	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
Lake Creek	8.000	30,000	3,750	....	....	....	....	30,000	3,750
Lancaster Tap	4.760	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
Louisiana Western Extension	6.700	50,000	7,463	134,000	20,000	....	16,334	200,334	29,901
Missouri, Kansas and Texas of Texas	839.980	3,770,000	10,447	33,975,000	40,472	....	1,398,001	44,143,001	52,584
New York, Texas and Mexican	91.000	639,040	6,924	1,518,000	16,681	....	631,243	2,779,283	30,542
North Galveston, Houston and Kansas City	15.690	16,000	1,020	....	....	....	177,072	193,072	12,305
Pan-American	9.520	30,000	3,151	200,000	21,000	....	....	230,000	24,160
Paris and Great Northern	16.940	590,000	29,516	339,000	20,012	....	142,439	981,439	57,936
Paris, Marshall and Sabine Pass	15.500	150,000	9,677	156,000	10,065	....	57,451	363,451	23,448
Pecos River	54.000	691,200	12,800	696,000	12,889	....	17,556	1,404,756	26,014
Rio Grande	22.500	255,000	11,342	109,000	4,845	....	....	364,200	16,187
Rio Grande and Eagle Pass	27.750	600,000	21,622	598,000	21,549	....	2,945	1,200,945	43,277
Rio Grande and El Paso	20.150	200,000	9,926	500,000	24,814	....	177,026	877,026	43,525
Sabine and East Texas	....	300,000	....	....	....	....	....	300,000	....
St. Louis, Southwestern of Texas	551.760	2,500,000	4,531	14,167,500	25,680	357,170	915,653	17,940,323	32,518
San Antonio and Aransas Pass	657.400	5,000,000	7,674	17,200,000	25,022	622,995	636,794	23,459,689	34,128
Sherman, Shreveport and Southern	155.000	1,551,500	10,011	3,100,000	20,000	....	60,107	4,711,607	30,394
Southern Kansas of Texas	100.110	604,500	6,020	1,583,000	15,765	....	473,976	2,661,476	26,566
South Galveston and Gulf Shore	4.000	80,400	20,100	....	....	....	24,631	104,031	26,008
Texas and Pacific and South	[illegible]	[illegible]	3,794	[illegible]	[illegible]	....	[illegible]	[illegible]	11,111
Texas and S. A. [illegible]	[illegible]	5,000,000	41,255	5,129,000	42,373	....	491,643	10,620,643	87,813

Texas and Pacific	1,030.000	$28,296,856	$27,884	$10,631,533	$39,073	$211,229	$981,250	$70,870,879	$68,804
Texas Central	178.000	4,000,000	22,472	2,000,000	11,236	....	34,868	6,034,505	33,993
Texas City Terminal	4.200	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
Texas, Louisiana and Eastern	27.880	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
Texas Mexican	164.609	2,520,000	15,373	2,340,000	14,390	....	1,356,436	6,196,436	38,104
Texas-Mexican Northern	1.340	100,000	74,627	....	....	....	....	100,000	74,624
Texas Midland	52.000	500,000	9,604	990,000	17,288	....	13,638	1,413,038	27,154
Texas, Sabine Valley and Northwestern	40.000	475,000	11,875	523,000	13,075	....	79,132	1,077,132	26,928
Texas Transportation	7.000	25,400	3,595	....	....	....	348,992	374,392	47,380
Texas Trunk	51.580	....	....	....	....	....	108,378	108,378	....
Texas Western	52.000	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
Tyler Southeastern	88.000	250,000	2,822	990,000	11,174	....	71,540	1,311,540	14,803
Velasco Terminal	20.000	343,100	17,155	....	....	....	19,813	362,913	18,146
Waco and Northwestern	51.000	....	....	....	....	....	45,579	45,579	....
Weatherford, Mineral Wells and Northwestern	25.000	500,000	21,739	500,000	21,739	....	97,450	1,097,450	47,715
Wichita Valley	51.000	1,020,000	20,000	769,000	15,078	....	85,935	1,874,935	36,763
Totals	9,198.135	$145,120,206	....	$231,941,190	....	$1,351,304	$24,313,353	$392,726,113	....

RAILROAD STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 10.

Capital Stock, Bonds, and Indebtedness of Railroads in Texas, June 30, 1895.

Names of Railroads.	Mileage Owned in Texas.	Capital Stock.		Bonds.		Other Indebtedness.		Summary.	
		Amount Outstanding.	Amount per Mile for Road Owned.	Amount Outstanding.	Amount per Mile for Road Owned.	Equipment Trust Obligations.	Current Liabilities.	Total Amount of Capital Stock and Debts.	Amount per Mile for Road Owned.
Austin and Northwestern	105.40	$1,016,000	$9,640	$1,920,000	$18,216	....	$54,302	$2,990,302	$28,371
Brownsville and Gulf	1.01	25,000	24,752	....	....	....	....	25,000	24,752
Central Texas and Northwestern	12.36	200,000	16,181	180,000	14,563	....	5,622	385,622	31,199
Chicago, Rock Island and Texas	92.00	7,520	82	1,395,000	14,837	....	514,721	1,887,241	20,514
De Kalb and Red River	10.72	10,000	933	....	....	....	....	10,000	933
Denison and Washita Valley	6.40	91,258	14,259	209,205	46,751	....	....	300,463	61,010
Fort Worth and Denver City	454.44	9,375,000	20,631	8,176,000	17,993	$160,000	1,273,495	18,984,495	41,778
Fort Worth and Denver Terminal	6.88	200,000	29,070	200,000	29,070	....	....	400,000	58,140
Fort Worth and New Orleans	49.05	300,000	7,491	709,000	17,703	....	336,499	1,345,499	33,595
Fort Worth and Rio Grande	146.16	3,108,100	21,265	2,923,000	19,999	....	339,036	6,370,136	43,583
Galveston and Western	13.10	317,000	24,198	....	....	....	21,528	338,528	25,865
Galveston, Harrisburg and San Antonio	919.59	27,084,400	29,453	25,883,000	28,146	....	5,864,368	58,830,768	64,075
Galveston, Houston and Henderson	50.00	1,000,000	20,000	2,000,000	40,000	....	17,768	3,017,768	60,355

RAILROAD STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 10.—Continued.

Names of Railroads.	Mileage Owned in Texas.	Capital Stock.		Bonds.		Other Indebtedness.		Summary.	
		Amount Outstanding.	Amount per Mile for Road Owned.	Amount Outstanding.	Amount per Mile for Road Owned.	Equipment Trust Obligations.	Current Liabilities.	Total Amount of Capital Stock and Debts.	Amount per Mile for Road Owned.
Galveston, La Porte and Houston	53.37	$300,000	$5,621	. . . . .	. . . .	$14,211	$570,850	$885,061	$16,583
Gulf, Beaumont and Kansas City	55.26	500,000	9,058	$395,000	$7,156	16,860	154,220	1,066,080	19,313
Gulf, Colorado and Santa Fé	958.00	4,428,998	4,319	19,160,000	20,000	. . . .	8,306,642	31,895,642	32,981
Gulf, Western Texas and Pacific	111.20	500,000	4,496	2,224,000	20,000	. . . .	97,681	2,821,984	25,378
Heatne and Brazos Valley	16.42	52,870	3,220	. . . . .	. . . .	. . . .	5,645	58,515	3,564
Houston and Texas Central	452.55	10,000,000	22,097	16,363,450	35,837	. . . .	1,228,612	27,592,062	60,949
Houston East and West Texas	1[illegible].00	1,020,000	10,000	3,840,000	20,000	. . . .	293,493	6,054,493	31,528
International and Great Northern	775.42	9,755,000	12,581	18,343,234	23,656	. . . .	387,552	28,485,786	36,737
Louisiana Western Extension	6.79	50,000	7,664	134,000	20,000	. . . .	184,000	368,000	27,063
Missouri, Kansas and Texas of Texas	841.98	10,012,500	11,892	34,925,000	46,311	. . . .	2,670,151	46,707,651	55,474
New York, Texas and Mexican	61.00	630,040	6,924	1,518,000	16,651	. . . .	635,610	2,783,650	30,509
Pecos Valley	11.54	200,000	19,015	225,000	15,475	. . . .	. . . .	515,000	35,420
Paris and Great Northern	16.61	500,000	29,346	350,000	20,912	. . . .	92,138	942,138	51,657
Pecos River	54.00	691,200	12,800	660,000	12,889	. . . .	17,604	1,368,804	26,015
Rio Grande	21.50	255,200	11,342	76,726	3,410	. . . .	3,860	335,786	14,924
Rio Grande and Eagle Pass	27.39	600,000	21,926	598,000	21,833	. . . .	8,681	1,206,681	44,056
Rio Grande and El Paso	20.15	200,000	9,926	500,000	24,814	. . . .	238,536	938,536	46,577
St. Louis Southwestern of Texas	551.79	2,500,000	4,531	14,167,500	25,680	235,250	1,699,667	18,472,717	33,483
San Antonio and Aransas Pass	667.42	5,000,000	7,274	17,200,000	25,772	413,102	1,411,341	24,024,443	34,692
San Antonio and Gulf Shore	23.00	53,500	1,845	360,000	12,414	. . . .	7,085	420,585	14,503
Sherman, Shreveport and Southern	153.04	2,751,800	17,981	6,000,000	39,205	. . . .	66,559	8,817,359	57,615
Southern Kansas of Texas	160.41	604,500	6,020	1,583,000	15,765	. . . .	763,591	2,951,091	29,399
Sugar Land	14.20	142,000	10,000	. . . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	142,000	10,000
Texarkana and Fort Smith	19.86	29,337	1,872	269,466	24,813	. . . .	5,884	295,687	27,227
Texas and New Orleans	206.14	5,000,000	25,711	6,208,938	30,120	. . . .	460,424	11,669,362	58,064
Sabine and East Texas		300,000		. . . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .		
Texas and Pacific	1,039.99	28,999,856	27,884	40,619,259	39,061	201,369	515,438	70,332,922	67,634
Texas Central	175.00	3,974,000	22,709	599,000	3,857	. . . .	29,942	4,593,042	25,737
Texas-Mexican	107.62	2,500,000	15,373	2,340,000	14,389	. . . .	1,719,959	6,559,959	40,339
Texas-Mexican Northern	1.34	100,000	74,627	. . . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	100,000	74,627
Texas Midland	75.30	500,000	6,640	900,000	11,952	. . . .	639,359	2,039,359	27,083
Texas, Sabine Valley and Northwestern	49.00	475,000	11,875	523,000	13,075	. . . .	47,773	1,045,773	26,144
Texas and Sabine Valley									
Texas Transportation	7.00	28,400	3,595	350,000	44,304	. . . .	80,416	458,816	58,078
Tyler Southeastern	58.00	250,000	2,822	990,000	11,174	. . . .	137,518	1,377,518	15,548
Velasco Terminal	20.00	343,100	17,155	400,000	20,000	. . . .	41,657	784,757	39,238
Weatherford, Mineral Wells and Northwestern	23.00	500,000	21,739	500,000	21,739	. . . .	157,615	1,157,615	50,331
Wichita Falls	17.06	20,000	1,113	250,000	13,920	. . . .	. . . .	270,000	15,833
Wichita Valley	51.00	1,020,000	20,000	1,020,000	20,000	. . . .	93,117	2,133,117	41,826
Totals	9,022.79	$138,199,579	$15,317	$236,173,748	$26,175	$1,040,792	$30,884,834	$406,258,953	$45,030

RAILROAD STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 11.

Condensed Statement of Freight Hauled by the Railroads in Texas during the Year ended June 30, 1894.

Names of Railroads.	Freight Originating on Line of Road—Tons.	Freight Received from Connecting Lines—Tons.	Total Freight Tonnage.
Austin and Northwestern	122,589	22,629	145,218
Central Texas and Northwestern	28,390	131,918	160,308
Chicago, Rock Island and Texas	34,485	216,865	251,350
De Kalb and Red River	20,822	. . . . .	26,622
Fort Worth and Denver City	185,000	147,356	332,308
Fort Worth and New Orleans	29,705	119,259	148,964
Fort Worth and Rio Grande	14,082	77,901	91,983
Galveston and Western	318	. . . . .	318
Galveston, Harrisburg and San Antonio	452,680	681,532	1,134,212
Galveston, Houston and Henderson	72,468	192,509	265,034
Gulf, Beaumont and Kansas City	79,681	1,235	80,916
Gulf, Colorado and Santa Fé	670,697	805,375	1,476,072
Gulf, Western Texas and Pacific	44,692	25,183	70,165
Hearne and Brazos Valley	8,865	1,631	10,496
Houston and Texas Central	378,642	636,149	1,014,791
Houston East and West Texas	136,071	19,961	156,932
International and Great Northern	305,165	492,468	857,633
La Porte, Houston and Northern	. . . . .	196	196
Louisiana Western Extension	. . . . .	836,371	836,371
Missouri, Kansas and Texas of Texas	536,569	1,009,374	1,545,943
New York, Texas and Mexican	40,880	79,657	119,537
Paris and Great Northern	8,315	252,493	260,808
Paris, Marshall and Sabine Pass	12,390	734	13,124
Pecos River	176	12,145	12,321
Rio Grande	781	10,085	10,866
Rio Grande and Eagle Pass	25,275	. . . . .	25,275
Rio Grande and El Paso	76,757	91,772	168,529
St. Louis Southwestern of Texas	276,598	258,704	535,302
San Antonio and Aransas Pass	313,212	130,904	444,116
Sherman, Shreveport and Southern	73,165	20,376	93,541
Southern Kansas of Texas	40,219	20,356	60,576
Texarkana and Fort Smith	41,855	3,874	45,729
Texas and New Orleans	322,693	1,055,552	1,478,245
Texas and Pacific	578,375	370,837	949,212
Texas Central	23,487	47,290	70,777
Texas, Louisiana and Eastern	7,789	390	8,169
Texas-Mexican	28,741	27,223	47,964
Texas Midland	15,097	9,035	29,632
Texas, Sabine Valley and Northwestern	34,077	4,153	38,227
Texas Transportation	2,812	55,053	57,865
Texas Trunk	. . . . .	. . . . .	27,910
Tyler Southeastern	43,560	14,451	58,382
Velasco Terminal	8,805	75,723	84,173
Waco and Northwestern	38,676	44,745	83,421
Weatherford, Mineral Wells and Northwestern	23,869	2,105	25,974
Wichita Valley	14,027	6,539	20,566
Totals	5,224,686	8,032,581	13,285,477

RAILROAD STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 12.

Condensed Statement of Freight Hauled by the Railroads in Texas during the Year ended June 30, 1895.

Names of Railroads.	Freight Originating on Line of Road—Tons.	Freight Received from Connecting Lines—Tons.	Total Freight Tonnage.
Austin and Northwestern	70,951	84,114	155,065
Central Texas and Northwestern	32,610	151,529	184,139
Chicago, Rock Island and Texas	32,694	188,772	221,466
De Kalb and Red River	21,341	. . . . .	21,341
Fort Worth and Denver City	188,917	171,590	360,507
Fort Worth and New Orleans	32,748	133,662	166,410
Fort Worth and Rio Grande	24,646	85,205	109,851
Galveston and Western	280	. . . . .	280
Galveston, Harrisburg and San Antonio	362,997	838,029	1,201,026
Galveston, Houston and Henderson	113,382	430,699	544,081
Galveston, La Porte and Houston	436	1,680	2,080
Gulf, Beaumont and Kansas City	212,019	3,285	215,304
Gulf, Colorado and Santa Fé	863,842	859,390	1,722,832
Gulf, Western Texas and Pacific	31,071	23,517	50,588
Hearne and Brazos Valley	11,562	1,548	13,110
Houston and Texas Central	438,835	714,440	1,153,275
Houston East and West Texas	32,934	148,841	181,775
International and Great Northern	433,303	505,628	938,931
Louisiana Western Extension	2,899	1,011,920	1,014,819
Missouri, Kansas and Texas of Texas	679,006	1,123,747	1,802,753
New York, Texas and Mexican	47,149	75,792	122,941
Paris and Great Northern	8,629	244,928	253,557
Paris, Marshall and Sabine Pass	21,219	1,546	22,765
Pecos River	481	38,453	38,934
Rio Grande	1,015	7,665	8,680
Rio Grande and Eagle Pass	31,159	. . . . .	31,159
Rio Grande and El Paso	26,234	90,504	116,738
St. Louis Southwestern of Texas	317,267	316,045	633,312
San Antonio and Aransas Pass	390,551	161,619	552,170
San Antonio and Gulf Shore	. . . . .	450	450
Sherman, Shreveport and Southern	84,053	22,502	106,555
Southern Kansas of Texas	31,676	45,969	77,645
Sugar Land	12,543	12,890	25,433
Texarkana and Fort Smith	43,870	4,714	48,584
Texas and New Orleans	626,461	1,014,480	1,640,941
Texas and Pacific	634,633	471,055	1,105,688
Texas Central	52,003	44,713	96,716
Texas, Louisiana and Eastern	28,081	957	29,038
Texas-Mexican	17,944	37,129	55,073
Texas Midland	34,525	43,114	77,639
Texas, Sabine Valley and Northwestern	25,959	2,752	28,711
Texas Transportation	5,561	44,099	50,660
Texas Trunk	. . . . .	. . . . .	34,400
Tyler Southeastern	51,150	14,346	65,496
Velasco Terminal	4,724	54,614	59,338
Waco and Northwestern	52,888	70,189	123,077
Weatherford, Mineral Wells and Northwestern	35,932	5,918	41,850
Wichita Valley	18,360	9,543	27,903
Totals	6,233,440	9,323,024	15,691,[illegible]

RAILROAD STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 13.

Comparative Statement of the Quantities of Revenue-Yielding Freight Transported by the Railroads in Texas during the Two Years ended June 30, 1895. Classified as to Commodities, etc.

Commodities.	Tons Hauled during Year ended June 30, 1894.	Tons Hauled during Year ended June 30, 1895.	Increase, Latter Year—Tons.	Decrease, Latter Year—Tons.
Grain	760,065	683,110	....	76,955
Flour	363,412	408,030	45,488	....
Other mill products	79,465	87,405	7,940	....
Hay	105,841	93,478	....	12,363
Tobacco	16,888	15,745	....	1,113
Cotton	1,019,304	1,830,132	810,828	....
Cotton seed, meal, and cake	572,051	787,013	214,962	....
Rice	12,535	11,676	....	859
Fruits and vegetables	357,047	379,855	28,808	....
Other agricultural products	217,128	231,582	14,454	....
Live-stock	1,339,388	1,399,611	60,223	....
Dressed meats, poultry, game, and fish	37,551	37,421	....	130
Other packing-house products	71,524	82,778	11,254	....
Wool	68,887	73,179	4,293	....
Hides and leather	39,388	39,423	35	....
Other animal products	8,718	9,026	308	....
Coal and coke	1,435,370	1,742,134	306,764	....
Ores	149,504	107,442	....	42,062
Salt	54,564	52,549	....	2,015
Stone, sand, and other like articles	891,095	1,140,109	246,014	....
Other mineral products	21,054	743	....	23,311
Lumber	2,149,669	2,273,582	123,913	....
Shingles	80,868	81,551	683	....
Other forest products	441,298	552,012	110,714	....
Petroleum and other oils	160,[illegible]	212,561	51,881	....
Sugar and molasses	186,[illegible]72	204,160	17,488	....
Pig- and bloom-iron	13,152	16,603	....	479
Iron and steel rails	67,[illegible]43	96,446	....	4,397
Other castings and machinery	141,679	170,246	28,576	....
Bar- and sheet-metal	91,714	85,459	....	9,255
Cement, brick, and lime	146,172	152,795	6,623	....
Agricultural implements	29,382	32,157	2,775	....
Wagons, carriages, tools, etc.	32,605	43,392	11,187	....
Wines, liquors, and beer	216,172	231,444	15,272	....
Household goods and furniture	59,893	60,795	872	....
Other manufactures	245,173	393,620	148,447	....
Merchandise	1,109,054	1,223,152	114,109	....
Railroad material, not specified	114,393	210,670	96,267	....
Miscellaneous	453,509	452,558	....	951
Totals	13,255,477	15,591,262	2,480,278	174,493

RAILROAD STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 14.

Comparison of Gross Earnings, Operating Expenses, and Net Earnings from Operation of Railroads in Texas, for the Two Years ended June 30, 1894, and June 30, 1895.

Names of Railroads.	Gross Earnings from Operation—All Sources.		Operating Expenses.		Results from Operation.			
					Year ended June 30, 1894.		Year ended June 30, 1895.	
	Year ended June 30, 1894.	Year ended June 30, 1895.	Year ended June 30, 1894.	Year ended June 30, 1895.	Net Earnings.	Deficit.	Net Earnings.	Deficit.
Austin and Northwestern	$254,092.02	$250,287.54	$153,269.85	$152,151.42	$98,732.17	.....	$98,136.11	.....
Brownsville and Gulf	1,452.98	1,372.00	1,156.61	1,332.42	296.37	.....	39.58	.....
Central Texas and Northwestern	98,238.47	107,521.76	47,474.75	58,937.69	50,763.72	.....	48,584.07	.....
Chicago, Rock Island and Texas	364,802.09	415,271.09	254,867.99	267,648.84	109,994.10	.....	147,622.25	.....
De Kalb and Red River	6,972.14	5,330.82	6,924.41	4,894.55	48.03	.....	436.27	.....
El Paso Northern	1,775.16	166.32	1,832.84	168.98	.....	$57.68	.....	$2.66
Fort Worth and Denver City	1,256,044.33	1,326,852.57	995,469.37	919,435.93	288,336.46	.....	407,417.54	.....
Fort Worth and New Orleans	193,094.57	193,767.25	117,553.19	155,210.39	75,776.38	.....	38,556.86	.....
Fort Worth and Rio Grande	311,182.98	452,196.32	228,930.00	256,390.51	82,252.98	.....	195,805.81	.....
Galveston and Western	8,668.45	6,517.55	12,893.14	5,741.57	.....	3,694.69	.....	1,194.02
Galveston, Harrisburg and San Antonio	3,908,153.93	4,663,862.42	3,024,414.55	3,445,224.28	974,214.38	.....	1,518,638.14	.....
Galveston, Houston and Henderson	463,228.37	630,676.29	342,376.75	472,734.57	60,841.62	.....	163,941.72	.....
Galveston, La Porte and Houston	710.93	11,497.24	1,643.76	24,172.72	.....	982.83	.....	12,675.48
Gulf, Beaumont and Kansas City	18,857.33	52,409.83	13,908.69	42,711.31	4,948.64	.....	9,698.52	.....
Gulf, Colorado and Santa Fé (entire line)	4,719,796.28	5,355,210.33	4,035,027.84	4,329,739.52	684,870.46	.....	1,025,507.81	.....
Gulf Western Texas and Pacific	91,267.29	90,60[illegible]	154,775.22	137,137.94	.....	63,507.93	.....	46,453.95
Heanne and Brazos Valley	31,725.91	39,872.05	14,674.36	15,796.04	17,051.55	.....	23,076.01	.....
Houston and Texas Central	3,317,165.97	4,009,192.11	2,324,932.23	2,592,341.42	1,104,233.44	.....	1,416,760.89	.....
Houston East and West Texas	442,729.35	569,774.80	275,148.46	342,655.39	167,609.89	.....	227,119.50	.....
International and Great Northern	3,107,761.17	3,491,662.92	2,369,446.40	2,366,395.44	738,317.17	.....	1,125,267.48	.....
Lake Charles Tap	4,699.80	7,770.00	9,171.03	8,785.03	.....	4,590.23	.....	1,064.99
Louisiana Western Extension	62,918.19	68,639.31	32,793.45	34,791.74	30,124.74	.....	33,037.60	.....
Missouri, Kansas and Texas of Texas	3,939,409.02	4,335,738.82	3,472,555.62	3,869,051.49	513,874.40	.....	466,077.33	.....
New York, Texas and Mexican	258,981.86	275,111.79	159,332.82	153,922.04	99,615.04	.....	121,189.75	.....
Paris and Great Northern	82,740.63	126,281.98	62,015.52	59,687.11	20,725.11	.....	66,594.87	.....
Paris, Marshall and Sabine Pass	13,867.84	15,057.48	13,800.60	13,290.24	67.24	.....	1,767.24	.....
Pecos River	53,174.31	68,220.79	32,573.77	39,008.94	20,600.44	.....	29,211.76	.....
Rio Grande	44,295.52	45,017.38	25,268.52	20,814.53	18,996.70	.....	25,102.85	.....
Rio Grande and Eagle Pass	20,779.72	24,914.22	21,935.27	24,730.38	.....	1,160.55	.....	166.06
Rio Grande and El Paso	79,153.94	76,705.71	80,559.67	69,325.72	.....	1,345.04	7,379.99	.....
St. Louis Southwestern of Texas	1,674,167.30	1,923,915.23	1,642,511.88	1,613,409.19	44,796.42	.....	310,016.13	.....
San Antonio and Aransas Pass	1,712,640.89	2,154,255.04	1,379,521.24	1,400,575.00	33,119.62	.....	753,679.14	.....
San Antonio and Gulf Shore	.....	982.32	.....	2,330.61	.....	.....	.....	1,348.29
Sherman, Shreveport and Southern	318,809.00	366,023.07	241,239.94	276,500.95	77,549.06	.....	89,522.12	.....
South in Kansas of Texas	66,302.21	72,884.01	129,396.98	117,911.09	.....	63,084.77	.....	45,027.08
Sugar Land	14,475.10	17,459.19	6,382.15	7,814.02	8,142.95	.....	9,616.17	.....
Texarkana and Fort Smith	17,135.27	12,235.71	13,098.84	8,485.31	4,219.73	.....	3,750.40	.....
Texas and New Orleans	1,570,875.95	1,639,476.20	935,531.90	983,354.99	635,281.05	.....	656,071.41	.....
Texas and Pacific	4,573,096.29	4,927,446.31	3,635,505.08	3,738,090.36	938,591.21	.....	1,189,360.05	.....
Texas Central	253,885.20	334,014.84	169,107.85	183,651.62	84,748.35	.....	161,363.22	.....
Texas, Louisiana and Eastern	7,826.01	29,002.29	9,471.63	26,540.18	.....	1,638.59	.....	2,463.61
Texas-Mexican	127,895.20	134,630.68	147,033.04	140,215.99	.....	19,207.74	.....	5,585.22
Texas Midland	69,651.62	193,577.15	67,528.93	214,323.93	.....	6,377.31	.....	20,746.78
Texas, Sabine Valley and Northwestern	51,917.72	46,597.95	48,096.36	34,041.52	3,821.36	.....	12,556.43	.....
Texas Transportation	22,928.32	35,797.11	11,517.12	11,073.24	11,411.20	.....	24,723.87	.....
Texas Trunk	64,472.88	80,970.02	64,377.88	61,480.00	95.00	.....	18,489.12	.....
Texas Western	.....	12,214.41	.....	18,275.99	.....	.....	.....	6,011.45
Tyler Southeastern	199,862.75	125,508.50	108,648.23	137,489.59	1,214.52	.....	.....	11,891.09
Velasco Terminal	46,344.68	30,168.00	45,517.74	44,391.50	.....	5,173.16	.....	14,002.66
Waco and Northwestern	219,668.75	395,528.87	122,875.24	137,457.70	96,793.51	.....	168,071.17	.....
Weatherford, Mineral Wells and Northwestern	56,903.69	55,182.83	23,788.47	32,237.02	13,218.12	.....	23,105.81	.....
Wichita Valley	59,753.80	69,884.15	25,291.23	21,677.19	25,490.57	.....	38,816.96	.....
Totals	$31,[illegible]	$36,[illegible]	$27,[illegible]	$28,[illegible]	$7,[illegible]	$171,[illegible]	$10,[illegible]	$160,[illegible]

RAILROAD STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 15.

Summary of Valuations of Railroads in Texas by the Railroad Commission of Texas, to December 26, 1895.

Names of Railroads.	Mileage Valued.	Aggregate Valuation.	Average Value per Mile.
Austin and Northwestern	105.56	$1,753,694.22	$16,580.53
Central Texas and Northwestern	12.36	212,110.50	17,161.04
Chicago, Rock Island and Texas	92.00	1,833,202.12	19,926.11
De Kalb and Red River	11.00	47,375.49	4,306.86
El Paso Northern	10.08	75,618.29	7,414.30
Fort Worth and Denver City	454.13	5,771,882.42	12,700.69
Fort Worth and New Orleans	41.65	573,600.66	13,759.58
Fort Worth and Rio Grande	143.10	2,003,759.32	14,000.67
Galveston, Harrisburg and San Antonio	919.06	16,142,257.15	17,563.92
Galveston, Houston and Henderson	48.85	1,527,023.07	31,259.42
Gulf, Beaumont and Kansas City	57.62	567,409.95	9,845.94
Gulf, Colorado and Santa Fé	957.74	16,465,718.48	17,129.61
Gulf, Western Texas and Pacific	109.67	1,318,081.80	12,018.62
Hearne and Brazos Valley	16.42	106,165.75	6,463.53
Houston and Texas Central	452.60	9,588,903.28	21,186.26
Houston East and West Texas	190.69	2,042,692.36	10,712.11
International and Great Northern	771.16	13,642,968.62	18,060.00
Louisiana Western Extension	6.81	109,551.16	16,086.81
Missouri, Kansas and Texas of Texas	837.91	13,437,449.80	16,036.85
New York, Texas and Mexican	91.57	1,693,459.19	12,653.12
Pan Handle	14.54	100,677.83	6,924.93
Paris and Great Northern	16.18	288,718.32	17,844.15
Pecos River	54.13	392,404.65	7,249.37
Rio Grande	22.17	310,531.09	14,007.71
Rio Grande and Eagle Pass	26.83	234,695.11	8,727.96
Rio Grande and El Paso	29.15	481,524.33	23,911.88
Sabine and East Texas	102.03	896,366.73	8,787.27
St. Louis Southwestern of Texas	531.78	8,862,293.18	16,061.28
San Antonio and Aransas Pass	687.67	8,677,698.37	12,618.98
Sherman, Shreveport and Southern	150.61	1,610,416.60	10,724.12
Southern Kansas of Texas	100.41	1,090,593.75	10,861.41
Sugar Land	14.12	109,415.22	7,748.95
Texarkana and Fort Smith	9.96	198,793.28	.....
Texas and New Orleans	105.45	3,619,645.89	34,326.18
Texas and Pacific	1,039.33	17,539,669.31	17,059.73
Texas Central	175.95	2,343,666.47	13,318.49
Texas, Louisiana and Eastern	29.60	234,627.23	7,926.33
Texas Midland	74.89	940,910.07	12,563.89
Texas and Sabine Valley	2.00	17,045.43	8,522.72
Texas, Sabine Valley and Northwestern	36.41	381,860.97	10,486.21
Texas Transportation	7.90	154,951.16	19,614.97
Texas Trunk	50.5	473,602.50	9,343.66
Tyler Southeastern	88.60	974,748.98	10,321.45
Velasco Terminal	20.00	227,527.13	11,376.35
Waco and Northwestern	54.40	714,728.49	13,138.39
Weatherford, Mineral Wells and Northwestern	23.00	327,408.84	14,238.63
Wichita Valley	51.36	486,708.26	9,477.57
Totals	8,859.87	$140,376,122.43	$15,844.04

COMMERCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 16.

Showing Transactions at the Port of Galveston for the Years 1894, 1895, and 1896.

YEAR ENDING JUNE 30, 1894.

Number of vessels entered from foreign ports	191
Number of vessels cleared for foreign ports	216
Number of vessels entered from domestic ports	303
Number of vessels cleared for domestic ports	255

Value of exports—

Domestic	$34,661,958
Foreign	134,816

RECEIPTS FROM ALL SOURCES.

Duties on imports	$71,197.28
Tonnage tax	11,925.72
Fines, penalties, and forfeitures	288.63
Miscellaneous customs receipts	52.06
Storage, labor, and cartage	1,005.14
Official fees	1,332.56
Total	$85,801.45

COMMERCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 16.—Continued.

YEAR ENDING JUNE 30, 1895.

Number of vessels entered from foreign ports	269	Value of exports—	
Number of vessels cleared for foreign ports	307	Domestic	$41,765,353
Number of vessels entered from domestic ports	369	Foreign	7,07[illegible]
Number of vessels cleared for domestic ports	289		

RECEIPTS FROM ALL SOURCES.

Duties on imports	$65,011.48
Tonnage tax	18,473.57
Fines, penalties, and forfeitures	473.20
Miscellaneous customs receipts	116.75
Storage, labor, and cartage	638.27
Official fees	1,953.99
Total	$87,567.17

YEAR ENDING JUNE 30, 1896.

Number of vessels entered from foreign ports	216	Value of exports—	
Number of vessels cleared for foreign ports	216	Domestic	$36,373,445
Number of vessels entered from domestic ports	302	Foreign	57,073
Number of vessels cleared for domestic ports	219		

RECEIPTS FROM ALL SOURCES.

Duties on imports	$146,466.62
Tonnage tax	14,193.08
Fines, penalties, and forfeitures	597.50
Miscellaneous customs receipts	537.35
Storage, labor, and cartage	1,971.02
Official fees	1,552.32
Total	$165,197.89

EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 17.

Showing Scholastic Population and Apportionment of School Fund for the Year 1892–93.

Total scholastic population over eight and under sixteen years of age for scholastic year 1892–93	605,417
State apportionment per capita	5.00
Total State appropriation to counties, cities, and towns	$3,027,085

226 COUNTIES, 160 CITIES AND TOWNS COMBINED.

	Scholastic Population.		State Apportionment
Number of white males	234,030	453,732 white.	$2,268,660
Number of white females	219,702		
Number of colored males	76,765	151,685 colored.	758,425
Number of colored females	74,920		
Grand total	605,417		$3,027,085

153 DISTRICT COUNTIES, OUTSIDE OF CITIES AND TOWNS.

Number of white males	129,367	248,435 white.	$1,242,175
Number of white females	119,068		
Number of colored males	24,605	48,239 colored.	241,195
Number of colored females	23,634		
Total in district counties	296,674		$1,483,370

73 COMMUNITY COUNTIES, NOT INCLUDING CITIES AND TOWNS.

Number of white males	60,759	115,654 white	$578,270
Number of white females	54,924		
Number of colored males	37,422	73,311 colored.	366,555
Number of colored females	35,889		
Total in community counties	188,965		$944,825

EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 17.—Continued.

100 CITIES AND TOWNS, OR INDEPENDENT DISTRICTS.

	Scholastic Population.		State Apportionment.
Number of white males	44,133	89,643 white.	$438,215
Number of white females	45,510		
Number of colored males	14,738	30,135 colored.	150,675
Number of colored females	15,397		
Total for cities and towns	119,778		$588,890
Total of district counties, community counties, and cities and towns	605,495		$3,027,085

EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 18.

Showing Scholastic Population and Apportionment of School Fund for Scholastic Year of 1893–94.

Total scholastic population over eight and under sixteen years of age	630,303
State apportionment per capita	$4.50
Amount of State appropriation to counties, cities, and towns	2,836,363.50

REPORTS FROM 227 COUNTIES AND 172 CITIES AND TOWNS.

	Scholastic Population.		State Apportionment.
Total number of white males	213,927	472,963 white.	$2,128,333.50
Total number of white females	229,036		
Total number of colored males	78,859	157,340 colored.	708,030.00
Total number of colored females	78,481		
Grand total	630,303		$2,836,363.50

DISTRICT COUNTIES, 200—CITIES AND TOWNS NOT INCLUDED.

Number of white males	164,717	316,509 white.	$1,424,290.50
Number of white females	151,792		
Number of colored males	42,760	84,880 colored.	381,960.00
Number of colored females	42,120		
Total in district counties	401,389		$1,806,250.50

COMMUNITY COUNTIES, 27—CITIES AND TOWNS NOT INCLUDED.

Number of white males	39,646	58,841 white.	$264,784.50
Number of white females	19,195		
Number of colored males	19,762	38,771 colored.	174,469.50
Number of colored females	19,009		
Total in community counties	97,612		$439,254.00
Total of district and community counties—cities and towns not included	498,974		$2,245,504.50

CITIES AND TOWNS IN THE DISTRICT COUNTIES, 138.

Number of white males	16,496	33,129 white.	$149,080.50
Number of white females	16,633		
Number of colored males	6,471	13,251 colored.	59,643.00
Number of colored females	6,753		
Total for cities and towns in district counties	46,385		$208,723.50

CITIES AND TOWNS IN COMMUNITY COUNTIES, 34.

Number of white males	4,878	9,453 white.	$42,538.50
Number of white females	4,575		
Number of colored males	2,381	4,747 colored.	21,361.50
Number of colored females	2,366		
Total of cities and towns in community counties	14,200		$63,900.00

TOTAL OF 172 CITIES AND TOWNS.

Total number of white males	21,374	42,582 white.	$191,619.00
Total number of white females	21,208		
Total number of colored males	8,852	17,998 colored.	81,004.50
Total number of colored females	9,146		
Total of all cities and towns	60,580		$272,623.50

EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 19.

Showing Enumeration and Enrolment of Children for 1892–93.

	White.			Colored.			Grand Total.
	Male.	Female.	Total.	Male.	Female.	Total.	
Children enumerated in—							
District counties	119,875	111,868	231,443	20,289	20,165	40,454	271,[illegible]
Community counties	51,797	47,896	99,693	30,529	29,693	60,319	160,[illegible]
District and community counties	174,672	159,574	334,246	50,815	50,158	100,973	432,[illegible]
Cities and towns	35,625	36,619	72,244	11,595	12,252	23,847	96,[illegible]
State at large	207,297	195,893	403,190	62,410	62,410	124,820	528,010
Enrolment of children of school age—							
District counties	104,340	99,442	203,782	17,290	18,175	35,465	239,247
Community counties	44,275	42,755	87,030	29,111	29,799	58,907	145,937
District and community counties	148,615	142,197	290,812	46,401	47,974	94,372	385,184
Cities and towns	29,202	32,933	61,135	7,167	9,609	17,571	78,706
State at large	177,817	174,130	351,947	54,093	57,580	111,943	463,890
Children over school age—							
District counties	10,530	8,217	18,847	1,006	1,055	2,061	20,908
Community counties	4,959	3,954	8,912	1,066	1,579	2,645	11,557
District and community counties	15,586	12,171	27,757	2,072	2,634	4,706	32,463
Cities and towns	2,025	2,141	4,166	286	381	667	4,833
State at large	17,611	14,312	31,923	2,358	3,385	6,613	38,536
Children under school age—							
District counties	11,677	11,613	23,290	941	954	1,895	25,185
Community counties	4,865	4,807	9,672	1,884	2,103	3,984	13,656
District and community counties	16,542	16,420	32,962	2,825	3,057	5,879	38,841
Cities and towns	3,055	3,154	6,209	467	665	1,032	7,171
State at large	19,327	19,574	39,401	3,289	3,622	6,911	46,312
Total enrolment—							
District counties	126,547	119,272	245,919	19,237	20,184	39,421	285,340
Community counties	54,098	51,516	105,612	32,058	33,878	65,936	171,548
District and community counties	180,645	170,788	351,531	51,165	54,062	105,227	456,758
Cities and towns	34,512	37,228	71,740	8,695	10,525	19,210	90,950
State at large	215,255	208,016	423,271	60,880	64,587	125,467	548,738

EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 20.

Showing the Enrolment of Pupils within School Age from Eight to Sixteen, inclusive, and of those over and under School Age, for the Scholastic Year beginning September 1, 1893, and ending August 31, 1894.

	White.			Colored.			Grand Total.
	Male.	Female.	Total.	Male.	Female.	Total.	
Enrolment in 200 district counties—							
The number of pupils within school age	136,688	130,049	266,737	32,407	34,080	66,487	333,[illegible]
The number of pupils over school age	12,579	7,865	20,235	1,811	1,635	3,146	[illegible]
The number of pupils under school age	14,304	14,701	29,605	1,745	1,801	3,446	[illegible]
Total enrolment in district counties	163,971	152,616	316,577	35,963	37,516	73,079	[illegible]
Enrolment in 76 community counties—							
The number of pupils within school age	25,744	23,555	49,339	15,576	16,641	32,490	[illegible]
The number of pupils over school age	2,667	2,596	5,263	1,265	1,134	2,396	[illegible]
The number of pupils under school age	2,773	2,723	5,496	1,666	1,155	2,821	[illegible]
Total enrolment in community counties	31,184	29,714	61,095	18,228	18,905	37,131	[illegible]
Enrolment in 200 district and 76 community counties—							
The number of pupils within school age	162,432	154,637	319,069	48,283	50,604	98,977	[illegible]
The number of pupils over school age	15,246	10,479	25,802	2,767	2,769	5,536	[illegible]
The number of pupils under school age	17,677	17,424	35,101	2,741	2,960	5,687	[illegible]
Total enrolment in district and community counties	195,355	182,540	377,672	53,791	56,419	110,210	[illegible]
Enrolment in 172 independent districts—							
The number of pupils within school age	36,768	39,843	76,609	10,297	12,576	22,873	[illegible]
The number of pupils over school age	1,620	1,371	2,995	208	211	419	[illegible]
The number of pupils under school age	3,374	3,537	6,911	559	630	1,189	[illegible]
Total enrolment in independent districts	41,762	44,751	86,516	11,044	13,476	24,520	[illegible]

EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 20.—Continued.

	White.			Colored.			Grand Total.
	Male.	Female.	Total.	Male.	Female.	Total.	
Enrolment in 226 counties and 172 independent districts—							
Total number of pupils within school age	199,198	194,480	393,678	58,580	63,270	121,850	515,528
Total number of pupils over school age	12,572	11,625	24,197	2,675	3,610	6,285	34,482
Total number of pupils under school age	20,951	20,762	41,713	3,260	3,628	6,888	48,598
Grand total enrolment in the public schools	232,721	226,867	459,588	64,035	69,885	134,720	598,608
Teachers employed in—							
The district counties	3,951	3,101	7,052	942	560	1,502	8,554
The community counties	780	516	1,296	392	247	639	1,935
The district and community counties	4,731	3,617	8,348	1,334	807	2,141	10,489
The independent districts	333	1,279	1,612	165	196	361	1,973
Total number of teachers employed in the public schools	5,064	4,896	9,960	1,499	1,003	2,502	12,462

EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 21.

Showing the Net Amount apportioned from State and County Funds, and Value of School Property for the Year beginning September 1, 1892, and ending August 31, 1893.

	White.	Colored.	Total.
Net amount apportioned from State and county fund—			
District counties			$1,623,388.71
Community counties			917,664.58
District and community counties			2,541,070.29
Cities and towns			607,551.63
State at large			3,148,624.82
Average per capita from State and county fund in—			
District counties			5.71
Community counties			5.19
District and community counties			5.51
Cities and towns			5.51
State at large			5.51
Value of school-houses built during the year in—			
District counties	$87,273.03	$4,576.00	91,849.03
Community counties	14,366.36	8,340.65	22,707.01
District and community counties	101,639.39	12,916.65	114,556.04
Cities and towns	395,345.65	69,200.00	464,545.65
State at large	496,985.04	82,116.65	579,099.69
Value of school-houses and grounds owned by deed in—			
District counties	1,204,720.41	62,533.00	1,267,253.41
Community counties	394,632.66	108,475.00	503,107.66
District and community counties	1,619,652.47	171,008.00	1,790,660.47
Cities and towns	3,179,663.65	360,561.00	3,540,224.65
State at large	4,799,316.12	530,569.00	5,329,885.12
Value of school furniture in—			
District counties	296,319.73	29,742.08	326,061.81
Community counties	76,148.99	47,692.88	123,841.84
District and community counties	372,468.72	77,434.96	449,903.68
Cities and towns	1,570,573.79	344,520.00	2,215,457.79
State at large	1,942,042.51	421,954.96	2,364,997.47
Value of libraries and apparatus in—			
District counties	44,953.46	7,586.35	52,544.81
Community counties	18,647.17	12,449.50	30,096.67
District and community counties	63,600.63	20,035.85	83,641.48
Cities and towns	49,279.38	3,755.40	53,034.78
State at large	112,874.01	23,791.25	135,576.23
Total value of school property in—			
District counties	1,565,966.60	99,861.43	1,665,860.03
Community counties	489,128.19	168,017.38	657,145.57
District and community counties	2,055,128.79	268,178.81	2,323,305.60
Cities and towns	3,417,918.77	377,888.40	3,795,807.16
State at large	5,473,047.56	645,777.21	6,118,824.76

EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 22.

Showing the Amount Paid Teachers from the Public and Private Funds for the School Year beginning September 1, 1892, and ending August 31, 1893.

	White Teachers.			Colored Teachers.			Grand Total.
	Male.	Female.	Total.	Male.	Female.	Total.	
Amounts paid teachers in district counties, from—							
Public funds	$791,531.77	$472,622.85	$1,264,154.62	$120,332.60	$62,202.25	$186,624.85	$1,450,779.47
Tuition	42,377.86	17,352.59	59,730.45	1,681.14	519.27	2,001.11	61,731.56
Total paid in district counties	833,909.63	489,973.44	1,323,885.07	121,813.74	66,812.22	188,625.96	1,512,511.03
Amounts in community counties, from—							
Public funds	347,351.66	197,065.25	544,416.91	217,981.82	89,203.81	306,985.63	851,401.54
Private funds	20,765.92	9,401.73	29,870.65	2,524.23	1,313.35	3,837.58	33,708.23
Total in community counties	368,117.58	206,469.98	574,287.56	220,505.05	90,517.16	310,822.21	885,109.77
Amounts in district and community counties, from—							
Public funds	1,138,883.43	669,688.10	1,808,571.53	338,313.42	155,406.06	493,609.48	2,302,181.01
Private funds	63,143.78	26,457.32	89,601.10	4,006.37	1,833.32	5,839.69	95,439.79
Total paid in district and community counties	1,202,027.21	696,145.42	1,898,172.63	342,119.79	157,239.38	499,448.17	2,397,620.80
Amounts in cities and towns, from—							
Public funds	189,000.13	467,941.32	656,941.45	56,719.35	55,320.66	112,040.01	768,981.46
Private funds	11,134.35	6,225.55	17,359.90	122.50	631.60	754.10	18,114.00
Total paid in cities and towns	200,134.48	474,171.87	674,306.35	56,841.85	55,952.26	112,794.11	787,100.46
Amounts in all the State, from—							
Public funds	1,327,883.56	1,137,629.42	2,465,512.98	394,842.77	210,816.72	605,649.49	3,071,162.47
Private funds	74,278.13	32,682.87	106,961.00	4,127.87	2,464.92	6,592.79	113,553.79
Total paid teachers in the State	1,402,161.69	1,170,312.29	2,572,473.98	398,960.64	213,281.64	612,242.28	3,184,716.26
Average annual salary of teachers in—							
District counties	276.68	206.65	245.85	232.28	178.77	209.82	240.69
Community counties	247.22	181.16	212.80	237.14	180.41	217.21	218.11
District and community counties	266.65	198.31	236.91	235.40	179.39	214.31	231.81
Cities and towns	702.23	478.66	528.87	454.13	346.52	390.29	504.26
State at large	294.85	266.13	277.00	252.67	205.08	233.77	267.48
Average monthly salary of teachers in—							
District counties	55.89	41.75	49.67	54.65	39.57	49.34	49.63
Community counties	53.05	38.88	46.10	44.49	33.83	40.75	44.57
District and community counties	51.93	40.80	48.73	47.08	36.54	43.68	47.70
Cities and towns	81.84	55.82	61.04	52.67	38.74	41.66	58.18
State at large	59.53	48.44	51.59	48.24	37.64	43.65	49.81

EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 23.

Receipts and Expenditures of Available School Fund for the Scholastic Year beginning September 1, 1893, and ending August 31, 1894.

Receipts.

Balances from previous year	$367,225.31	
From State apportionment, 1892-93	76,839.42	
From State apportionment, 1893-94	2,248,452.20	
From county available fund	323,748.97	
From local school taxes in county districts	104,857.61	
From local school taxes in independent districts (cities and towns)	509,666.74	
From other sources	97,825.43	
From transfers	46,234.07	
		$3,924,789.75
Balances overpaid by treasurers		37,847.76
Grand total		$3,962,637.51

Disbursements.

Balances overpaid previous year	$17,126.58	
Paid teachers	2,897,296.16	
Paid for supervision	136,326.37	
Paid for buildings, grounds, etc.	121,643.78	
Paid for rent	24,379.98	
Paid for repairs	60,874.57	
Paid for furniture	110,663.09	
Paid for libraries and apparatus	30,860.38	
Paid for supplies, crayons, buckets, etc.	38,131.08	
Transferred to independent districts	65,590.99	
Transferred to other counties	18,584.71	
Paid treasurers' commissions	25,432.75	
Paid for taking scholastic census	2,864.45	
Paid for insurance	14,802.68	
Paid secretaries, janitors, and sanitation	50,331.69	
Paid for fuel and water	28,993.59	
Paid notes and interest	14,616.11	
Paid for printing	3,144.87	
Paid for other purposes	12,791.78	
Paid for assessing and collecting local school taxes	9,136.61	
Total disbursements	$3,675,501.62	
Balance on hand	287,135.89	
		$3,962,637.51
Amount disbursed by treasurers	$3,675,501.62	
Less amount of transfers	84,175.70	
Amount actually expended on public schools	$3,591,325.92	

Apportionment Account for the Year 1893-94.

Amount apportioned for the year 1893-94		$2,836,363.50
Amounts accounted for by treasurers	$2,248,452.20	
Balances due from State	527,412.65	
Balances due by counties and independent districts not reporting	60,498.65	
		$2,836,363.50

EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 24.

Showing the Amount Paid Teachers during the Scholastic Year beginning September 1, 1893, and ending August 31, 1894.

	White.			Colored.			Grand Total.
	Male.	Female.	Total.	Male.	Female.	Total.	
Amount paid teachers from public funds in—							
District counties	$973,284.29	$583,114.10	$1,561,398.39	$217,545.03	$99,363.67	$316,908.70	$1,878,307.09
Community counties	152,843.06	81,791.33	234,634.39	105,454.47	41,783.55	147,038.02	381,582.41
District and community counties	1,131,147.35	664,815.43	1,795,962.78	322,799.80	141,147.22	463,946.72	2,259,889.50
Independent districts	212,275.89	569,482.47	781,758.36	70,926.20	65,105.49	136,031.69	917,789.96
Total paid teachers from public funds	1,341,493.24	1,234,397.90	2,577,701.14	393,745.70	206,252.62	599,978.32	3,177,679.46
Amount paid teachers from private funds in—							
District counties	49,866.68	14,769.39	64,636.07	3,060.90	867.40	3,868.30	68,464.37
Community counties	17,063.39	5,530.32	18,093.71	1,873.67	631.45	2,505.12	21,094.83
District and community counties	62,700.07	20,934.71	83,635.78	4,874.87	1,498.35	6,373.47	89,469.20
Independent districts	17,964.92	11,181.84	29,146.76	870.70	982.25	1,852.25	30,999.01
Total paid teachers from private funds	80,754.99	31,487.55	112,242.54	5,744.57	2,481.10	8,225.67	120,468.21
Amount paid teachers from public and private funds in—							
District counties	1,028,110.97	597,883.49	1,625,994.46	220,545.93	100,231.07	320,777.00	1,946,771.46
Community counties	169,866.45	87,325.65	253,044.10	107,128.14	42,415.00	149,543.14	402,587.24
District and community counties	1,194,007.42	685,751.14	1,879,938.56	327,674.67	142,646.97	470,320.14	2,349,258.70
Independent districts	230,240.81	580,664.31	810,905.12	71,796.20	66,087.65	137,883.85	948,788.97
Grand total paid teachers	1,424,155.23	1,265,785.45	2,689,943.68	399,470.27	208,733.72	608,203.99	3,298,147.67

CHURCH STATISTICS, 1894.—TABLE No. 25.

Denominations.	Number of Organizations.	Number of Ministers.	Number of Members.	Number of Baptisms.	Church Edifices.		Parsonages.		Value of Church Property.	Sunday-Schools.				Universities.			Colleges.			High-Schools.			Home Missionaries.	Foreign Missionaries.	Contributed for Church Purposes.
					Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.		Number.	Number of Teachers.	Number of Pupils.	Contributions from.	Number.	Number of Teachers.	Number of Pupils.	Number.	Number of Teachers.	Number of Pupils.	Similar.	Number of Teachers.	Number of Pupils.	Value.			
Baptist	3,881	2,500	260,868	21,900					$2,162,809	1,289	5,017	58,075		1	22	714	$171,000	6	48	788	$300,750				82	10	$376,282.45
Catholic	75	103	174,000	8,205						370				1				31				2					3,000.00
Christian	75	90	5,800	700	50	$11,000	2	$1,000	800	47		2,900													4		124,064.66
Cumberland Presbyterian	627	446	30,382			675,143				234		15,738			12	350											597,160.65
Methodist Episcopal	1,870	1,977	170,077	17,658	1,244	7,016,739	523	369,589		1,389	10,514	88,899	$36,842.16	1	19	419	115,000	10	95	1,606	307,000	1	8	100	$10,000		142	
Methodist Protestant	351	192	10,005	1,165	80	80,000	25	12,500		56		1,698						1			40,500							11,600.00
Northern Presbyterian		56	3,335	254	41	110,000	5	10,000	9,750	39		3,418																116,257.00
Protestant Episcopal	69	63	7,071	514							510	4,015															
Southern Presbyterian		139	14,256	942	376						1,489	10,919															9,510.07
Swedish Lutheran	9	4	1,190	42	7		4			6		208													2		1,000.00
Unitarian			60							100	1	20															

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 26.

State Revenue Account, 1886–1887.

Receipts.	Currency.	Disbursements.	Currency.
To balance on hand August 31, 1886	$563,463.00	By disbursements in payment of warrants	$1,918,667.49
receipts from taxes of 1885 and prior years	362,936.10	transferred to available school fund	65,893.83
receipts from taxes of 1886	1,684,793.63	transferred to land sales account, Act 1879	15,928.88
receipts from taxes of 1887	16,721.87	transferred to redemption six per cent. bond account	100.00
receipts from fees, General Land Office	16,139.99	transferred to adjusting accounts	27,528.30
receipts from patent fees, General Land Office	49,867.07	By balance on hand August 31, 1887	888,970.44
receipts from government dues, General Land Office	97.87		
receipts from pre-emptions, General Land Office	3,851.71		
receipts from office fees, Comptroller's Office	434.17		
receipts from office fees, State Department	34,567.13		
receipts from office fees, Insurance Department	6,013.50		
receipts refunded to appropriations	1,751.95		
receipts from non-residents, organized counties	22,590.43		
receipts from State tax in unorganized counties	49,118.96		
receipts from sale of abstracts, Comptroller's Office	356.20		
receipts from special occupation tax, Comptroller's Office	77,224.00		
receipts from fees of lands to the United States	3.00		
receipts from surplus fees, Attorney-General's Office	810.19		
receipts from sale and rent of government property	110.25		
receipts from ex-Comptroller W. M. Brown, judgment	6,002.14		
receipts from sale of scrip, General Land Office	8.40		
receipts from indigent fees, etc., Lunatic Asylum	5,630.06		
receipts from indigent fees, North Texas Insane Asylum	1,413.05		
receipts from fines collected, Supreme Court, Tyler	15.85		
receipts from Asylum funds in part payment of appropriations for Asylums	18,919.00		
receipts from railroad companies under Act of February 23, 1884	11,712.22		
receipts from transfers adjusting accounts	635.17		
	$2,916,488.91		$2,916,488.91
To balance on hand August 31, 1887	$888,970.44		

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 26.—Continued.

State Revenue, 1891–1892.

RECEIPTS.	CASH.	DISBURSEMENTS.	CASH.
To balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1891	$1,007,193.87	By disbursements in payment of warrants drawn under appropriations	$2,555,927.80
To receipts from following sources, viz.:		transfer to available school fund, adjusting 1890 taxes	21,587.22
previous years' taxes	6,874.10	transfer to available school fund, adjusting 1891 taxes	90,000.00
1890 taxes	12,170.46	transfer to available University fund under general appropriation Act, 1891, and adjusting accounts	79,742.36
1891 taxes	1,834,822.44	transfer to interest and sinking fund Anderson County, adjusting deposits	18.02
1892 taxes	109,613.87	amounts overpaid by tax collectors and refunded them	3,203.30
office fees, General Land Office	13,283.10	balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1892	450,332.00
office fees, State Department	16,688.67		
office fees, Insurance Department	15,219.05		
special taxes and fees collected by Comptroller	119,285.00		
Attorney-General, miscellaneous fees, Court of Appeals	426.50		
non-indigent fees, North Texas Insane Asylum	1,144.85		
non-indigent fees, Lunatic Asylum	1,314.50		
surveyor's fees and interest refunded by counties	1,334.47		
amounts refunded to appropriations	3,789.41		
payments by railroad companies under Act of February 23, 1883	10,502.00		
interest and lease, Lunatic Asylum investments, transferred under appropriation Act 1891	7,644.83		
one-half of land sales, Act March, 1887	8,094.69		
one-half of land sales, Act July, 1889	12.02		
transfer from interest and sinking fund, Bexar County adjusting deposits	2.28		
transfer from available University fund adjusting accounts	22,377.59		
	$3,191,810.70		$3,191,810.70
To balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1892	$450,332.00		

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 26.—Continued.

State Revenue, 1892–1893.

RECEIPTS.	CASH.	DISBURSEMENTS.	CASH.
To balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1892	$450,332.00	By disbursements in payment of warrants drawn under appropriations	$2,428,219.18
To receipts from following sources, viz.:		transfer to available University, general appropriation Act 1893	7,500.00
previous years' taxes	1,679.61	transfer to Confederate Home, general appropriation Act 1893	19,777.82
1891 taxes	22,777.96	transfer to interest and sinking fund Anderson County, adjusting deposits	53.08
1892 taxes	1,679,475.16	transfer to interest and sinking fund Harrison County, adjusting deposits	84.32
1893 taxes	153,077.59	amounts overpaid by tax collectors and refunded them	2,869.02
office fees, General Land Office	13,066.55	balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1893	187,425.75
office fees, State Department	38,405.05		
office fees, Insurance Department	12,979.09		
special taxes and fees collected by Comptroller	114,254.11		
Attorney-General, misdemeanor fees, Court of Appeals	489.84		
non-indigent fees, etc., North Texas Insane Asylum	2,088.89		
non-indigent fees, Lunatic Asylum	1,416.05		
non-indigent fees, etc., Southwestern Insane Asylum	2,239.20		
payments by railroad companies under Act of February 23, 1883	10,793.05		
surveyor's fees and interest refunded by counties	760.60		
amounts refunded to appropriations	1,514.86		
refunded to penitentiary appropriation	50,000.00		
sale and lease of public property	1,273.00		
Transfers under General Appropriation Act of 1893:			
interest and lease, Blind, Deaf and Dumb, and Lunatic Asylum investments	62,898.75		
sales of product, House of Correction and Reformatory	12,371.09		
collectors' cost account	62.93		
tax titles account	605.12		
four per cent. bond sales	3.43		
five per cent. bond sales	38.65		
capitol land sales account	750.55		
capitol building fund	143.97		
certificate of public debt	256.73		
one-half of land sales, Act July 14, 1879	13.99		
one-half of land sales, Act March 29, 1887	8,230.01		
transfer from available University adjusting accounts	4,187.63		
	$2,645,930.07		$2,645,930.07
To balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1893	$187,425.75		

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 26.—Continued.

State Revenue, 1893–1894.

RECEIPTS.	CASH.	DISBURSEMENTS.	CASH.
To balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1893	$187,425.75	By disbursements in payment of warrants drawn under appropriations	$2,149,124.10
To receipts from following sources, viz.:		transfer to available University fund, general appropriation Act of 1893	7,500.00
previous years' taxes	348.77	transfer to available school fund, adjusting 1892 taxes	33,220.79
1892 taxes	1,531.40	transfer to available University fund, adjusting accounts	300.10
1893 taxes	1,647,897.87	transfer to interest and sinking fund Bexar County bond account, adjusting accounts	448.66
1894 taxes	138,271.64	amounts overpaid by tax collectors and refunded them	1,119.68
office fees, General Land Office	10,671.05	balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1894	38,443.85
office fees, State Department	40,237.45		
office fees, Insurance Department	11,578.30		
special taxes and fees collected by Comptroller	79,577.17		
special occupation tax collected by Treasurer	5,793.72		
Attorney-General, misdemeanor fees, Court of Appeals	310.00		
non-indigent fees, North Texas Insane Asylum	2,413.50		
non-indigent fees, Lunatic Asylum	1,448.30		
non-indigent fees, Southwestern Insane Asylum	2,742.25		
payments by railroad companies under Act of February 23, 1893	2,499.44		
surveyors' fees and interest refunded by counties	92.00		
matriculation fees, medical branch State University	6,724.00		
refunded appropriations	2,740.44		
miscellaneous	50.00		
transfer from available University, adjusting accounts	3,539.08		
Transfers under general appropriation Act of 1893:			
interest and lease, Blind, Deaf and Dumb, and Lunatic Asylum investments	32,595.98		
sale of products, House of Correction and Reformatory	1,349.38		
one-half of land sales, Act July 14, 1879	60.42		
one-half of land sales, Act March 29, 1887	6,368.87		
	$2,230,157.08		$2,230,157.08
To balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1894	$38,443.85		

RECAPITULATION OF RECEIPTS BY MONTHS.

September, 1893	$43,852.51	April, 1894	$180,342.05
October, 1893	70,019.95	May, 1894	128,673.25
November, 1893	117,121.18	June, 1894	55,767.03
December, 1893	234,912.09	July, 1894	44,353.88
January, 1894	375,535.14	August, 1894	86,240.53
February, 1894	460,379.49		
March, 1894	251,475.23	Total	$2,042,731.33

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 26.—Continued.

State Revenue, 1894–1895.

RECEIPTS.	CASH.	DISBURSEMENTS.	CASH.
To balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1894	$38,443.85	By disbursements in payments of warrants under appropriations	$2,021,666.56
To receipts from the following sources, viz.:		transfer to available school fund, adjusting 1893 taxes	75,000.00
previous years' taxes	8.47	amounts overpaid by tax collectors and refunded them	352.78
1893 taxes	4,388.59	balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1895	28,072.71
1894 taxes	1,610,785.14		
1895 taxes	181,903.74		
office fees, General Land Office	12,999.93		
office fees, State Department	59,185.72		
office fees, Insurance Department	12,252.25		
office fees, Supreme Court	2,437.90		
special taxes and fees collected by Comptroller	71,126.49		
special occupation taxes collected by State Treasurer	51,088.32		
Attorney-General, misdemeanor fees, Court of Appeals	410.00		
non-indigent fees, North Texas Insane Asylum	2,069.25		
non-indigent fees, State Lunatic Asylum	2,493.45		
non-indigent fees, Southwestern Insane Asylum	6,000.00		
matriculation fees, medical branch State University	2,500.00		
refunded to appropriation by Texas State Penitentiaries	30,000.00		
returned to appropriation, miscellaneous	515.59		
rent and sales of public property by Superintendent of Public Buildings and Grounds	1,200.00		
sale of steamer "Bessie Ross"	2,500.00		
Sale of products of House of Correction and Reformatory	1,218.85		
interest and lease, Blind, Deaf and Dumb, and Lunatic Asylum investments	25,161.47		
one-half of land sales, Act July 14, 1879	49.66		
one-half of land sales, Act March 29, 1887	6,673.48		
miscellaneous	452.15		
	$2,125,022.05		$2,125,022.05
To balance in State Treasury, August 31, 1895	$28,072.71		

RECAPITULATION OF RECEIPTS BY MONTHS.

September, 1894	$49,192.36	April, 1895	$167,316.59
October, 1894	51,768.60	May, 1895	99,292.24
November, 1894	151,215.97	June, 1895	89,956.22
December, 1894	151,468.19	July, 1895	85,997.08
January, 1895	446,744.38	August, 1895	104,617.08
February, 1895	444,669.12		
March, 1895	249,493.97	Total	$2,086,578.20

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 27.

Summary of all Taxes paid to the Comptroller's Office from September 1, 1891, to August 31, 1892.

Source.	State Tax.	State School Tax.	County Tax.	Unorganized County Special Tax.	Costs.	Tax Purchasers' Account.	Total.
Organized counties	$54,420.59	$18,295.66	$82,898.29	.....	.....	.....	$125,614.54
Unorganized counties	23,161.83	17,334.61	17,335.09	$2,275.19	.....	.....	60,108.72
Unorganized counties, tax sale	874.32	546.00	546.00	186.78	$133.25	.....	2,286.35
Cost of advertising, paid prior to sale	.....	.....	.....	.....	118.50	.....	118.50
Unorganized counties, redemption	252.32	155.07	155.52	26.54	35.05	$2,635.28	3,260.38
Railroad occupation	59,752.21	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	59,752.21
Palace car occupation	83.00	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	83.00
Express occupation	30,216.66	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	30,216.66
Express occupation	3,000.00	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	3,000.00
Telegraph occupation	7,767.20	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	7,767.20
Commercial agencies occupation	500.00	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	500.00
Stagecoach	168.68	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	168.68
Office fees	410.50	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	410.50
Abstracts, sale of	144.44	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	144.44
Grand total	$141,723.15	$36,331.34	$100,934.90	$2,488.51	$287.40	$2,635.28	$284,400.58
Summary by months—							
September, 1891	$364.68	$178.70	$937.12	$35.71	$10.00	$4.98	$1,231.19
October, 1891	6,785.79	2,072.01	4,211.72	509.77	11.75	23.00	13,914.04
November, 1891	16,820.97	3,726.87	12,722.24	281.79	156.25	573.40	34,281.22
December, 1891	25,753.27	17,945.65	69,007.49	307.04	5.00	505.46	114,424.51
January, 1892	8,690.01	1,701.72	3,947.49	76.12	.....	112.22	13,527.56
February, 1892	28,871.16	1,406.48	1,406.52	291.43	3.59	1,069.30	33,048.39
March, 1892	13,857.28	554.47	555.85	22.40	8.75	44.42	15,043.17
April, 1892	9,131.99	872.39	872.39	64.06	2.00	67.54	11,010.37
May, 1892	10,402.34	1,393.63	1,396.19	10.95	1.68	170.70	13,378.56
June, 1892	5,522.96	3,956.08	3,959.07	768.22	2.50	.....	14,205.83
July, 1892	5,519.15	892.43	892.89	9.76	25.25	.....	7,339.48
August, 1892	10,073.64	1,329.21	1,329.23	111.59	58.75	64.26	12,966.65
Grand total	$141,723.15	$36,331.34	$100,934.90	$2,488.51	$287.40	$2,635.28	$284,400.58

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 27.—Continued.

Summary of all Taxes paid to the Comptroller's Office from September 1, 1892, to August 31, 1893.

Source.	State Tax.	State School Tax.	County Tax.	Unorganized County Special Tax.	Costs.	Tax Purchasers' Account.	Total.
Organized counties	$22,122.69	$18,432.25	$84,661.23	....	....	....	$125,216.17
Unorganized counties	14,078.05	11,683.51	11,681.18	$3,025.36	....	....	40,468.10
Unorganized counties, tax sale	496.41	372.79	372.79	34.50	$16.50	....	1,344.99
Cost of advertising, paid prior to sale	....	....	....	....	79.00	....	79.00
Unorganized counties, redemption	318.58	201.98	199.70	215.68	51.75	$1,303.09	2,290.78
Railroad occupation	$1,096.60	....	....	....	....	....	$1,096.60
Steamboat occupation	32.92	....	....	....	....	....	32.92
Palaces car occupation	83.00	....	....	....	....	....	83.00
Insurance occupation	28,391.67	....	....	....	....	....	28,391.67
Express occupation	4,000.00	....	....	....	....	....	4,000.00
Telegraph occupation	8,710.66	....	....	....	....	....	8,710.66
Commercial agencies occupation	750.00	....	....	....	....	....	750.00
Stamps cash	81.72	....	....	....	....	....	81.72
Office fees	243.02	....	....	....	....	....	243.02
Abstract, sale of	189.00	....	....	....	....	....	189.00
Cancellation of receipts, last report. Unorganized counties	$130,596.32 5.92	$30,600.53 4.20	$96,914.90 4.20	$3,275.54 2.08	$197.25	$1,303.09	$262,977.63 16.40
Grand total	$130,590.40	$30,686.33	$96,910.70	$3,273.46	$197.25	$1,303.09	$252,961.23
Summary by months—							
September, 1892	$1,431.40	$169.37	$217.24	$2.70	$29.75	$21.00	$1,871.46
October, 1892	5,689.74	1,595.27	2,366.41	493.50	100.75	563.12	10,718.29
November, 1892	13,668.84	2,445.17	9,572.60	99.12	2.09	185.56	25,970.79
December, 1892	25,168.68	19,188.34	77,378.42	623.55	8.00	74.09	122,441.89
January, 1893	8,083.50	665.81	665.88	53.70	2.00	45.88	9,518.87
February, 1893	29,699.64	792.60	791.07	223.12	22.50	88.11	31,017.04
March, 1893	10,776.10	1,673.59	1,972.87	831.74	6.50	38.22	15,899.02
April, 1893	6,720.99	454.86	454.86	22.80	1.00	47.86	7,701.37
May, 1893	12,002.41	2,347.01	2,318.02	74.38	6.27	119.34	16,968.36
June, 1893	3,234.39	999.45	999.47	859.93	2.38	54.20	6,140.82
July, 1893	6,745.39	74.88	74.88	....	11.60	62.30	6,969.05
August, 1893	7,829.71	73.48	73.48	....	4.50	....	7,981.17
	$130,596.32	$30,600.53	$96,914.90	$3,275.54	$197.25	$1,303.09	$262,977.63
Cancellation of receipts, last report. Unorganized counties	5.92	4.20	4.20	2.08	....	....	16.40
Grand total	$130,590.40	$30,686.33	$96,910.70	$3,273.46	$197.25	$1,303.09	$262,961.23

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 27.—Continued.

Summary of all Taxes paid to the Comptroller's Office from September 1, 1893, to August 31, 1894.

Source.	State Tax.	State School Tax.	County Tax.	Unorganized County Special Tax.	Costs.	Tax Purchasers' Account.	Total.
Organized counties	$18,792.63	$15,659.13	$74,598.47	.....	.....	.....	$100,010.23
Unorganized counties	13,596.07	11,266.99	11,267.71	$4,052.80	.....	.....	40,193.57
Unorganized counties, tax sale	263.99	218.26	218.26	10.28	$19.59	.....	760.20
Cost of advertising, paid prior to sale	.....	.....	.....	.....	29.00	.....	29.00
Unorganized counties, redemption	345.75	258.24	258.25	98.38	36.01	$1,553.12	2,549.75
Railroad occupation	49,669.25	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	49,669.25
Steamboat occupation	11.16	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	11.16
Palace car occupation	83.00	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	83.00
Express occupation	4,000.00	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	4,000.00
Telegraph occupation	6,731.07	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	6,731.07
Commercial agencies occupation	750.00	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	750.00
Stage coach	48.97	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	48.97
Other fees	227.15	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	227.15
Abstract, sale of	174.15	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	174.15
	$94,663.10	$27,422.62	$86,322.69	$4,161.46	$114.51	$1,553.12	$214,237.50
Cancellation of tax sale, 1892, Hutchinson County, Ab. 188, Receipt No. 141-172	2.88	2.40	2.40	.....	50	.....	8.18
Grand total	$94,660.22	$27,420.22	$86,320.29	$4,161.46	$114.01	$1,553.12	$214,229.32
Summary by months—							
September, 1893	$1,414.44	$124.49	$139.29	$6.06	$6.50	$59.00	$1,749.78
October, 1893	6,649.47	875.97	2,756.14	45.99	67.50	759.80	11,145.87
November, 1893	13,984.75	3,011.64	9,166.19	1,018.46	.....	356.20	27,445.24
December, 1893	23,302.42	16,017.56	66,867.58	1,009.82	5.00	95.30	107,297.68
January, 1894	6,122.55	1,532.80	1,532.82	107.41	10.12	171.34	9,567.04
February, 1894	10,267.63	1,044.10	1,044.11	293.47	4.32	10.22	12,663.85
March, 1894	4,594.18	393.10	393.58	152.39	1.16	33.68	5,564.09
April, 1894	7,099.12	2,080.82	2,080.81	153.57	7.91	8.18	12,600.41
May, 1894	10,401.97	557.98	557.98	611.75	.....	.....	12,128.78
June, 1894	1,786.69	1,060.13	1,060.16	637.26	.....	34.72	4,599.96
July, 1894	2,523.74	58.84	58.84	.....	8.50	25.50	2,673.42
August, 1894	6,673.84	59.19	59.19	5.28	3.50	8.18	6,808.88
	$94,663.10	$27,422.62	$86,322.69	$4,161.46	$114.51	$1,553.12	$214,237.50
Cancellation of tax sale, 1892, Hutchinson County, Ab. 188, Receipt No. 141-172	2.88	2.40	2.40	.....	50	.....	8.18
Grand total	$94,660.22	$27,420.22	$86,320.29	$4,161.46	$114.01	$1,553.12	$214,229.32

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 27.—Continued.

Summary of all Taxes paid to the Comptroller's Office from September 1, 1894, to August 31, 1895.

Source.	State Tax.	State School Tax.	County Tax.	Unorganized County Special Tax.	Costs.	Tax Purchasers' Account.	Total.
Organized counties	$15,169.71	$12,642.04	$59,132.09	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	$86,944.44
Unorganized counties	12,927.95	10,769.71	10,745.79	$2,471.71	. . . .	. . . .	36,914.26
Unorganized counties, tax sale	24.78	20.65	20.65	6.60	55.25	. . . .	77.93
Costs of advertising, paid prior to sale	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	73.75	. . . .	73.75
Unorganized counties, redemption	424.77	327.84	328.76	66.93	23.25	$383.52	1,555.07
Railroad occupation	59,576.61	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	59,576.61
Express occupation	4,000.00	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	4,000.00
Telegraph occupation	10,910.45	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	10,910.45
Commercial agencies occupation	250.00	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	250.00
Stagecoach occupation	14.17	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	14.17
Office fees	291.07	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	291.07
Abstract, sale of	103.10	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	. . . .	103.10
	$94,721.71	$23,760.24	$70,227.89	$2,545.24	$102.25	$383.52	$191,740.85
Less amount refunded November, 1894, on receipts Nos. 121, 125, 129, 128, 129, 130, 133, issued November, 1890	79.97	49.98	49.98	68.45	9.75	. . . .	258.13
Grand total	$94,641.74	$23,710.26	$70,177.91	$2,476.79	$92.50	$383.52	$191,482.72
Summary by months—							
September, 1894	$4,241.25	$87.16	$110.50	$13.56	$13.75	$54.84	$4,521.06
October, 1894	4,515.96	1,303.81	3,178.63	259.16	2.25	224.82	9,574.63
November, 1894	14,780.47	2,505.35	9,042.50	493.64	30.50	15.86	26,868.32
December, 1894	15,976.90	12,886.42	50,731.06	594.31	2.00	. . . .	79,851.59
January, 1895	9,092.60	583.73	583.75	78.49	. . . .	. . . .	10,248.54
February, 1895	14,081.25	1,153.70	1,153.71	102.32	4.50	. . . .	16,495.48
March, 1895	2,636.63	550.29	550.29	174.81	3.00	. . . .	3,914.75
April, 1895	4,871.73	2,318.00	2,317.98	14.02	1.34	8.18	9,531.25
May, 1895	10,723.62	1,132.61	1,131.33	216.20	1.16	19.22	13,224.14
June, 1895	1,399.32	539.44	531.24	35.25	1.00	. . . .	2,506.75
July, 1895	3,877.33	855.34	855.81	555.42	30.00	41.24	5,821.14
August, 1895	9,074.09	54.39	47.19	8.42	12.75	16.36	9,213.20
	$94,721.71	$23,760.24	$70,227.89	$2,545.24	$102.25	$383.52	$191,740.85
Less amount refunded November, 1894, on receipts Nos. 121, 125, 126, 128, 129, 130, 133, issued November, 1890	79.97	49.98	49.98	68.45	9.75	. . . .	258.13
Grand total	$94,641.74	$23,710.26	$70,177.91	$2,476.79	$92.50	$383.52	$191,482.72

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 28.

Statement showing the Amount of each Series or Kind of Occupation Taxes collected in the State by Tax Collectors for Year ending April 30, 1895.

Occupations Taxed.	Amount.
Auctioneers, in city of 10,000 inhabitants or more	$450.00
Auctioneers, in city of 5000 and not more than 10,000 inhabitants	106.25
Auctioneers, in city of 2000 and not more than 5000 inhabitants	175.00
Auctioneers, in all other towns and villages	81.00
Beer-sellers exclusively	80,760.00
Billiards, bagatelle, etc.	10,100.00
Bankers, in city of more than 20,000 inhabitants	2,040.00
Bankers, in city of 20,000 and not less than 10,000 inhabitants	795.00
Bankers, in city of 10,000 and not less than 5000 inhabitants	300.00
Bankers, in city of 5000 and not less than 2000 inhabitants	975.00
Bankers, in city of not more than 2000 inhabitants	2,766.75
Claivoyants, etc.	16,000.00
Concerts, etc.	3,050.00
Circus	5,850.00
Commission (person selling on)	945.00
Cotton broker, in city of more than 5000 inhabitants	1,505.75
Cotton broker, in all other places	63.00
Cockpits	231.25
Cotton or wool buyer	1,152.50
Daguerreian, etc., in city of more than 5000 inhabitants	861.50
Daguerreian, etc., in city of less than 5000 inhabitants	642.50
Daguerreian, etc., elsewhere	292.50
Daguerreian, etc., travelling solicitor for	960.25
Dentist	1,502.50
Exhibition, acrobatic, etc.	1,290.00
Flying-jennies, hobby-horses, etc.	450.00
Gas or electric companies, in city of 10,000 or more inhabitants	605.75
Gas or electric companies, in city of less than 10,000 inhabitants	315.00
Hacks, etc., not connected with livery-stable	405.00
Livery-stable, each stall and each vehicle	2,711.25
Knife, cane, or doll rack, etc.	1,450.00
Land agents, if not attorneys	1,060.25
Lawyers, in county of residence only	6,225.50
Liquor dealers, selling one gallon or less	528,400.00
Liquor dealers, selling one gallon or more	16,200.00
Lightning-rods, dealers	201.00
Lightning-rods, canvassers	135.00
Medicines, patent (travellers selling)	875.00
Medical specialist, travelling	5,875.00
Menageries, each day	950.00
Merchants, purchasing $1,000,000 annually	750.00
Merchants, purchasing $750,000 annually	1,200.00
Merchants, purchasing $500,000 annually	1,[illegible]
Merchants, purchasing $250,000 annually	2,[illegible]
Merchants, purchasing $100,000 annually	3,[illegible]
Merchants, purchasing $50,000 annually	6,[illegible]
Merchants, purchasing $25,000 annually	9,[illegible]
Merchants, purchasing $15,000 annually	8,[illegible]
Merchants, purchasing $10,000 annually	1,[illegible]
Merchants, purchasing $5000 annually	17,[illegible]
Merchants, purchasing $2500 annually or less	20,[illegible]
Money-lenders	2,[illegible]
Peddlers, foot	2,[illegible]
Peddlers, one horse or one pair oxen	1,[illegible]
Peddlers, two horses or two pair oxen, sail or other boat	3,[illegible]
Pawnbrokers	5,[illegible]
Peddlers, clock, cooking stoves, ranges, etc.	[illegible]
Pool-sellers, each day pools are sold	1,[illegible]
Ship-brokers, etc., in city of 10,000 inhabitants or more	[illegible]
Shooting-gallery	7,[illegible]
Skating-rink	[illegible]
Sewing-machine dealers	641.[illegible]
Toll bridges	[illegible]
Theatres, when paid by the quarter	1,[illegible]
Wagon-yards, not connected with livery-stable	[illegible]
Total	$79,[illegible]

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 29.

Balances in the State Treasury to the Several Accounts, August 31, 1895.

Accounts.	Cash.	Kinds of Bonds.	Amount of Bonds.	Certificate of Public Debt.	Promissory Notes.
State revenue	$28,072.71				
Available school fund	133,479.38				
Permanent school fund	173,938.05	State	$2,162,600.00		
Permanent school fund		County	3,663,227.53		
Permanent school fund		Railroad	1,753,317.00		
Permanent University fund	1,693.45	State	576,540.00		
Available University fund	3,574.53				
Agricultural and Mechanical College fund	829.93	State	209,000.00		
Blind Asylum land sales	2,453.62	State	111,500.00		
Deaf and Dumb Asylum land sales	1,393.45	State	61,000.00		
Lunatic Asylum land sales	1,294.84	State	111,700.00		
Orphan Asylum land sales	999.53	State	9,200.00		
Available Orphan Asylum fund	1,517.87				
Confederate Home fund	1,715.27				
Settlement of estates	2,121.64				
Escheated estates	3,333.35				$375.00
Organized county tax	23,599.15				
Unorganized county tax	78,660.62				
Unorganized county tax—*pro rata* indebtedness	6,602.88				
Redemption funds, unorganized counties	858.43				
Cost of advertising lands, unorganized counties	749.89				
Interest and sinking fund Bexar County bonds	7,402.38				
Interest and sinking fund Harrison County bonds	1,479.42				
Interest and sinking fund Dallas City bonds	1,879.01				
Interest and sinking fund Sherman City Houston and Texas Central bonds	30.66				
Interest and sinking fund Sherman City Texas and Pacific bonds	2.84				
Interest and sinking fund Lyons City bonds	41				
Interest and sinking fund Waxahachie City bonds	820.14				
Special loan tax				$79,409.50	
Direct tax fund	88,612.69				
Available Penitentiary fund	18,000.00				
Totals	$585,214.04		$8,658,084.52	$79,409.50	$375.00

FINANCIAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 30.

Bonded Debt of the State of Texas, August 31, 1894.

Nature of Issue.	Bonds Issued.	Bonds Sold.	When Due.	Rate of Interest.	Interest, when Payable.	Bonds Redeemed.	Bonds Outstanding.
Funding bonds, May 2, 1871	$100,000	$79,000	20 years	6 per cent.	Semi-annually	$53,500	$25,500
Frontier defence bonds, August 6, 1870	750,000	750,000	40 years	7 per cent.	March and Sept.	452,000	298,000
Revenue deficience bonds, December 2, 1871	500,000	500,000	20 years	7 per cent.	Jan. and July	239,000	261,000
Floating debt bonds, March 4, 1874	1,000,000	1,000,000	30 years	7 per cent.	Jan. and July	712,000	288,000
For redemption of State debt, July 6, 1876	1,675,000	1,658,000	30 years	6 per cent.	Jan. and July	1,000	1,657,000
For retiring outstanding bonds and for deficiency in revenue, April 21, 1879	2,573,000	1,417,300	39 years	5 per cent.	Jan. and July	48,100	1,068,900
For retiring outstanding bonds and for deficiency in revenue, April 21, 1879	1,000,000	4,620	20 years	4 per cent.	Jan. annually	1,690	2,930
Revenue deficiency bonds, February 13, 1888	200,000	200,000	5 years	6 per cent.	July annually	....	200,000
For retiring all 7 per cent. frontier defence bonds of August 5, 1870, held by individuals, Act April 5, 1889, same sold to special funds	201,000	201,000	30 years	5 per cent.	March and Sept.	....	201,000
							$3,992,030

Note.—	
Permanent school fund holds	$2,162,600
Permanent University fund holds	575,840
Agricultural and Mechanical College fund holds	200,000
Blind Asylum fund holds	111,300
Deaf and Dumb Asylum fund holds	61,000
Lunatic Asylum fund holds	106,400
Orphan Asylum fund holds	8,000
Leaving bonds in hands of individuals	756,990
	$3,992,030

$200,000 of the 6 per cent. series, Act of February 14, 1885, were due January 1, 1899, of which the—

Blind Asylum holds	$51,000
Deaf and Dumb Asylum holds	15,000
Lunatic Asylum holds	15,000
Permanent University holds	2,000
Permanent school holds	117,000
	$200,000

$25,500 of the 6 per cent. series, Act of May 2, 1871, were due March 1, 1892, of which the—

Lunatic Asylum holds	$1,000
Permanent University holds	12,000
Permanent school holds	12,500
	$25,500

$261,000 of the 7 per cent. series, Act of December 2, 1871, were due April 1, 1892, of which the—

Blind Asylum holds	$6,000
Deaf and Dumb Asylum holds	3,000
Lunatic Asylum holds	14,000
Permanent University holds	138,000
Permanent school holds	100,000
	$261,000

Note.—The act of the twenty-third legislature provided for the issuance of new bonds to cover the last three named series of outstanding bonds past due, and same to be exchanged for said bonds, which are now held by the special funds named.

ECONOMIC STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 31.

Total Valuation of Property Assessed in the State for Years 1846 to 1891.

Year.	Total Valuation.	Increase over Previous Year.	Decrease from Previous Year.
1846	$34,891,175	.....	.....
1847	37,962,505	$3,171,330	.....
1848	42,812,537	6,350,032	.....
1849	46,241,589	2,429,052	.....
1850	51,814,015	5,573,026	.....
1851	60,739,581	17,924,566	.....
1852	80,754,094	11,014,513	.....
1853	99,155,114	18,401,020	.....
1854	120,681,617	27,826,503	.....
1855	149,521,451	22,539,834	.....
1856	161,304,025	11,782,574	.....
1857	183,544,205	22,240,180	.....
1858	193,636,818	10,092,613	.....
1859	224,353,266	30,717,448	.....
1860	294,315,659	69,962,393	.....
1861	256,784,482	.....	$37,531,177
1862[1]	.....	.....	.....
1863[1]	.....	.....	.....
1864	358,101,886	101,317,404	.....
1865[1]	.....	.....	.....
1866[1]	.....	.....	.....
1867	170,005,545	.....	188,096,341
1868	144,260,244	.....	25,745,301
1869	149,655,386	5,395,142	.....
1870	170,473,778	20,818,392	.....
1871	222,504,073	52,030,295	.....
1872	268,508,372	.....	13,995,701
1873	223,410,020	14,902,518	.....
1874	244,510,858	21,099,838	.....
1875	219,275,079	4,765,421	.....
1876	259,704,189	7,428,210	.....
1877	319,373,221	62,669,032	.....
1878	303,202,424	.....	16,170,797
1879	304,193,163	990,739	.....
1880	311,470,736	7,277,573	.....
1881	357,996,009	45,525,264	.....
1882	419,925,476	62,925,476	.....
1883	527,537,390	107,611,914	.....
1884	603,609,917	75,533,527	.....
1885	621,611,989	17,081,072	.....
1886	650,891,029	9,279,040	.....
1887	653,412,401	19,821,372	.....
1888	681,084,904	30,672,503	.....
1889	729,173,564	48,099,660	.....
1890	782,111,383	52,936,319	.....
1891	856,202,283	74,090,900	.....
Totals	.....	$1,103,351,425	$281,719,317
Net increase from 1846 to 1891	.....	$821,632,108	.....

NOTE.—The values of negroes are included in the total valuation of taxable property up to and inclusive of 1864.

[1] The records do not show the values in 1862, 1863, 1865, and 1866.

ECONOMIC STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 32.

Property and the Value thereof, as shown by the Assessment Rolls for the Year 1887.

Classes of Property.	1887.		1886.		1887.		1887.	
	Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.	Number. Increase.	Value. Increase.	Number. Decrease.	Value. Decrease.
Land assessed, in acres	114,754,508	$299,671,111	114,763,582	$282,599,397	....	$17,071,714	9,074	.....
Town lots	.....	105,226,386	.....	96,793,591	....	8,432,795	....	.....
Railroads assessed, in miles	7,187	48,274,237	6,133	44,026,039	1,054	4,248,198	....	.....
Telegraph lines	8,457	576,362	7,474	520,855	983	55,507	....	.....
Land certificates, acres	451,952	266,830	151,802	88,277	300,990	118,553	....	.....
Steamboats, sailing vessels, etc.	278	348,040	302	408,655	.....	.....	24	$60,615
Carriages, wagons, etc.	221,301	5,607,021	206,737	6,743,063	14,624	.....	....	45,149
Manufacturers' tools, implements, etc.	.....	7,251,608	.....	7,541,753	.....	.....	....	290,145
Materials and manufactured articles	.....	818,403	.....	888,164	.....	.....	....	69,761
Horses and mules	1,229,690	33,166,338	1,185,918	33,291,478	43,772	.....	....	125,140
Cattle	7,091,976	51,068,550	6,955,248	60,852,938	126,728	.....	....	9,814,388
Jacks and jennets	6,731	415,471	7,371	373,775	.....	41,696	640	.....
Sheep	4,775,394	5,016,674	4,543,795	5,282,814	.....	.....	268,371	266,140
Goats	602,997	493,905	592,660	547,653	10,427	.....	....	54,748
Hogs	949,939	1,141,655	1,435,125	1,866,228	.....	.....	494,196	724,573
Goods, wares and merchandise	.....	28,331,194	.....	27,545,599	....	846,595	....	.....
Money on hand	.....	11,827,284	.....	12,436,641	....	.....	....	609,357
Miscellaneous	.....	33,376,809	.....	32,987,070	....	389,739	....	.....
Unorganized counties	.....	.....	.....	15,739,413	....	769,587	....	.....
Add to the above the approximate assessed value of lands in unorganized counties, owned by non-residents	.....	16,500,000	.....	.....	....	.....	....	.....
Grand total value	.....	$659,412,491	.....	$630,525,123	....	$31,974,294	....	$12,087,016
Increase in values for 1887	.....	.....	.....	19,887,278	....	.....	....	.....
				$659,412,491				

ECONOMIC STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 32.—Continued.

Property and the Value thereof in the State of Texas, as shown by the Assessment Rolls for the Year 1891, compared with the Assessment for 1890.

Class of Property.	1891.		Average Value.	1890.		Increase.		Decrease.	
	Number.	Value.		Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.
Land assessed, in acres	121,037,880	$301,412,482	per acre . . $3.13	116,686,730	$353,998,331	8,351,120	$37,414,151	. . . . .	. . . . .
Town lots	. . . . .	170,469,088	. . . . .	. . . . .	145,524,497	. . . . .	24,944,595	. . . . .	. . . . .
Railroads assessed, in miles	8,213	65,742,268	per mile . . 8,003.43	7,981	62,105,887	232	3,636,381	. . . . .	. . . . .
City street railroads	234	866,110	per mile . . 3,072.53	84	247,955	160	619,055	. . . . .	. . . . .
Telegraph lines assessed, in miles	10,342	755,809	per mile . . 73.16	10,120	741,644	202	13,815	. . . . .	. . . . .
Land certificates	13,268	18,430	per acre . . 1.51	14,622	14,966	. . . . .	3,464	1,354	. . . . .
Steamboats, sailing vessels, etc.	413	410,535	each 994.15	339	335,840	74	74,695	. . . . .	. . . . .
Carriages and wagons	275,131	7,605,906	each 27.97	246,294	7,149,004	28,837	556,902	. . . . .	. . . . .
Manufacturers' tools, etc.	. . . . .	6,140,011	. . . . .	. . . . .	5,660,849	. . . . .	479,162	. . . . .	. . . . .
Steam-engine and boilers	. . . . .	3,491,095	. . . . .	. . . . .	2,898,959	. . . . .	592,136	. . . . .	. . . . .
Material and manufactured articles	. . . . .	1,191,936	. . . . .	. . . . .	1,117,760	. . . . .	77,176	. . . . .	. . . . .
Horses and mules	1,139,716	40,84[illegible],476	per head . . 28.36	1,518,167	38,854,163	. . . . .	2,070,313	78,451	. . . . .
Cattle	7,381,697	45,735,699	per head . . 6.03	7,378,203	45,[illegible],729	209,463	441,970	. . . . .	. . . . .
Jacks and jennets	20,755	741,757	per head . . 28.52	10,751	630,255	15,504	110,502	. . . . .	. . . . .
Sheep	4,092,258	5,604,705	per head . . 1.48	4,284,852	5,54[illegible],800	. . . . .	184,395	211,527	. . . . .
Goats	381,104	275,849	per head . . .72	400,009	331,387	. . . . .	. . . . .	106,595	$55,538
Hogs	1,096,226	1,344,755	per head . . 1.27	1,419,759	2,135,336	. . . . .	. . . . .	380,524	784,581
Goods, wares, and merchandise	. . . . .	33,228,997	. . . . .	. . . . .	29,427,423	. . . . .	3,903,574	. . . . .	. . . . .
Money on hand	. . . . .	14,192,984	. . . . .	. . . . .	14,261,594	. . . . .	. . . . .	72,610	. . . . .
Miscellaneous	. . . . .	50,834,633	. . . . .	. . . . .	41,570,872	. . . . .	8,857,761	. . . . .	. . . . .
Lands in unorganized counties, owned by non-residents	10,500,030	15,756,044	per acre . . 1.50	16,502,921	24,754,382	. . . . .	. . . . .	6,002,891	9,004,338
Increase of value for 1891	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	74,088,480	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .
Grand total	. . . . .	$856,200,283	. . . . .	. . . . .	$856,200,283	. . . . .	$84,005,467	. . . . .	$9,917,667

Real estate, total value of	$577,621,608.00	
Personal property, total value of	278,578,675.00	
Total values, 1891 rolls		$856,200,283.00
State *ad valorem* tax, 16½ cents on $100	$1,412,731.44	
School *ad valorem* tax, 12½ cents on $100	1,070,500.28	
Revenue poll-tax, 50 cents *per capita*	192,178.00	
School poll-tax, $1.00 *per capita*	393,459.00	
Total amount State taxes, 1891 rolls		3,048,977.72

NOTE.—The difference in the mileage of street railroads is caused from the fact that they were rendered in a number of counties in 1890 as personal property.

ECONOMIC STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 32.—Continued.

Property and the Value thereof in the State of Texas, as shown by the Assessment Rolls for the Year 1892, compared with the Assessment for 1891.

Class of Property.	1892.		Average Value, 1892.	1891.		Increase.		Decrease.	
	Number.	Value.		Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.
Land assessed, in acres	127,089,535	$708,500,535	per acre . . $5.13	124,937,850	$391,412,482	2,551,685	$7,088,053	. . . . .	. . . . .
Town lots	. . . . .	175,221,009	. . . . .	. . . . .	170,459,082	. . . . .	4,761,927	. . . . .	. . . . .
Land certificates, acres	8,041	9,348	per acre . . 1.04	13,358	15,430	. . . . .	. . . . .	4,317	$6,082
Carriages and wagons, etc.	324,758	7,795,512	each 24.00	275,131	7,698,896	49,627	93,626	. . . . .	. . . . .
Manufacturers' tools and implements	. . . . .	5,083,261	. . . . .	. . . . .	6,140,611	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	157,350
Steam-engines and boilers	. . . . .	3,413,120	. . . . .	. . . . .	3,391,995	. . . . .	129,125	. . . . .	. . . . .
Materials and manufactured articles	. . . . .	1,117,273	. . . . .	. . . . .	1,194,936	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	77,663
Horses and mules	1,452,396	40,622,345	per head . . 27.97	1,439,716	40,842,176	12,590	. . . . .	. . . . .	219,831
Cattle	6,596,338	39,301,208	per head . . 5.73	7,584,667	45,732,659	. . . . .	. . . . .	728,329	6,428,451
Jacks and jennet	10,448	778,182	per head . . 74.48	26,855	797,757	. . . . .	29,375	15,807	. . . . .
Sheep	3,594,479	4,864,354	per head . . 1.36	4,070,225	5,649,705	. . . . .	. . . . .	505,746	785,321
Goats	253,161	197,759	per head . . .79	184,324	273,849	. . . . .	. . . . .	100,803	76,090
Hogs	866,870	1,255,709	per head . . 1.45	1,060,226	1,189,785	. . . . .	. . . . .	193,356	66,076
Goods, wares, and merchandise	. . . . .	31,662,269	. . . . .	. . . . .	33,225,607	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	1,560,098
Money on hand	. . . . .	11,812,938	. . . . .	. . . . .	14,192,084	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	2,379,146
Miscellaneous property	. . . . .	59,257,987	. . . . .	. . . . .	59,434,633	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	176,646
Railroads assessed, in miles	8,418	67,418,055	per mile . . 8,000.17	8,213	66,731,298	205	1,685,925	. . . . .	. . . . .
City street railroads	251	698,050	per mile . . 2,781.08	244	809,110	7	. . . . .	. . . . .	108,060
Telegraph lines assessed, in miles	10,323	770,312	per mile . . 74.62	10,322	755,209	1	15,103	. . . . .	. . . . .
Steamboats, sailing vessels, etc.	359	418,110	each 1,164.65	413	410,585	. . . . .	7,525	54	. . . . .
Lands in unorganized counties, owned by non-residents	9,014,341	13,615,606	per acre . . 1.50	10,509,039	15,790,034	. . . . .	. . . . .	1,485,689	2,174,038
Railroads in unorganized counties assessed, in miles[1]	115	787,711	per mile . . 6,849.66	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .
Telegraphs in unorganized counties assessed, in miles[1]	94	4,708	per mile . . 50.50	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .
Increase for 1892	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	326,317	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .
Grand totals	. . . . .	$856,528,600	. . . . .	. . . . .	$856,526,600	. . . . .	$13,836,639	. . . . .	$14,392,741

Total value of real property	$587,337,550.00
Total value of all other property	269,189,050.00
State *ad valorem* tax, 15 cents on $100	$1,284,862.82
State school-tax, 12½ cents on $100	1,070,755.60
State revenue poll-tax, 50 cents *per capita*	204,904.50
State school poll-tax, $1.00 *per capita*	409,913.00
Total State taxes assessed	$3,970,515.92

[1] Railroads and telegraphs in unorganized counties were not included in the summary for 1891.

ECONOMIC STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 32.—Continued.

Property and the Value thereof in the State of Texas, as shown by the Assessment Rolls for the Year 1893, compared with the Assessment for 1892.

Class of Property.	1893.		Average Value, 1893.	1892.		Increase.		Decrease.	
	Number.	Value.		Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.
Land assessed, in acres	129,231,773	$413,201,452	per acre . . $3.20	127,489,535	$398,509,535	1,742,238	$14,700,897	. . . . .	. . . . .
Town and city lots	. . . . .	152,937,259	. . . . .	. . . . .	175,221,009	. . . . .	7,726,259	. . . . .	. . . . .
Land certificates, acres	4,939	11,697	. . . . .	8,941	9,348	. . . . .	2,349	4,011	. . . . .
Carriages, wagons, etc.	292,488	8,297,434	each 28.07	324,758	7,765,512	. . . . .	411,802	32,370	. . . . .
Manufacturers' tools and implements	. . . . .	7,186,523	. . . . .	. . . . .	5,983,261	. . . . .	1,203,262	. . . . .	. . . . .
Steam-engines and boilers	. . . . .	3,537,680	. . . . .	. . . . .	3,444,120	. . . . .	93,560	. . . . .	. . . . .
Materials and manufactured articles	. . . . .	1,609,536	. . . . .	. . . . .	1,117,273	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	526,737
Horses and mules	1,690,535	42,952,668	per head . . 25.35	1,452,306	40,622,318	238,229	2,330,350	. . . . .	. . . . .
Cattle	6,337,428	38,090,012	per head . . 6.01	6,356,338	39,301,248	. . . . .	. . . . .	518,910	313,636
Jacks and jennets	12,972	802,692	per head . . 66.59	10,448	778,132	2,524	81,560	. . . . .	. . . . .
Sheep	3,101,237	4,270,538	per head . . 1.42	3,504,469	4,851,484	. . . . .	. . . . .	108,212	77,536
Goats	268,300	194,018	per head . . .72	283,461	190,759	. . . . .	. . . . .	15,071	2,341
Hogs	1,455,284	2,099,966	per head . . 1.79	866,870	1,255,799	588,414	844,167	. . . . .	. . . . .
Goods, wares, and merchandise	. . . . .	32,159,215	. . . . .	. . . . .	31,659,809	. . . . .	899,406	. . . . .	. . . . .
Money on hand	. . . . .	12,881,331	. . . . .	. . . . .	11,812,938	. . . . .	1,068,396	. . . . .	. . . . .
Miscellaneous property	. . . . .	89,327,755	. . . . .	. . . . .	90,257,087	. . . . .	69,668	. . . . .	. . . . .
Railroads assessed, in miles	8,993	19,716,099	per mile . . 8,107.50	8,418	97,418,193	185	2,328,896	. . . . .	. . . . .
Street railroads assessed, in miles	289	910,829	per mile . . 3,151.62	251	698,059	38	212,770	. . . . .	. . . . .
Telegraphs assessed, in miles	10,548	834,213	per mile . . 78.42	10,323	770,312	315	63,901	. . . . .	. . . . .
Steamboats, sailing vessels, etc.	368	447,860	each 1,217.56	359	418,110	9	29,690	. . . . .	. . . . .
Lands in unorganized counties, owned by nonresidents	7,802,143	11,703,009	per acre . . 1.50	9,014,341	13,016,006	. . . . .	. . . . .	1,152,198	1,822,997
Railroads in unorganized counties	115	289,375	per mile . . 6,882.71	115	787,711	. . . . .	1,464	. . . . .	. . . . .
Telegraphs in unorganized counties	91	4,096	per mile . . 45.05	91	4,296	. . . . .	188	. . . . .	. . . . .
Increase for 1893	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	29,619,595	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .
Total	. . . . .	$880,175,395	. . . . .	. . . . .	$826,175,395	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

Total value of real property assessed	$607,941,700.00
Total value of personal property assessed	278,233,695.00
State *ad valorem* tax assessed, 15 cents on $100	$1,319,338.93
State school tax assessed, 12½ cents on $100	1,097,776.19
State revenue poll tax assessed, 50 cents *per capita*	218,477.00
State school poll tax assessed, $1.00 *per capita*	437,177.00
Total State taxes assessed	$3,092,753.12

ECONOMIC STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 32.—Continued.

Property and the Value thereof in the State of Texas, as shown by the Assessment Rolls for the Year 1894, compared with the Assessment for 1893.

Class of Property.	1894.		Average Value, 1894.	1893.		Increase.		Decrease.	
	Number.	Value.		Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.
Land assessed, in acres	126,906,813	$404,175,253	per acre . . $3.18	129,231,773	$413,201,432	. . . . .	. . . . .	2,324,960	$9,026,179
Town and city lots	. . . . .	183,597,091	. . . . .	. . . . .	182,947,459	. . . . .	$651,642	. . . . .	. . . . .
Land certificates, acres	3,646	1,961	. . . . .	. . . . .	11,697	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	9,716
Carriages, wagons, etc.	315,981	8,664,073	each 27.42	292,388	8,207,314	23,593	457,359	. . . . .	. . . . .
Manufacturers' tools and implements	. . . . .	7,897,507	. . . . .	. . . . .	7,416,823	. . . . .	680,684	. . . . .	. . . . .
Steam-engines and boilers	. . . . .	3,572,241	. . . . .	. . . . .	3,537,689	. . . . .	34,551	. . . . .	. . . . .
Materials and manufactured articles	. . . . .	1,163,436	. . . . .	. . . . .	1,090,536	. . . . .	72,800	. . . . .	. . . . .
Horses and mules	1,427,617	39,883,541	per head . . 27.08	1,690,535	42,852,605	. . . . .	. . . . .	217,918	2,968,064
Cattle	5,270,974	33,677,634	per head . . 6.37	6,332,428	38,690,612	. . . . .	. . . . .	1,047,454	5,312,978
Jacks and jennets	11,364	791,710	per head . . 68.47	12,972	862,652	. . . . .	. . . . .	1,608	70,943
Sheep	2,889,259	2,701,747	per head . . .97	3,362,257	4,776,848	. . . . .	. . . . .	505,998	2,015,121
Goats	240,920	166,692	per head . . .72	266,390	194,415	. . . . .	. . . . .	37,470	27,723
Hogs	145,341	2,320,112	per head . . 1.62	1,155,234	2,069,966	278,557	250,146	. . . . .	. . . . .
Goods, wares, and merchandise	. . . . .	31,763,189	. . . . .	. . . . .	32,539,215	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	775,729
Money on hand	. . . . .	11,284,189	. . . . .	. . . . .	12,841,534	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	1,557,345
Miscellaneous property	. . . . .	48,580,523	. . . . .	. . . . .	50,327,755	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	1,747,192
Railroads assessed, in miles	8,666	69,834,549	per mile . . 8,067.76	8,603	69,746,099	53	87,537	. . . . .	. . . . .
Street railroads assessed, in miles	286	918,640	per mile . . 3,314.83	289	910,820	. . . . .	37,429	3	. . . . .
Telegraphs assessed, in miles	10,785	817,094	per mile . . 75.79	10,638	834,213	147	. . . . .	. . . . .	17,119
Steamboats, sailing vessels, etc.	379	458,430	each 1,239.00	368	447,800	2	10,630	. . . . .	. . . . .
Lands in unorganized counties, owned by non-residents	8,062,997	12,094,361	per acre . . 1.50	7,862,143	11,793,009	200,764	301,352	. . . . .	. . . . .
Railroads in unorganized counties	110	680,344	per mile . . 6,185.00	115	789,175	. . . . .	. . . . .	5	108,831
Telegraphs in unorganized counties	94	1,699	per mile . . 50.00	94	4,996	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	297
Totals	. . . . .	$865,120,989	. . . . .	. . . . .	$886,175,395	. . . . .	$2,583,931	. . . . .	$23,638,337
Net decrease, 1894	. . . . .	21,054,406	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

Total value of real property assessed	$599,868,515.00
Total value of personal property assessed	265,252,474.00
State *ad valorem* tax assessed, 15 cents on $100	$1,297,812.47
State school-tax assessed, 12½ cents on $100	1,081,472.80
State revenue poll-tax assessed, 50 cents *per capita*	225,989.50
State school poll-tax assessed, $1.00 *per capita*	451,954.00
Total State taxes assessed	$3,057,149.27

ECONOMIC STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 32.—Continued.

Property and the Value thereof in the State of Texas, as shown by the Assessment Rolls for the Year 1895, compared with the Assessment for 1894.

Class of Property.	1895.		Average Value.			1894.		Increase.		Decrease.	
	Number.	Value.		1895.	1894.	Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.	Number.	Value.
Land assessed, in acres	125,974,599	$401,799,969	per acre	$3.19	$3.18	126,906,813	$404,178,253	....	.....	932,304	$2,384,284
Town and city lots	.....	186,815,818	.....	.....	.....	.....	183,598,901	....	$3,216,937	....	.....
Land certificates	.....	7,096	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,981	....	5,085	....	.....
Carriages, wagons, etc.	327,228	8,468,743	each	25.84	27.42	315,671	8,664,673	11,747	.....	....	195,930
Mechanics' tools and implements	.....	8,701,686	.....	.....	.....	.....	7,867,507	....	834,179	....	.....
Steam-engines and boilers	.....	3,600,710	.....	.....	.....	.....	3,572,241	....	28,469	....	.....
Materials and manufactured articles	.....	1,438,179	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,163,336	....	275,143	....	.....
Horses and mules	1,500,923	33,693,065	per head	22.65	27.68	1,472,617	39,583,041	28,306	.....	....	5,889,976
Cattle	4,853,898	35,713,761	per head	7.33	6.57	5,289,674	33,697,634	....	2,036,127	416,076	.....
Jacks and jennets	11,181	766,543	per head	49.80	68.47	11,584	791,749	2,625	.....	....	85,206
Sheep	2,386,221	2,412,162	per head	1.02	.97	2,889,269	2,761,727	....	.....	472,447	319,565
Goats	200,071	164,142	per head	.80	.72	230,920	166,402	....	2,260	....	.....
Hogs	1,491,981	2,395,401	per head	1.60	1.62	1,433,841	2,329,112	61,140	78,289	....	.....
Goods, wares, and merchandise	.....	31,427,570	.....	.....	.....	.....	31,763,486	....	.....	....	335,916
Money on hand	.....	10,600,383	.....	.....	.....	.....	11,201,189	....	.....	....	604,806
Miscellaneous property	.....	49,112,442	.....	.....	.....	.....	48,580,563	....	531,879	....	.....
Railroads, miles	8,740	69,782,311	per mile	7,993.39	8,057.76	8,666	69,834,536	74	.....	....	52,225
Street railroads, miles	266	852,879	per mile	3,338.14	3,344.83	256	918,049	....	.....	20	65,514
Telegraph lines, miles	19,088	859,932	per mile	88.40	75.70	19,788	817,934	....	41,936	777	.....
Steamboats, sailing and other vessels	458	731,193	each	1,600.39	1,239.00	370	458,430	68	272,763	....	.....
Land in unorganized counties, owned by non-residents	7,290,658	10,520,626	per acre	1.44	1.59	8,062,097	12,094,361	....	.....	772,269	1,573,735
Railroads in unorganized counties	110	638,614	per mile	5,795.00	6,185.00	110	680,344	....	.....	....	41,730
Telegraph lines in unorganized counties	94	4,707	per mile	50.00	50.00	94	4,699	....	8	....	.....
Totals	.....	$490,010,567	.....	.....	.....	.....	$495,120,989	....	$7,340,815	....	$11,551,237
Net decrease, 1895	.....	4,210,422	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	....	.....	....	.....

Total value of real property assessed	$509,127,433.00
Total value of personal property assessed	291,783,154.00
State *ad valorem* tax assessed, 25 cents on $100	$2,152,255.28
State school-tax assessed, 20 cents on $100	1,721,815.42
State revenue poll-tax assessed, 50 cents *per capita*	237,014.50
State school poll-tax assessed, $1.00 *per capita*	474,154.00
Total State taxes assessed	$4,585,238.90

CRIMINAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 33.

Changes in Prison Population for each Year from 1849 to October 31, 1892.

Years.	Number of Convicts on Hand 1st Day of January, Each Year.	Number of Convicts Received in Each Year.	Total Number of Convicts on Hand during Each Year.	Number of Convicts Discharged by Expiration of Sentence.	Number of Pardons.	Number of Deaths.	Number of Escapes.	Number of Recaptures.	Net Number of Escapes.	Number of Transferred to Ill. of C. and R.	Per Cent. of: Pardons from Whole Numbers.	Deaths from Whole Numbers.	Escapes from Whole Numbers.	Net Escapes from Whole Numbers.	Transfers from Whole Numbers.
1849	...	3	3	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
1850	3	13	16	...	2	...	...	...	...	...	12.50	...	...	...	...
1851	14	36	50	4	2	3	3	1	2	...	4.00	6.00	6.00	4.00	...
1852	39	39	78	13	4	1	2	...	2	...	5.12	1.28	2.56	2.56	...
1853	58	33	91	15	9	1	1	...	1	...	9.89	1.09	1.09	1.09	...
1854	65	41	106	23	7	3	3	...	3	...	6.60	2.83	2.83	2.83	...
1855	75	45	120	25	4	2	4	...	4	...	3.33	1.66	3.33	3.33	...
1856	85	38	123	27	6	1	...	...	...	...	4.87	.81	...	...	...
1857	89	66	155	24	8	3	3	...	3	...	5.16	1.93	1.93	1.93	...
1858	117	46	163	14	3	3	4	...	4	...	1.84	1.84	2.45	2.45	...
1859	139	85	224	31	8	3	...	...	...	...	3.57	1.34	...	...	...
1860	182	81	263	39	18	19	1	...	1	...	6.84	7.22	.38	.38	...
1861	195	58	253	33	10	7	...	...	...	...	3.95	2.76	...	...	...
1862	203	21	224	43	3	5	...	...	...	...	1.33	2.23	...	...	...
1863	173	20	193	40	4	4	...	...	...	...	2.07	2.07	...	...	...
1864	145	60	205	36	3	3	...	...	...	...	1.46	.48	...	...	...
1865	165	40	205	65	3	3	...	...	...	...	1.46	1.46	...	...	...
1866	134	263	383	29	10	6	3	...	3	...	2.33	1.51	.75	.75	...
1867	336	170	506	85	29	16	26	...	26	...	5.62	3.16	5.03	5.03	...
1868	429	159	579	80	43	7	14	1	13	...	7.42	1.20	2.41	2.24	...
1869	439	201	631	66	32	10	22	2	20	...	5.07	1.58	3.48	3.16	...
1870	563	217	720	79	85	8	37	...	37	...	11.80	1.11	5.13	5.13	...
1871	520	469	989	98	59	24	50	3	47	...	6.02	2.44	5.10	4.79	...
1872	752	437	1,189	115	52	41	48	2	46	...	4.29	3.44	4.03	3.86	...
1873	937	583	1,520	152	45	59	54	2	52	...	2.91	3.88	3.55	3.42	...
1874	1,161	932	2,093	141	52	64	117	25	92	...	2.48	3.05	5.59	4.39	...
1875	1,171	1,190	2,361	253	73	101	375	65	297	...	3.39	4.73	11.12	8.76	...
1876	1,792	665	2,357	400	73	62	392	199	193	...	3.08	2.64	16.63	11.53	...
1877	1,589	792	2,381	324	67	97	282	53	229	...	2.84	4.12	11.93	9.71	...
1878	1,561	822	2,386	341	81	105	242	90	152	...	3.39	4.44	10.06	6.28	...
1879	1,768	962	2,679	386	87	101	197	84	112	...	3.13	3.83	7.37	4.19	...
1880	1,772	605	2,377	380	64	112	176	36	140	...	2.22	3.89	6.11	4.86	...
1881	2,291	776	2,977	467	112	108	204	43	161	...	3.76	3.66	6.85	5.40	...
1882	2,117	856	2,953	379	36	92	185	32	153	...	1.21	3.35	6.24	5.18	...
1883	2,301	939	3,240	457	56	115	149	50	99	...	2.93	3.24	4.89	3.05	...
1884	2,489	1,014	3,484	457	117	98	105	52	53	...	3.37	3.82	3.03	1.53	...
1885	2,689	1,012	3,701	556	118	91	150	46	110	...	3.18	2.54	4.21	2.97	...
1886	2,783	1,120	3,903	668	167	125	70	30	54	...	4.26	3.27	1.78	.80	...
1887	2,928	1,134	4,060	667	88	97	61	31	30	...	2.16	2.38	1.50	.74	...
1888	3,178	1,113	4,291	714	63	116	63	25	38	...	1.46	2.70	1.46	.80	...
1889	3,360	1,015	4,405	779	67	97	67	21	46	27	1.50	2.20	1.52	.61	.61
1890	3,349	945	4,274	815	84	84	88	35	53	1	1.96	1.96	2.06	1.22	.02
1891	3,294	1,147	4,331	873	48	52	44	35	9	...	1.10	1.10	1.01	.20	...
1892	3,402	915	3,487	650	56	54	79	39	40	...	1.60	1.54	2.27	1.49	...

CRIMINAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 34.

Showing Number of Persons Incarcerated in the County Jails of the State during the Years 1887, 1888, 1889, 1890, and 1891 on Various Charges.

Offence.	1887.	1888.	1889.	1890.	1891.
Murder	734	665	598	749	844
Theft	3,650	3,250	2,960	2,920	3,617
Arson	141	79	61	67	115
Robbery	286	219	249	197	363
Burglary	548	654	545	541	791
Forgery	209	171	200	193	255
Assault and battery	1,393	801	1,224	966	1,342
Rape	210	165	149	163	203
Assault to murder	...	...	791	848	1,022
Embezzlement	...	...	128	136	179
Miscellaneous charges	5,851	6,833	6,389	6,211	7,712
Total number of persons incarcerated	12,978	12,867	13,274	13,041	16,432[1]

[1] Of this number 15,155 were males and 1277 females; 8786 white and 7646 colored.

CRIMINAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 35.

Showing Number and Disposition of Cases tried in Courts of Record from January, 1885, to December 31, 1892.

Offences.	Indictments.	Informations.	Arraignments.	Trials.	Convictions.	Acquittals.	Quashed.	Nol. Prossed.
Arson	391	....	...	184	88	99	...	....
Burglary	4,336	....	...	2,807	2,277	569	...	....
Embezzlement	1,124	....	...	806	160	162	...	....
Forgery	2,285	....	...	879	630	239	...	....
Murder	3,976	....	...	2,409	131	1,289	...	....
Perjury	1,070	....	...	357	137	174	...	....
Rape	498	....	...	276	147	103	...	....
Robbery	699	....	...	317	212	118	...	....
Theft (felonies)	17,601	....	...	8,626	5,315	2,415	...	....
Other felonies	12,993	....	...	21,914	2,602	2,332	...	....
Total felonies	45,080	....	426	5,533	12,010	8,208	2,743	17,790
Total misdemeanors	77,608	48,673	...	51,522	39,743	15,659	3,809	36,934

REMARKS.—The foregoing table contains no misdemeanors tried elsewhere than in courts of record. Many of the indictments for misdemeanors were transferred to the courts of justices of the peace for trial and this will generally account for the discrepancy between the numbers noted as pending and those noted as tried, quashed, or dismissed. Moreover, in some instances two or more defendants have been tried together, which accounts for discrepancy in the number of convictions and acquittals as compared with the number of trials. Again, many tried for felonies were convicted of misdemeanors, which is another cause of the failure of the trial columns to balance with the conviction and acquittal columns.

The number of indictments and informations pending is much larger than shown in the foregoing summary, owing to the failure of so many clerks to forward their reports.

CRIMINAL STATISTICS.—TABLE No. 36.

Showing Penalties Assessed in Cases tried in Courts of Record from January, 1883, to December 31, 1892.

Death penalties	105	Total fines collected	$197,379
Life imprisonment	229	Total final judgments on forfeitures	$424,515
Total years in penitentiary	34,856.80	Total forfeitures remitted	$205,964
Average years in penitentiary	2.77	Total forfeitures collected	$80,519
Total fines imposed	$1,078,141	Appeals in felony cases	2,402
Total fines remitted	$79,172	Appeals in misdemeanor cases	1,080

INDEX TO VOLUME II.

A.

B.

C.

D.

H.

I.

N.

O.

P.

Q.

R.

T.

U.

V.

W.

Y.

Z.

END OF VOL. II.